

There Are Save Two Churches Only Volume II

He Has Trodden The Winepress Alone

A Journey Through Disturbing yet Crucial Matters that Must Be
Considered Prior to End Times and Christ's Return

by
D. Christian Markham

for my Savior, Jesus Christ

and for all the Alices trapped in "Wonderland"

even if no one else believes you, I do

COPYRIGHT (“COPYLEFT”) NOTICE

The quotes and works of others that are included in this book are either in the public domain or have been reproduced with the intention of being in compliance of the Fair Use provisions of U.S. Copyright Law. In every instance wherein I quote another author's work, I credit the original author or source. My words are my words, their words are their words, and I have done my best to present everything in such in a way that there is no misunderstanding as to which is which. Permission was not sought nor extended in any such instance.

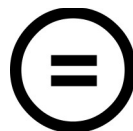
This work is licensed under the Creative Commons Attribution-NoDerivs 3.0 Unported License. To view a copy of this license, visit <http://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nd/3.0/> or send a letter to Creative Commons, 444 Castro Street, Suite 900, Mountain View, California, 94041, USA.



Anyone is at liberty to reproduce and distribute this work (inclusive of the text of this book and digital Supporting Material content) either electronically or in print – even as a commercial product – as long as the following terms are met:



1. The content of the work (i.e. both text and supporting material) is not altered, *and* is reproduced in total (i.e. nothing is removed or only reproduced in part).



2. The author is given explicit credit for the work.
3. Derivative works are *not* allowed, with the exception of additional text-based material, such as a Foreword, additional Appendix, or separate chapter commentary. Any such material will automatically fall under the same license as this work.

Additional clarification of what is permissible or not is provided in Appendix C.

Volume II released: November 5th, 2015

Visit www.twochurchesonly.com for the book's content online, for e-book downloads, and to view or download supporting material.

CONTENTS

Preface To Volume II.....	7
----------------------------------	----------

Part 5 – Stranger Than Science Fiction

Underground.....	16
Demons, Not Aliens.....	49
Dimensional Contemplations.....	110
Behavior Manipulation, Hypnosis, Possession.....	146
Mind Control: Perfection in Slavery.....	185
Testimony of a “Wonderland” Escapee.....	225
Forgiving Abusers.....	254

Part 6 – When The Head Is Sick, The Whole Body Is Faint

Putting Sacred Cows Out to Pasture.....	265
Jesus Christ, Incorporated: Yea, Zion Prospereth.....	317
Forbidding the Meat, Thinning the Milk.....	348
Appeasing God while Cavorting with Mammon.....	359
Darkness at Noon-Day.....	376

Part 7 – Final Days

Parable of the Nobleman and the Olive Trees, Part II.....	428
Denver Snuffer.....	440
Upon My House Shall It Begin.....	466

Epilogue.....	494
----------------------	------------

Appendices

Appendix A: Poelman's Oct. 1984 Conference Talk.....	515
Appendix B: Naming Names – Abusers, Victims, Atrocities.....	523
Appendix C: Fair Use and Creative Commons Clarification.....	568

I command you to repent — repent, lest I smite you by the rod of my mouth, and by my wrath, and by my anger, and your sufferings be sore — how sore you know not, how exquisite you know not, yea, how hard to bear you know not.

For behold, I, God, have suffered these things for all, that they might not suffer if they would repent; But if they would not repent they must suffer even as I; Which suffering caused myself, even God, the greatest of all, to tremble because of pain, and to bleed at every pore, and to suffer both body and spirit — and would that I might not drink the bitter cup, and shrink....

I command you again to repent, lest I humble you with my almighty power.

— The Lord Jesus Christ
(D&C 19:15-20)

PREFACE TO VOLUME II

It's been nearly three years since the publication of Volume I. As I wrote and compiled its contents, I got to a point where I had too much material to cover within a single book. After a couple of weeks of praying and pondering on what to do, the Holy Spirit prompted me to split the project into two volumes. As I reviewed everything, I realized that I had inadvertently already formatted and compiled the material in a way that would work well as two separate volumes. I spent a month correcting and formatting what are now the contents of Volume I into a publishable volume, and set aside the unfinished remaining material.

Around March of 2013, when I tried to get back to working on the project, to my surprise and frustration I was constrained by The Holy Spirit to postpone all work on it. Every time I tried to get back to the project, the Spirit would leave me – therefore, I did not force it, I did not proceed. This continued for over a year, during which time I spent as much personal time as I could with my wife and children.

Regardless, I often reflected upon and “digested” the remaining material I already had, and simultaneously did much more research, which The Spirit guided me in undertaking. My mind continually contemplated and re-contemplated all these things.

Every time I pondered these matters, the thought that always accompanied them was: “He truly has trodden the winepress alone. Praise be His name. There were none with Him. None of us. He has borne all our grief, all our pain, alone.” The more I researched, the more painful and harrowing this reality, this truth, echoed throughout my soul. To discern the whole of human suffering and misery, and to know that one person, of perfect unconditional nonjudgmental love, experienced every moment of it and overcame it all – bruised, bloodied, torn, but not broken – healed, and

PREFACE TO VOLUME II

able to heal – eternally. To behold this person's face is eternal life. This is the testimony of Jesus. This is Joy. This is the priceless pearl – something so meaningful above all else that one is willing to sacrifice anything and everything to obtain it.

This Book Is a Step-By-Step Journey, Not a Pick-and-Choose Buffet

In October of 2014, the Holy Spirit finally began encouraging me and guiding me to proceed on Volume II. The first volume functions as an overall introduction and general summary, supported by valid documentation and verifiable testimonies from those “in the know.” Its aim is to convince and educate the reader of the basics of the multi-layered hidden machinations of the kingdom of the devil. The unfinished work I had done for Volume II was prepared likewise.

However, as I reviewed my work, I realized immediately that the approach and composition of the second volume must be vastly different from the first. It must be personal, a journey, which the reader must undertake. I know of no other way that can properly convey what must be shared. I had to scrap much of the work and planning I had done already, and like Nephi, go by the Spirit not knowing beforehand exactly how to proceed.

I pray the reader takes this journey along with me, page by page, in prayer and contemplation – not in jumping around through the contents in order to slates one's curiosity, or to seek something to take offense at.

Without realizing it at the time of publishing, the final chapter of Volume I, *And Now, Down The Rabbit Hole We Go*, happens to be an ideal segue to both the focus and the differing approach of Volume II.

This volume will take the reader on a journey through Hades, or alternatively, “Wonderland.” It starts by entering the rabbit hole which Alice fell into, and exits through the mercy and atonement of God.

Again, I cannot stress enough the encouragement that the reader take this journey with me consecutively, walk with me on the same path which the Holy Spirit guided me on. Included in this journey of discovery are several journal excerpts from events in my life which have increased my understanding of matters within this volume, as well as the things of both God and man. These entries are inserted in chronological order of when they occurred. While some may seem irrelevant when you read them, all will

come together as the journey progresses.

As always, it is imperative to constantly petition the Holy Spirit to be with you. If some contents are too emotionally disturbing and daunting, please recover before proceeding.

The Reader Must Understand the Contents of Volume I Before Embarking

It is a waste of time and energy to read this volume, to even explore portions of it, without having sufficient understanding and a personal/spiritual conviction of the matters presented in Volume I. This is not to say that the contents here depend upon them, but that what is covered here will likely come across as preposterous and easy to dismiss without sufficient foundational information. As with the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the basics (i.e. the “milk”) must be taken in and understood before the more complex concepts (i.e. the “meat”, or the mysteries) can be effectively received. Without this foundation, weightier matters are confusing or easily dismissible as nonsense.

No matter how ridiculous some things in this volume seem, I testify to the reader that the Holy Spirit guided me in the selection and presentation of it all. If anything within comes across as either too extraordinary or too absurd to be taken seriously, then I implore the reader to immediately humble one's self, repent, and soberly petition the Lord, Jesus Christ, to verify this information as true and reliable. I, the author, am not above the reader, and I am more than willing to receive constructive criticism and correction about anything presented herein. If one goes to the Lord and receives an answer and understanding that varies from what I present in here, I ask you to please contact me and inform me of such. I have received constructive feedback for Volume I in this manner, and I likewise made corrections to the text as appropriate.¹

The Introduction and Prologue of Volume I Apply to This Volume As Well

Key points from these sections that are imperative to keep in mind:

- This book has been written for the purpose of glorifying Almighty God, and His Son, Jesus Christ—specifically in exposing to the reader Their earthly enemies (who are also our enemies—the only true enemies any of us actually have). All who count themselves as devoted followers of

PREFACE TO VOLUME II

Jesus Christ—and whose greatest desire is to be considered by God as one of His elect— will benefit from reading these books.

- Readers need to be willing to alter their perceptions, opinions, and convictions of “real life” that do not currently line up with the evidences and testimonies presented in these books.
- Simply by knowing the contents of volumes I and II, one will become a threat and a danger to Lucifer's kingdom. Therefore, he may cause one to receive occasional spiritual attacks. Patient, faithful prayer and supplication never fails to eventually dispel such intimidation tactics.
- Some of the content and subject matter of these books are, by their nature, disturbing. It would not be appropriate for minors to read them without a guardian's assistance or approval.
- The Lord Jesus Christ has made it clear that part of being a stalwart saint worthy of His Kingdom includes developing a keen discernment between what is of Him and what is of Lucifer. Ignorance of how the adversary works in this world—and the manner in which he subtly crafts profound evil to appear as benign or even benevolent—is not a virtue, it is a crippling handicap.
- It is folly for LDS Church members to assume that General Authorities will ever publicly expound upon the matters presented in either volume. *It is greater folly to assume that they are in any way required to do so—to expect anything like this from them is equivalent to seeking to place one's personal spiritual responsibility (to the point of one's testimony of Christ) upon their shoulders.* No matter how much we are admonished to “follow the prophet” and “honor the brethren,” *the Lord will hold us individually accountable for our own spiritual negligence. **There is no substitute for personal revelation.***
- Even when Jesus Christ was right there, *right there* in the flesh on the earth, some of the truths He taught were so direct and unsettling that they offended some disciples *to the point where they ceased following Him.*
- While plain, direct truth is rarely found in polished form, it nevertheless can be found from any source. Lest we forget in our modern age, *nearly all men of God in times past were social pariahs in their times—*persecuted and often even killed by those who refused to recognize that they were spiritually errant. As for myself, I seek only truth, whether it comes from the celebrated or the pariah.
- Once again: Do not scoff nor mock. Anyone or anything. Ever again. Cease to place trust in those who do mock. Scrutinize their spirituality.

In Alice's Shoes

Alice is lured by a strange sight. A white rabbit that speaks, wears nice clothes, and nervously glances at its pocket watch. She follows him to a rather large rabbit hole. Piqued with curiosity, innocent and naïve Alice gets on her hands and knees and crawls into the hole after him. A short distance within, she falls. She is immediately thrust into a dark, shockingly deep, thoroughly hidden, illogical world. At least it's illogical compared to the world that she's known since birth—the surface world. Amazingly, this world is so massive and extensive, just below the world on the surface, that it's baffling to think that no one on the surface has ever “discovered” it. Regardless, Alice is now confronted by a completely bizarre and foreign landscape, with quirky and nightmarish individuals residing therein.

Nothing “makes sense” here, to the point where Alice suspects that everything is deliberately nonsensical. Her logical and rational assertions are challenged and proved useless, again and again. Despite all this, “Wonderland” actually exists and operates on some irrational form of anti-logic. While Alice struggles to take it in, there is nothing inconsistent nor confusing about this place to its inhabitants. They understand and comprehend every backwards, ever-changing aspect of what's happening at any given moment. It is all far beyond simply being a different culture, or an alternate way of life—even the laws of physics, time and space which Alice has known on the surface are all but negated here.

Fueled by a well of curiosity and sense of adventure, Alice explores and experiences what this twisted world offers. Yet, after too many perplexing, unsettling, unsatisfactory, freakishly-disturbing and even life-threatening encounters, that well runs dry. She wants nothing more than to return home—but she is hampered every time she tries to go back. Alice is stuck in “Wonderland.” What is she to do? How does she cope? She must come to grips with this world, and the horrible awareness that it is completely inescapable for the time being. She must learn to stop questioning the nonsense and accept this world for what it is. She must adapt to it while clinging to the hope of one day returning to the “normalcy” that she knows on the surface world.

You are now the fallen Alice. You are about to be confronted (and your mind assaulted) with a whole other reality: a borderline-illogical construct that seems to defy the rules of everything you think you “know”. Unlike the fictional “Wonderland,” the bizarreness, horribleness, and monstrosities chronicled in this book actually exist. And for those like Alice, who are ensnared and confined to it against their will, or due to deadly threats and

PREFACE TO VOLUME II

paralyzing fear, it is a perpetually nightmarish existence.

During His atonement, the Savior was plunged into the deepest, darkest, lowest recess of this nightmare reality. He descended, ascertained, experienced, and overcame every crevice of it. For each one of us.

I write this volume for Him, and offer it without cost to the “surface” world—freely given to those who seek to comprehend the extent of what our Savior and Redeemer, the Lamb of God, has achieved for each one of us—and especially for all the silenced, suffering Alices who spend their lives wretchedly trapped in “Wonderland.”

You know who you are—please stop being silent, no matter how awful the threats that loom over you, no matter how convinced you are that no one will believe you.

1 Thus far, the only changes I have made to Volume I have been proofreading errors, with one exception: Part 1, Origin of Conspiracy, on page 42, I quote only from the King James Version of the Bible where Lot offers up his virgin daughters to the wicked men of Sodom in exchange for leaving his holy visitors alone. I neglected to research the Joseph Smith Translation of these verses, wherein Lot's character is redeemed in that he tries to persuade the men of Sodom away from both his daughters and his visitors. I changed the quoted verses to the JST version, and changed my commentary on the situation.

Journal Excerpt 1 - July 1989 (16 years old)

I had something happen to me a couple weeks ago. It has really helped me. Saturday night I hung out with ----- . We rented a movie and ate some snacks. Afterwards, he drove me back to dad's, about midnight. We just sat and talked in the car for a bit - pretty deep stuff, life and things. We were both feeling melancholy. About 1am I told him good night and went inside.

I quietly went to my room - it's not really "my" room, though - just a room they're letting me sleep in for now. As I sat down on the bed, I noticed something was placed on it. It was a kind of project, like something girls would make during a Church activity. It was a piece of navy blue cardboard paper, with some ribbon loop glued to the top so it can be hung on a nail. It had a piece of white paper glued onto the cardboard, making it look like a framed image. I picked it up cynically - what kind of silly crap did someone put on my bed? The paper had a poorly-photocopied profile of Jesus Christ on it. Under the image read the words: "The greatest gift I can give you is to see yourself the way I see you."

I was completely unprepared for what happened next.

As soon as I read those words, the Holy Ghost poured into my heart -- permeated my whole being -- stronger than I have ever felt in my life. Tears immediately started flowing, almost bursting out of my eyes. I began to sob violently. I was completely surrounded by God's love.

I collapsed to the floor and wept. For about an hour.

Eventually, I calmed down and just stared at the floor. I still felt God's love very strong, but my self-hatred came back. I prayed and asked God, almost like yelling at Him: "How can You love me??? I am a terrible person!! I think terrible things!! I break Your commandments!! I have a filthy mouth!! I am so vile and disgusting!! How can You love me?! Why do You love me?!"

After I stopped yelling these things in my mind, God's voice entered my heart. He said, "Because, you are my son." Every word felt like pure love, the most powerful love in the universe. I wept again. For another hour. My eyes were red and puffy and sore. I just crawled into bed and went to sleep.

A week later ----- got angry at me. "What's wrong with you?! You've been, like, all happy! It's weird!"

I didn't tell him about this. Just said I've haven't been feeling as negative about life.

PART 5

STRANGER THAN SCIENCE FICTION

"Remember, science fiction's always been the kind of first level alert to think about things to come. It's easier for an audience to take warnings from sci-fi without feeling that we're preaching to them. Every science fiction movie I have ever seen, any one that's worth its weight in celluloid, warns us about things that ultimately come true."

– Steven Spielberg¹

"You can put ten tons of proof about something in front of people—if they're not ready to accept its possibility, they will not accept the proof."

– Unknown

¹ Source: <http://www.brainyquote.com/quotes/quotes/s/stevenspie584117.html>
Recall that Spielberg directed several science fiction films, including *Close Encounters of the Third Kind*, *E.T.*, *War of the Worlds*, *Minority Report*, and *Artificial Intelligence* (a project which Stanley Kubrick developed for 14 years as a conceptual sequel to *2001: A Space Odyssey*, then handed it over to Spielberg prior to starting production on *Eyes Wide Shut*).

*"The very word 'secrecy' is repugnant in a free and open society; and we are, as a people, inherently and historically opposed to secret societies, to secret oaths and secret proceedings. We decided long ago that **the dangers of excessive and unwarranted concealment of pertinent facts far outweighed the dangers which are cited to justify it.** Even today, there is little value in opposing the threat of a closed society by imitating its arbitrary restrictions. Even today, there is little value in ensuring the survival of our nation if our traditions do not survive with it.*

*"And there is very grave danger that **an announced need for increased security will be seized upon by those anxious to expand its meaning to the very limits of official censorship and concealment.** That, I do not intend to permit to the extent that it is in my control. And no official of my Administration, whether his rank is high or low, civilian or military, should interpret my words here tonight as an excuse to censor the news, to stifle dissent, to cover up our mistakes or to withhold from the press and the public the facts they deserve to know....*

*"For we are opposed around the world by a **monolithic and ruthless conspiracy** that relies on covert means for expanding its sphere of influence: on **infiltration instead of invasion**, on **subversion instead of elections**, on **intimidation instead of free choice**, on guerrillas by night instead of armies by day.*

*"It is a system which has conscripted vast human and material resources into the building of a **tightly knit, highly efficient machine that combines military, diplomatic, intelligence, economic, scientific and political operations.***

*"Its preparations are concealed, not published. Its mistakes are buried not headlined. Its dissenters are silenced, not praised. **No expenditure is questioned, no rumor is printed, no secret is revealed.**"*

- from President John F. Kennedy's address to the American Newspaper Publishers Association at the Waldorf-Astoria Hotel, April 27, 1961
(emphasis added)

UNDERGROUND

*Rattle big black bones in the Danger zone
There's a rumblin' groan down below
There's a big dark town, it's a place I've found
There's a world going on underground*

*They're alive, they're awake
While the rest of the world is asleep
Below the mine shaft roads, it will all unfold
There's a world going on underground*

*All the roots hang down, swing from town to town
They are marching around down under your boots
All the trucks unload beyond the gopher holes
There's a world going on underground*

– Lyrics to the 1983 song *Underground* by Tom Waits,
whose persona inspired Heath Leger's performance
of The Joker in the film *The Dark Knight*¹

A few years ago, I had a dream that left a powerful impression upon me. In my dream I lived in a nice single-story home with a very spacious, open backyard. In one corner of my yard, there was a pile of dirt about two feet high. On top of this pile was a large white bag, half-filled with topsoil. The top of the bag slumped over towards the house in a manner where I could somewhat see inside the bag. This pile of dirt and bag of soil had been sitting there for about a year, waiting for me to apply them to some backyard project.

In my dream I understood that a colony of ants had moved into the dirt pile and bag several months prior, overtaking them. Being perpetually busy

with other things, I did nothing to get rid of them, figuring I'd take care of it all one day when I needed to use the dirt and top soil again. Additionally, I understood that it had been a few months since I'd seen any ants going into or coming out of the bag. This led me to believe that they had moved on. This was my established in-dream understanding of things.

In my dream, I was walking from the far end of my yard back towards the house. It was a beautiful, breezy spring day, and I was feeling relaxed and blessed. As I walked past the dirt mound and white bag, I glanced over at it. What I saw jolted me to the core. For only a second, I saw two ants in the mouth of the bag—but they weren't regular little ants, or even sizable army ants. The two ants I saw were massive: about four inches (~9cm) long, each of their bodies as big as a tarantula's. For only a second, I caught a glimpse of their big ugly brown heads sticking out of the bag's slumped-over opening. Their heads were so big that I made out their two black eyes and nasty mandibles from roughly six feet away. They had been watching me intently as I walked, and as soon as they realized that I saw them, they quickly backed away into the bag, out of sight.

My peaceful, pleasant mood quickly evolved into horror. Realization came crashing down on me in split seconds: I'd been ignoring this ant colony for months; they grew larger and stronger over time because I never did anything to interfere with their growth; eventually they had burrowed beyond that little mound, deep and extensively throughout my yard; simultaneously, they must have formed other hidden entrances/exits elsewhere and abandoned the initial entry point of the white bag, leading me to believe that they had moved elsewhere, but in reality they were growing exponentially, completely hidden from my awareness; and they continued to increase in size and strength to the point where each of them was now as large as a tarantula! My terror compounded as I deduced each point. Images of what their underground tunnel system must look like shot through my mind: "If each of these ants is as massive as the two I just glimpsed, their underground colony must be far larger than the expanse of my yard—its probably several stories in depth and runs throughout the entire neighborhood. And their intelligence is frightening! *They were watching me!* They actually recognized that I saw them, and they fled. They're aware that I'm aware of them—and that I'm figuring them out!"

At that instant, I somehow understood that the two ants I saw were alerting the other ants, and they were all quickly preparing a full-on assault on me and my family. They were gathering themselves to charge out of their tunnels en masse, overwhelm us with their numbers, and eat us alive. In a state of life-and-death panic, I bolted towards my home, frantically screaming the names of my wife and children.

I woke seconds later, just before reaching the sliding glass door.

Ancient Underground Networks

Before proceeding, I hope the reader will take a moment to reflect upon their understanding of the scriptures regarding any mention of things under the earth. Scripturally, anything “under the ground” references only a handful of topics, primarily: planting/sowing, death or dying, and Hell. In the scriptures, “Hell” is frequently alluded to as being under the ground, deep inside the earth. Therefore, the Christian mindset will invariably point to the sky when referring to Heaven, and point to the ground when referring to Hell.

Consider the following question: throughout the canon of scripture—anywhere within the Standard Works (The Bible, The Book of Mormon, The Doctrine and Covenants, and The Pearl of Great Price)—is there ever any encouragement, any advice, any admonition which suggests that it is the Lord's will that His followers literally go underground? Or perform any kind of ordinance inside the earth (aside from burying or entombing the body of someone deceased, or performing baptisms for the dead in a temple font situated just below the surface level)? Or create an underground system or subsurface chamber of any kind? Not once in all these sacred works does the Lord command, recommend, or even condone the creation of such structures. *In all scriptural instances*, such things are referred to with contempt, connected with “secrets,” “abominations,” and/or in attempting to hide and preserve one's worldly treasure.

Keeping this in mind, please consider the ramifications of what April Holloway, an ancient phenomenon researcher, summarizes both in regards to ancient myths and archaeological findings as recent as 2012 (all emphasis added)²:

“Underground structures, even whole cities, have always been part of most of the world's myths and religions. A few have been discovered but most of them have not. Side by side with the stories about underground structures, we have underground networks and tunnels connecting different places and sometimes extending for many kilometres and even between different countries.

“In this article we will explore the myths and legends from all over the world that *refer to underground cities and tunnels* as well as what archaeologists and researchers have found and how these findings may be connected to such stories.

Underground Networks and Cities in Myths and Legends

"According to mythological traditions, underground sites were mostly referred to as entrances to the underworld and we find such references all around the world. Although most of us think of the 'underworld' as a representation of 'hell' and therefore an imaginary or spiritual place for 'bad' people, in reality in ancient religions that wasn't the case. The underworld was a place where the dead would go, but it was a place with *physical entrances, guards, buildings and cities*, and a place that a few mortals could visit and even communicate with the dead souls, gods, kings or the armies of the underworld. In a few cases though, according to the legends, they could even resurrect a dead person.

"One of the most famous underground cities is the city of Agartha, a legendary city that is supposed to be in the centre of the Earth, the Earth's Core. Central Asia is the origin of those legends and the race inhabiting this underground realm was called the Agharti. Theosophists refer to Agartha as *a vast complex of caves and an underground network* that was inhabited by the Asuras (evil demons) and enemies of the Gods. *This underground network was supposedly made by man.*

"In Hindu mythology there are legends of a race called the Nagas, *serpent like intelligent creatures with human faces* that live in underground caverns. Those creatures are described as 'children of Gods' – immortal and able to fly – who got married with human kings and queens and supposedly spiritually advanced."

Note the striking similarity of this ancient Hindu myth and Genesis Chapter 6, verses 1 through 6 (emphasis added):

"And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, that the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose.... There were ***giants in the earth*** in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown. And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually."

In Volume I, Part 1, The Origin of Conspiracy, I quoted these verses and noted that there is a wide range of interpretation among Biblical scholars as to what these things mean. Yet, curiously, the content of these verses parallel this ancient Hindu mythology, referencing a race or group called "children of Gods" which intermarried with mortals.

Continuing from Holloway's summary:

UNDERGROUND

"Similarly, in Chinese legends dragons are not the ugly flying beasts that we believe today, but wise creatures that would be *mentors of kings and creators of kingdoms*. Many Tibetans are mentioned to have entered those caves of the Nagas that expand miles and miles inside the mountains of Asia....

"Shambhala (a Sanskrit word meaning 'place of peace') is another famous holy place that for some is supposed to be a spiritual 'paradise', but for others it is suggested to be a real underground city with references of people that have actually visited it. Legends mention that the King of Shambhala travelled to India to meet Buddha and listen to his teachings. One major difference with Shambhala is that it is supposed to be a holy place in comparison to Agartha, which is a place of demons. According to Helena Blavatsky [Ed. Note: the occult author of *The Secret Doctrine* previously covered in the *Secular Spirituality* section of Volume I], Shambhala is located in the Gobi Desert.

"On the other side of Earth, in America we have the legend of Akakor, a legend that the latest adventure of *Indiana Jones and the [Kingdom of the] Crystal Skull* was based on. Tatum Nara, an Amazon jungle guide, claims to have seen the city and described not only the city but also the chronicles of the underground kingdom. According to that legend '*Gods' came from a solar system known as 'Schwerta' and built an underground tunnel system in South America*. This civilization left *13 underground cities* in South America in the jungles of Amazon, yet to be found.

"In the Mayan mythology we have the mythical underground city of Xibalba, 'the land that the sun goes down into' which was inhabited by superheroes and Gods, a civilization that supposedly vanished around the Middle Ages. The entrance to this world was thought to be located in Guatemala and description of the structures and locations within Xibalba are described in Popol Vuh.

"In Greece, we have the myths of Hades and the Underworld, a realm where gods and heroes lived. [The] God Pluto was the God of the Underworld which had many different sections including the Elysium and Tartarus.

"In Irish legends we hear about the people named Tuatha De Danaan (People of the Goddess Danu), a race who moved underground when another race arrived on the island. According to the legends they came to Ireland in 'dark clouds' and landed on the mountains of Ireland. Those people in today's myths are referred to as fairies....

"In Norwegian legends we have the Dwarves, beings of the underground associated with craftsmanship. Different races of Dwarves that were the ones that supplied the Gods with weapons.

"In Egypt, we have references of the historians Herodotus and Strabo of a *colossal underground temple that contained 3,000 rooms full of paintings*

and hieroglyphs, a lost labyrinth yet to be found.

"There are many accounts of people that have accessed this underground realm which includes not only mythological accounts but accounts from recent history. It is also written in documents that Hitler and the Nazis discovered an entrance to the interior of Earth in Antarctica. The Nazi's believed that a civilization lives inside Earth, the 'super humans'. *Some believe that the Nazi's were in contact with them and in fact they were directing them and even sharing technology with them.* While there is no proof of that kind of contact, we definitely know that the Nazi's had the most advanced technology than any other country of the world during World War II. [Ed. Note: with the exception of the atomic bomb. Additionally, whatever technological advancements the Nazis had was obtained by the United States as part of Operation Paperclip, wherein over 1500 German scientists, technicians and engineers were given new identities and granted security clearances to work for the US military – effectively expunging their war criminal past and concealing them from efforts to bring them to justice.³]

"The concept of the Hollow Earth is a popular concept and has also been the topic of many books like 'At the Earth's Core' by Edgar Rice Burroughs, 'A Journey to the Center of the Earth' by Jules Verne or 'Message found in a Bottle' by Edgar Allen Poe.

"Stories of vast underground realms, cities and networks *inhabited by god-like beings more advanced and more intelligent* than the current humanity are intriguing....

"[S]ome of the other remarkable underground discoveries that have occurred throughout the world [include:]

Turkey

"Derinkuyu in Cappadocia in Turkey is probably the largest underground city that has been discovered to date. It spans more than 8 levels going as deep as 80 meters with more than 600 entrances to the surface. Although the date the original city was built is unknown, the Turkish Department of Culture dates the city back to the 8th century BC. It was made by the Phrygians, ancient Indo-European people, *who worshiped the "Great Mother", Cybele, as the Greeks and Romans knew her.* The Phrygians developed an advanced culture, famous for its music and the legend of King Midas, a Phrygian King, who turned everything he touched into gold...."

As I discussed in Volume I, recall how, from culture to culture, society to society, the pantheon of 'gods' never really change – they merely adapt new names, and new illogically-devised legends and folktales are attributed to them. From Egypt to Greece to Rome, the pantheon of 'gods' effectively

UNDERGROUND

change in name only. As noted here, the Phrygians worship the same 'gods', but merely attribute different names to them – and once again, the 'advanced' Luciferian secret-society-established culture which their initiates founded is lauded in legend.

Continuing from Holloway's summary:

Egypt

"In Egypt, the Giza Plateau has an enormous underground system that is a combination of manmade caverns and tunnels as well as subterranean rivers and passages. Since 1978 the caverns have been mapped using ground penetrating radar with the explorations led by Dr Jim Hurtak who has supposedly entered *massive chambers larger than our largest cathedrals*. A few historians believe that the underground cave system in Giza, is the legendary 'City of the Gods', the *massive underground city described by ancient writers Herodotus* (5th century BC) *and Strabo* (1st Century AD). Herodotus wrote:

"There I saw twelve palaces regularly disposed, which had communication with each other, interspersed with terraces and arranged around twelve halls. It is hard to believe they are the work of man. The walls are covered with carved figures, and *each court is exquisitely built of white marble and surrounded by a colonnade*. Near the corner where the labyrinth ends, there is a pyramid, two hundred and forty feet in height, with great carved figures of animals on it and an underground passage by which it can be entered. *I was told very credibly that underground chambers and passages connected this pyramid with the pyramids at Memphis.*"

"Furthermore, he spoke of the discovery of a *multi-level megalithic metropolis under Giza* that was 15,000 years old.

"Many ancient writers supported Herodotus' record of underground passages connecting major pyramids and Iamblichus, a fourth-century Syrian representative of the Alexandrian School of mystical and philosophical studies, recorded information about an entranceway through the body of the Sphinx into the Great Pyramid:

"This entrance, obstructed in our day by sands and rubbish, may still be traced between the forelegs of the crouched colossus. It was formerly closed by a bronze gate whose secret spring could be operated only by the Magi. It was guarded by public respect, and *a sort of religious fear maintained its inviolability better than armed protection would have done*. In the belly of the Sphinx were cut out galleries leading to the subterranean part of the Great Pyramid. These galleries were so art-fully crisscrossed along their course to the Pyramid that, in setting forth into the passage without a guide throughout this network, one ceasingly and inevitably returned to the

starting point.”

“Since the declassification of the ground penetrating radar, more and more underground systems have been discovered but not yet explored in various places around the world.

Wales

“During the summer of 1998, cave explorers using scientific equipment were able to confirm that a linked cave system some 15 miles in length exists underground in North Wales.

South and Central America

“In Guatemala, 800 kilometres worth of tunnels have been mapped underneath the Mayan pyramid complex at Tikal. Researchers have suggested that this may provide an explanation for how half a million Mayans escaped the decimation of their culture.

“In 2008 archaeologists in Mexico discovered eleven stone temples in underground caves including an underground road that Mayans believe was the road to the Mythical underworld city known as Xibalba as mentioned [previously].

North America

“In April of 1909 there was a story in the Phoenix Gazette entitled ‘Explorations in Grand Canyon’ where a man named Kinkaid discovered several hundred underground rooms some of them containing *artifacts such as weapons and instruments unknown to native Americans, Egyptian-like hieroglyphics, mummies and a Buddha-like statue.*

“In 1985 in an article in Search magazine, there was a story by a Naval officer saying that they found underwater tunnels that span several hundred miles.

China

“In 1992, 24 man-made caves were discovered in China, displaying incredible craftsmanship that would have involved the excavation of 36,000 cubic meters of stone. The floor of the grotto was more than two thousand square meters with the tallest point exceeding 30 metres. There are no historical references of the caves and the reason why they were built is unknown.

Europe

"In 2012 in Italy archaeologists found an underground pyramid shaped vault of Etruskan origins with a series of tunnels starting from that point probably extending deep inside the ground dated before 1000 BC. Carved stairs run down the wall deeper into other tunnels where another pyramidal structure was found.

"In Naples, a labyrinth of several miles of tunnels lies below the city, an underground city that spreads below the old town with many myths and legends surrounding them.

"In Malta a network of tunnels was found under the historic capital of Malta, Valleta. Myths say that the network of tunnels in Malta even includes underground cities.

"Legends of 'Gods' building vast underground cities to be protected by events on the surface appear in the myths and legends of multiple different continents from Egypt to America to China. Could that be the explanation for the thousands of tunnels, caves and underground cities around the world? It seems to me that further research and exploration is needed to uncover just what these underground networks were used for, why they were built and by whom."

Consider the remarkable similarities which these underground systems and structures share:

4. They are impeccably designed and created, continuing to be structurally sound hundreds or thousands of years after being built.
5. They are not the product of engineering-and-technologically-ignorant groups. They required expertise to create – in many cases, a level of engineering expertise that still baffles modern researchers.
6. A great number have legends associated with them which imply that worldly-elite persons could descend into them and make contact with non-human or super-human beings, often which inhabited these places. Some examples just touched upon:
 - "a place that a few mortals could visit and even communicate with the dead souls, gods, kings or the armies of the underworld"
 - "the race inhabiting this underground realm was called the Agharti"
 - "inhabited by the Asuras (evil demons) and enemies of the Gods"
 - "a race called the Nagas, serpent like intelligent creatures with human faces... described as 'children of Gods'"
 - "Tibetans are mentioned to have entered those caves of the

Nagas”

- “Chinese... dragons are... wise creatures that would be mentors of kings and creators of kingdoms”
 - “According to [the legend of Akakor,] ‘Gods’ came from a solar system known as ‘Schwerta’ and built an underground tunnel system in South America.”
 - “Xibalba... was inhabited by superheroes and Gods”
 - “the [Greek] myths of Hades and the Underworld, a realm where gods and heroes lived”
 - “The Tuatha De Danaan (People of the Goddess Danu)... came to Ireland in ‘dark clouds’ and landed on the mountains of Ireland.... in today’s myths [they] are referred to as fairies.”
 - “The Nazi’s believed that a civilization lives inside Earth, the ‘super humans’. Some believe that the Nazi’s were in contact with them and in fact they were directing them and even sharing technology with them.”
7. Nearly all of these systems and structures either contain rooms for worship, temples, religious symbolism, or were rumored to have been utilized for spiritual purposes. Additionally, stories and legends attribute them having been built by either royalty or secret/fraternal societies.

For centuries, rumors and tales of these networks of underground tunnels and structures were too ridiculous to be believed. Instead of debunking them, modern archaeological findings are now validating not only that they existed, but that they *still* exist – many remaining completely intact. Today's scientists haven't even begun to scratch the surface in exploring and studying them, but ground-penetrating radar confirms they are there.

If the evidence now validates that these once-fabled underground systems and structures actually exist, then is it possible that the absurd legends surrounding them – concerning the elite descending into them in order to convene with, learn from, and glean technology from a 'superior' race of beings – may also have some basis in fact?

DUMBs (Deep Underground Military Bases)

"On Sept. 10... Rumsfeld promised change [in military budget

UNDERGROUND

waste,] but the next day — Sept. 11 [2001] — the world changed and in the rush to fund the war on terrorism, the war on waste seems to have been forgotten.

"Just last week President Bush announced, 'my 2003 budget calls for more than \$48 billion in new defense spending.'

"More money for the Pentagon, CBS News Correspondent Vince Gonzales reports, while its own auditors admit **the military cannot account for 25 percent of what it spends.**

"According to some estimates **we cannot track \$2.3 trillion in transactions,**' Rumsfeld admitted.

"\$2.3 trillion — that's \$8,000 for every man, woman and child in America. To understand how the Pentagon can lose track of trillions, consider the case of one military accountant who tried to find out what happened to a mere \$300 million.

"We know it's gone. But **we don't know what they spent it on,**' said Jim Minnery, Defense Finance and Accounting Service.

"Minnery, a former Marine turned whistle-blower, is risking his job by speaking out for the first time about the millions he noticed were missing from one defense agency's balance sheets. Minnery tried to follow the money trail, even crisscrossing the country looking for records.

"**The director looked at me and said 'Why do you care about this stuff?'** It took me aback, you know? My supervisor asking me why I care about doing a good job," said Minnery.

"He was reassigned and says **officials then covered up the problem by just writing it off.**"

— CBS News report *The War On Waste*, January 20th, 2002
(emphasis added)⁴

It's no secret that the military has deep protective bunkers, established for the purpose of providing a safe place for leaders to exist and conduct operations during a time of war. We've seen recreations of them (and occasionally some actual footage of them) in movies since at least the 1980's. It started to become rather-common knowledge that they were being created during the Cold War in the 1950's. Therefore, it should be no surprise to anyone that underground military bunkers exist.

However, what might be surprising to the point of disbelief is that the U.S. military *never stopped developing many more of them*, and has been

constantly pouring unfathomable amounts of money into expanding them: stocking them with food, water and various supplies; even outfitting them to the point of perpetual sustainability, with their own power plants (possibly the football-sized cold fusion reactors mentioned in the document *Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars*, reprinted in Volume I), air-water-sewage treatment/recycling systems, as well as crop growing/harvesting areas – all located a mile or more underground.

In the mid 1990's, a military contractor whistle-blower, Philip Schneider, disclosed that the military, by that time, had no fewer than 129 of them located throughout the United States, *each of them the size of a whole city*. Additionally, each location is connected though an elaborate system of tunnels. Here are Schneider's own words about them⁵ (underlined emphasis interpreted from source, other emphasis added):

"I love the country I am living in more than I love my life, but I would not be standing before you now, risking my life, if I did not believe it was [necessary].... The Black Budget is a secretive budget that garners 25% of the gross national product of the United States. The Black Budget currently consumes \$1.25 trillion per year. At least this amount is used in black programs, like those concerned with deep underground military bases. Presently, there are 129 deep underground military bases in the United States.

"They have been building these 129 bases day and night, unceasingly, since the early 1940's. *Some of them were built even earlier than that. These bases are basically large cities underground* connected by high-speed magneto-leviton trains that have speeds up to Mach 2.... In around where you live, in Idaho, there are 11 of [these bases].

"The average depth of these bases is over a mile, and they again are basically whole cities underground. *They all are between 2.66 and 4.25 cubic miles in size*. [Ed. Note: by comparison, consider that Manhattan island is 13.4 miles long and merely 2.3 miles at its widest point – only four of these 129 underground-city-bases make up the equivalent square footage of Manhattan.] They have laser-drilling machines that can drill a tunnel seven miles long in one day. The Black Projects side-step the authority of Congress, which as we know is illegal. Right now, *the New World Order is depending on these bases*. If I had known at the time I was working on them that the NWO was involved, I would not have done it. I was lied to rather extensively....

"*Each one of these underground military bases costs somewhere between seventeen and twenty-six billion dollars, they employ 1,800 to 10,000 workers each, in varying grades of skill, [and] they gobble up over one quarter of the Black Budget, or roughly \$310,000,000,000 [a year]."*

More information about Philip Schneider and his whistle-blowing

UNDERGROUND

disclosures is presented later. Before getting to that, ponder this summary of referenced information about DUMBs by researcher Arjun Walia, about what has become public information regarding these underground facilities as recently as 2013. Note that what he reviews is *public* information – *none of this is unfounded speculation* – and most of what he covers has been declassified and/or was obtained primarily through FOIA, the Freedom of Information Act, petitions (emphasis added)⁶:

"The United States has a history of government agencies existing in secret. The National Security Agency (NSA) was founded in 1952, its existence was hidden until the mid 1960's. Even more secretive is the National Reconnaissance Office, which was founded in 1960 but remained completely concealed for 30 years.

"Recent leaks from Edward Snowden, a former intelligence contractor, have shed light on the black budget world. This is a world full of ***Special Access Programs (SAP)*** that garnishes trillions of dollars every year to conduct operations the general public knows nothing about. *These programs do not exist publicly, but they do indeed exist.* They are better known as 'deep black programs.' ***A 1997 US Senate report described them as "so sensitive that they are exempt from standard reporting requirements to the Congress"***. One aspect of these 'deep black programs' is the development of deep underground military bases, and they can go up to several miles underneath the surface.

"There are also known underground facilities in existence. Take for example, the Swedish underground military facility at Musko. *It's a large naval base built underneath a mountain.* The hospital alone within this facility holds over 1,000 beds. Musko engineers blasted out 1,500,000 cubic meters of stone in order to build it....

"In 1987 Deputy Director of Engineering and Construction for the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, Lloyd A. Duscha, gave a speech at an engineering conference entitled "Underground Facilities for Defense – Experience and Lessons." In the first paragraph of his speech he states the following:

'After World War II, political and economic factors changed the underground construction picture and *caused a renewed interest to 'think underground.'* As a result of this interest, the Corps of Engineers became involved in the *design and construction of some very complex and interesting military projects.* Although the conference program indicates the topic to be 'Underground Facilities for Defense – Experience and Lessons,' I must deviate a little because ***several of the most interesting facilities that have been designed and constructed by the Corps are classified.***

"He then went into a discussion of the Corps' involvement in the 1960's in the construction of the large and elaborate NORAD [North American

Aerospace Defense Command] base buried deep beneath Cheyenne Mountain, in Colorado. *This is just a public statement, but you will not find a more significant public admission of secret, underground bases than this one.* People speaking is not the only evidence available, there are actual documents obtained by researchers through the Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) that shed more light on the subject, and *clearly outline plans for the contraction of underground facilities.*

"There are documents available which expose a deep underground command center that was to be built far below areas such as Washington, D.C. and China Lake, California during the Cold War. Documents available show that in 1964 the military was considering building a huge underground cavity 4,000 feet deep beneath China Lake. It's well known that the United States and the Soviet Union created a vast infrastructure to support a complex of offensive and defensive weapons during the Cold War. This infrastructure included sites and facilities for developing, testing, storing and manufacturing weapons. There was also a host of communication and command centers.

"The worlds most prominent researcher on Underground Military Facilities (in my opinion) Richard Sauder, Ph.D, told of an interesting story in his book *Hidden In Plain Site* that I'd like to share with you.

"As it happens, after giving a public talk a couple of years ago, I was approached by a man who had been a uniformed member of the United States Navy. We chatted for a while and when he mentioned that he had spent some time at China Lake my ears perked up. I asked him if there was an underground facility at China Lake. He said that *indeed there is, and that it is impressively large and deep.* I asked him if he had ever been in it, and he said that he had, though not to the deepest levels. I asked him how deep the deepest part extended. He looked at me soberly and said very quietly, *'It goes one mile deep.'* [Ed. Note: realize that he is not saying that this base is located one mile below the surface, he is saying that *the base itself goes "one mile deep"*.] I then asked him what the underground base contains. He replied, 'Weapons.' I responded, "What sort of weaponry?" And he answered without pausing, "***Weapons more powerful than nuclear weapons.***"...

"[A memo by the Secretary of Defense under President Kennedy, Robert McNamara, was issued on November 7th, 1963] concerning a proposed Deep Underground National Command Center that would be approximately 3,500 feet underground Washington. The memo also mentioned elevator shafts below the State Department and White House that would descend to 3,500 feet with high speed, horizontal tunnel transport to the main facility. *Remember we are talking about the 1960's, what type of technology would be available for them to complete a project like this?...*

"Secret military bases used to be labeled in the conspiracy theory category. [And yet,] not long ago, the Department of Defense officially declassified

UNDERGROUND

the existence of Area 51.

"There are hundreds of military bases, and underground military bases spread all over the world. Dr Richard Sauder documents this phenomenon well in *Hidden In Plain Sight*, among his other works.... In his book he goes on to illustrate the technology behind such developments, under ocean bases, and more... and the next question to ask is what goes on in underground military facilities?

"We know that the military operates at these defense installations, and it's safe to assume that a number of classified projects go in within them. One [such topic] that seems to be a common occurrence that's related to Deep Underground Military Facilities are UFOs and extraterrestrials.

"Best selling British author and researcher, Timothy Good, has written several books dealing with the question of possible extraterrestrial interaction with Earth. Another one that comes to mind is historian and UFO researcher Richard Dolan. Both have hinted to having been privy to some very interesting information in some of their books.

"In *After Disclosure*, Dolan shares an experience he had with a politician who was deep underground in a military base. He was briefed on the extraterrestrial reality and said that *ET's and UFOs are just the tip of the iceberg when it comes to information that's concealed from the public.*

"Timothy Good has been privy to information from a variety of sources, including private ones that discuss a variety of locations around the world for alleged undersea and underground extraterrestrial bases. Abductees and contactees constantly refer to deep underground installations within the planet. Could the extraterrestrial phenomenon be directly related to Deep Underground Military Facilities?

"I've had two personal encounters with Canadian Military Personnel. One of them was a Coast Guard veteran; he personally told me that if I would like to know about extraterrestrials, "come work for us and you can ask them yourself." This is something I'll remember for my entire life. The second one was bizarre, I encountered a senior Canadian Air Force officer, had a short conversation with him and *brought up UFOs. He instantly turned around and started walking away from me.* About an hour later, in a completely different location, *he walked right by me and didn't even look at me, accompanied by two men in suits."*

To impress further upon the reader that the technology and machinery required to create the above-referenced facilities, tunnel systems, and magnetic rail has existed and expanded for decades, consider what's regarded as both possible and economically feasible in this article which appeared in the Los Angeles Times on June 11th, 1972 (all emphasis added):

L.A. to N.Y. in Half an Hour? 10,000 MPH Tunnel Train Plan Developed

"A Rand corporation physicist has devised a rapid transit system to get you from Los Angeles to N.Y. in half an hour for a \$50 fare. He said ***existing technology made such a system feasible and so does a cost analysis***. The essence of the idea is to dig a tunnel more or less along the present routes of U.S. highways 66 and thirty. The tunnel would contain several large tubes for East West travel of ***trains that float on magnetic fields***, moving at top speeds of 10,000 mph. Passengers would be faced forward during acceleration, backward during deceleration.

"According to R. M. Salter Jr., head of the physical sciences department at Rand, the idea of high-speed train travel using electromagnetic suspension was *first put forward in 1905 and actually patented in 1912*. The trains he suggests now would be single cars rather than actual trains, and would be big enough to carry both passengers and freight, including large containers and automobiles.

"The cars, or gondolas, would leave the New York and Los Angeles terminals at one minute or even 30 second intervals. On the main line there would be intermediate stops at Amarillo and Chicago. Feeder lines would meet the main lines at both locations.

"There would also be subsidiary lines coming into the two main terminals from such cities as San Francisco, Boston and Washington. *The main idea of VHST, or Very High Speed Transit, developed originally in thinking about the satellite program and hyper sonic aircraft speeds.*" Salter said in an interview at Rand....

"He figures the tunnels would carry seven or 8 million tons of freight a day and that passengers would take to traveling back and forth between the East and West Coast as readily as they now fly between San Francisco and Los Angeles. ***'The technology of this is much easier than was developed for the space program.'*** Salter said. And ***tunnels***, he added, ***need not be so expensive to dig as people think...***

"Projections of future airplane and automobile travels in the United States, and the future train and truck transfer of freight, show that Salter's tunnel idea is not a science fiction fantasy. There will be more room in the tunnels for all the necessary transport than there will be over any feasible number of Airways and freeways and tracks. Salter's suggestion, according to the experts who have had a look at it, is *an eminently practical one* for handling all the necessary traffic cleanly and without clogging up the air and surface pathways...."

Additionally, refer to the following images. Additional images and video compilations are provided in the supporting material.⁸ (Text of Images 4 and 9 are provided in Chapter Endnotes.^{9 10})

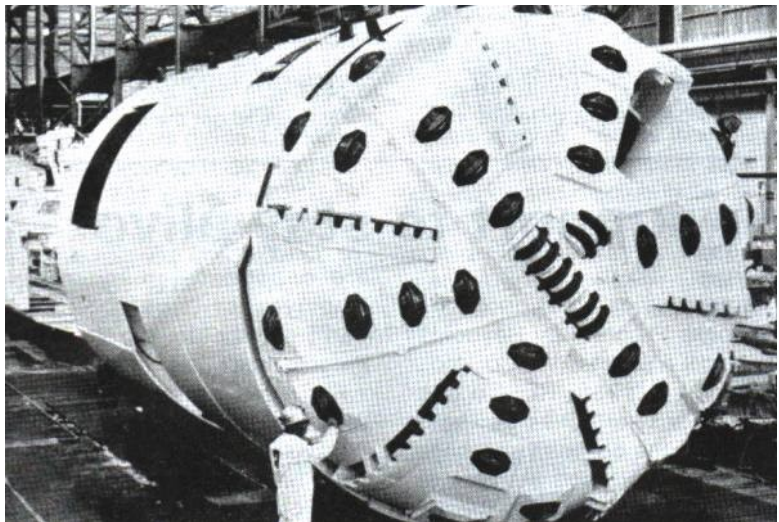


Image 1 – Undated photo of comparatively small tunnel boring machine (TBM)



Image 2 – Photo of United States Air Force tunnel boring machine (TBM) at Little Skull Mountain, Nevada, USA, December 1982

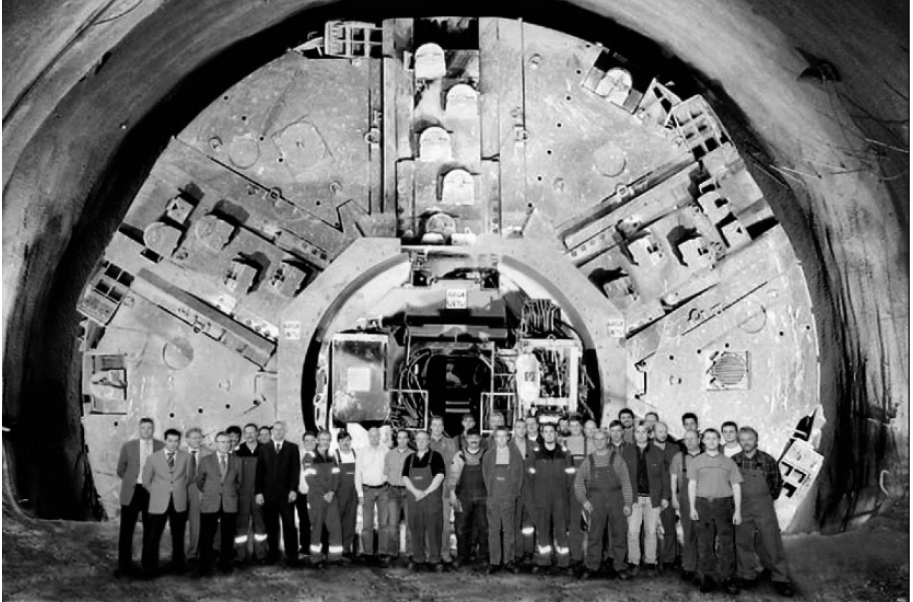


Image 3 – Photo of larger tunnel boring machine; location and date taken unknown
Based upon clothing trends, photo was likely taken in the late 1970's

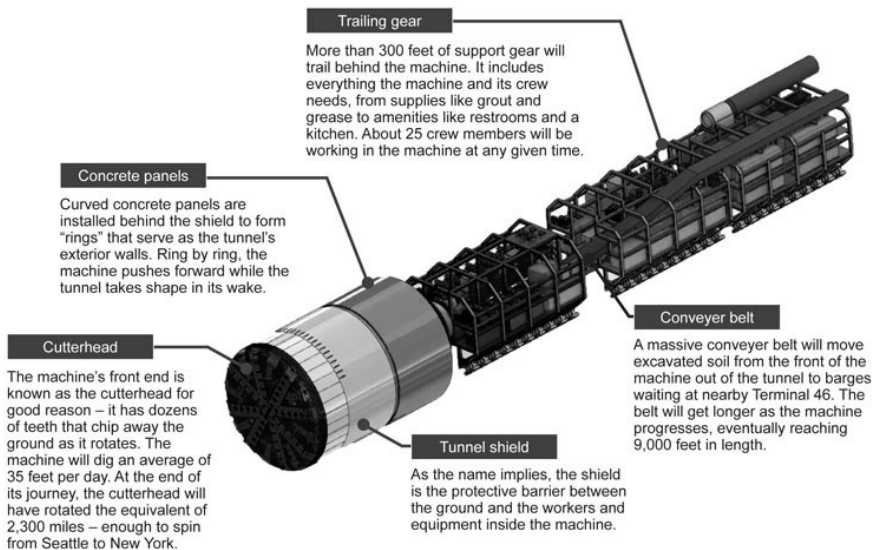


Image 4 – Diagram of how TBMs function, obtained from the Washington State Department of Transportation website

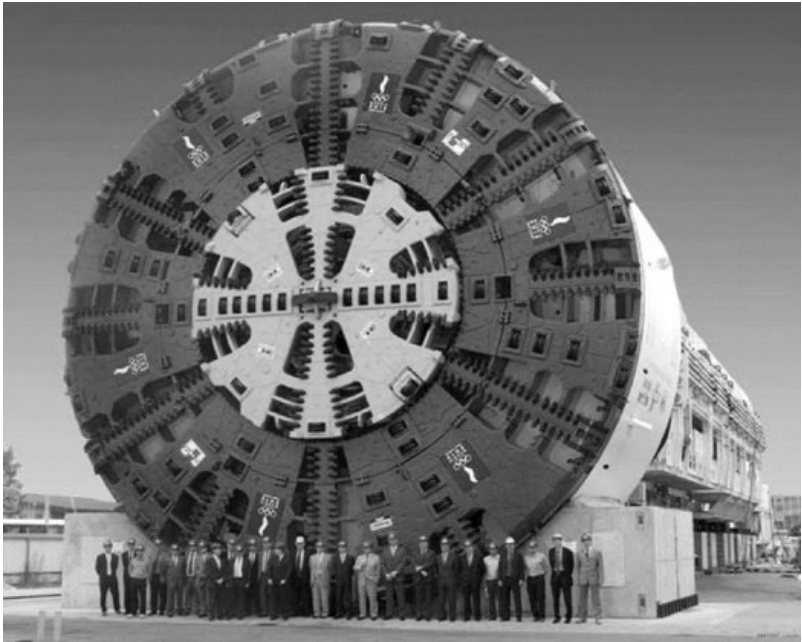
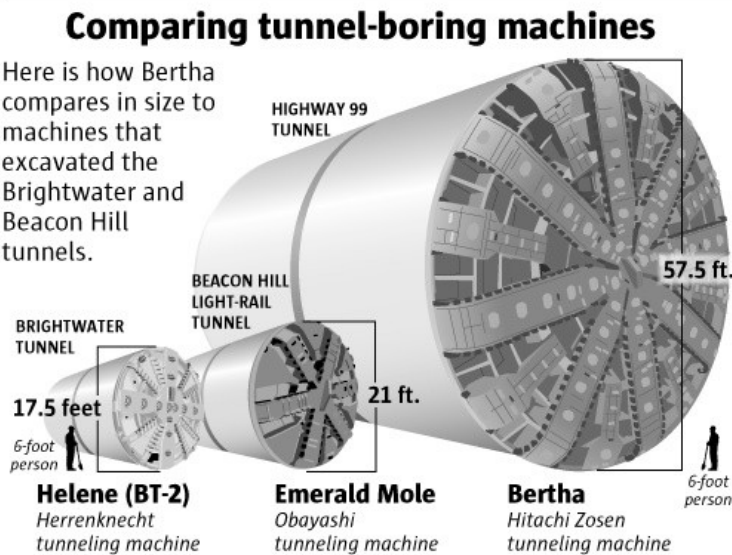


Image 5 – Bertha: “the world’s largest TBM,” circa 2013



MARK NOWLIN / THE SEATTLE TIMES

Image 6 – Bertha compared to other TBMs, Seattle Times 2013



Image 7 – Entry portion of the tunnel excavated by Bertha in Seattle.
Photo taken Oct. 24th, 2013. Source: Seattle Post-Intelligencer



Image 8 – Tunnel being constructed for an electromagnetic-levitation system,
location and date unknown

United States Patent

Armstrong et al.

[15] 3,693,731

[45] Sept. 26, 1972

[54] METHOD AND APPARATUS FOR TUNNELING BY MELTING

[72] Inventors: Dale E. Armstrong, Santa Fe; Berthus B. McInteer; Robert L. Mills; Robert M. Potter; Eugene S. Robinson; John C. Rowley; Morton C. Smith, all of Los Alamos, N. Mex.

[73] Assignee: The United States of America as represented by the United States Atomic Energy Commission

[22] Filed: Jan. 8, 1971

[21] Appl. No.: 104,872

[52] U.S. Cl. 175/11, 175/16, 175/19

[51] Int. Cl. E21c 21/00

[58] Field of Search. 175/11-16

[56] References Cited

UNITED STATES PATENTS

3,396,806 8/1968 Benson 175/16 X

3,117,634	1/1964	Persson	175/94
1,993,641	3/1935	Aarts et al.	175/13
1,898,926	2/1933	Aarts et al.	175/16
3,115,194	12/1963	Adams	175/11
3,225,843	12/1965	Orloff	175/94 X
3,357,505	12/1967	Armstrong et al.	175/16

Primary Examiner—Marvin A. Champion
Assistant Examiner—Richard E. Favreau
Attorney—Roland A. Anderson

[57] ABSTRACT

A machine and method for drilling bore holes and tunnels by melting in which a housing is provided for supporting a heat source and a heated end portion and in which the necessary melting heat is delivered to the walls of the end portion at a rate sufficient to melt rock and during operation of which the molten material may be disposed adjacent the boring zone in cracks in the rock and as a vitreous wall lining of the tunnel so formed. The heat source can be electrical or nuclear but for deep drilling is preferably a nuclear reactor.

6 Claims, 7 Drawing Figures

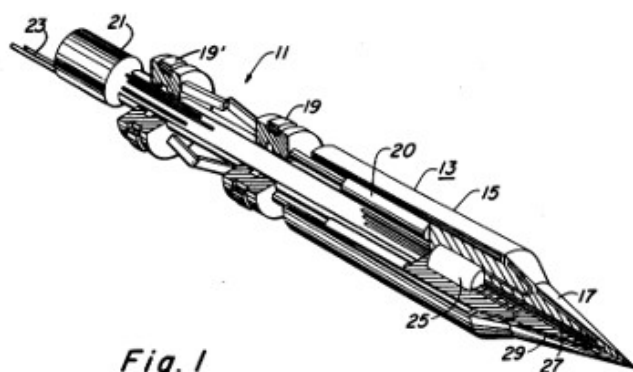


Fig. 1

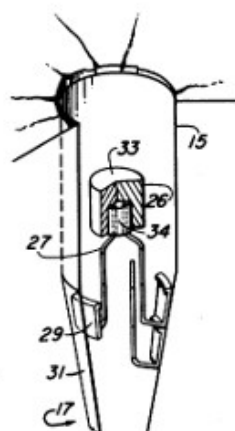


Fig. 2

INVENTOR.

Dale E. Armstrong, Berthus B. McInteer,
Robert L. Mills, Robert M. Potter,
Eugene S. Robinson, John C. Rowley,
Morton C. Smith

BY *Roland A. Anderson*
attorney

Image 9 – A compilation of images from a 1972 patent for a component of a TBM which melts rock instead of boring through it, and pushes the molten stone into the crevices around the TBM, fashioning a "vitreous wall lining" for the completed tunnel

Trading Riches For Refuge Inside of Rocks

And they shall go into the holes of the rocks, and into the caves of the earth, for fear of the Lord, and for the glory of his majesty, when he ariseth to shake terribly the earth. In that day a man shall cast his idols of silver, and his idols of gold, which they made each one for himself to worship, to the moles and to the bats; to go into the clefts of the rocks, and into the tops of the ragged rocks, for fear of the Lord, and for the glory of his majesty, when he ariseth to shake terribly the earth.

– Isaiah 2:19-21

And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains; And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us [i.e. cover us], and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?

– Revelation 6:15-17

Former Navy SEAL and ex-governor of Minnesota, Jesse Ventura, has been an outspoken critic of government and corporate corruption for decades. Since the events of 9/11/2001, he has unceasingly been looking into conspiracy and secretive matters. In Volume I, I quoted from his book *Don't Start The Revolution Without Me*, and mentioned how, despite being a proven multi-million-copies-sold author, over twenty-two major and minor publication companies refused to print his book. Since that time, he has authored the following:

- *American Conspiracies* (published in 2010)
- *63 Documents the Government Doesn't Want You to Read* (published in 2011)
- *DemoCRIPS and ReBLOODlicans: No More Gangs in Government* (published in 2012)
- *They Killed Our President: 63 Reasons to Believe There Was a Conspiracy to Assassinate JFK* (published in 2013)

Starting in 2009, Ventura used his influence (as well as some of his own personal funds) to produce a TV show called *Conspiracy Theory with Jesse*

UNDERGROUND

Ventura, which is a reality series which chronicles Ventura and a team of investigators in searching for information which will either validate or debunk various conspiracy rumors. It was rejected by all the major networks and most satellite channels. However, a small channel which specializes in rather cheap reality TV shows picked it up, and it proved to be such a huge hit that it has put the channel "on the map." Three seasons were produced and aired, all of which are now viewable in full on YouTube and other streaming video websites. Despite the entertainment-minded-and-edited style, I highly recommend viewing them all, as most of them ask truly pressing questions and contain very revealing, credible information about the various topics he explores.

In Season 1 episode 7, *Apocalypse 2012* (which aired on January 13, 2010), Ventura spends nearly the entire episode exploring the reality of underground military base-cities throughout America.¹¹ One of his investigative team members visits Cheyenne Mountain Command Center, and is escorted around by Deputy Commander Robert Wynn. Here are transcribed portions of their conversation:

INVESTIGATOR: What kind of civilians might be allowed in [during crisis]?

WYNN: The civilians that support the mission....

INVESTIGATOR: Everybody seems to know where this facility is. Let's say that there's a 'mass event', a terrible crisis like [what is predicted to occur in] 2012. What would happen in the event that hundreds of thousands of people stormed the gates and want to get in?

WYNN: That would be a problem. We would have to 'control' that kind of an entourage coming up to the facility.

INVESTIGATOR: Are your security forces prepared to fire on American citizens to protect the facility?

WYNN: Um----- They're trained to protect this facility.

INVESTIGATOR: And they'll do what it takes.

WYNN: And they'll do what it takes....

INVESTIGATOR: Let's say there is a crisis in 2012... can I come back if something terrible happens?

WYNN: We'll probably have the blast doors closed by the time you get here.

INVESTIGATOR: So, knocking on them will do me no good?

WYNN: You can knock all day long.

Ventura also talks with contractors who specialize in converting former missile silos into 14-story doomsday bunkers for “very wealthy individuals.” He even visits and gets lowered into a silo that a contractor will soon convert. After asking what he knows about underground government facilities, one private contractor alludes to a major underground city he’s aware of directly below an obvious several-square-miles-large facility. When pressed for more details, the man replies, “If you were building a major metropolitan airport, think how easy it would be to build underneath it.” Without daring to name it on camera, the man was referring to the relatively-new Denver International Airport, built in 1994. Ventura makes the following observations about it:

“There’s a lot of strange things about this airport. It’s twenty-five miles from Denver; that’s nineteen miles farther away than old Stapleton airport, which seemed to be just fine. And they didn’t just lay down runways and build terminals, they’ve got enough fiber optic cables to cover a city, a fueling system that’s much bigger than any airport would ever need, underground tunnels you can drive trucks through, and it just happens to be in the middle of a big, flat, vacant piece of land that’s twice the size of Manhattan.”

Ventura then explores the airport with esoteric researcher, Jay Weidner. Some of the hidden-in-plain-sight symbolism they witness include:

- A Masonic dedicatory plaque, placed by the “New World Airport Commission,” which states that there is a “time capsule beneath this stone [which] contains messages and memorabilia to the people of Colorado in 2094”¹²
- A 9,000 pound, 32-feet tall blue cast-fiberglass statue of a demonic-looking mustang horse with glowing red eyes.¹³ It is eerily reminiscent of artistic depictions of one of the four horses of the apocalypse mentioned in the book of Revelation by John. It is so unnerving in appearance that some Denver locals refer to it as “Blucifer, the Demon Horse.”
- Two different cast bronze statues, each of a winged gargoyle sitting within an open suitcase.¹⁴ One looks out over the east baggage claim area, the other over the west area. The two gargoyles are different in appearance, though both of them are depicted with their hands placed on either side of their face. Denver International Airport’s website states the following about them: “Historically, gargoyles were placed on buildings to protect the site. DIA’s gargoyles sit slightly above travelers’ heads to help ensure the safe arrival of baggage.”¹⁵
- Probably most disturbing of all, a tremendous 3-part mural¹⁶ – the first section depicting natural disasters and mass famine, with children

UNDERGROUND

crying and dying – the second showing a huge, masked soldier wielding a big sword and a white dove of peace pierced on the tip of it – the third showing many children from different cultures celebrating together atop of the soldier laying dead below them.

On a personal note, I lived and worked in a suburb north of Denver during 1998 and 1999. Every two weeks I flew to Salt Lake City for a weekend to be with my wife. I have traveled in and out of Denver International Airport dozens of times, and personally saw the above-mentioned mural every single time. Also, the only way to and from the concourses to the terminal is through an underground light rail system. With some curiosity at the time, I noticed that the rail tracks appear to continue far beyond both the terminal and the final concourse stop.

Ventura talks with the police officers at the airport, and they confirm that the underground rail system is extensive: "You see the train you take down here? It actually runs under all the tarmacs and everything" – another officer chimes in saying, "there's tunnels on each side of the train, the east tunnel and west tunnel."

As Ventura is leaving the airport during this 2009 episode, not far from the terminal he witnesses excavation machines and construction material, including a sign that reads "DIA Construction Support." Ventura comments, "Clearly there's a lot of construction still going on when you look at this, because these aren't abandoned places out here." They look out on fields full of dirt and debris, and Weidner adds, "See that? That pile of dirt way over there? That's not a mountain, that's dirt. This is completely flat [land] here, this is great plains. That dirt came from somewhere." They pass huge fields filled with excavated stone and dirt, and Ventura comments, "Look at the massive quantity of rock!" Then they pass by dozens of long rectangular structures roughly 10 feet in height, lined up next to each other, and Ventura states, "What in the hell are those? Those are absolutely for a tunnel."

On November 22, 2010, Denver's Fox31 News team attempted to debunk Ventura's findings and conclusions. A camera crew was invited by the airport to be escorted down below.¹⁷ The piece spares no verbal jab, mocking conspiracy rumormongers and the many concerns of Denver residents who are creeped-out by the esoteric symbology throughout the airport. Ironically however, the piece is far more revealing than debunking.

As the crew gets escorted by a DIA manager named Jeff Green, they film long, spacious tunnels for vehicles, which Green dismisses merely as a route for transporting baggage from planes to the baggage claim area. However, reporter Heidi Hemmat notes the following about an automated conveyor track system, which follows along the top of the tunnels, and is definitely big enough to move all but the largest/oddest-shaped luggage:

"Miles of track that were supposed to be used for an automated baggage system that never worked. That's why hundreds of baggage handlers now race through this underground maze, delivering luggage from one plane to another. DIA's Jeff Green admits it's an underground city..."

Curious terms to use in an attempt to debunk: "underground maze", "admits it's an underground city." Also, the ceiling-mounted automatic conveyor belt system appears to be in good working condition and readily usable, as if it was just turned off at the time the camera crew was there. To state that something so expensive and elaborate "never worked" since its construction in 1993 seems ludicrous. Why would a multi-billion-dollar, state-of-the-art modern airport build an elaborate automated luggage conveyor system, but then never bother to get it functioning correctly? More than likely its purpose is either not for conveying luggage at all, or its just a half-baked attempt to convince the viewer that these extensive "underground maze" tunnels were built solely for ferrying luggage from tarmac to terminal. The report continues:

HEMMAT (voice over): Green promises there are no hidden bunkers here.

HEMMAT (speaking to Green): And you are showing us everything that's under-

GREEN: I'm showing you everything I possi- [stammers] that I'm – tha-tha – that I can find, that I know is here.

HEMMAT (voice over): But he didn't sound very convincing.

Even the supportive, no-hardball-questions reporter doesn't buy it.

In Season 3, episode 4, *Ozarks* (which aired on November 26, 2012), Ventura and his team explored the rumors of massive secretive construction that has been occurring within the Ozark mountains of Arkansas.¹⁸ The entire episode is required viewing. Some key aspects:

- A small region of the Ozarks has seen an inexplicable influx of banks popping up. One of Ventura's investigators, June Sarpong, summarizes the situation this way: "In New York, you have one bank per 7,000 people. In L.A., one bank per 11,000 people. In a tiny region of the Ozarks, a place called Mountain View, Arkansas, you have one bank per 53 people."
- A massively-reinforced 72,000 square foot fortress-mansion, named "Pensmore," is being erected on a hill in Highlandville, Missouri. It is on record now as being the 4th largest home in America, and is described as "a modern-day, state-of-the-art, energy efficient, disaster-proof castle" that has bullet-proof windows and can withstand a nuclear blast. It is being built by billionaire Steven Huff, who started out in U.S.

UNDERGROUND

Army Intelligence, then worked for the CIA, and is now the Vice President and Chief Technology Officer of Overwatch Systems Geospatial Operations – a military contractor providing global satellite surveillance solutions.

- The number of “earthquakes” being felt (especially around the small town of Mountain View) have been increasing exponentially. The residents report that they typically feel four or five tremors daily, some days up to ten. In 2009, the state of Arkansas reported 39 earthquakes; in 2011, there were 788 reported. Nature's fury or underground blasting?

In the final ten minutes of the episode, Ventura and his team drive up to a multiple-entrance location at the base of one mountain, and proceed to drive into one of the entrances. They drive on and on and on – tunnels and tunnels and tunnels branching off every which way. Ventura's voice over is as follows (emphasis added):

“This place isn't only the largest underground facility in the area, they say it's the largest in the world. Look at this! They've got room for two lanes of 18-wheelers. The road literally goes on for miles. Look, there it's branching off again! Who knows where that leads?... [Ed. Note: as they pass over embedded train tracks, Ventura states the following] This thing's hooked up to railroad, too.

“This facility covers 50 million square feet, all underground, all climate controlled. They've got warehouses for food, data, all sorts of things. Offices, manufacturing, even underground farming and stockpiles of crude oil.... This is huge. This is an underground city. And there are dozens of these across the region?”

[Ed. Note: As they head out of a different exit, Ventura's voice over continues:] “We head back into daylight, and what do you know? Just across the way [are] railroad tracks and parking lots, full of buses and green-energy vehicles. It's like they got door-to-door transportation for the 'chosen few' when it's time to move inside and weld those doors shut....”

Included in the supporting material is an MP4 video¹⁹ which is a compilation of some recordings that truck drivers have made of these underground storage caverns. The text of the video helps to clarify why these places are not as secure as a standard military compound: “These underground facilities are in a strategic location because they are near the geographic and demographic center of the United States, and they are next to major highways and railroad that give access to all parts of the United States. [They] mainly store food, and the biggest food companies make use of these places because of their strategic location, but these underground facilities also have computer systems, data storage facilities and offices....

These facilities aren't Deep Underground Military bases, and they aren't run by the government or the military, but there is a possibility that they are part of the Continuity of Government program, [which] would involve the storage and distribution of food and other things. And since these places are so secure and are strategically located... [they] would be used for Continuity of Government purposes." The websites that the video provides point to commercial enterprises which lease out space within these extensive caverns. One of these entities²⁰ states that they have 2.4 million square feet of storage space available, and growing. This may help to explain why there are so many banks establishing branches in this tiny city nearby. However, enough to number one per every 53 citizens is still highly alarming, not to mention the frequent, unnatural "earthquakes" occurring up to 10 times a day, leading to the conclusion that massive underground construction is increasing rapidly.

What makes this massive, sprawling-and-growing non-military-nor-government-controlled storage facility all the more interesting is that it demonstrates how feasible it is to create the underground military compound-cities that have been testified of.

And yet, what I find most disturbing about all this is that this underground storage is an "open secret" – the kind of secret where those who are in-the-know don't necessarily make any effort to stop information from being spread, but there's an unspoken climate amongst themselves to not share, and they wittingly do very little to inform anyone else about it—either because there's a gray-legal area (such as possibly tunneling directly under others' private property on the surface), or some other motive to avert or delay imminent negative consequences from too much exposure. Then as rumors spread, bits of information get out, and too many questions are asked, those who are in-the-know and/or responsible can easily retort along the lines of: "What? There's no secret here. Nothing's been hid from you. Nothing nefarious is going on. See? If *you* were not aware of all this, then you only have *yourself* to blame. We're not 'hiding' anything, and we've done nothing wrong. You're only making yourself look all the more ignorant and self-righteous by persisting in crying wolf when there is no wolf."

Yet, simultaneously, those who dare put themselves out there and "cry wolf" are doing everyone not-in-the-know a tremendous service.

All of this causes me to reflect upon my dream of the ant colony in my "backyard." Living in ignorance is a fool's bliss. Had I taken action against the ant colony when it was first forming, had I not procrastinated putting the pile of dirt and top soil to good use, had I not assumed that the ants had "moved on" after I stopped seeing them come and go from the white bag, they never

UNDERGROUND

would have had the opportunity to develop and grow exponentially, completely unhindered. In my dream, my unwillingness to act, to search, to learn, to cease being ignorant resulted in my neighbors' and my doom.

Today, we are facing the disturbing reality that the enemy has grown exponentially. Like the monstrous ants in my dream, they are essentially unstoppable at this point. Like the Nephites of old we are facing an imminent doom, but we are not without hope – we are *never* without individual hope – and miracles never cease.

After taking in and praying about the information of this chapter, hopefully one is not so quick to dismiss the validity of what my former co-worker experienced in the mid 1960's, when he was tasked to repair a

- 1 Source:
http://www.slate.com/blogs/browbeat/2012/07/30/tom_waits_interview_may_have_been_the_inspiration_for_heath_ledger_s_joker_.html
Also refer to the MP4 clip in the Supporting Material: Tom Waits Australia interview 1979 part 1 - inspiration for The Joker
- 2 Sources – <http://www.ancient-origins.net/myths-legends-europe-asia-americas/underground-cities-and-networks-around-world-myths-and-reality> and <http://www.ancient-origins.net/myths-legends-europe-asia-americas/underground-cities-and-networks-around-world-discoveries-part-2>
- 3 There are numerous articles and books about Project Paperclip. Wikipedia's entry is a competent summary: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Operation_Paperclip
- 4 Source: <http://www.cbsnews.com/news/the-war-on-waste/>
- 5 Sources:
Refer to the MP4 video file in the supporting material: Phil Schneider last lecture – November 1995
- 6 Source: <http://www.collective-evolution.com/2013/11/07/right-beneath-your-feet-the-hidden-reality-of-deep-underground-military-bases/>
See original article for references used throughout.
- 7 Source: <http://www.infowars.com/i-a-to-n-y-in-half-an-hour-10000-plus-m-p-h-tunnel-train-used-for-underground-bases/>
- 8 Sources of photos: Image 1 – http://projectcamelot.org/underground_bases.html
Image 2 – Ibid.;
Image 3 – Ibid.;
Image 4 – http://www.wsdot.wa.gov/projects/viaduct/Media/Default/Page/tunneling_tbm_diagram_large.jpg ;
Image 5 – <http://www.firstpeoplesolutions.co.uk/blog/worlds-largest-tunneling-machine-has-started-digging-in-seattle/> ;
Image 6 – <http://blogs.seattletimes.com/today/2013/04/mammoth-tunnel-drilling-machine-arrives-in-seattle/> ;
Image 7 – Ibid.
Image 8 – unknown
Image 9 – <http://www.abovetopsecret.com/forum/thread234998/pg2>

sizable photocopier at the Waco, Texas, Masonic Lodge (detailed in the final

- 9 Text within Image 4, clockwise from top heading – Heading 1: Trailing gear – More than 300 feet of support gear will trail behind the machine. It includes everything the machine and its crew needs, from supplies like grout and grease to amenities like restrooms and a kitchen. About 25 crew members will be working in the machine at any given time. Heading 2: Conveyor belt – A massive conveyor belt will move excavated soil from the front of the machine out of the tunnels to barges waiting at nearby Terminal 46. The belt will get longer as the machine progresses, eventually reaching 9,000 feet in length. Heading 3: Tunnel shield – As the name implies, the shield is the protective barrier between the ground and the workers and equipment inside the machine. Heading 4: Cutterhead – The machine's front end is known as the cutterhead for good reason – it has dozens of teeth that chip away the ground as it rotates. The machine will dig an average of 35 feet per day. At the end of its journey, the cutterhead will have rotated the equivalent of 2,300 miles – enough to spin from Seattle to New York. Heading 5: Concrete panels – Curved concrete panels are installed behind the shield to form “rings” that serve as the tunnel's exterior walls. Ring by ring, the machine pushes forward while the tunnel takes shape in its wake.
- 10 Small text within Image 9: United States Patent, Armstrong et al. – [54] METHOD AND APPARATUS FOR TUNNELING BY MELTING [72] Inventors: Dale E. Armstrong, Santa Fe; Berthus B. McInteer; Robert L. Mills; Robert M. Potter; Eugene S. Robinson; John C. Rowley; Morton C. Smith, all of Los Alamos, N. Mex. [73] Assignee: The United States of America as represented by the United States Atomic Energy Commission [22] Filed: Jan. 8, 1971 [21] Appl. No.: 104,872 [52] U.S. Cl.....175/11, 175/16, 175/19 [51] Int. Cl.....E21c 21/00 [58] Field of Search.....175/11-16 [56] References Cited UNITED STATES PATENTS 3,396,806 8/1968 Benson.....175/16 X, 3,117,634 1/1964 Persson.....175/94, 1,993,641 3/1935 Aarts et al.....175/13, 1,898,926 2/1933 Aarts et al.....175/16, 3,115,194 12/1963 Adams.....175/11, 3,225,843 12/1965 Ortloff.....175/94 X, 3,357,505 12/1967 Armstrong et al.....175/16. Primary Examiner–Marvin A. Champion, Assistant Examiner–Richard E. Favreau, Attorney–Roland A. Anderson. [57] ABSTRACT A machine and method for drilling bore holes and tunnels by melting in which a housing is provided for supporting a heat source and a heated end portion and in which the necessary melting heat is delivered to the walls of the end portion at a rate sufficient to melt rock and during operation of which the molten material may be disposed adjacent the boring zone in cracks in the rock and as a vitreous wall lining of the tunnel so formed. The heat source can be electrical or nuclear but for deep drilling is preferably a nuclear reactor. 6 Claims, 7 Drawing Figures
- 11 Refer to the AVI file in the Supporting Material: Conspiracy Theory with Jesse Ventura S01E07.avi
- 12 Refer to the image in the Supporting Material: Masonic Denver Airport plaque.jpg
- 13 Refer to the image in the Supporting Material: Denver International Airport Blue Mustang.jpg
- 14 Refer to the image in the Supporting Material: Denver International Airport Goblin Statue 1a.jpg and ...2a.jpg
- 15 Source: <http://flydenver.com/artexhibitsdetail?URI=tcm:8-34025&PURI=tcm:8-34002>

UNDERGROUND

chapter of Volume I, *And Now, Down The Rabbit Hole We Go.*) Like Alice's experience, the journey down this "rabbit hole" gets increasingly bizarre as we move on. Please continue to seek the companionship of the Holy Ghost as you read; the things that follow are potentially overwhelming even to consider.

Beyond the now-proven reality of extensive secret ancient tunneling, and the indisputable mounting evidence regarding the modern development of massive underground cities and military bases, things are about to get both weirder and harder to "prove." A lot of what follows is based upon whistle-blower testimony and circumstantial evidence that fits into the overall equation.

It is up to the reader to pray and ask God for confirmation by the Holy Spirit whether or not these whistle-blowers can be trusted, and whether their testimonies are an accurate representation of the truth. To the extent to which I am convinced that their testimonies are credible, and that the Holy Ghost has confirmed to my soul that what they say is accurate, I have included them within this book. As one continues, it is strongly recommended that the reader pause, reflect, study, ponder, and sincerely ask God to confirm the truth of these matters to one's soul.

-
- 16 For a comprehensive slideshow that provides detailed images of the esoteric art, symbology and murals throughout Denver International Airport, refer to the MP4 file in the supporting material: Slideshow of Denver International Airport esoteric art and murals.mp4
 - 17 Refer to the MP4 video in the Supporting Material: Denver Airport Allows Camera Crew in Underground Facility.mp4
 - 18 Refer to the AVI file in the Supporting Material: Conspiracy Theory with Jesse Ventura S03E04.avi
 - 19 Refer to the MP4 video in the supporting material titled: Tour of Underground Facilities in Missouri.mp4
 - 20 Source: <http://springfieldunderground.com>

Journal Excerpt 2 - December 1989 (16 years old)

A few weeks ago, me and some guys did something crazy. I'm still not sure what to think about it. ----- and I met up with a couple of his friends. I don't really know them very well, but they're good guys. One of them suggested we take a look at the old military bunkers off the coast of Huntington Beach. He said his friend told him about all kinds of weird stuff that happens in them, and he knows where there's a hole in the chain link fence large enough to sneak in the area.

I've seen this off-limits coastal area of HB many times. It's been government property since World War II. From what I understand they put some military base there in preparation for a Japanese attack. I've never seen the bunkers there, though. The guy says they're back a ways beyond the fence, and they're kind of "A-shaped" with dirt and grass on the sides and on top - in order to camouflage them from Japanese bombers....

We drove over and parked a block away from the fence, in the residential area. We each had a flashlight. We found the hole in the fence and climbed through. Just beyond the fence, the ground slopes up considerably, and there was lots of little hills and mounds, bushes and stuff, which would be useful to duck behind. The guy said there's a security truck that patrols the area, so we had to be careful.

The bunkers were exactly as he said: shaped like long giant "A"s. I figured they would be locked, but no, not only were the big metal doors unlocked, one was actually ajar a few inches. We pulled it open some more, and one by one we ventured inside. The inside was completely open, no separate rooms, except that on both sides of the sloped "A" walls there were intermittent partitioning walls. No bunk beds or any other kind of furniture, except that within the partitioned areas there were some metal benches. It was spooky at first - my imagination kept thinking that some crazy guy would jump out from behind one of the partition walls - but after a minute of getting used to the eeriness of the darkness pierced by our flashlight beams, it got to the point where we felt more like detectives than four teens out for an adventure. For a few minutes, we separately walked around checking the place out. Lots of trash on the floor and weird stuff spray painted on the walls - not graffiti but weird symbols. Lots of melted candle wax here and there on the floor. -----'s friend found a small pile of lighters and empty syringes. But, the place felt more

like a desecrated tomb than a place where junkies hang out.

-----'s friend started talking about how this is exactly how his friend described it, and that all kinds of weird Satanic sh-- goes down in this place - boys and girls being drugged and raped here - blood rituals - crazy stuff like that. I would have thought I would be really freaked out, or sad, or infuriated at a place like this, but for some reason I just felt numb. I just walked around and observed everything with numbness, not really doubting or accepting any of it. I even stopped being curious after a bit. Despite it all being so creepy, I wasn't even all that scared.

After about ten minutes in there, we slipped out and quietly put the door back into its original ajar position. As we started back, we heard a truck in the distance heading our way. We quickly rushed to the hilly area with the intermittent mounds and bushes. After a moment, it became apparent that the truck wasn't just patrolling -- it was moving fast, straight towards the area where we were. We ducked behind some bushes on the downward slope and quietly waited. The truck stopped nearby and someone inside started pointing a powerful flashlight around, looking for trespassers. The beam passed by our bushes a few times, but the truck eventually slowly moved on. As soon as it moved out of sight, we scrambled down towards the hole in the fence. ----- ended up scraping his leg pretty good. The guy in the truck must have heard us, because it came racing back, and we heard the door open and close.

By then, we were scrambling out of the hole in the fence. We ran to the car and got in, took a moment to calm down, then calmly drove away as to not incur suspicion.

I kind of feel bad for the guard, because obviously he's doing a pretty pathetic job of securing the place. I mean, if you got devil worshipers sneaking in on a regular basis, drugging and raping people, you'd think the military would do a better job of keeping them out! Or at least investigate the crime scene they've got and make a decent effort to catch the perpetrators! Goodness, the bunker door wasn't even CLOSED, let alone LOCKED.

The more I think about it, the more it feels as if they don't even CARE, to the point where they're just LETTING really evil stuff happen there!

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

*Oh let the sun beat down upon my face
Stars to fill my dream
I am a traveler of both time and space
To be where I have been
To sit with elders of the gentle race
This world has seldom seen
They talk of days for which they sit and wait
And all will be revealed*

– Lyrics from the 1975 Led Zeppelin song *Kashmir*

BEN STEIN: What do you think is the possibility that Intelligent Design might turn out to be the answer to some issues in genetics, or in evolution?

RICHARD DAWKINS: It could [have] come about in the following way. It could be that at some earlier time, somewhere in the universe, a civilization evolved (by probably some kind of Darwinian means) to a very, very high level of technology, and designed a form of life that they seeded onto, perhaps, this planet.

Now, that is a possibility – and an intriguing possibility – and I suppose it's possible that you might find evidence for that. If you look at the details of biochemistry [and] molecular biology, you might find a signature of some sort of designer. And that designer could well be a higher intelligence from elsewhere in the universe.

– from a conversation between Ben Stein and Richard Dawkins (an outspoken atheist evolutionary biologist and author of *The God Delusion*) in the documentary *Expelled: No Intelligence Allowed*¹

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

Now that the reader has sufficiently taken in the contents of Volume I (and hopefully has prayed about them, and continues to pray for the companionship of the Holy Ghost while reading this book), and also now has a sufficient understanding of both ancient and modern mass excavation and underground city-building, it is time to go further down the rabbit hole and broach the bizarre subject of “alien” beings.

After the Holy Spirit first awakened me to our awful situation (the experience of which I briefly summarize in Appendix G of Volume I) I scoured the Internet for any and all audio/video material concerning “conspiracy” topics. I gathered and downloaded anything I could find, then organized all of it into categorized folders on my computer. After a couple of weeks of this, I perused my list of topics and pondered which subject to research first. Due to the sheer volume of material out there about it, the answer seemed pretty obvious to me: aliens and UFOs. Just as I was about to open the folder, immediately the Holy Spirit communicated to me, “Delete it.” What? Why? I have amassed over six gigabytes of research material for two weeks about this – and the Lord wants me to delete it? “Yes.” Why? No answer.

After thinking about it for a while, I decided to be obedient to the prompting. I deleted the entire folder, then emptied my Recycling Bin. A minute later, I received the most important communication from the Holy Spirit regarding this topic that I've ever received. It was simple and to the point. No evidences, no clarifications – just brief, pure understanding was given as an answer to my obedience.

If you read and ask the Spirit to verify nothing else in this entire chapter, I implore you to consider what the Holy Spirit communicated to me at that moment in time:

'Aliens' are not beings from other planets. They are demons. UFOs exist, but they are built and piloted by men.

That's it. That's the whole of what the Spirit communicated to me. It blew my mind. I had always equated “UFOs” and “aliens” as one and the same concept – never separating the two. Never had I considered that 'aliens' were potentially anything other than what popular culture defined them as: intergalactic beings. In fact, I had never really considered that they existed at all, let alone that they were possibly some form of demonic being. Additionally, never in my life had I considered the possibility that UFOs were built by men, nor that they could be piloted by men. This new information almost seemed more outrageous than the scenario that little green men have been visiting and observing our planet. And yet, these facts are *exactly* what the Spirit had just directly entrusted to me.

All this began to generate far more questions in my mind than it

answered, such as:

- If such beings that we refer to as “demons” actually exist, how would they differ from “evil spirits?”
- Do they have tangible, physical bodies as these supposed-alien have? If so, how?
- Why would God create (or allow the creation) of something like this?
- What is the origin of such beings?
- Traditionally, a demon is depicted as a humanoid creature with two horns growing out of its head, often having blood-red skin, and sometimes having bat-like leathery wings. And yet, now the Spirit has communicated to me that what is depicted as the “little green/grey men” or “Martian” creatures – which have permeated popular culture since the mysterious Roswell UFO crash of the late 1940's – *these* are “demons.”

I received no further understanding or promptings from the Spirit about the matter, save for the strong encouragement to research *anything else*, and to stay away from alien/UFO material until I'd done due diligence in researching other conspiracy topics.

Despite remaining perplexed and terribly inquisitive about these matters, I followed the Holy Spirit and steered away from the topic altogether. I spent four years thoroughly acquainting myself with as much research about other conspiracy data and whistle-blower testimonies as I could find. I bought and read many books cover to cover, almost insatiably. (I am not a “reader” – I rarely finish reading a book unless I'm completely captivated. I prefer listening to audio books during my commutes to work.) I became a regular consumer and vocal supporter of Alex Jones' websites (Infowars, Prison Planet) as well as his documentaries.

As I consumed information I noticed that, compared to the copious amounts of verifiable documentation and evidence surrounding elite conspiracy, the whole “alien” subject was enshrouded in uncertainty, hearsay, highly questionable testimonies, and strongly biased purveyors of boogie-man mysteries.

As I researched other conspiracy topics, I came to understand how disinformation campaigns function and what their goals are: primarily to generate obfuscation, uncertainty and incredulity about a topic in which there is a strong vested interest in keeping genuine testimony and/or data from being recognized as valid. While valid data or testimony might actually reach the public, disinformation campaigns generate additional conflicting, erroneous and/or illogical data and testimonies – effectually creating a

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

confusing pool of information on the topic, making it nearly impossible for someone to come to a rational consensus on the matter. Sometimes, those who are a part of the disinfo campaign pose as experts and/or authorities on the matter.

The biggest reason that the alien/UFO issue is hopelessly entangled inside a mass of conflicting confusion and paranormal wackiness is primarily due to the great number of disinformation campaigns being concentrated on this topic.

That, and because the subject is so outlandishly strange (even in this modern drenched-in-science-fiction world) that it has become the archetypal subject which immediately brings derision, scorn, and a discreditable reputation to anyone who broaches the subject. For as fringe and outlandish as some people consider Alex Jones, he simply refuses to 'go there' when it comes to "aliens" – emphatically stating, "Look, I am *not* a UFO guy!"

Blessed with hindsight, I am extremely grateful that I followed the Spirit's guidance in avoiding the alien/UFO subject for years, until I was fully acquainted with many other aspects and techniques of conspiracy. It was critical to gain a scriptural and historical perspective of secret combinations first – similar to how it is critical for followers of Christ to take in the foundational, core doctrines of salvation ("milk" of the Gospel), before moving on to ingesting and digesting the mysteries of God ("meat" of the Gospel).

"Thy mind, O man!... must stretch as high as the utmost heavens, and search into and contemplate the darkest abyss, and the broad expanse of eternity—thou must commune with God."

It is time to contemplate what lies within the abyss if we are to expand our understanding of Godly matters and the atonement of Christ.

Meet William "Bill" Cooper

I sincerely believe that any man or woman who does not have principles for which they are ready and willing to die for, at any given moment that they are called upon to do that, is already dead and are of no use or consequence to themselves or anyone else, and will be unhappy throughout their life for that very reason, and that very reason alone.

– Bill Cooper

One day in 2010, as I was perusing some comments posted on an Infowars article, something caught my attention. One comment said something along these lines:

"OK, let's try again. W.I.L.L.I.A.M. C.O.O.P.E.R. Let's see if the Infowars filter will delete this one as well."

The immediate comment thereafter by the same poster said something like this:

"Ha ha! That worked! Ridiculous that the Infowars filter won't screen for foul language or convert bad words into asterisks, yet if anyone tries to post a comment about W.I.L.L.I.A.M. C.O.O.P.E.R., it is immediately trashed. How is that NOT censorship??"

Infowars is filtering out posts that contain even variants of the name "William Cooper"? That's ludicrous. Why would they do that? So... I looked into who this "William Cooper" is.

What I discovered nearly overwhelmed me. Had I not spent the previous four years researching other matters, I would not have been ready to process the personal testimony and lifelong research of William Cooper.

I'll allow him to introduce himself.

The following is a transcript which I transcribed from portions Mr. Cooper's presentation given on February 23rd, 1991.² This is how William "Bill" Cooper introduced himself at this event. (underlined emphasis interpreted from source; other emphasis added):

"Let me give you some background of who I am, so that I won't be some mysterious character up here, prattling off information, which may or may not be true. I was reared in a military family, my father was a command pilot in the United States Air Force, he's a retired lieutenant colonel, lives in the state of Texas now. A command pilot means he literally has flown aircraft for thousands of hours, and he's still alive. He started in bi-planes and he ended up in jets.

"I think I scrambled through every airplane that the Army Air Force ever had, when I was a child. My dad used to take me out to fly planes, to see these planes. I've flown in many of them. I used to eavesdrop on the pilots when they sat around the kitchen table, talked about UFOs, "foo fighters" [i.e. military nickname for flying saucers, unidentifiable flying things], dog fights, and things that went wrong with their airplanes, and everything that you can think of, until they'd get sick of me and my brother and sister and send us out in the yard and play. And then we'd play [i.e. re-enact] what we heard.

"I was reared all over the world on Air Force bases in foreign countries. When I left home I went in the Air Force. I was in the Strategic Air

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

Command. I worked on B-52 bombers, KC-135 Refueling Aircraft, and Minuteman Missiles as an aircraft and missile hydraulics technician.

"I went in when I was 18, I spent four years in, and I got out when I was 22. I met sergeants, people who were over me (but who I became friends with) who, sometimes after about 10 or 12 beers, would begin to tell me the most incredible stories that I'd ever heard in my life, about having participated in teams of Air Force personnel who recovered crashed extra-terrestrial space craft.

"Now you gotta understand that if they'd already had 10 or 12 beers, so had I. Second, you have to understand that 10 or 12 beers at the age of 21, I wasn't interested in extra-terrestrial space craft, I was interested in the girl at the other end of the bar. So I didn't pay too much attention to all of this. And you could never get these guys to talk about it when they were sober. You still can't today.

"In fact, today it's much more difficult because they have means that they have perfected in mind control and memory erasure – to where now *some people who work in very Top Secret projects don't even know what they work on. They know that they go to work in the morning, they get off of work and go home, [and] they don't remember anything that they did all day.* The technology for this is well documented, it's in the public domain, also. And it's one way they've figured out how to keep projects secret. [Ed. Note: keep this in mind, it will be explored later.]

"If you don't believe that the military can keep things secret, consider this: You just recently heard of the stealth fighter for the first time. This is 1991. I think the first mention of it publicly was in 1990.... Would anyone like to venture a guess when the first flight of the stealth fighter took place? (Audience member inaudible.) That's close. It was in the early 70's, ladies and gentlemen, [that the] first stealth fighter flew. So that's pretty good secret-keeping. They can and do keep secrets for many many many years, and nobody knows about it. Now I can tell you this for sure, *if they have revealed publicly the existence of the stealth fighter, they have something else that's secret that makes that look like a Tinkertoy.* That's the way these things go.

"When I left the Air Force, I went into the United States Navy. I had originally wanted to go in the Navy, I love the ocean, I love ships, I love the water, I was a wonderful swimmer, I only had one problem: I got terribly seasick [just looking] at a boat. So that's why I really went into the Air Force. But when I left the Air Force, I had not satisfied my sense of adventure, I still loved the ocean, I still wanted to go in the Navy – so I did.

"I volunteered for submarines, I was stationed aboard the USS Tiru (SS-416), stationed at the Pearl Harbor submarine base. It was an old World War II diesel boat. When I reported to board it, it was in the shipyard and had been cut in half. And you could imagine my chagrin [i.e. great

disappointment], being new to the Navy, standing on the edge of a dry dock, and looking at a submarine cut cleanly in half – knowing that I'm going to have to go underwater in this thing. I really didn't like the thought of that....

"Well, what they [were doing to this sub was inserting] a twelve foot section which became a really sophisticated sonar facility compartment, and [they also] put three domes on the deck so that we can triangulate targets. And when this was done, we could actually compete with some of the best nuclear submarines in being able to track and kill a target. In fact I remember thinking at times [back when I was in the Air Force] how easy it was to detect submarines and keep them from getting near an aircraft carrier – then becoming a crew member on this submarine and *surfacing within a hundred yards of the carrier, not having been detected until we broke water*. Now, to me, that was incredible, because *that meant that the carrier was dead*. If it had been wartime *we could have sunk that carrier very easily*.

"I was acquainted with the state of the art of aircraft technology. I [also] knew what it took to go underwater and survive. It was while on this submarine, as the port lookout, on the transit between the Portland-Seattle area – (we had been up there for the Rose Festival, as a showboat, really; people came down and toured through the sub; and we met a lot of girls and had some really neat dates, and then we left) – and about one-third of the way back from the Portland-Seattle area to Pearl Harbor I was the port lookout.

"We were on the surface doing about 10 knots, when, off the port bow, I saw (and I was the only one who saw it) ***a huge flying disc the size of an aircraft carrier come up out of the water, tumble on its axis, and disappear into the clouds.***

"Well, needless to say, I was stunned. Literally speechless. I started to say something but couldn't talk. Nobody else had seen it, and I knew that they weren't about to believe what I had seen if I'd told them. And it scared me a little bit too, because ***I had never believed in these things even though I'd heard stories about them all my life.*** And I didn't see a dinky little, run-of-the-mill, thirty-foot flying saucer – I saw something as big as an aircraft carrier.

"But I had a duty to report this because it could have meant a danger to the vessel – my duty was to the vessel and to the crew. But I wasn't about to tell the officer of the deck that I'd seen a flying saucer. So I told him (his name was Ensign Ball), I told him that I had seen something off the port bow, [and] would he help me find it because I've lost it. You work that way on the bridge of a ship – you're this team, everybody helps everybody else out. Since the lookout can't leave his station, officers very often bring them coffee.

"Well, he looked over there. The starboard lookout had also heard what I

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

said, he looked over there, too. And I was turning around to look back again, bringing my binoculars up, when the same craft (or another that looked exactly like it, I don't know which to this day), came back down out of the clouds, tumbled again on its axis, and – the most incredible thing happened – *there was no splash. **It was as if the ocean opened up ahead of it, and then it went into the hole, which closed behind it.***

In a separate interview, Bill gives additional clarification regarding this event. The following portion comes from this interview³:

"[The craft] did something that, as far as I knew, was absolutely impossible. I'd been in the Air Force, I'd worked on the state of the art [technology] of our aviation capabilities. And here I was on the deck of a submarine, in the conning tower, and I knew [the technology] we had to be able to have to go underwater, and I knew that [submarine and aviation technologies] were incompatible. Here's something that came from under the water and flew in the air, and performed maneuvers, and then came back down and interfaced with the water at tremendous speed, and remained intact – which, realistically, it never touched the water – the water sort of magically opened up in front of it. But, something had to interface with that water. Anything that we had, [if it would have] interfaced with the water in that manner, [it] would have been disintegrated. It's like hitting a brick wall. So, ***I was looking at a technology that, as far as our laws of physics, and what we knew at that time, didn't exist. This was in 1966.***"

Continuing from the original self-introduction:

"Now this sounds incredible. And to tell you quite truthfully, it is incredible. And ***if somebody had told me that and I hadn't seen it, I wouldn't believe it. And I wouldn't blame any one of you for not believing it....***

"After having gone through this experience on the bridge of this submarine, I was later told by the captain that we are not to discuss this, even amongst ourselves. *I've never been told that in the military. I'd never heard of anything like that.* People that worked on projects together usually discuss them amongst themselves, together.

"Now, when we reached Pearl Harbor, those of us who had been on the bridge, including the captain, were not allowed to go ashore. A commander from the office of Naval Intelligence came on board, spoke with each one of us in the captain's stateroom, individually. And literally what happened was he did not tell us what to say, but ***every time we said the wrong thing we were threatened, we were yelled at.*** It didn't take me long to figure out (having been raised by an Air Force officer, and having spent four years in the United States Air Force) what this man wanted to hear. So I told him what he wanted to hear: "Sir, I didn't see anything. I want to get the hell out of here real quick. Please

let's get this over with." That pleased him. I then was given several pieces of paper to read, which literally all said basically the same thing using different words. They were *different rules, regulations and laws governing the safeguard of information pertaining to national security*. And then *I had to sign a security oath saying that I would never talk about what it was that I had just told this gentleman that I had not seen*. And then I was allowed to go."

Additional clarification from a separate interview⁴:

"The ultimate outcome of the debriefing was that we didn't see anything, we didn't hear anything, and we had to read rules and regulations that told us that if we ever talked about what it was that we didn't see, that we could be imprisoned, we could be fined \$10,000, we could lose all pay and allowances due or ever to become due. And ***I learned at that moment that the United States Navy didn't want anybody to know about what we saw***, and that severe consequences could come down around the neck of anybody who did [know]."

Continuing from the original self-introduction:

"Later I was selected and trained for Naval Security and Intelligence. I was given a secondary NEC [Navy Law Enforcement Specialist] [specification] of 9545, which is internal security specialist. My job was to safeguard [and] control classified information – [to] secure perimeters, buildings, Naval installations, detect bugging devices, all of these things. I was specifically trained to conduct Pacific Area Intelligence Briefings. And then after all this training, I was sent to Vietnam and made a patrol boat captain for Naval Security and Intelligence. I was attached to Camp Carter, which was the headquarters of Naval Intelligence and Icore.⁵ I was then sent to a division of Naval Intelligence which was the Danang Harbor Patrol. I was given a crew, patrol boat, and a lot of weapons and ammunition, and they turned me loose. And that was crazy, because I was a young man and didn't know what the hell I was doing. But I did OK, thank God. Some others didn't.

"Later I was transferred up to the Dong Ha River Security Group, which was another division of Camp Carter and Naval Intelligence. My job there was to patrol the river, make friends with the people along the banks, gather intelligence, and maintain the safety and security of the river. That river was at the DMZ [Demilitarized Zone], it's the [unclear Vietnamese name, possibly "Tot-Ka"] river, the base camp was [unclear Vietnamese name, possibly "Cua Vi Ah"], the mouth of the river on the southern bank. And it was a major supply route for supplies that went to Kason, which was under siege.

"While there I learned that ***there was significant UFO activity in Vietnam***. A lot. Why? I don't know. There were rumors flying everywhere, we heard stories of *enemy troops firing at UFOs, our side firing at UFOs, UFOs flashing back with blue lights that did crazy things, the same things*

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

that you hear happening today. I know of one incident for a fact, that after UFOs hovered above a South Vietnamese village all night, *the next morning there was not a living soul in that village.* Don't ask me where they went because I haven't got the slightest idea, but it's incredible.

"We were told that **any UFO information that we sent in dispatches, messages or discussed over the radio, we were to use the code word "enemy helicopter activity."** And that's what we did. **The enemy had no helicopters in Vietnam, period.** So anything you see in the history of Vietnam that refers to "enemy helicopter activity" is, in fact, referring to UFO activity: Unidentified Flying Objects.

"When I left Vietnam, I was sent to the SS Charles Berry 1035 [USS Charles Berry – DE1035] for a short period, with NIS (Naval Investigative Service), to conduct an investigation aboard that vessel. Three months later I left, was transferred to the staff of the Commander-In-Chief of the United States Pacific Fleet, who at that time was Admiral Bernard Clarey, and was specifically attached to his intelligence briefing team. I also stood watch as– (some people don't know this, so let me explain it). In the Navy you have a primary job which you do; you also have to stand additional duty which is called "watches" in the Navy. My watch station was [unintelligible, possibly "petty officer"] watch in the command center, which meant *I was the senior enlisted man in the command center, in charge of the command center and the information.* I was also the designated speak out operator, which meant Top Secret, crypto-communications that came in under a specialized, compartmentalized category. *I was the only one on watch who was allowed to handle that information, and direct it to the specific place where it was to go.* Now, normally these things are handled by radio men and communications technicians in a communications center. But in a command center, where they have to have information instantly, everything that goes to the communication center also comes to the command center, so that there is not a delay in important information, urgent information, getting to the right people who have to make commands [and] decisions.

"It was there that *I saw documentation that (I have to tell you right now) could have been shown to me, or given to me, or I could have been put in that position in order to see these documents so that I would specifically talk about them later....* **The document[s] stated that extra-terrestrials were real,** that UFOs were piloted by them, and had been visiting this earth for many many thousands of years, that **there was a project called Aquarius that had researched this history, and compiled the history, from written human records, starting with the ancient tablets left by the Sumerians, the Assyrians, the Mesopotamians, the Egyptians, right up to modern times.** These documents were quite thorough and very convincing, believe me."

Additional clarification given in a separate interview⁶:

"Eventually, when [Navy Security] began to have confidence in me, I

began to see things coming across my desk that were just absolutely incredible. And a lot of it is really hard to talk about because it is so far outside the normal concept of reality for the average American, that they're going to find a hard time believing any of it.

"But I saw documents that were labeled classification 'Top Secret,' and the compartmentalized compartment that that was put into was called Majic, M-A-J-I-C, which told me that UFOs are real – which I already knew, I'd *seen* one. But this went farther than that. It told me that they were *extraterrestrial in origin*, that there were *four different extraterrestrial species or races* visiting this earth, and that they had actually entered into an agreement with the United States government, with one of these species of alien beings, to exchange technology. It told me all the projects that were underneath this. Project Red Light was actually the testing of extraterrestrial craft, Project Plato was a diplomatic project, [Project] Pounce was the recovery of technology, [Project] Pluto was the application of that technology to our own secret space program – not the public space program. There are two different space programs. One is what the public gets to see, which is overseen by NASA – and the other one is a secret space program, that nobody gets to see, which is really overseen by the Navy department, under specialized, compartmentalized black projects.

"I also saw documents under an operation called Operation Majority, which outlined the plans to bring together a one world government. It also included extraterrestrial information within that. Project Grudge, which was the second project. First was [Project] Sign, and then Project Grudge, which contained all of the extraterrestrial information up to a certain point – I forget the year it cut off. And then it was contained, after that, in another project called Project Aquarius, which was the accumulation of the whole history of alien interaction on planet Earth. But, ***I have to say at this point, that I don't know if those documents were really telling the truth or not.*** They could have been showing me these things so that, eventually, I would go out and talk about this. And maybe it will become clear to you, later, why they may have done that. They could be real, though."

Continuing from the original self-introduction:

"There was documentation that the United States had actually recovered crashed alien craft. The first one had occurred near a small town, called Roswell, New Mexico in 1947. The crash site actually covered two locations. One location was on a ranch belonging to a Mr. Brazzle. The other location was approximately 60 miles from there, where the main bulk of the craft had come down, from which they had removed three dead alien bodies. I saw photographs of these bodies, I saw photographs of the autopsies, and I saw photographs of the internal organs of these beings. It stated that in 1949 another crash had occurred, also in New Mexico, from which they had recovered more bodies, and that they had found one live alien creature wandering in the desert.

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

"Now you have to understand, just because I saw these documents doesn't mean that all of this actually occurred. These could have been presented to me to make me believe that this had occurred."

"It stated that they had kept this live alien in captivity until June second, 1952, at which time he died of unknown causes. They instituted a project called Sigma to attempt to contact the race that this being belonged to (*Sigma evolved into the National Security Agency [NSA]*), that eventually contact was made, landings occurred, *communications took place, an alliance was agreed upon*. This actually [had] supposedly happened at Muroc (which is now known as Edwards Air Force Base) in California, in 1954.

"President Eisenhower was on vacation at that time in Palm Springs. During this time you can see by reading the newspapers that he disappeared. Newspapers went crazy, reporters were combing the countryside looking for the President. They were told that he had suffered a toothache and was flown by helicopter to the dentist. Well, this was not true. The true place where he was taken was Muroc, [California], Edwards Air Force Base. ***The base was closed (this is also on record) for three days, no one could go in, no one could come out.*** There are witness accounts that say three Unidentified Flying Objects flew over Edwards Air Force Base and landed. We have a letter, which I'm going to show you later, from a Mr. Gerald Light, who states that he was there when President Eisenhower was there. He saw the ships, he saw these creatures. [Ed. Note: Steven Spielberg's 1977 film *Close Encounters of the Third Kind* is a fictionalized re-telling of this 1954 event. This event will be discussed in detail later on, as well as Mr. Light's letter – a jpeg scan of which is provided in the supporting material.⁷]...

"Now, over the years, if this is real, it's been *suppressed and covered up and hidden* for very good reasons [unintelligible], ***reasons that don't stand up now, reasons that have resulted in criminal activity, in erosion of the Constitution, in all kinds of things.***

"Now, I said that I believe that this is all true, I don't believe that it's a hoax, the evidence is overwhelming that it's true. And by "overwhelming" I mean exactly that, when you get into really investigating this, looking at it, the evidence will overwhelm you. It is incredible that such a cover-up has been able to be maintained for so long.

I interject here to present Cooper's later position. As he recounts above, in 1991, the evidence that these beings exist is overwhelming – the documentation and testimonies that he was privy to overloaded his rational mind. Two years prior, on July 2nd, 1989, he gave a compelling, thorough overview of this documentation in a presentation he delivered to a large audience at the MUFON (Mutual UFO Network) Symposium in Las Vegas, Nevada.

However, at some point by 1996, he felt certain that the documentation regarding the origins and nature of these so-called "alien" beings was deceptive. By the mid 90's – after detecting and exposing the ulterior motives and undisclosed CIA connections of many "experts" in alien/UFO-logy circles (whom he had worked with now and then for years) – he came to the conclusion that the origin, and possibly even the existence, of these "extraterrestrial beings" had to be false.

At a mid-1990's presentation⁸ (date unsure, probably around 1996), he stated the following:

"In all the history of the world, folks, *if we were really being visited by extraterrestrial life, don't you think we would have found one by now?* Don't you think so? ***And how come the government always gets there first??*** It's Podunk⁹ time! It's in the middle of nowhere! There's a farmer milking his cow, a flying saucer crashes, and the government gets there before he can get from his cow to the crash site! (audience laughter) It's ridiculous, and ***I shudder to think, in the beginning when I first came public, I may have been misleading somebody along those lines, that this whole thing is being brought about by extraterrestrials.*** I think some of us were really used [as unwitting pawns] in the service of our country."

Continuing from the original self-introduction:

"[To the possibility that much of the information I was shown was falsified], ***I have found references, as far back as the beginning of this century by a secret group of very powerful people, to create an artificial alien threat from some other planet to help unite all humanity into a one world government with them at the head.*** I found a speech given by John Dewey in 1917 to Viscount Isshiki in the Japanese delegation in New York City where the first thing that he says in his speech is "*Someone once told me that the best way to unite all humanity and do away with war is if we were attacked from some other planet by alien beings from outer space.*"

"I found reference in a report, called *the Report from Iron Mountain*, to the ultimate method of permanent peace on this earth and uniting humanity, doing away with nation states, which cause wars, and *substituting for war a tremendously wasteful space program that would unite humanity against an alien threat of an intelligent race from another planet.*

"Now *I didn't know all this when I saw these papers back between 1970 and 1973 in the photographs and the records that I saw.* This information came out during my research over the last eighteen years. So it's something that has to be considered.

"I have to tell you that the intelligence communities, the powerful people in this world, have the capabilities to do this; to

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

perpetrate such a hoax. They can do it. They have methods and ways to make us believe damn near anything they want to. But I will tell you this: the only question is whether extra-terrestrials are real or not. *There is no question whatsoever about the craft.* The craft are real, they have been seen by millions of people, all over the world, credible people, military people, doctors, lawyers, bag ladies, elevator repair men, people who work in grocery stores, heads of colleges, politicians, Jimmy Carter, Ronald Reagan, and many others.

"Jimmy Carter said he saw a UFO before he was elected president. If he's not credible, why did you elect him? *If we can send a man to the gas chamber or the electric chair on the testimony of two witnesses in court, why won't you believe millions of people who are telling you that they have seen these craft flying in the air,* that they're metal, that they're intelligently guided, that they are real, and that they demonstrate a technology beyond anything that we know of – publicly anyway. I can tell you that we have this technology in the United States, it is being flown in an area called Area 51, Groom Dry lake, in the Nevada test range in the state of Nevada. I have seen it fly, many other people have seen it fly. I have a photograph of it in my book. [I] also have a drawing given to me by one of the people who have been there, and touched it, and seen it. The drawing matches the craft in flight exactly....

"So, when you hear people talk to you about secret weapons, when you see the stealth fighter unveiled, [you can imagine] what they have [waiting] behind it in the wings. You too can also go see [these things] in Nevada (if you have the money and the time to go out there, and stand in the desert all night). If you look toward Groom Lake between sunset and sunrise on any given night you can watch them test fly these craft, but you have to be prepared to stay there two or three nights, because they don't always fly every single night....

"[T]he government's been lying to you for a lot of years. ***When I say "the government," I don't mean our Constitutionally authorized and legal and lawful government, I mean the men who have infiltrated our government over the years, and who are controlling it, [and] subverting it for their own end. [They] have been lying to us. Our government hasn't had a chance to work over the last forty years....***

"I can tell you that, [from] over the last 17 [to] 18 years that I've been doing research, I have discovered that ***our normal everyday concept of reality is an illusion.*** It is a manipulation, in most instances, of the power structure that really runs this country and the world, ***to keep us ignorant so that we won't know what the truth is.***

1. "I can tell you that when George [H. W.] Bush says [that] out of the Middle East crisis will come a new world order,¹⁰ he is not joking. And the New World Order is not what you think it is: friendly nations working together. It's going to be a one-world, totalitarian, socialist

government. Some of the reasons for this are good, some of them are not.

"I can tell you that there is a hidden, secret technology that is astounding – resembles nothing less than sheer magic – [it] would literally set us free, enable us to cure most diseases (if not all), give us a source of if not free energy, very close to free energy – very inexpensive energy – which we need very badly....

"All of [this] is covered in my book, which you may or may not have seen. The name of the book is *Behold a Pale Horse*. [Ed. note: this book is included in the supporting material.¹¹] This book has more suppressed information printed in it than any other book that's ever been printed in the history of the world, I can guarantee you. *Everything that I have found, I document. **So it's not a question of deciding whether or not to believe me, it's a question of whether or not you'd accept those documents as proof.***

"Someone once said "You [can] put ten tons of proof in front of people, if they're not ready to accept the idea, they will not accept the proof." No amount of evidence will suffice to prove anything; **it is the jury that will decide. You are the jury.**"

Cooper's Life Mission and Martyrdom

After retiring from military service, Cooper risked everything to self-publish his Top Secrets disclosure *Behold a Pale Horse* in 1991. He continued to spend the next decade doing everything in his power to discover and expose as many documents and reliable information as he could gather about secret societies and their occult beliefs and practices. He began a citizen-based information-gathering news group, which issues valid press credentials, called CAJI (The Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence). In addition to occasional speaking arrangements, he began a shortwave radio series which he broadcast out of his home in Eagar, Arizona, called *Hour of The Time*.

One series of 47 episodes was titled "Mystery Babylon," and was dedicated solely to the history, beliefs, and practices of (what we LDS members refer to as) the kingdom of the devil. During approximately half of these episodes, he would simply read the contents of critical esoteric documents over the air.

Sometime during 1994, Rush Limbaugh read a portion of a White House memo which stated that Bill Cooper "is the most dangerous radio show host in America." (Mind you, he's merely broadcasting on ham/shortwave radio – not AM/FM. For someone supposedly so dangerous, his potential audience

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

was miniscule.) Cooper received this as though it was a badge of honor.

He was not an anarchist, not an extremist, not a revolutionary – if anything, he was a staunch Constitutionalist with a spiritual conviction in the teachings and example of Jesus Christ. However, he was reading profoundly revealing, esoteric documents over the air – educating the “profane” as to who their worldly masters really are, and divulging the secret religious tenets and practices of the “elite.” For this, he was labeled “the most dangerous radio host in America” in a White House memo during the Clinton Administration.

As Cooper continued his research and disclosures over the air, he had to constantly protect himself from retribution. He was selectively targeted through tax laws and other legal maneuvers, with the intention to financially strain him, disrupt his life, and incarcerate him. Well versed in his legal rights, he protected himself primarily by confining himself on his Arizona property – being extremely careful when running errands outside, and in how he communicated with anyone who approached his property line.

On June 28th, 2001, Cooper made these comments on his radio broadcast (emphasis added, underlined emphasis interpreted from source):

"Can you believe what you have been seeing on CNN today, ladies and gentlemen? Supposedly a CNN reporter found Osama Bin Laden, took a television camera crew with him, went in to Osama Bin Laden's hideout, interviewed him and his top leadership, his top lieutenants and colonels and generals – in their hideout. This is a CNN reporter with a camera crew. And he came out and told everybody: 'Within three weeks, Osama Bin Laden is going to attack the United States and Israel.' Now, don't you think that's kind of strange, folks? You see, because, ***the largest intelligence apparatus in the world, with the biggest budget in the history of the world, has been looking for Osama Bin Laden for years and years and years, and can't find him.*** The FBI, also, under the leadership of Louis Freeh, has been looking for Osama Bin Laden for years and years and years and years, many years, and can't find him. ***Some doofus, jerkoff reporter – with a camera crew – waltzes right into his hideout and interviews him.*** And do you know what [that reporter's] budget is? Zip. Zilch. Nothing.

"Now, that tells us [one of] two things: either everyone in the Intelligence community and all of the Intelligence agencies of the United States government are blithering idiots, incompetent fools, including the entire apparatus of the FBI and all of its personnel – or they are lying to us [and] they are not looking for him at all. And the second [possibility] is the truth.... ***And whatever is going to happen, they are going to blame it on Osama Bin Laden*** – don't you even believe it. Another 'so-cillusion', social engineering project to change the minds and the attitudes and the beliefs of the people of the world, and especially the United States, to

bring about one-world socialist totalitarian government."

Finally, on November 5th, 2001 – mere weeks after the events of 9/11 stunned the nation – Bill Cooper was shot to death outside of his home in an entrapment maneuver by the Apache County Sheriff's Department. Some local police officers, dressed in plain clothes and driving unmarked vehicles, began playing loud music at the end of a cul-de-sac at the end of Cooper's property. Occasionally, high school and/or college students would drive out there and party, and Bill would go out to shoo them off. About 11:15 p.m., Cooper drove his truck down to notify these "college kids" that they either need to clear out or he'd call the police. The officers did not identify themselves as officers to Cooper, despite that he threatened multiple times that he was going to call the police if they did not leave.

While he was talking to them, seated in his truck, a patrol car raced up the road and attempted to cut off the path back to Cooper's home. Cooper quickly turned his truck around and rushed back to his home. As he got out of his truck, the officers began firing at him. Police reports state that he fired back, wounding one officer in the head. (There is evidence regarding the trajectory of Cooper's alleged shots that suggests that Cooper did not fire his gun at all, that this officer's wound was a result of friendly-fire, and indicating that the officers later fired shots from Cooper's gun to make it appear as though he had shot at them.) Cooper did not make it back into his home. He was mortally wounded and died on his front lawn. For the following 15 hours, neighbors, reporters and the general public were blocked from approaching anywhere near Cooper's secluded home – allowing officers ample time to manage the scene to their satisfaction.¹²

Again, Cooper's voice to each and every one of us:

"I sincerely believe that any man or woman who does not have principles for which they are ready and willing to die for, at any given moment that they are called upon to do that, is already dead and are of no use or consequence to themselves or anyone else, and will be unhappy throughout their life for that very reason, and that very reason alone."

Cooper's Legacy

William (or "Bill") Cooper has become one of my personal heroes. He is the "Bill C." to whom I partially dedicate Volume I to. Nearly all of the esoteric-disclosing material I included in Volume I came directly from Cooper's *Mystery Babylon* series' sources – documents and books which he and his *Hour of the Time* supporters amassed over the course of two decades. I spent months listening to nothing but Cooper's broadcast recordings during my daily commutes. Despite all the excellent material I'd

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

taken in on secret societies prior to discovering Cooper's research, I had felt frustrated that no author or researcher ever addressed that which was most critical to understand: that there *must* be something beyond mere personal gratification and pride with all this – there *must* be some sort of powerful root belief system that binds the minds and hearts of initiates to the point where they actually convince themselves that everything they are doing for these secret groups is “right.” As I absorbed Cooper's material, I marveled at how consistent it all was with the actions and mindsets of secret combinations described throughout the Book of Mormon, particularly in the book of Alma, and especially Moses chapter 5 of the Pearl of Great Price. Daily my soul would cry out *“Every LDS member and every true believer of Jesus Christ on the face of the earth needs to know this!”*

There are hundreds of documents, books, and audio/video productions out there that provide verifiable details and evidences of all these secret familial and fraternal organizations, which manipulate and dominate the worldwide public – yet, very few of them offer much of any insight to their *core beliefs* and *the profoundly secret foundational religious doctrines* that provide motivation for the initiates on a powerfully-convincing eternal-reward scope. I realized that this is what was missing in all the previous research that I had done. This is what William Cooper was driven to expose, and he ultimately “waste[d] and [wore] out [his life] bringing to light all the hidden things of darkness.” (D&C 123:13) *If there is anyone who merits tremendous kudos for living the spirit of this divine counsel from Joseph Smith, it is William Cooper.*

After several months of immersing myself in Cooper's research, I fervently prayed to know how to get this information into the awareness of LDS members, or any openhearted followers of Christ. The Holy Spirit immediately impressed upon me that I ought to write a book. The idea seemed ludicrous: I'm a visual person – I spent four years in college studying film – I write screenplays, not books – I fall asleep reading books – I abandon 95% of the books I start out to read, even most of the ones I find interesting. How am I supposed to write a competent fact-based, non-fiction book about these matters?

“With my guidance,” replied the Spirit.

Roughly two years later, on November 5th, 2012 – on the 11th anniversary of William Cooper's martyrdom – I published Volume I. The inspiration to create it, and the majority of source material within, came directly from the life, legacy, and indefatigable efforts of William Cooper in bringing to light the hidden things of darkness. I testify to the reader, once again, that it *would not have been possible* for me to put together that book without the ever-present encouragement, guidance, direction, and frequent miraculous health boosts (I sacrificed a lot of sleep during those two years)

provided by the Holy Spirit throughout the project. And now the Spirit is guiding me once again in putting together this volume, which you now hold in your hands.

The Deepest, Darkest Occult Secret

*"[The occultist] is brought into intelligent communication with the spirits of the air, and **can receive any knowledge which they possess, or any false impression they choose to impart... the demons seem permitted to do various wonders at their request.**"*

- G.H. Pember, *Earth's Earliest Ages and Their Connection with Modern Spiritualism and Theosophy* (1876), p. 254 (emphasis added)

The following is a transcript of Coast to Coast AM with Art Bell, September 11, 1997 (underlined emphasis interpreted from source, other emphasis added – many "um"s and "uh"s not included, pauses in speech indicated by hyphen)¹³:

ART BELL: You are on the air, hello.

UNKNOWN CALLER (in very panicked, shaky voice throughout): Hello Art? Hi – I-I-I don't have a whole lot of time –

BELL: Well, look, let's begin by finding out whether you're using this line properly or not.

CALLER: Area 51

BELL: Yeah that's right. Were you an employee or are you now?

CALLER: I am a former employee

BELL: Former employee

CALLER: I was let go on a medical discharge about a week ago – and – and – [starts to break down crying] – I've kinda been running across the country – and I don't know where to start – they're-they're – they're gonna – they'll triangulate on this position really, really soon –

BELL: So you can't spend a lot of time on the phone, so give us something quick.

CALLER: OK – OK – What we're thinking of as 'aliens,' Art – they're – ***they're extra-dimensional beings that an earlier precursor of the space program made contact with – they are not what they claim***

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

to be – they have infiltrated a lot of aspects of-of-of the military establishment, particularly the Area 51 – [fighting back sobs] the disasters that are coming – the government knows about them – and there's a lot of safe areas in this world that they could begin moving the population to now, Art.

BELL: But they're not doing, they're not doing anything.

CALLER: They are not! They want those major population centers – wiped out – [sobs] – so that the few that are left will be more easily controllable – [cannot speak from sobbing] – I – I should've gi–

(Silence. Satellite feed is dead. Silence continues for 25 seconds. Then, Coast to Coast AM's theme song starts playing. Plays for 30 seconds, then stops suddenly. Silence for a moment, then Art Bell's voice comes back on.)

BELL: In some way something knocked us off the air, and we're on a backup system now.

DIFFERENT CALLER NOW ON THE LINE: Is iiiiiiit, government, er–?

BELL (exasperated): I don't know!

CALLER 2: It has to be something, though.

BELL: Well, did you hear? – Now you tell me, because you were listening.

CALLER 2: That was awful strange.

BELL: It was a really weird guy on the air when it went off?

CALLER 2: Yeah. Real weird-o.

BELL: Like, going, sort-of sounding paranoid, schizophrenic–

CALLER 2: Yeah, like cryin' and everything.

BELL: Yeah, yeah – and how far into the conversation was it when it went off?

CALLER 2: Just a couple – about fifteen, twenty seconds, I'd say.

BELL: Oh, you guys missed – you really missed a call, then, and ***I've got a feeling someone didn't want you to hear it!***... The network went immediately to a backup tape while we tried to figure out what 'blew up' here. So that's what you heard happen. And now we're on a backup link system to be on the air at all right now. So, wow! I'm tellin' ya!

As is probably gleaned by now, the deepest, darkest occult secret was given to me directly by the Holy Spirit at the very beginning of my research into all conspiratorial matters. Before I had even begun to look into the first

matter of conspiracy, the Spirit told me exactly what the biggest secret is, in a very brief, direct manner: the Sci-Fi staple of the “little green men” from outer space are not really from outer space at all. They’re demons. That’s it. That’s the BIIIIIIIG secret. They are literal demonic forces, headed by Lucifer – and, sadly, they *are* real.

Before the Holy Spirit gently and directly communicated this to me, I had no idea that this could even possibly be the case. I had never even considered the possibility that “demons” existed – or if they did, they were simply in the same category as the “evil spirits” we hear about in LDS and Christian theology.

And I certainly had no idea that what I was told happened to be the big, elusive, hidden truth to all the wild, bizarro, speculative uncertainty flooding the matter.

However, I’m far from the only one privy to this matter-of-fact conclusion. For decades now, others (both religious and strictly scientific/secular) have noted a strong connection between earth-bound demonology traditions/legends and supposedly-intergalactic UFOlogy patterns (emphasis added):

- "UFO behaviour is more akin to magic than to physics as we know it... the modern UFOnuts and the demons of past days are probably identical."
 - Dr. Pierre Guerin, Director of Research at the Astrophysical Institute of the French National Centre for Scientific Research, FSR (Flying Saucer Review) Vol. 25, No. 1, p. 13-14
- "The UFO manifestations seem to be, by and large, merely minor variations of the age-old demonological phenomenon..."
 - John A. Keel, UFOs: Operation Trojan Horse¹⁴, p. 299
- "The 'medical examination' to which [alien] abductees are said to be subjected, often accompanied by sadistic sexual manipulation, is reminiscent of the medieval tales of encounters with demons. ***It makes no sense in a sophisticated or technical framework: any intelligent being equipped with the scientific marvels that UFOs possess would be in a position to achieve any of these alleged scientific objectives in a shorter time and with fewer risks.***"
 - Dr. Jacques Vallee¹⁵, Confrontations, p. 13
- "The symbolic display seen by the abductees is identical to the type of initiation ritual or astral voyage that is imbedded in the [occult] traditions of every culture... the structure of abduction stories is identical to that of occult initiation rituals... the UFO beings of today belong to the same class of manifestation as the [demonic] entities that were described in centuries past."

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

- Dr. Jacques Vallee¹⁶, citing the research of Bertrand Meheust [Science-Fiction et Soucoupes Volantes (Paris, 1978); Soucoupes Volantes et Folklore (Paris, 1985)], Confrontations, p. 146, 159-161

Others have observed a seemingly not-without-the-other relationship between aliens, UFOs and the occult (emphasis added):

- "A working knowledge of occult science... is indispensable to UFO investigation."
 - Trevor James, FSR (Flying Saucer Review) Vol. 8, No. 1, p.10
- "Studies of flying saucer cults repeatedly show that they are part of a larger occult social world."
 - Stupple & McNeece, 1979 MUFON UFO Symposium Proceedings, p. 49
- "[T]he UFO phenomenon simply does not behave like extraterrestrial visitors. *It actually molds itself in order to fit a given culture.*"
 - John Ankerberg, The Facts on UFOs and Other Supernatural Phenomena, p. 10
- "A large part of the available UFO literature is closely linked with mysticism and the metaphysical. It deals with subjects like mental telepathy, automatic writing and invisible entities as well as phenomena like poltergeist [ghost] manifestation and 'possession.' Many of the UFO reports now being published in the popular press recount alleged incidents that are strikingly similar to demonic possession and psychic phenomena."
 - Lynn E. Catoe¹⁷, UFOs and Related Subjects: USGPO, 1969; prepared under AFOSR Project Order 67-0002 and 68-0003

Additionally, other notable individuals seem to place serious doubt as to the intergalactic nature of these so-called "aliens" (emphasis added):

- "*There seems to be **no evidence** yet that **any of these craft or beings originate from outer space.***"
 - Gordon Creighton, editor of FSR (Flying Saucer Review), Official 1992 Flying Saucer Review Policy Statement
- "One theory which can no longer be taken very seriously is that UFOs are interstellar spaceships."
 - Arthur C. Clarke, award-winning Science Fiction author, New York Times Book Review, July 27th, 1975
- "We are part of a symbiotic relationship with something which *disguises itself as an extra-terrestrial invasion* so as not to alarm us."
 - Terrence McKenna¹⁸, quoted from one of his lectures

- "*We are dealing with a multidimensional paraphysical phenomenon* which is largely indigenous to planet earth."
– Brad Steiger, [cited in] Blue Book Files Released in Canadian UFO Report, Vol. 4, No. 4, 1977, p. 20

Historical LDS Experiences with Demonic Forces

If you are leaning towards dismissing all this as ridiculous and too fantastic to be believable, then you ought to at least consider the testimonies and journal entries of some of the most trusted and celebrated leaders and members of LDS Church history regarding their encounters with demonic forces during the early years of the restoration.

One of the most disturbing accounts of demonic possession of that period occurred on June 4th, 1831. Starting around mid-day with the ordination of Harvey Whitlock to the high priesthood, and continuing until the early morning hours as others were ordained, one or more demonic entities went from individual to individual: taking over their bodies, contorting their features, and causing unnerving mayhem, with the apparent goal of trying to disrupt the proceedings.¹⁹

Yet, perhaps the most vivid and revealing instance occurred to Orson Hyde, Heber C. Kimball, Joseph Fielding and a few others during the first LDS mission to England in July of 1837. The following is a compilation of their personal accounts²⁰ (emphasis added):

KIMBALL: "[Upon arriving in Preston, England (July 1837),] we obtain[ed] a lodging in the house of a widow, and furnished our own vituals [sic] and she cooked it for us." (Kimball p.7-8)

FIELDING: "[It was a] comfortable private lodging." (Fielding Diary 1:17)

KIMBALL: "[A week after arriving, on] Sunday, July 30th, about daybreak, Elder Isaac Russell.... came up to the third story, where Elder Hyde and myself were sleeping, and called out, 'Brother Kimball, I want you should get up and pray for me that I may be delivered from the evil spirits that are tormenting me to such a degree that I feel I cannot live long, unless I obtain relief.'"

"I had been sleeping on the back of the bed. I immediately arose, slipped off at the foot of the bed, and passed around to where he was. Elder Hyde threw his feet out, and sat up in the bed, and we laid hands on him, I being mouth, and prayed that the Lord would have mercy on him, and rebuked the devil. While thus engaged, I was struck with great force by some invisible power, and fell senseless on the floor." (Whitney p. 129-131)

HYDE: "[Heber's] voice faltered, and his mouth was shut, and he began to

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

tremble and reel to and fro, and fell on the floor like a dead man, and uttered a deep groan. I immediately seized him by the shoulder, and lifted him up, being satisfied that the devils were exceedingly angry because we attempted to cast them out of Br. Russell, and they made a powerful attempt upon elder Kimball as if to dispatch him at once, they struck him senseless and he fell to the floor...." (Elder's p. 4)

KIMBALL: "The first thing I recollected was being supported by Elders Hyde and Richards, who were praying for me; Elder Richards having followed Russell up to my room. Elder Hyde and Richards then assisted me to get on the bed, but my agony was so great I could not endure it, and I arose, bowed my knees and prayed. I then arose and sat up on the bed, when **a vision was opened to our minds, and we could distinctly see the evil spirits, who foamed and gnashed their teeth at us.**" (Whitney p. 130-131) "*I saw their hands, their eyes, and every feature of their faces, the hair on their heads, and their ears, in short they had full formed bodies.*" (Journal p. 229)

"*We gazed upon them about an hour and a half (by Willard's watch). We were not looking towards the window, but towards the wall. Space appeared before us, and we saw the devils coming in legions, with their leaders, who came within a few feet of us. They came towards us like armies rushing to battle. They appeared to be men of full stature, possessing every form and feature of men in the flesh, who were angry and desperate; and I shall never forget the vindictive malignity depicted on their countenances as they looked me in the eye; and any attempt to paint the scene which then presented itself, or portray their malice and enmity, would be vain.... We distinctly heard those spirits talk and express their wrath and hellish designs against us..*" (Whitney p. 130-131)

HYDE: "We could very sensibly hear the evil spirits rage and foam out their shame." (Elder's p. 4)

FIELDING: "They could hear a sound from them, like the grating of teeth, quite plainly." (Fielding, p. 22)

HYDE: "After [Kimball had been] overcome by them and had fallen, their awful rush upon me with knives, threats, imprecations, hellish grins, amply convinced me that they were no friends of mine. While [Kimball was] apparently senseless and lifeless on the floor... I stood between [Kimball] and the devils and *fought them and contended with them face to face*, until they began to diminish in number and to retreat from the room. *The last imp that left turned around to me as he was going out and said, as if to apologize, and appease my determined opposition to them, 'I never said anything against you!'* I replied to him thus: 'It matters not whether you have or have not; you are a liar from the beginning! In the name of Jesus Christ depart!' He immediately left, and the room was clear. That closed the scene of devils for the time." (Whitney p. 131)

FIELDING: "They however kept their distances, but turned their heads toward Bro. Hyde; one looking at him said distinctly, but with a murmuring tone, slowly demure, 'I never spoke against you.' He said there seemed to be legion of them. He was alarmed, but very much disgusted. He could scarcely bear to speak of them." (Fielding p. 23)

After returning to America and his experience was related to Joseph Smith, Joseph remarked to Orson Hyde, "When I heard of it, it gave me great joy, for I then knew that the work of God had taken root in that land. It was this that caused the devil to make a struggle to kill you.... The nearer a person approaches the Lord, a greater power will be manifested by the adversary to prevent the accomplishment of His purposes." (Whitney p. 132)

Heber C. Kimball noted the following about twenty years later (emphasis added):

"If evil spirits could come to me, cannot ministering spirits and angels also come from God? Of course they can, and there are thousands of them, and I wish you to understand this, and that *they can rush as an army going to battle, for the evil spirits came upon me and brother Hyde in that way...*

"When I returned home I called upon brother Joseph, and we walked down the bank of the river. ***He there told me what contests he had had with the devil;*** he told me that he had contests with the devil, face to face. He also told me how he was handled and afflicted by the devil, and said, he had known circumstances where Elder Rigdon was pulled out of bed three times in one night...." ²¹

Joseph Smith's testimony about his experience in the Sacred Grove is far from the only encounter that he had with the devil, some of which he was actually physically accosted ("handled and afflicted") by demonic force. It is lamentable that we do not have a full account of some of these experiences.

Yet, despite that Orson Hyde witnessed "men of full stature, possessing every form and feature of men in the flesh," it's curious that he included the terms "devil" and "imp" in his description of them.

Recall from Volume I, the chapter on Secular Spirituality, in the section called Literal Demonic Forces Disguised in Light, the experience of Randall Baer, the New Age guru who was converted to Christ after a very similar experience as Orson Hyde's. Read his words again and compare them to the journal entries of Kimball, Hyde, and Fielding (emphasis added):

"I was quite adept at inducing and expanding the limits of mystical and out-of-body experiences.... *It would feel like I was being transported by winged angels and loving forces to an incredible variety of dazzling extra-natural domains.* The sensation of my spirit being released from

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

Earthbound, bodily restrictions and freed to roam the unlimited expanses of the cosmos was breathtaking. Here it was, the freedom, the light, and the truth that I had been searching for all my life. I had found the keys that opened the heavens before my very eyes.

"But the ultimate seduction had overtaken me: *What I thought was "up" was actually "down." What I thought was "heaven" was actually "hell" wrapped in Satan's finest counterfeit garments. **What I thought were Ascended Masters, extraterrestrials, and angels were actually demons in cunning, glowing disguises....***

"One night, while in the Ascension Chamber, my spirit was roaming some of the farthest reaches of "heavenly light" that I had ever perceived. That night I had an experience that would change my life forever.

"During this experience I was surrounded by a virtually overwhelming luminosity – it was as if I was looking straight into the sun.

"Waves of bliss radiated through my spirit. I was totally captivated by the power.

"Suddenly, another force stepped in. It took me by complete surprise.

"In the twinkling of an eye, *it was like a supernatural hand had **taken me behind the scenes** of the experience that I was having.* I was taken behind the outer covering of the dazzling luminosity and there saw something that left me literally shaking for a full week. *What I saw was **the face of devouring darkness!*** Behind the glittering outer facade of beauty lay ***a massively powerful, wildly churning face of absolute hatred and unspeakable abominations – the face of demons filled with the power of Satan.***

"For a moment that seemed like an eternity, I realized that I was in major league trouble, for *this devouring force was now closing in on me.* [Ed. Note: recall Hyde's description of such dark forces: "[W]e saw the devils coming in legions, with their leaders, who came within a few feet of us. They *came towards us like armies rushing to battle....* I shall never forget the vindictive malignity depicted on their countenances as they looked me in the eye."]

"In absolute, stark terror I felt powerless to stop what appeared to be inevitable doom. Horror filled me like a consuming flame. Then, miraculously, the same supernatural hand as before delivered me from the jaws of this consuming darkness, and hours later, I found myself waking up the next morning in the Ascension Chamber. It felt like I had a peaceful night's sleep but, upon waking, the horror of the past night's experience had left me terribly shaken. My mind was racing uncontrollably in all directions at what felt like the speed of light. My body was shaking involuntarily, sometimes rather violently. This nightmare continued without respite for a full week. I thought that I was going stark raving mad. In a

month's time, though, my grave situation gradually settled down to some semblance of sanity and normalcy.

"What I didn't know at the time was that it was Jesus who had intervened by His greater grace into my life. At this point, though, I only knew that some force greater than that of the devouring darkness had done two things: 1. it had shown me the real face of the New Age "heavens" and "angels" that I was so deeply involved with, and 2. it had delivered me from certain doom.

"What I knew at this time was that I had made some serious errors in my New Age involvements. I also knew that if those errors weren't corrected that I might face the same horrific experience again. And quite possibly the next time I wouldn't get away.

"An openness to reconsider my New Age involvements arose in me out of desperate need. This openness would help me, over the following months, to find a Way, a Truth, and a Life that I had never known before – Jesus Christ."

An additional facet to consider in these matters is the non-fictional works and personal accounts given by the author Whitley Strieber. Strieber is an author of both horror and science fiction novels, yet he has composed two books which he insist are autobiographical and completely non-fictional:

"Strieber asserts that he was abducted from his cabin in upstate New York on the evening of December 26, 1985 by non-human beings. He wrote about this experience and related experiences in *Communion* (1987), his first non-fiction book. Although the book is perceived generally as an account of alien abduction, Strieber draws no conclusions about the identity of alleged abductors. He refers to the beings as 'the visitors,' a name chosen to be as neutral as possible to entertain the possibility that they are not extraterrestrials and may instead exist in his mind....

"Over the next 24 years (since the 1987 publication of *Communion*), Strieber wrote four additional autobiographies detailing his experiences with the visitors: *Transformation* (1988), a direct follow-up; *Breakthrough* (1995), a reflection on the original events and accounts of the sporadic contact he'd subsequently experienced; *The Secret School* (1996), in which he examines strange memories from his childhood; and lastly, *Solving the Communion Enigma: What Is to Come* (2011)." ²²

Reflect upon the following statements that Strieber has given regarding these "visitors" (emphasis added):

- "Increasingly I felt as if I were entering a struggle that might even be more than life and death. *It might be a struggle for my soul, my essence, or whatever part of me might have reference to the eternal.* There are worse things than death, I suspected... *so far the word demon had never been spoken among the scientists and*

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

doctors who were working with me.... Alone at night I worried about the legendary cunning of demons.... At the very least I was going stark, raving mad." (Transformation p. 44-45)

- "I became entirely given over to extreme dread. *The fear was so powerful that it seemed to make my personality completely evaporate... 'Whitley' ceased to exist.* What was left was a body and a state of raw fear so great that it swept about me like a thick, suffocating curtain, turning paralysis into a condition that seemed close to death... I died and a wild animal appeared in my place." (Communion p. 25-26) [Ed. Note: this description is very commonplace with demonic possession, that one's identity ceases to exist while possessed]
- "Why were my visitors so secretive, *hiding themselves behind my consciousness?* I could only conclude that they were using me and did not want me to know why... ***What if they were dangerous? Then I was terribly dangerous because I was playing a role in acclimatizing people to them***" (Transformation p. 96) [Ed. Note: to acclimatize means to grow accustomed to, to learn to accept. The Steven Spielberg movies *Close Encounters of the Third Kind* and *E.T.*, as well as Streiber's own book *Communion*, have acclimated the public consciousness that if these beings actually exist, they are not only benign, they are benevolent, compassionate, and wise.]
- "***I wondered if I might not be in the grip of demons, if they were not making me suffer for their own purposes, or simply for their enjoyment.***" (Transformation p. 172)
- "*I felt an absolutely indescribable sense of menace. It was hell on earth to be there [in the presence of the entities], and yet I couldn't move, couldn't cry out, couldn't get away. I'd lay as still as death, suffering inner agonies. Whatever was there seemed so monstrously ugly, so filthy and dark and sinister. Of course they were demons. They had to be. And they were here and I couldn't get away.*" (Transformation p. 181)

John Ankerberg and John Weldon, in their book *The Facts on UFOs and Other Supernatural Phenomena*, make an intriguing point about Streiber's non-fictional accounts (emphasis added):

"These entities are clever enough to make Strieber think they care about him. *Yet his torment by them never ceases.* Whatever his relationship to the entities, and he increasingly concludes that their involvement with him is something 'good,' *he also remains terrified of them and uncertain as to what they are.*"

Beyond what the accounts of what some of the early LDS restoration leaders experienced, beyond even what the former New Age guru, Randall Baer, went through, Streiber (and many other "alien" abductees for that

matter) recount actual physical presences and physical encounters. Beyond just the other world/dimension opening to their minds/eyes, there are non-human-appearing physical entities involved in Streiber's detailed accounts. They manifest in some kind of physical form, and they are able to interact in our physical, human dimension. Streiber could physically touch them, they could physically interact with him. William Cooper, for nearly two decades, was privy to tremendously detailed accounts, photos, and other data – including even autopsy reports – concerning the *physical reality* of such beings.

Physical Demonic Entities Inside the Earth

*And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: **he was cast out into the earth**, and his angels were cast out with him.*

– Revelation 12:9 (emphasis added)

*And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From **going to and fro in the earth**, and from **walking up and down in it**.*

– Job 1:7 (as well as 2:2, emphasis added)

It's a given in the LDS theology of the Plan of Salvation that Lucifer was cast down, and that the earth serves as a form of prison for him and his cohorts – they are unable to leave it, to progress, or to achieve redemption from their fallen state. It is almost a given to the Christian and LDS mind to think of Satan and his minions as miserable spirits floating around, roaming the earth, searching for opportunities to tempt and misguide unwary individuals. However, not until I began to investigate these matters in detail did I begin to ponder the literalness of such scriptural passages, the possibility that these beings are literally imprisoned *inside* the earth.²³

Contemplate this for a moment: God, the Father, has a physical body. After His resurrection, the Lord Jesus Christ has a physical body. Angelic servants, such as Cherubim and Seraphim, have physical bodies. Recall that Jacob literally wrestled with an angel in Genesis 32:22-32, refusing to let go of him until the angel blessed him. Also, recall that Moroni was a tangible resurrected entity, not a spirit, when he appeared to Joseph Smith. The only heavenly beings in scriptural accounts who do not have physical bodies are “the spirits of just men made perfect,” referred to in Hebrews 12:23 and

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

clarified in D&C section 129.

Lucifer was an archangel of high rank, referred to as a Son of the Morning. Might he also have had some kind of physical body? Might some of those that fell with him also have physical bodies? Despite that some LDS scholars may quickly dismiss such possibility, is there actually any scriptural evidence against it? Might the LDS doctrine that all beings of the pre-mortal era (the events prior to the advent of Adam and Eve) were strictly spirit in form and none had physical bodies actually be nothing more than speculation?

Consider this possibility: What if Lucifer and his fallen angels truly had some physical form – some kind of physical “body” – yet they were literally cast out and imprisoned deep within the earth? What if what we think of as “evil spirits” is in reality a projection of the spirit, of the consciousness or force of will, of one of these physically trapped beings?

As discussed in Volume I, astral projection (i.e. sending one's spirit or consciousness traveling outside of the body) is a commonly practiced phenomenon tied to New Age practitioners and occultists. In such circles, adepts are able to project their spirits at will. (On the spiritual flip-side, these kinds of travels/visions – sometimes described as being taken up to “an exceedingly high mountain” – are granted to prophets and clean/worthy individuals strictly according to the will of God, and never through one's own desire or willpower.) Therefore, is it not possible that Lucifer and his thrown-down angels are actually, at this very moment, physically confined to a horrid, hellish location *within* the earth, and that from this location they project their spirit/essence/force-of-will/whatever throughout the earth?

Would this not theologically fit the description of furious and conniving “evil spirits” roaming the earth, occasionally completely overpowering, possessing and taking control of animals and/or human beings? Is that too far fetched to even consider? Would that possibility be a bit too eerie should it prove to be a reality?

And yet, simultaneously, does this not speak volumes as to why the ancient elite and occult adepts would spend excessive time, labor, and resources creating massive tunnel systems down into the earth? Nearly every single nation and culture perpetuated rumors (which have persisted for centuries, millennia) about kings, rulers, and/or “wise” men who would go down deep into the earth to commune with powerful races of beings (some even being described as serpent-like in form), and emerge incredibly powerful and filled with advanced knowledge – which was thereafter used to establish mighty civilizations and empires. If that was then, what about now?

Let's review more of what Phil Schneider testified of and explore the implications.

A Geological Engineer With a Story to Tell

It is strongly recommended that the reader take time to view one or more of the provided videos of Philip Schneider's history and lectures in the supporting material.²⁴ Phil is a soft-spoken man with a great deal of life experience. However, he's someone who doesn't have much skill for public speaking. While I would prefer to provide a coherent-narrative transcription of Schneider's personal accounts, as I did previously with William Cooper, Schneider jumps around from topic to topic and interjects frequently with commentary and opinions, which are oftentimes unrelated to his current subject.

Despite the fantastic, incredulous nature of his claims, his unpolished body language, his unrehearsed manner of speaking, and his off-the-cuff recollections testify to the veracity that the personal experiences he discloses are all too real. Add to that the fact that he was found dead less than two months after the latest lecture he had given, as attention and credence towards his claims was growing.

The following are transcribed segments of some of Schneider's presentations²⁵. These segments focus upon what he disclosed regarding his background and personal experiences (underlined emphasis interpreted from source, other emphasis added):

"My father was a U-boat captain in Hitler's navy, and he got captured and taken over [to America]. I didn't find this out until about two weeks before he died. On his death bed he kinda told everybody, [who were in] total shock. I was one of them. Frankly, I didn't believe my father, [maybe] he was kind of in [a] delirium or something like that. But of course, [evidence to these] things have come up since. Anyway, he was captured by the French, turned over to the U.S. Third Army, [they] turned him over to the Navy. And he was a master machinist – now that's not a journeyman, a master means that he can take a block of metal and make a gun or a watch or some other flying instrument.

"[My father] later became an MD doctor, part of the aerospace medicine group of the United States Navy. [He] was instrumental in helping build the USS Nautilus²⁶, and its first nuclear-powered predecessor, the [USS] Enterprise²⁷, the first nuclear-powered aircraft carrier, and other ships like it. He pioneered all the ways in building very small, miniature nuclear engines. Later on in his life he helped develop the infamous "gridbit"²⁸ nuclear motor, which is now employed in some things that look like flying saucers, that people claim are flying saucers – yes, "*we*," *the United States Air Force and other [U.S.] armed forces, are training other European forces to fly unidentified (now identified) 'flying saucers.'* We've actually built several prototypes that are flying under the names of black craft....

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

"My father laid the groundwork with theoreticians about the Philadelphia experiment [Ed. Note: a highly controversial event wherein an entire Naval ship and its crew either "disappeared" or were transported somewhere. Please refer to endnote ²⁹.], as well as other experiments. What does that have to do with me? Nothing, other than the fact that he was my father. I don't agree with what he did on the other side [i.e. when he was a Nazi], but I think he had a lot of guts in coming here [to America]. He was hated in Germany. There was a \$1 million reward, payable in gold, to anyone who killed him. Obviously, they didn't succeed....

"I worked 17 years for the United States government as a geologist and aerospace engineer, as well as a structural engineer. I worked for such elusive [groups] in elusive occupations [for such entities as] Morrison Knudsen, Bachtel, Page and Page [i.e. the specialist recruitment agency now called PageGroup], Aérospatiale France, EG&G [a.k.a. Edgerton, Germeshausen, and Grier, Inc., a United States national defense contractor and provider of management and technical services] and a host of others, [including] Los Alamos laboratories³⁰, etc....

"My position as a geologist and engineer got me to see a lot of things in the world – I've been in over 70 countries. I also worked for NATO [and] I carried a Level 3 security clearance with a "Ryolite" factor ("Ryolite" is a "hardent" factor)³¹, only given out to a handful of civilians and maybe a couple of hundred military men worldwide.... I no longer work for the government anymore, I took my security clearance and all my government stuff, cut it up and sent it back to [them]....

"I was involved in building a numbered base inside of Dulce, New Mexico, which is Los Alamos biological laboratory. On the southwest part of the Archuleta mesa, we built an underground facility, the better part of three cubic miles hollowed out underground. Then, to the southwest of that, we were in the process of the early stages of building. We drilled four tunnel-like holes, some of them ran two and a half miles under the surface. Drilling machines that were used [back then could progress] at the rate of two miles per day, so it was fairly rapid. The equipment kept coming up broken, so they wanted to send somebody down there, a human observer, or human observers in this case, to find out what was going on.

"Well, to our total surprise – first of all, the government knew all about [the things I'm about to describe, and] they didn't tell anybody. ***When I saw green beret and black beret people encamped inside of our geologist camp, I knew something was up.*** *First of all, I knew all about the alien agenda.* [Ed. Note: it is highly likely that, with Schneider's security clearance, both William Cooper and Phil Schneider had read the same Top Secret government documents concerning alien life on earth and historical interactions, as both of them report having knowledge of these matters prior to 1979.] The large alien grays have been encamped there [i.e. that area underground Dulce] for, as best as believed possible, for about four or five hundred years. [It] had been one of their [i.e. 'alien'

entities'] internal bases. And we drilled [four] holes right on top of it.

"All the stinking air, all the black, sooty air, came right out. The first hole was sunk and all this soot came up. Well, that's when all hell broke loose, really. Anyway, we drilled all four holes. [It took about] two days to drill all four of them. And when you build an underground base, you drill four basic holes, then you build [what's] called 'spokes', or cross-member holes across, and use special blasting equipment [based on] the analyzation of the rock formation, and you literally blast out or tunnel out or deflagerate or melt rock out to build the large rooms required for this underground base.

"Well, in this process I was lowered down [in] 'the basket' of one of these holes [Ed. Note: Schneider and approximately 30 other people, including at least one green beret, were lowered down this newly drilled hole in a heavy-cable-supported metal 'basket' lowering system designed for spelunking/deep-cave-exploring.] And about from me to this elderly woman here in the front [Ed. Note: approximately 10 feet] was sitting a seven-foot tall alien gray. *The stench was worse than the worst garbage can you can imagine. The entity was absolutely horrible.* I didn't waste any time to reach for my pistol. At that time I was an engineer, I didn't have the [means] to carry [heavy weaponry that the] outer perimeter and inner perimeter security people carried. I carried a little Walther PPK pistol with a nine-shot clip. This was in late August of 1979.

"Now, [I was wearing] a regular suit of clothes, plus [I was in a suit] almost like a space suit environment, and [when] reaching for a gun, it's not the easiest thing to do, and then to pop a clip in it and start shooting. And I killed two of them [i.e. these tall 'alien grays' he witnessed]. *Yes, they are mortal and they do die.* However, in the process, one of them did this [Ed. Note: Schneider slowly waves his hand around his chest area, his palm facing his chest]. All I remember is that he waved his hand in front of his chest, and the next thing I know this blue beam hit me, and just literally opened me up like a fish. [Ed. Note: in a separate presentation, Schneider lifts up his shirt and shows both the severe burn and surgical scars up and down the center of his chest area.] [It also] burnt my fingers right off of me. [Ed. Note: Schneider holds up his left hand to show that his index, middle finger, and the top half of his thumb are completely gone.] It was some form of electrical force, because [it was] kind of like being hit by a lightning bolt, [it] burnt all my toe nails off of me, crispy-crittered my left foot, burnt the shoe right off of me. All I remember is the smoking remains, and I'm still conscious but in and out of [it], didn't remember much. And there was a green beret that was right behind me that risked his life, in fact he died. He risked his life, he shoved me back in the basket and hit the button, and took me up. I wouldn't be alive talking to you today if it weren't for him. I'm forever indebted.

"Sixty-six service agents, green berets, black berets, crack troops [i.e. highly trained, best-of-the-best] lost their lives [that day]...."

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

In another lecture, Schneider gives additional details of this event as follows (emphasis added):

"The fire-fight at Dulce occurred quite by accident. I was involved in building an addition to the deep underground military base at Dulce, which is probably the deepest base. It goes down seven levels and over 2.5 miles deep. At that particular time, we had drilled four distinct holes in the desert, and we were going to link them together and blow out large sections at a time. My job was to go down the holes and check the rock samples, and recommend the explosive to deal with the particular rock. As I was headed down there, we found ourselves amidst a large cavern that was full of outer-space aliens, otherwise known as large Greys. I shot two of them. At that time, there were 30 people down there. About 40 more came down after this started, and all of them got killed. *We had surprised a whole underground base of existing aliens. Later, **we found out that they had been living on our planet for a long time***, perhaps a million years. This could explain a lot of what is behind the theory of ancient astronauts.

"Anyway, I got shot in the chest with one of their weapons, which was a box on their body, that blew a hole in me and gave me a nasty dose of cobalt radiation. I have had cancer because of that."

Some other compelling things that Schneider has mentioned in his lectures include (emphasis added):

- "Some of you might ask what the "space shuttle" is "shuttling". Large ingots of special metals that are milled in space and cannot be produced on the surface of the earth. They need the near vacuum of outer space to produce them." At at least one of Schneider's lectures, he held up several items of what he alleged to be samples of such metals.
- "The federal government has now invented an earthquake device. I am a geologist, and I know what I am talking about. With the Kobe earthquake in Japan, there was no pulse wave as [what occurs during] a normal earthquake. None. In 1989, there was an earthquake in San Francisco. There was no pulse wave with that one either. It is a Tesla device that is being used for evil purposes."
- "Look at AIDS, invented by the National Ordinance Laboratory in Chicago, Illinois in 1972. It was a biological weapon to be used against the people of the United States. The reason I know this is that I have seen the documentation by the Office of Strategic Services, which by the way is still in operation to this day, through the CDC in Atlanta. They used the glandular excretions of animals, humans and alien humanoids to create the virus. These alien humanoids the government is hobnobbing with are the worst news. There is absolutely no defense against their germs – none. They are a biological weapon of terrible consequence. Every alien on the

planet needs to be isolated.”

- Spoken 8 months prior to being found dead in his apartment: “I will tell you one thing. If I keep speaking out like I am, maybe God will give me the life to talk my head off. I will break every law that it takes to talk my head off. ***Eleven of my best friends in the last 22 years have been murdered. Eight of the murders were called 'suicides.'*** Before I went to talk in Las Vegas, I drove a friend down to Joshua Tree, near 29 Palms. I drove into the mountains in order to get to Needles, California, and I was followed by two government E-350 vans with G-14 plates, each with a couple of occupants, one of which had an Uzi. I knew exactly who they were.”

In regards to what Phil personally testifies of, based on his first-hand experience, there are some stunning points to consider:

1. “[T]hey are mortal and they do die.” Phil shot two of the alien grays in a fatal manner. They truly are physical in nature, and they can be wounded with weaponry. Whether or not they actually “die” as we humans do – where our spirits completely separate from our bodies and go elsewhere – is another matter altogether. In Volume I, I reviewed the nature of Cain's immortality, that possibly his punishment by God is to have his spirit and body be permanently fused in a corrupted state for eternity (similar to how vampires in literature are forever 'undead'). If these beings are literal demons, might they be eternally-corrupted former angelic beings, with grotesquely-corrupted physical features – physically able to be wounded yet unable to “die” in the sense that we mortals do?
2. “[One] waved his hand in front of his chest... [there was] a box [on] his body... [and a] blue beam hit me, and... opened me up like a fish... [it] blew a hole in me and gave me a nasty dose of cobalt radiation.” These beings are privy to extremely advanced technologies and adept at applying them. It's curious to consider how frequently “blue beams” are associated with UFOs and aliens – from levitating abductees, to mutilating cattle with laser-fine precision cuts, to weaponry that does catastrophic tissue damage. Phil notes that the beam of energy that hit him was electrical in nature, as it entered his chest area and exited his left foot, destroying his footwear as it went.
3. “[A] whole underground base of existing aliens.... [T]hey [have] been living on our planet for a long time.” These creatures have “bases” several miles under the earth's surface. Once again, this harkens back to the ancient pattern of elite people, families, and groups throughout history tunneling deep into the earth, seeking and receiving information on how to manipulate the masses and form

empires.

These are merely three compelling points about these beings based on his direct, first-hand experiences – not from any additional information he discusses, obtained in connection to his high level security clearance.

There are various other accounts by others who appear to be credible, which talk about witnessing wounded alien bodies and/or their preserved corpses. Additionally, in his presentation at the MUFON conference in 1989, William Cooper shared details of the Top Secret reports that he was privy to, primarily concerning military personnel's earliest encounters with an alien gray: how it communicated telepathically, how it could not be "contained" because it could "walk through walls", how it lied incessantly and always seemed to alter its story based upon the expectations or anticipations of the individuals or group communicating with it. However, as William Cooper asserted later in his life, he questions the veracity of these reports and suspects that they were concocted and liberally circulated on purpose, with the intent to eventually be leaked and thereafter slowly establish a dis-informed picture in the minds of the general public regarding the nature and agenda of such beings. Therefore, we ought to take all such reports with a large grain of salt.

This is why Phil's direct, first-hand personal account is so valuable in trying to cut through the disinformation. And why such an account *greatly threatens* the Luciferian agenda that has been at work for over a century, and is still in development.

The coroner originally attributed Phil Schneider's death to "either stroke or heart attack," then later changed it to "death by suicide," despite that there was a rubber tube tightly wrapped around his neck three times³². As mentioned earlier, Phil was missing both his index and middle fingers as well as the top part of his thumb on his left hand, making it practically a physical impossibility that he could manage to wrap three times and then tie a rubber tube so tightly around his neck, while simultaneously asphyxiating. If he had really wanted to kill himself, he had firearms in his apartment at his disposal.

Schneider's ex-wife has outspokenly defended everything he claimed in his presentations, and has provided her own input on matters that she witnessed while they were married. She wrote a letter detailing further evidence against the coroner's conclusion that Schneider killed himself.³³

Aside from the strong possibility that Schneider was killed in order to silence him, his manner of speaking and presenting was so frank and unrehearsed, various information flowing out so readily, that this alone speaks volumes as to his honesty and the veracity of his claims.

Schneider Compared to Other “Whistle-blowers”

It is curious to compare Schneider's manner of delivering information compared to others who claim extraordinary encounters with alien life forms.

One particular example that I can't help but reflect upon is the case of “Dr.” Jonathan Reed. Reed had an alleged alien encounter on October 15, 1996. While hiking in a wooded area near his home in Washington state, he asserts that his dog began barking and ran towards something. He states that a 5-foot-tall alien life form was there, which grabbed his dog by its jaw with its hands, then ripped his dog in two from the jaw down. Reed reports that he smacked the creature in the head with a log, thinking he killed it. He then obtained a VHS video camera and captured some poor-quality footage. The shaky footage shows no dog carcass or anything similar, nor the alien he smacked in the head – it only shows glimpses of a small black rhombus-shaped craft (roughly two feet high and five feet wide, hardly large enough to house a “five-foot-tall” alien) about one foot off the ground among some bushes. The camera appears to malfunction, and Reed is heard smacking the camera on the side and telling it to work right – he attributes its malfunctioning to some kind of interference coming from the craft in the vegetation.

Aside from this, there's footage inside Reed's garage. He allegedly wrapped the alien in a survival blanket and brought it there. The footage primarily focuses on a somewhat-blurry closeup of the creature's head (with the rest of the body remaining wrapped in the survival blanket), and Reed's latex-gloved hand gently rotating the alien's head. It has a smooth, bulbous head atop of an assumingly-clothed-in-black-wispy-body (yet, it looks a lot like a fake alien head inside a black turtleneck shirt). No clear close up footage of the craft (supposedly the craft's “interference” made sure to that). No gnarled remains of his dog. There is no footage recorded of anything below the head. Nothing below the head is unwrapped from the survival blanket to be filmed. “Dr.” Reed reports that soon thereafter shadowy government thugs broke into his home and took the alien and all evidence – except for the very-unconvincing-and-feels-staged blurry, minimal footage and photos he took. He claims that “they” have since wiped out all his academic records and credentials, so he has no recourse in trying to validate any claims as to who he is and his academic and career accomplishments.

The UFO/alien phenomenon-validating/debunking website ufowatchdog.com did an extensive investigation into this “Dr.” Jonathan Reed, and has thoroughly exposed him as a fraud. His real name is John Bradley Rutter, and he doesn't have any college degrees whatsoever. They located and interviewed some of those who have been close to him,

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

including a good friend of his, and a daughter of an ex-girlfriend. Both of them relate Rutter's penchant for extensive and elaborate tall tales, and his fascination with Art Bell's *Coast to Coast AM* radio show and the 1990's hit paranormal TV show *The X-Files*. Additionally, both of them state that Reed/Rutter detested hiking and has never owned a dog due to allergies. Refer to the supporting material for the details of their investigation on Reed/Rutter.³⁴

The SciFi (SyFy) Channel's paranormal investigative series *Fact or Faked*³⁵ decided to look into Reed's claims.³⁶ In season one, episode nine, the investigators set out to interview Reed and recreate his footage. Their attempts were astoundingly successful – their footage was not only nearly identical to Reed's original material, it is actually more convincing that they “bagged” themselves an alien. They even engineered their fake alien head to be able to convincingly open and close its eyelids.

When they interview Reed, the manner of delivery and the content of his statements raises many red flags (all emphasis added):

FBI AGENT BEN HANSON: As many people have said, if [your story is] true, it could be the biggest thing since the Roswell, New Mexico crash of '47. Or it could be the greatest fraud of all time.

REED: I understand that. And I can sympathize with that thought. But I always have to say, and bring it back to one thing: **this is just my truth, it's my case, it's my story, it's what happened to me.** It happened so quick that I don't know what, completely, I was looking at, except I saw this little creature pulling [my dog's] jaw apart, with her sinew and her blood and her tissue being ripped apart....

HANSON: What about your friends? You've talked about a lot of friends that went missing. One of your friends at the university was murdered in his office? [Ed. Note: Reed has not named the names of these “friends.”]

REED: There are people actively – and I can't give you an alphabet-name of the group – that are threatening people's lives.... there is a dark side, you know, of military-type people, beating people up, killing them, or threatening their lives, to make them silent.

HANSON: I have yet to see [an] independent study of the video, of the photographs. Nobody's been able to verify your credentials.... I've given you all this time to talk, [and yet] there are so many things about this that just don't add up.

REED: Everybody has their own opinion. That's OK. And I've continued to say that all the way along. You know, I don't expect people to believe it. I wouldn't believe it either if it didn't happen to me.

Reed's statements of “it's my truth” and “it's my story” are massive red

flags. These are not statements of conviction, they are statements of interpretational convenience. Another red flag statement is: "I don't know, completely, what I was looking at" – allowing the possibility that something completely different actually happened aside from what he "witnessed." Also, his delivery on the details of his dog being ripped in half conveys two things: (1) when someone witnesses a beloved pet being killed in an excruciating manner, it is traumatizing; the way Reed talks about his dog being brutally torn in half conveys sensationalism, not empathy or emotional pain, and (2) his emphasis on the gory details of his dog's demise feels calculated to generate sentiment and sympathy for him, tugging on heart-strings to get the gullible to believe his story.

Ben Hanson's assessment of Reed's claims at the end of this episode is as follows: "Psychologically, he's trying to detach himself from the deception. Jonathan Reed is not who he says he is, and this did not happen to him."

Ufowatchdog.com investigator Royce Myers, III, pulls no punches in summarizing the damage of the Reed/Rutters hoax, and what hoaxers like him do to the credibility of any and all who attempt to legitimately blow the whistle or do serious, impartial investigations (underlined emphasis from original, other emphasis added):

"Reed's usual 'I fear for my life' ploy has been overplayed to the point of being simply ludicrous and unrealistic. As investigator Ted Oliphant has said, "'It's the government!' This catch-all phrase is the lunatic fringe's most over used cliché."...

"Reed attempts to add credibility to his story, not with hard physical evidence, but by making emotional pleas in the name of freedom, the U.S. Constitution, how the country is falling apart and the real catch-all phrase employed by every second rate UFO con artist, "the truth." **Reed says exactly what some people want to hear.** Another part of the problem with UFOs: **too many people want to believe as opposed to being provided proof.** Of course, some beliefs simply cannot be measured alone with physical evidence. However, Reed claimed to have that evidence. **Faith and UFOs can be a dangerous combination, a combination which many UFO ripoff artists count on....**

"Hoaxers such as yourself [Reed/Rutter] cost UFOlogy far too much in terms of resources, time and energy that could be focused on more serious investigation of this phenomena. Now, *serious UFOlogy is left to pick up the mess you have caused by associating yourself and your blatant hoax with UFOs.* I'm sure someone just beginning to delve into UFOs is going to ask, 'Hey, what about that guy and the dead alien in the freezer?' A question that will undoubtedly ring throughout UFOlogy as serious researchers and investigators are left holding the bag. **There are far too many people that have made real sacrifices in this field to have you simply come along and further reduce the credibility of UFOlogy with**

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

your ridiculous ruse.

"You [Reed/Rutters] counted on all of UFOlogy being completely gullible, you counted wrong. You tried to offer a diamond dealer a rube. Your alien is a fraud, your story is a fraud, your UFO is a fraud, you're a fraud....

"A lot of change needs to take place if the UFO subject is to be addressed in any serious, scientific fashion. *A lot of people need to start doing a lot better job of presenting information to the public as being real when it really hasn't been verified, or there appears to be a lot of inconsistencies.* This case is a classic demonstration in two areas – faith and greed. Combine either with anything and the combination can be a disaster just waiting to happen."

As Reed/Rutters disingenuously alludes, there actually is a "dark side, you know, of military-type people" who *do* actively silence anyone with genuine material or testimony that threatens to expose their secret works. However, deceptive falsehoods devised by opportunists which seek to capitalize on real whistle-blower efforts are subtly encouraged (and in some cases, even promoted as credible) by conspiratorial groups. The self-serving lies of frauds only serve to hurt the reputation of real people actually putting their lives on the line. Many legit outspoken whistle-blowers, including Phil Schneider and William Cooper, gave all that they had, profiting effectually nothing for their efforts, until their lives were taken from them. They boldly shared actual first-hand experiences and freely disseminated whatever valid information they had access to. They were direct and unambiguous. They named many names. *They are dead for doing so.*

Another important hoaxing example to mention is the case of the "alien autopsy." It is especially important to address this one due to its rather-widespread public awareness. A synopsis of the matter is as follows (all emphasis added)³⁷:

"*Alien Autopsy* was the name given to a hoaxed medical examination and dissection of a dummy depicted in a black and white film released in the 1990s by London-based entrepreneur Ray Santilli. [Ed. Note: I would argue that 'entrepreneur' is too nice of a term. 'Opportunist' would be more appropriate.] He presented it as an authentic autopsy on the body of an extraterrestrial being recovered from the crash of a 'flying disc' near Roswell, New Mexico on June 2, 1947. The film footage was [allegedly] supplied to him by a retired military cameraman who wished to remain anonymous.

"The 17-minute black and white film of poor quality surfaced in the 1990s, but **in 2006 Santilli admitted the film was not authentic** but rather *a staged reconstruction of footage* he claimed to have viewed in 1992, which had deteriorated and become unusable by the time he made his

film. He claimed that a few frames from the original were embedded in his film, but he never specified which ones. ***In 1995, before being exposed as a hoax, the film was sold to television networks and broadcast in more than 33 countries.***

"Fox television broadcast the striking footage in the United States on August 28, 1995 under the title *Alien Autopsy: Fact or Fiction*. The program caused a sensation, with Time Magazine declaring that the film had sparked a debate 'with an intensity not lavished on any home movie since the Zapruder film'. [Ed. Note: the 'Zapruder film' is the footage of President John F. Kennedy's assassination.]....

"The Fox program features numerous well-known figures both in front of and behind the camera. Interviews with experts on the authenticity of the film include Oscar-winning special effects make-up artist Stan Winston, cinematographer Allen Daviau, and noted forensic pathologist Cyril Wecht, who considered the autopsy procedures in the film to be authentic but stopped short of declaring the being an alien.

"Film director John Jopson was engaged by producer Robert Kiviat to direct several portions of the Fox special, including Santilli's interview. ***Jopson has stated that he became immediately suspicious upon meeting Santilli in London and, after conducting further investigation, told both Fox and Kiviat that he believed 'the whole thing was a fraud'. He described their response: 'It was then made clear to me that if the footage was exposed as a hoax before the show aired, the ratings would suffer.'***... Two of the program's participants claimed their observations were distorted: Stan Winston and Kevin D. Randle (a noted UFO author and investigator) both claimed they clearly stated in their interviews that ***they believed the footage was a hoax, but their statements were edited out.***

"In 2006, the events surrounding the release of the footage were adapted as a feature film, *Alien Autopsy*, a British comedy directed by Jonny Campbell and written by William Davies. The film gave a humorous reconstruction of the making of the Santilli film based on Santilli's statements, without commenting on the veracity of his claims....

"According to Santilli, a set was constructed in the living room of an empty flat in Rochester Square, Camden Town, London. John Humphreys, an artist and sculptor, was employed to construct two dummy alien bodies over a period of three weeks, using casts containing sheep brains set in raspberry jam, chicken entrails and knuckle joints obtained from S.C. Crosby Wholesale Butchers Smithfield meat market, London. Humphreys also played the role of the chief examiner, in order to allow him to control the effects being filmed. There were two separate attempts at making the footage. After filming, the team disposed of the 'bodies' by cutting them into small pieces and placing them in rubbish bins across London.

"Alien artifacts, supposedly items recovered from the crash site, were

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

depicted in the footage. These included alien symbols and six-finger control panels, which Santilli describes in the Sky documentary as being the result of artistic license on his part. These artifacts were also created by Humphreys. The footage also showed a man reading a statement 'verifying' his identity as the original cameraman and the source of the footage. Santilli and Shoefield admitted in the documentary that they had found an unidentified homeless man on the streets of Los Angeles, persuaded him to play the role of the cameraman, and filmed him in a motel."

"Hooray! We hoaxed the whole world, greatly enriched ourselves, and got away with it! It was so much fun, we made a 2006 comedy motion picture based on how we did it! No, we're not in jail – no, our lives are not threatened – and no, we didn't need to give those 33 TV networks their millions of dollars back. And we certainly weren't gunned down by a dozen Arizona state troopers, nor 'suicided' with rubber tubes neatly tied and wrapped several times around our necks. Nope! We're a couple of British 'entrepreneurs' enriching ourselves and doing the whole world a favor at the same time!"

There are authentic, selfless whistle-blowers who put their lives and reputations on the line to share their genuine experiences and knowledge with their fellow men, and there are phonies. Some phonies want to enrich themselves, some just want to be important, and some are connected to Luciferian/occultic circles which have an agenda to deceive. Many of the latter set themselves up as "experts" in UFOlogy, and often help to either corroborate or validate the phonies' stories.

One near-surefire way to tell between authentic whistle-blowers and phonies: even if what someone reveals may be partly true, or even based on something that is true, if it isn't truly threatening to the Luciferian agenda, they will not be threatened, assassinated, nor "commit suicide."

Humanoids, Reptilians, Grays, and the Elite

There is definitely one thing overwhelming when one researches the topic of aliens: the varying races. There's even been extensive attempts at categorizing and cataloging them.³⁸ However, one thing that is consistent about the most recent accounts (i.e. the past several decades) of their appearances: they either look completely human (usually with fair-skinned Nordic features), or look like reptilian humanoids, or they are the bulb-headed "grays," which typically have serpentine qualities, such as large black eyes, small slits for nostrils, and have scrawny bodies and limbs.

Recall that William Cooper mentioned a letter³⁹ by a gentleman named

THERE ARE SAVE TWO CHURCHES ONLY – VOLUME II

Gerald Light, which talks about the Muroc Air Force base (now called Edwards Airforce base) event, which President Eisenhower was said to attend. Here are the verbatim contents of that letter⁴⁰:

Mr. Meade Layne
San Diego, California

My dear friend: I have just returned from Muroc. The report is true---devastatingly true!

I made the journey in company with Franklin Allen of the Hearst papers and Edwin Nourse of Brookings Institute (Truman's erstwhile financial advisor) and Bishop MacIntyre of L.A. (confidential names for the present, please).

When we were allowed to enter the restricted section (after about six hours in which we were checked on every possible item, event, incident and aspect of our personal and public lives), I had the distinct feeling that the world had come to an end with fantastic realism. For I have never seen so many human beings in a state of complete collapse and confusion as they realized that their own world had indeed ended with such finality as to beggar description. The reality of the "otherplane" aeroforms is now and forever removed from the realms of speculation and made a rather painful part of the consciousness of every responsible scientific and political group.

During my two days visit I saw five separate and distinct types of aircraft being studied and handled by our Air Force officials---with the assistance and permission of The Etherians! I have no words to express my reactions.

It has finally happened. It is now a matter of history.

President Eisenhower, as you may already know, was spirited over to Muroc one night during his visit to Palm Springs recently. And it is my conviction that he will ignore the terrific conflict between the various "authorities" and go directly to the people via radio and television---if the impasse continues much longer. From

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

what I could gather, an official statement to the country is being prepared for delivery about the middle of May.

I will leave it to your own excellent powers of deduction to construct a fitting picture of the mental and emotional pandemonium that is now shattering the consciousness of hundreds of our scientific "authorities" and all the pundits of the various specialized knowledges that make up our current physics. In some instances I could not stifle a wave of pity that arose in my own being as I watched the pathetic bewilderment of rather brilliant brains struggling to make some sort of rational explanation which would enable them to retain their familiar theories and concepts. And I thanked my own destiny for having long ago pushed me into the metaphysical woods and compelled me to find my way out. To watch strong minds cringe before totally irreconcilable aspects of "science" is not a pleasant thing. I had forgotten how commonplace things as dematerialization of "solid" objects had become to my own mind. The coming and going of an etheric, or spirit, body has been so familiar to me these many years I had forgotten that such a manifestation could snap the mental balance of a man not so conditioned. I shall never forget those forty-eight hours at Muroc!

[signed] G.L.

The Muroc base event described in Mr. Light's letter was later crafted into a fictional movie, namely Steven Spielberg's *Close Encounters of the Third Kind*. In this movie, the aliens are portrayed as bulb-headed grays. However, it is still not completely clear what kind of race of "alien" lifeform was present at Muroc, which is represented in Mr. Light's letter as "the Etherians." Most likely, they were the humanoid kind – those that supposedly look like Nordic-featured humans. In one of his presentations, Phil Schneider held up a photo which he asserted pictured one of these beings, named "Valiant Thor." Schneider said that his father is seated in the photo directly behind this being⁴¹.

However, instead of focusing on speculation about "alien" races, let's cut to the chase on the demonological connections between them and the modern elite. Of all the synopses I have found concerning the spiritual ramifications of the "alien" matter tied to demonology, the most concise and compelling article I've come across is by Ron Patton⁴² titled *Demons in Alien's Clothing*. The following are key excerpts (all emphasis added):

"As we enter the 21st century and a new millennium, Satan has devised the delusion that mankind is entering into an important evolutionary phase – a New Age. The push for 'global enlightenment' has now extended to the vast reaches of the universe, into what could be deemed as a 'space' religion. However, once this nebulous veil is lifted, a definite correlation emerges between the UFO/Alien phenomenon and occultic/satanic activity.

"The ancient civilizations of the Egyptians, Babylonians, Aztecs, Mayans, and Incas shared several intriguing characteristics:

- They were extremely advanced scientifically and technologically.
- Animal and human sacrifices were performed at an alarming rate, preceding their demise.
- They believed they had acquired metaphysical knowledge from the "gods", whom they perceived as coming from the stars and also the subterranean level of the earth.
- These cultures disintegrated or became abruptly extinct while at the pinnacle of their existence.

"Many of these revered and feared entities were described as looking like winged-reptilians or dragons. Similarly, Satan and his minions were depicted in an identical manner, as seen in artwork throughout the centuries....

"A theory proposed by Bible scholar I.D.E. Thomas asserts that the race of the 'Nephilim' (meaning Giants and/or fallen ones), mentioned in Genesis 6:4 and Numbers 13:33, closely resemble the alien race of the blond Pleiadian Nordics, reported to be eight to nine feet tall. The Nazis attempted to revive this mystical Aryan race in the 1930's and 1940's. Mr. Thomas believes that a hybrid offspring culminated from relations between the Nephilim and the 'daughters of man' resulting in increased wickedness upon the earth; and thus evoking God's wrath in the form of the 'Great Flood'.

"Interviews taken of ex-Wiccans and Satanists (now Christians) indicate a high level of personal contact with various alien types, especially during coven meetings and holiday rituals....

"Dr. Richard Boylan has written extensively about E.T. encounters, and has found five common features of people predominately involved in UFO/alien sightings and abductions:

1. Individuals possessing a high degree of psychic ability.
2. Similar phenomenon occurring with other family members (multi or trans-generational).
3. Native Americans and/or indigenous peoples.
4. Children who have been subjected to severe abuse or trauma.

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

5. Individuals and/or family members affiliated to government and/or military intelligence agencies or departments.

"In conjunction, a strong relationship exists between occultic ritual sites, top secret military installations, and UFO/alien sightings and abductions. There also appears to be a magnetic spiritual vortex (or vacuum) which has drawn many 'New Agers' into these areas (Taos, NM; Sedona, AZ; Boulder, CO, etc.). One prime example is the area near Dulce, NM, where the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA) has a highly-secured underground complex on the Jicarilla Indian Reservation – a region known for Native American shamanism. The facility is said to be used for genetic engineering, including cloning. Several witnesses who were employed there reported seeing different breeds of aliens.

"Congruently, the Mojave Desert in California has its share of military bases involved in 'black projects', ranging from research and development of 'advanced' aircraft to MKULTRA mind control operations (Edwards AFB, Ft. Irwin, and China Lake Naval Weapons Center). Coincidentally, it was the area where Charles Manson and family resided in the late 1960's. It was also the general location described in the book, *Outside the Circle of Time* (1980) by Kenneth Grant. A portion of the book states, 'John Whiteside Parsons [who specialized in jet propulsion] and L. Ron Hubbard, founder of Scientology [and former Naval Intelligence Officer] were involved in a special project during 1945 and 1946.... This special project which was carried out in the California desert, was a part of magical ceremonies [black witchcraft] known as the 'Babylon Working', designed by Aleister Crowley, who died in 1947 [year of the alleged Roswell UFO crash and the implementation of the National Security Act]... ***The purpose of the series of ceremonies performed by Parsons and Hubbard was to unseal an inter-dimensional gateway, that had been sealed in antiquity thereby allowing other dimensional entities known as the 'Old Ones' access to our space/time continuum.*** The culmination of the ceremonies was reported to have been successful, having resulted in the establishment of 'extra-terrestrial contact'.... Crowley left behind a drawing of [one of] his invisible mentors or as he called them, 'Secret Chiefs' [a.k.a. spirit guides], entitled LAM.⁴³ This entity has a very large head on a small body, a pointed chin, and a little slit of a mouth [description compares favorably to the 'Greys'].⁴⁴ [Ed. Note: a side-by-side visual comparison of Crowley's LAM and the "alien" painting on the cover of Whitley Streiber's autobiographical novel *Communion* (which Streiber worked closely with the artist to recreate accurately), is included in the supporting material.]

"Another British occultist, Dr. John Dee, court astrologer for Queen Elizabeth I, would regularly summon alien-like entities.

"Several abductees, psychics (through out-of-body experiences) and former employees of the Dulce facility *reported seeing large vats, full of blood and body parts; essentially, a human stew.* [Ed. Note: recall what Phil Schneider mentioned about the "alien base" they stumbled into: the

stench was worse than the worst garbage can imaginable. Might this fetid odor be from vats of blood and human body parts?] Their understanding is *particular varieties of aliens, mostly 'Greys' bathe in these vats to absorb nutrients through their skin. One of the secretions these aliens crave is adrenaline, which is generated in great quantity when the victim is tortured or traumatized at the moment of death. This glandular hormone is most potent in children.*

"Striking similarities are found in Egyptian Satanism, as graphically detailed in The Egyptian Book of the Dead. 'Behold ye then god this great slaughter, mighty of terror, he washeth in your blood, he batheth in your gore.'¹⁴⁵ It was common practice for them to sacrifice infants and young children for the purpose of obtaining the life or energy force from the victim.

"Additional observations by some who have witnessed aliens recall distinct insignias or emblems on their uniforms. To no surprise, ***alien symbology is identical to that of the Mystery Religions of ancient Babylon....*** Mario Pazzaglini, Ph.D., published his meticulous research pertaining to alien symbols in a book titled, *Symbolic Messages: An Introduction to a Study of 'Alien' Writing*. He effectively deciphered over 150 samples and concluded that ***a high percentage of the alien alphabets are similar to magical alphabets of Hermetic and Enochian origins.*** Mario also surmised that, 'Further, messages [from 'aliens'] seem in most people to act as a nucleus for a developing sense of purpose in life, an increased realization that of some kind of 'assignment' from beyond humankind, and a heightened spiritual sense. The specific contents of these ideas can be of any religious denomination, or orientation, and sometimes reveals or develops a totally new religion, usually with conglomerate pieces from known religions and other cosmic, planetary, or stellar schemes.'

"A case epitomizing this 'cosmic consciousness' has been disclosed by Sky Ambrose, an alleged UFO/alien abductee who was interviewed by Art Bell, on his nationally-syndicated radio show, *Dreamland*, October 16, 1994. She and a friend were supposedly abducted in Colorado after observing a UFO in November 1989. Sky lost about two hours of time which she could not account for and decided to undergo hypnosis. A condensed version of what Ms. Ambrose recalled is as follows:

1. The aliens looked translucent, with large heads upon thin, frail bodies. Their eyes were large and pronounced, but there was no recollection of noses or mouths.
2. Sky and her friend were implanted with a small square, tissue-like substance inside their heads (cat scan analysis or x-rays have verified these biological devices exist).
3. Communication with the aliens was achieved telepathically.
4. They (the aliens) told Sky she was not chosen by them, but she out of her own volition, decided to participate in this journey before her

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

present life (reincarnation). To her understanding, these beings are 'caretakers' or 'guardians' of the planet, Earth. Their function is to bring forth 'revelation' through the spirit of unity, and, the earth is the soul of God; a living entity (paganism).

5. It was explained to her that the universe is rhythmic and presently at a peak cycle; what appears to be chaos is actually the birthing of a 'new order' (ordo ab chaos?). To enter into the next evolutionary level, new bodies will be needed to re-seed the planet. This hybrid body will be a combination of human and alien (remember the Nephilim?).
6. Her renewed belief system incorporates the expression that negativity brings separation but unity brings love (please read II Corinthians 6:17 & Matthew 10:34).

"Some skeptics have taken the position that the UFO/alien phenomenon can be best explained as *a form of psychosis or hysteria as conceptualized within Jungian psychology*. Others view it as *an elaborate government hoax, designed to further confuse the American populace*. Such an insight is coherently expounded upon in the book, *Space Aliens from the Pentagon*, by Bill Lyne, former Air Force Intelligence Officer. ***I believe all the above explanations can exist simultaneously and need not be exclusive from one another.*** What better way to manipulate one's perception of reality [than] by throwing out several different scenarios, thereby making it difficult to ascertain a consistent pattern or trend that would hopefully lead to finding the elusive 'truth'. In adding to the perplexity, cattle mutilations have been theorized to be the nefarious work of space creatures for experimental purposes. Others feel it's a result of cultic rituals. Yet, another explanation is that it's a smoke-screen perpetrated by government/military psy-ops in order to escalate our already induced paranoia (Is that a black helicopter I hear?).

"A few so-called experts in the field of UFOlogy are excited about the possibility that someday soon, these seemingly benevolent and misunderstood inter-galactic beings will openly reveal themselves to the Earth's human populace and bring about universal bliss. This grand deception is yet another lie conceived by the one referred to as 'that old serpent' (Revelation 12:9).

"As history repeats itself, let it be understood that we are living in a time likened as 'in the days of Noah' (I Peter 3:20). With 'dark skies' prevailing and the overwhelming presence of evil around us, what are we to do? I Corinthians 10:13 explains,

'There hath no temptation taken you but such as common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.'

"There is no physical place to hide from this onslaught of carnality except

by taking refuge in our spiritual fortress, God Almighty (Psalm 91:2)....

"From my perspective, these extra-terrestrials are nothing less than demons in alien's clothing. Grievously, many have and will succumb to this seductive aroma of pseudo-enlightenment (Mark 13:33). May we abide in Jesus, lest we partake in the abominations held within the mystery of iniquity (II Thessalonians 2:7-12)."

From what the Holy Spirit first communicated to me at the very start of my exploration down the "rabbit hole," and from all that I have researched over the nine years following (especially taking into consideration the hidden belief systems of the worldly elite harkening back to ancient times), and from the material which the Holy Spirit has led me to and guided me through in processing, I feel that Mr. Patton's overall review and assessment of these matters hits the nail firmly on the head.

In conjunction with the horrendous descriptions previously mentioned regarding "alien" creatures needing to absorb "nutrients" and adrenaline from vats of human blood and body parts, consider the following excerpts from the autobiographical account *Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas* by the late eccentric sports writer Hunter S. Thompson⁴⁶ (emphasis added):

"...Nineteen Hundred and Seventy One.... Las Vegas was just up ahead.... [W]hen we finally arrived at the Mint Hotel my attorney was unable to cope artfully with the [Press] registration procedure. We were forced to stand in line with all the others – which proved to be extremely difficult under the circumstances. I kept telling myself: 'Be quiet, be calm, say nothing – speak only when spoken to: name, rank and press affiliation, nothing else, ignore this terrible drug, pretend [this acid trip's] not happening.'...

"There is no way to explain the terror I felt when I finally lunged up to the clerk and began babbling. All my well-rehearsed lines fell apart under that woman's stoney glare.... The woman never blinked.... [her] face was changing: swelling, pulsing – horrible green jowls and fangs jutting out, the face of a Moray Eel! Deadly poison!...

"Terrible things were happening all around us. Right next to me a huge reptile was gnawing on a woman's neck, the carpet was a blood-soaked sponge – impossible to walk on it, no footing at all. 'Order some golf shoes,' I whispered. 'Otherwise, we'll never get out of this place alive. You notice these lizards don't have any trouble moving around in this muck – that's because they have claws on their feet.'... 'We're right in the middle of a [expletive] reptile zoo! And somebody's giving booze to these [expletive] things! It won't be long before they tear us to shreds. [expletive], look at the floor! Have you ever seen so much blood? How many have they killed already?'...

"[My] drink was beginning to cut the acid and my hallucinations were

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

down to a tolerable level. The room service waiter had a vaguely reptilian cast to his features, but I was no longer seeing huge pterodactyls lumbering around the corridors in pools of fresh blood...."

It's curious to contemplate whether hallucination-inducing chemicals actually produce an all-within-one's-mind formulated experience, or whether the eyes of the individual are "opened" to witness a dark dimension. Are those who consume such chemicals able to see actual things that exist, or transpire, beyond our five physical senses? Or maybe even see the spiritual realm equivalent of a given earthly being? What if it is not their own brains producing the hallucination, but they are instead trying (and failing) to comprehend something that they are witnessing from an expanded dark reality?

This may be precisely the case with at least one hallucinogen, N,N-Dimethyltryptamine, also referred to as DMT or N,N-DMT:

"One common feature of the hallucinogenic experience caused by DMT are hallucinations of humanoid beings, characterized as being otherworldly. The term *Machine Elf* was coined by ethnobotanist Terence McKenna for the experience, who also used the terms *fractal elves*, or *self-transforming machine elves*. [Ed. Note: this denotes the shape-shifting capability of such beings]

"Hallucinations of strange creatures had been reported by Szara in the *Journal of Mental Science* (now the British Journal of Psychiatry) (1958) "Dimethyltryptamine Experiments with Psychotics", Stephen Szara described how one of his subjects under the influence of DMT had experienced "strange creatures, dwarves or something" at the beginning of a DMT trip.[95]

"Other researchers of the experience described 'entities' or 'beings' in humanoid as well as animal form, with descriptions of "little people" being common (non-human gnomes, elves, imps etc.). This form of hallucination has been speculated to be the cause of alien abduction experiences through endogenously occurring DMT."⁴⁷

Personal accounts of those who report hallucinations, such as this excerpt from Thompson's autobiographical novel, causes me to wonder all the more if what he's describing here was actually a glimpse from a demonic-spiritual-dimension aspect of a Las Vegas lobby circa 1971.

If this is truly the case, then the seemingly-outrageous theories of a reptilian bloodline among the elite class, which has been extensively covered by researcher David Icke⁴⁸, could have a spiritual-dimension credibility to them. Icke covers numerous accounts of people who claim to have witnessed, first-hand, individuals among the worldly elite (or connected to them) actually change form and appear as a reptilian humanoid.

It's also tangentially-curious that the popular 1980's science fiction TV mini-series called *V*⁴⁹ was about an alien race which comes to earth; they are human-like in appearance, and they present themselves as benevolent, yet they turn out to actually be reptilian creatures underneath human-like full-body synthetic skin coverings, and their agenda is to enslave the human race and consume them for sustenance.

Consider again what Mr. Gerald Light describes in his first-hand experience of the events at Muroc Air Force base:

"To watch strong minds cringe before totally irreconcilable aspects of 'science' is not a pleasant thing. I had forgotten how commonplace things as dematerialization of 'solid' objects had become to my own mind. The coming and going of an etheric, or spirit, body has been so familiar to me these many years I had forgotten that such a manifestation could snap the mental balance of a man not so conditioned."

He witnessed "etheric" bodies – which were handled by himself and others, and demonstrated to be "solid" – appearing and disappearing before himself and other scientifically-accomplished individuals present on the base; not unlike how the Savior appeared and disappeared to his disciples, and demonstrated himself to be "solid", shortly after His resurrection. This phenomenon will be addressed in the next chapter.

Propaganda, Cultural Manipulation, Subtle Mockery

How can anything truly demonic be complete without taking the opportunity to either alter the world's perception of Christ, claim to be the *real* saving solution for the world, or take straw-man below-the-belt jabs at those who believe in Christ? And what better way to do so than through manipulating culture-conscious media?

In 1977, director Steven Spielberg gave the cinematic world a bunch of benevolent alien greys in *Close Encounters of the Third Kind*. In 1982, he gave us a vulnerable, abandoned, emotive outer-space creature with *E.T. The Extra-Terrestrial* – scoring one of the biggest box office successes of all time. In March of 2011, British comedians Simon Pegg and Nick Frost gave us *Paul* – an alien movie for modern, smarmy, snide college boys around the world and their tenured professors. The title character is a CG (computer generated) bulb-headed, big-eyed alien which strongly resembles the alien gray variant of "extra-terrestrial" life forms, yet his eyes are a dark bluish grey with pupils, and his facial features are humanly emotive.⁵⁰

Christian commentator Cris D. Putnam nailed both the propaganda and

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

the nefarious implications of the film in his article titled "*Evolve This!*" *Hollywood's Anti-Christian Agenda in the Film Paul*.⁵¹ The following are key excerpts (emphasis added):

"[The movie *Paul* is] basically a buddy movie about two British comic book geeks who stumble across a real live alien on the lamb from the feds. What you don't see in many of the reviews is that it is an unambiguous yet subtly subversive piece of anti-Christian propaganda. The bias and ridicule are ubiquitous and aggressive....

"As the two bungling protagonists assist their little alien buddy Paul in escaping from the men in black they come across two Christians, a father and daughter, Moses and Ruth Buggs. The deleterious caricature is transparent as *they are portrayed as ignorant hicks isolated in a cultic subculture correlated to the suppression of everything fun*. Kristen Wiig's character, Ruth, wearing a one-lensed pair of glasses to hide her defective eye, enters the scene wearing a T-Shirt picturing Jesus shooting Charles Darwin in the head, which reads, "EVOLVE THIS." *This offensive shirt is now being marketed by the producers.*

"She is asked, 'Why would Jesus want to shoot Charles Darwin?' She answers curtly, 'Because of his blasphemous theories! – Are you men of God?' The response, 'We're men of science – ya know, we believe in the establishment of a biological order through the maelstrom of physical and chemical chaos.' Ruth promptly retorts, 'The world is only 4,000 years old and can only be the product of intelligent design.' This is the nature of the parody. It's inane and obvious enough....

"... 4,000 years is completely disingenuous as not even the most hard core young earth creationists would argue such a view. The next point is more subtle and indeed the most subversive because intelligent design is attached. While intelligent design [ID] denies that "biological order comes from the maelstrom of physical and chemical chaos", it does not entail a denial of evolution [or natural selection] nor a belief in a young earth. The actual proponents of ID define it as such:

"Within biology intelligent design is a theory of biological origins and development. Its fundamental claim is that intelligent causes are necessary to explain the complex, information-rich structures of biology and that these causes are empirically detectable."

"Yet ***the average movie viewer has just been conditioned to associate ID with an exaggerated parody of young earth creationism.*** Of course the typical moviegoer is enjoying the comedy and is not likely engaging this material critically enough to see they are being manipulated. That is how good propaganda works.

"But that is not really the worst aspect of Paul's anti-Christian agenda. When Ruth first sees Paul she screams "Demon." ***While many Christians do believe the UFO phenomenon to be demonic,***

secular scientists like Jacques Valle and Pierre Guerin see the possibility as well....

*"The mere existence of extraterrestrial life is represented as a complete defeater for Christianity. This is a commonly held misconception that should be addressed. It's false. **Theologians are not at all threatened by the possibility that God has not told us everything....***

"In fact, during his talk at the God, Man and ET conference, Dr. Michael Heiser presented a case that **historically theologians were even branded heretics for not believing that an omnipotent God probably had created other worlds.** Thoughtful Christians are so rarely portrayed in Hollywood, if the movie producers ever actually acknowledged one they might lose their faith in hedonism.

"Still yet, the anti-Christian polemic gets even worse.

"And more subversive – Paul has healing powers. First he heals fundamentalist Ruth's bad eye winning her to atheism. In one scene he resurrects a dead bird and then promptly eats it quipping, "I'm not going to eat a dead bird am I?" Yes, Paul can resurrect the dead. *Of course, these powers are attributed to the magical properties of evolution.* But as the movie progresses we learn that in healing, Paul takes on the wounds of the subject. Paul reveals that it is too dangerous to bring a human back to life. That is, until near the end of the film when Simon Pegg's character is blasted by Ruth's violent shotgun toting Father named Moses. Paul himself almost dies in absorbing the deadly wound and saves the day. Sound familiar?

"But he was wounded for our transgressions; he was crushed for our iniquities; upon him was the chastisement that brought us peace, and with his stripes we are healed." (Is 53:5)

"Curious that I characterized this film as anti-Christian propaganda. In the Greek, the term rendered 'antichrist' ἀντίχριστος not only refers to one who opposes Christ but also to one who usurps his position."

One point that Putnam alludes to, but doesn't single out, is the use of poignant Biblical names for the characters: Paul, Ruth, Moses. Atop of all the painted-as-light-hearted-comedy asinine Christian-bashing, there's an undercurrent of seeding the concept into the audience's minds that scientifically-amalgamating advanced alien races are the source of biological life on earth and the answer to human progression – not some unseen, unheard, unprovable omnipotent "god" or "gods."

The movie *Paul* is far from alone in sowing this concept into the public's minds. For several decades, a great deal of science fiction has been rife with this premise. Most recently, the story of a 2012 science fiction film strongly alludes to the idea that Greek-olympian-looking alien life forms are the

DEMONS, NOT ALIENS

ancient progenitors of human life on earth. The name of the movie is *Prometheus* – a curious title considering what the Greek myth of Prometheus represents in the Luciferian religion. (Refer to the introduction of Mystery Schools and Mystery Babylon in Part I of Volume I.)

It all harkens back to the quote by Richard Dawkins given at the start of this chapter. Reflect on his words again:

It could be that at some earlier time, somewhere in the universe, a civilization evolved (by probably some kind of Darwinian means) to a very, very high level of technology, and *designed a form of life that they seeded onto, perhaps, this planet*. Now, that is a possibility and an intriguing possibility, and I suppose it's possible that you might find evidence for that. If you look at the details of biochemistry [and] molecular biology, you might find a signature of some sort of designer. And *that designer could well be a higher intelligence from elsewhere in the universe*.

All the scientific pieces match. Scientifically, even the most staunch Darwinists and atheists are completely prepared to be won over by the argument that life on this planet – *all life, including astoundingly complex human biology and genetics* – was crafted and/or established by extra-terrestrial beings; some of which look human, some of which look bulb-headed serpentine, some of which look reptilian. Regardless, the scientific, agnostic, and atheistic realms are prepared to readily accept the explanation that “advanced extra-terrestrial beings” are the source and progenitors of all biological life on this planet.

Those who have humbled themselves to seek God, who have received the Holy Spirit into their hearts, who have come to know Jesus Christ, the reality of His divinity and His atonement, who have accepted Him as our Savior and Redeemer – *they ought not be so readily taken in*.

If the reader has never considered these matters, I again encourage one to take all this to the Lord in prayer and supplication, having faith that the Holy Ghost will make the truth of these matters known unto one's soul.

- 1 Ben Stein is a religious Jewish writer, lawyer, actor and commentator on political and economic issues. In popular culture, he is most famous as the teacher dryly calling out Ferris Bueller's name over and over again in the perennial 1986 comedy *Ferris Bueller's Day Off*. His documentary *Expelled: No Intelligence Allowed* explores the current trend within academia of silently taking action against anyone who explores, let alone gives credence, to the concept of Intelligent Design, while rewarding those who champion Darwinism in an actions-speak-louder-than-words manner.
Richard Dawkins is an ethologist, evolutionary biologist, writer, and staunch champion of atheism and evolution. He has authored many books, including *The Selfish Gene* and *The God Delusion*. His answer to Ben Stein's question is particularly telling, in that he has no problem accepting the already-circulating science-fictional concept of a highly-advanced extra-terrestrial race having seeded life onto this planet, but vociferously opposes the notion that an unseen-to-our-eyes creator (who created mankind in His image) lovingly designed this world from the molecular level up, and oversees all its activities. Or as Ben Stein notes in a voice-over following Dawkin's response, "So, Professor Dawkins is not against Intelligent Design, just certain types of designers, such as God."
- 2 A clip of this portion of his presentation is included in the supporting material. Refer to video file: William Cooper Atlanta Presentation Feb 23 1991 segment.avi
- 3 This transcript is taken from a portion of an interview within the documentary AVI file about William Cooper's life and legacy in the supporting material: The Hour of Our Time – The Legacy of William Cooper.avi
- 4 Ibid.
- 5 "Icore International offers innovative, high performance solutions for a wide range of electrical and fluid interconnect applications for defence [sic] equipment. Our extensive experience in aerospace and military markets means we offer an in depth [sic] knowledge of individual shielding requirements, for example for EMC, EMP, RFI, HIRF, and lightning strike protection.... Icore has over 70 years' experience in supplying products to the defense industry, and can offer an in depth [sic] knowledge with an understanding of the need for reliability and maintainability and cost effective design."
(Source – <http://www.naval-technology.com/contractors/corrosion/icore-interconnect/>)
- 6 Ibid. note 3
- 7 Refer to the JPG image file in the supporting material: Letter from Gerald Light to Meade Layne 04-16-1954.jpg
- 8 This transcript is taken from a portion of an undated presentation within the footage of the documentary *The Hour of Our Time*. The AVI file of this video is in the supporting material: The Hour of Our Time - The Legacy of William Cooper.avi
- 9 Merriam-Webster dictionary: "Podunk – a small, unimportant, and isolated town." Wikipedia: "denotes or describes an insignificant, out-of-the-way, or fictitious town, and is often used in the upper case as a placeholder name in a context of dismissing significance or importance."
Sources:
<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/podunk>
<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Podunk>

CHAPTER NOTES

- 10 Speech can be found at: <http://www.historyplace.com/speeches/bush-war.htm>
- 11 Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: William Cooper - Behold a Pale Horse.pdf
- 12 Refer to the documentary AVI file about William Cooper's life and legacy in the supporting material: The Hour of Our Time - The Legacy of William Cooper.avi
- 13 Refer to the MP4 video file in the supporting material: Coast to Coast AM 09-11-97 - Area 51 Frantic Caller.mp4
- 14 "[UFOs: Operation Trojan Horse is] a book published in 1970 by John Keel. The book was reprinted in 1996 with minor additions. It presents the results of Keel's research on UFOs and similar phenomena. Keel, who died in 2009, was an influential ufologist.... The book, the result of four years of research and interviews with thousands of individuals, presents Keel's theory that UFOs are a phenomenon produced by 'ultraterrestrials', beings who are able to manipulate matter and our senses, and who in the past manifested themselves as fairies, demons, and so on."
Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Operation_Trojan_Horse_%28book%29
- 15 "Jacques Fabrice Vallée is a venture capitalist, computer scientist, author, ufologist and former astronomer currently residing in San Francisco, California. In mainstream science, Vallée is notable for co-developing the first computerized mapping of Mars for NASA and for his work at SRI International on the network information center for the ARPANET, a precursor to the modern Internet. Vallée is also an important figure in the study of unidentified flying objects (UFOs), first noted for a defense of the scientific legitimacy of the extraterrestrial hypothesis and later for promoting the interdimensional hypothesis."
Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jacques_Vall%C3%A9e
- 16 Ibid.
- 17 The full title of this work is "Ufos And Related Subjects: A Bibliography Prepared By The Library Of Congress Science And Technology Division, For The Air Force Office Of Scientific Research, Office Of Aerospace Research, USAF Arlington, VA"
- 18 "Terence Kemp McKenna (November 16, 1946 – April 3, 2000) was an American philosopher, psychonaut, ethnobotanist, lecturer, and author. He spoke and wrote about a variety of subjects, including psychedelic drugs, plant-based entheogens, shamanism, metaphysics, alchemy, language, culture, technology, and the theoretical origins of human consciousness."
Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Terence_McKenna
- 19 From Levi Hancock's journal: "The Fourth of June [1831] came and we all met.... near Isaac Morleys in Kirtland, [Geauga] County, Ohio.... Joseph put his hands on Harvey Whitlock and ordained him to the high priesthood. He turned as black as Lyman was white. His fingers were set like claws. He went around the room and showed his hands and tried to speak, his eyes were in the shape of oval O's. Hyrum Smith said, "Joseph, that is not of God." ... Joseph bowed his head, and in a short time got up and commanded Satan to leave Harvey, laying his hands upon his head at the same time. At that very instant an old man said to weigh two hundred and fourteen pounds sitting in the window turned a complete summersault [sic] in the house and [landed on] his back across a bench and lay helpless. Joseph told Lyman to cast Satan out. He did. The man's name was Leamon Copley [Leman Copley], formally a Quaker [Shaker]. The evil spirit left him and as quick as lightning Harvey Green fell bound and screamed like a

panther. Satan was cast out of him. But immediately entered someone else. This continued all day and the greater part of the night.... After this we... heard Harvey Whitlock say when Hyrum Smith said it was not [of] God, he disdained him in his heart and when the Devil was cast out he was convinced it was Satan that was in him and he knew [it]. I also heard Harvey Green say that he could not describe the awful feeling he experienced while in the hands of Satan.” From Lucy Mack Smith's 1844–45 preliminary manuscript of *History of Joseph Smith by His Mother*: “Harvey Whitlock stepped into the middle of the room with his arms crossed, bound by the power of Satan, and his mouth twisted unshapely. Hyrum Smith arose and declared that there was an evil spirit in the room.... Shortly Hyrum rose the second time, saying, “I know my duty and will do it,” and stepping to Harvey, commanded the evil spirits to leave him, but the spirits did not obey. Joseph then approached Harvey and asked him if he believed in God. Then we saw a change in Harvey. He also bore record of the opening of the heavens and of the coming of the Son of Man, precisely as Lyman Wight had done. Next a man by the name of Harvey Green was thrown upon his back on the floor by an unseen power. Some of the brethren wanted to administer to him by laying on of hands, but Joseph forbade it. Harvey looked to me like a man in a fit. He groaned and frothed at the mouth. Finally he got upon his knees and came out of it. Next thing I saw a man came flying through the window from outside. He was straight as a man's arm as he sailed into the room over two rows of seats filled with men, and fell on the floor between the seats and was pulled out by the brethren. He trembled all over like a leaf in the wind. He was soon... calm and natural. His name was Lemon [Leman] Copley. He weighed over two hundred pounds. This I saw with my own eyes and know it is all true, and bear testimony to it.”

Source: Alonzo L. Gaskill, *Doctrine and Covenants 129:8 and the Reality of Satan's Physicality*, Religious Educator 8, no. 1 (2007): 31–54. Obtained at <http://rsc.byu.edu/archived/volume-8-number-1-2007/doctrine-and-covenants-1298-and-reality-satan-s-physicality>

- 20 Sources are as follows: Elder's Journal, Letter 1 (1837), p.4 Quoted by Barron Howard. *Orson Hyde: Missionary, Apostle, Colonizer*. Horizon Publishers, Bountiful, Utah. 1978, p.95.

Fielding, Joseph. *Joseph Fielding Diary*. Courtesy of his descendants Keith & Ilene Foulger.

Kimball, Stanley B. *On the Potter's Wheel, Diary 1*.

Journal of Discourses. Volume 3. Liverpool, 1856.

Whitney, Orson F. *The Life of Heber C. Kimball*. Bookcraft, Utah. 1945.

- 21 *Journal of Discourses* Vol. 3, p. 229

- 22 Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Whitley_Strieber

- 23 I've looked into other Biblical translations of these passages. Most of them, besides the King James version, read something akin to “on” or “on the face of” the earth, not “in” or “into.” I've also looked into the Hebrew and Greek sources of these verses. The prepositional terms used in both languages for these passages are usually translated as “in” or “into” when they occur in the Hebrew and Greek Bibles, but they are on occasion also translated into other English locational prepositions. Additionally, I acknowledge that there are various verses throughout the King James version of the Bible which use the preposition “in” or

CHAPTER NOTES

"into" while it might even be more accurate to use another preposition, such as "on." However, with these two passages – which are among the very few throughout scripture which refer directly to the devil's location in relationship to the earth – I feel it highly defensible to conclude that the prepositions of these verses being translated as "in" and "into" are accurate in a very literal sense.

- 24 Additional files in the supporting material include: 1) Phil Schneider - Assassinated After Disclosure - Full Feature.mp4 ; 2) Dulce, NATO, NORAD, Area-51, Denver Airport, Montauk, & DUMBS (Phil Schneider).mp4 ; 3) Phil Schneider - The Last Words.mp4 ; 4) Phil Schneider Documentary.mp4 ; 5) Philip Schneider - Dulce Alien Confrontation.mp4 ; 6) The Underground - A Hidden Reality and The True Story of Phil Schneider.mp4 ; 7) Message from ex-wife of Phil Schneider.pdf
- 25 Transcribed from portions of presentations within the material listed in Ibid.
- 26 "USS Nautilus (SSN-571) was the world's first operational nuclear-powered submarine.... Sharing names with the submarine in Jules Verne's Twenty Thousand Leagues Under the Sea, and named after another USS Nautilus (SS-168) that served with distinction in World War II, Nautilus was authorized in 1951 and launched in 1954. Because her nuclear propulsion allowed her to remain submerged far longer than diesel-electric submarines, she broke many records in her first years of operation, and traveled to locations previously beyond the limits of submarines."
Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/USS_Nautilus_%28SSN-571%29
- 27 "[Built from 1958 to 1961, the] USS Enterprise (CVN-65), formerly CVA(N)-65, is a retired United States Navy aircraft carrier. She was the world's first nuclear-powered aircraft carrier and the eighth United States naval vessel to bear the name."
Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/USS_Enterprise_%28CVN-65%29
- 28 The spelling for "gridbit" I interpret from his pronunciation of this word. I can find no other transcript which provides a different spelling, and I cannot locate anything on the Internet which connects the term "gridbit" to any nuclear-powered device.
- 29 "The [Philadelphia] experiment was allegedly based on an aspect of the unified field theory, a term coined by Albert Einstein; the theory aims to describe – mathematically and physically – the interrelated nature of the forces that comprise electromagnetic radiation and gravity—in other words, uniting the fields of electromagnetism and gravity into a single field.
"According to some accounts, unspecified 'researchers' thought that some version of this field would enable using large electrical generators to bend light around an object via refraction, so that the object became completely invisible. The Navy regarded this of military value and, by the same accounts, it sponsored the experiment...."
"A navy destroyer escort, the USS Eldridge, was fitted with the required equipment at the naval yards in Philadelphia. Testing began in summer 1943, and was successful to a limited degree. One test, on July 22, resulted in the Eldridge being rendered almost completely invisible, with some witnesses reporting a 'greenish fog' in its place. However, crew members complained of severe nausea afterwards. At that point, the experiment was altered at the request of the Navy, with the new objective being invisible to radar only.
"Equipment was not properly recalibrated to this end, but in spite of this, the

experiment was performed again on October 28. This time, Eldridge not only became almost entirely invisible to the naked eye, but actually vanished from the area in a flash of blue light. Simultaneously, the US naval base at Norfolk, Virginia, just over 600 km (375 miles) away, reported sighting the Eldridge offshore for several minutes, whereupon the Eldridge vanished from their sight and reappeared in Philadelphia, at the site it had originally occupied in an apparent case of accidental teleportation.

"The physiological effects on the crew were profound. Almost all of the crew were violently ill. Some suffered from mental illness as a result of their experience; behavior consistent with schizophrenia is described in other accounts. Still other members were physically unaccounted for or supposedly vanished, and five of the crew were allegedly fused to the metal bulkhead or deck of the ship. Still others were said to fade in and out of sight. Horrified by these results, Navy officials immediately cancelled the experiment. All of the surviving crew involved were discharged; in some accounts, brainwashing techniques were employed in an attempt to make the remaining crew members lose their memories concerning the details of their experience

Sources: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Philadelphia_Experiment and <http://www.crystalinks.com/PhiladelphiaExperiment.html>

- 30 "Los Alamos National Laboratory (or LANL; previously known at various times as Project Y, Los Alamos Laboratory, and Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory) is one of two laboratories in the United States where classified work towards the design of nuclear weapons is undertaken. The other, since 1952, is Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory. LANL is a United States Department of Energy (DOE) national laboratory, managed and operated by Los Alamos National Security (LANS), located in Los Alamos, New Mexico. The laboratory is one of the largest science and technology institutions in the world. It conducts multidisciplinary research in fields such as national security, space exploration, renewable energy, medicine, nanotechnology, and supercomputing."

Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Los_Alamos_National_Laboratory

- 31 I couldn't find any information on clearance "factors," so the spelling of 'hardent' is interpreted from Schneider's words.
- 32 Refer to the JPG image file in the supporting material: Phil Schneider corpse WARNING DISTURBING.jpg
- 33 Please refer to the PDF in the supporting material: Message from ex-wife of Phil Schneider.pdf
- 34 Refer to the investigation of "Dr. Jonathan Reed" by ufowatchdog.com at: http://www.ufowatchdog.com/jonathan_reed.htm
Also, refer to the supporting material which contains the offline backup of this ufowatchdog investigation
- 35 "*Fact or Faked: Paranormal Files* is a paranormal investigation series produced by Base Productions that began airing July 15, 2010, on SyFy. The show follows a team of investigators, led by former FBI agent Ben Hansen, who review various photographs and viral videos (mainly from the internet) of alleged paranormal activity. If a particular piece of evidence is deemed intriguing enough to warrant further investigation, they set out to recreate and explain the sighting."
Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fact_or_Faked:_Paranormal_Files
Although somewhat similar in format, I don't recommend the *Fact or Faked* series

CHAPTER NOTES

as highly as I do *Conspiracy Theory with Jesse Ventura*. However, many episodes nonetheless touch on curious subjects and are worth watching, especially in seeing the extent to which the show's cast can duplicate the footage of alleged paranormal recordings. A total of two seasons were produced and aired from 2010 to 2012.

- 36 Refer to the AVI video file in the supporting material: Fact or Faked S01E09 Sasquatch Sprint Alien Attacker.avi
- 37 Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Alien_autopsy
- 38 Refer to – http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vida_alien/alien_races00.htm or http://www.thewatcherfiles.com/alien_races.html
- 39 Ibid. 7
- 40 This letter can be found in William Cooper's book *Behold a Pale Horse* (Light Technology Publishing 1991), page 203
- 41 Refer to the JPG image files in the supporting material: Valiant Thor circled.jpg and Valiant Thor circled 2.jpg
- 42 "Mr. Patton is a conspiracy researcher, having written articles for Paranoia Magazine on CIA mind control (Project Monarch: Nazi Mind Control), and, the historical and spiritual implications of the UFO/alien phenomenon (Demon's in Alien's Clothing). He published a newsletter from 1994-2000, *Endure to the End*, which exposed [fringe] movements and erroneous doctrines within contemporary Christianity. Ron also published a magazine in 2003 titled, *Mkzine*, an examination of coercive mind control, invasive human experimentation and other related abuses." Source: <http://www.paranoiamagazine.com/staff/>
- 43 Refer to the JPG image file in the supporting material: Aleister Crowley's Lam.jpg
- 44 Refer to the JPG image file in the supporting material: Lam and Streiber alien side-by-side.jpg
- 45 At <https://books.google.com/> search the following key to find the source of this translation: "Egyptian Book of the Dead" Behold ye then god this great slaughter
- 46 Source: Rolling Stone magazine <http://www.rollingstone.com/politics/news/fear-and-loathing-in-las-vegas-19711111#ixzz3JM1WGq2J>
- 47 Source: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/N,N-Dimethyltryptamine>
- 48 See <http://www.davidicke.com> for more information about Icke and his research.
- 49 "*V* (or *V: The Original Miniseries*) is a two-part science fiction television miniseries, written and directed by Kenneth Johnson. First shown in 1983, it initiated the science fiction franchise concerning aliens known as "The Visitors" trying to gain control of Earth, and of the ways the populace reacts to this.... The two-part miniseries ran for 200 minutes.... Its success spawned a sequel, *V: The Final Battle*, which was meant to conclude the story. In spite of the apparent conclusion, this was then followed by a weekly television series, *V: The Series*, from 1984 to 1985 that continued the story a year after The Final Battle." Source – https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/V_%281983_miniseries%29
- 50 Refer to the JPG image in the supporting material: Movie character Paul.jpg
- 51 Source of article – <http://www.logosapologia.org/?p=2006>

Journal Excerpt 3 - Oct. 1992 (serving LDS mission)

Been in the MTC [Missionary Training Center] about five weeks now. It's intense. Spirit-filled, but overwhelming. We've been constantly admonished by our teachers and leaders to seek and gain a testimony of Christ, the Book of Mormon, everything. They keep saying that you'll know you have a testimony when you get it. I'm pretty sure I already do, but when everyone keeps talking like that, I kinda wonder if I really do or not. So I decided to make a special effort a couple nights ago.

About three years ago we were at Church. Whoever arranged the sacrament program that day decided to do something different: between speakers everyone would stand up and we'd sing all seven verses of A Poor Wayfaring Man of Grief. I'd always liked that hymn, so I really enjoyed this. As we sang, my mind imagined the scenes described in the words of the hymn. As we came to the final verse, my heart was so moved that I couldn't sing anymore - I sat down in the pew, covered my face, and sobbed uncontrollably. Even after the hymn ended, I couldn't stop weeping.

This memory kept coming back to me, so I decided that before I went to sleep I would quietly read the lyrics of that hymn, then I would pray with real intent to ask for a witness of truth.

As the other elders were studying scriptures and saying their evening prayers, I climbed up to my bunk and got out my hymnal. I sang the hymn in my mind reverently, finally coming to the last two verses: "In pris'n I saw him next, condemned To meet a traitor's doom at morn. The tide of lying tongues I stemmed, And honored him 'mid shame and scorn. My friendship's utmost zeal to try, He asked if I for him would die. The flesh was weak; my blood ran chill, But my free spirit cried, "I will!" Then in a moment to my view The stranger started from disguise. The tokens in his hands I knew; The Savior stood before mine eyes. He spake, and my poor name he named, "Of me thou hast not been ashamed. These deeds shall thy memorial be; Fear not, thou didst them unto me."

The love of God once again enveloped me and I began weeping. I knew. I knew that all this is true: Christ is our Savior, Joseph Smith was truly His chosen prophet, the Book of Mormon is holy scripture, as is the Bible. I didn't even get to the prayer - the Holy Spirit testified of these truths as soon as my heart was ready for it.

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

And you thought what has been presented thus far was challenging. Now comes the part most difficult to expound upon, especially in merely using the written word without extensive visual material to help clarify.

Before proceeding, it is important to reflect upon some questions which can prepare one's mind to contemplate the significance of what is presented in this chapter.

How can something be both "spirit" and solid?

How can something or somebody that is completely tangible physically "warp" into a room and then leave again?¹ Even without a "conduit" opening and closing?²

Can two or more "realities" coexist simultaneously in the same section of time and space without physically infringing upon the other(s)?

I don't have all the answers. I don't even have most of the answers. Come to think of it, every answer generates a dozen new questions that I don't have answers to. Nevertheless, I am thankful for the answers I have received, and I make do with them until additional questions are answered.

Intelligences, Spirits, and Souls

First of all, how can something be both spirit and solid? Ponder the following passage from chapter 3 from the Book of Abraham in the Pearl of Great Price:

"Now the Lord had shown unto me, Abraham, the **intelligences** that were organized before the world was; and among all these there were

many of the noble and great ones; And God saw these **souls** that they were good, and he stood in the midst of them, and he said: These I will make my rulers; for he stood among those that were **spirits**, and he saw that they were good; and he said unto me: Abraham, thou art one of them; thou wast chosen before thou wast born.” (Abr. 3:22-23)

In a single paragraph, Abraham³ identifies pre-mortal individual beings that he witnessed in vision as intelligences, souls, and spirits. The way most LDS theologians currently define these three states of being are not reconcilable.

Apostle John Widtsoe, as well as Constitutional champion W. Cleon Skousen, define “intelligences” as the equivalent of sub-atomic particles which are individually conscious and capable of making moral choice. These are defined as “things to act,” whereas unintelligent matter is regarded as “things to be acted upon,” as discussed by Lehi in 2 Nephi chapter 2.

The LDS definition of “spirit” is a non-mortal essence in the form and likeness of a mortal body – a three-dimensional, self-aware, self-directing blueprint if you will – which was created by Heavenly Father at some time before the creation of the earth, and enters into the embryo of a biological entity (from which it is fashioned according to) and gives it life. Upon death, it is removed from the mortal body and progresses in the Spirit World. It is composed of matter, yet it is intangible in this mortal realm.

The LDS definition of “soul” is defined very directly and succinctly in D&C 88 verses 15 and 16: “[T]he spirit and the body are the soul of man, [a]nd the resurrection from the dead is the redemption of the soul.” A soul is a physical body and an “ethereal” spirit joined together into a single entity.

The problem with these definitions is that only one of them has been clearly and succinctly defined by a man who witnessed God the Father and Jesus Christ, who was routinely ministered to and taught by angels, who was shown the visions of eternity, and who was compelled to not divulge more than a small fraction of all that he knew (due to the limited, self-imposed capacity of those he was required to minister to). This man was Joseph Smith, and the only concept that he clearly defined was a “soul.” That’s it. The LDS definition of spirit is based upon Joseph’s teachings in D&C 131 verses 7 and 8: “There is no such thing as immaterial matter. All spirit is matter, but it is more fine or pure, and can only be discerned by purer eyes; We cannot see it; but when our bodies are purified we shall see that it is all matter.” The definition of “intelligence” is purely speculative, based in part upon Lehi’s words and in part on modern scientific concepts of atomic and sub-atomic particles.

And yet, according to the wording that Abraham gives, “intelligences” are the equivalent of “souls;” immediately thereafter he classifies a portion of

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

those souls as “spirits.” As Joseph Smith understood the definitions of these entities, these terms were deliberately selected to convey the beings which Abraham witnessed in his visionary experience. *We would be unwise to doubt Joseph's understanding or his choice of terms in each of these three instances.* We would be wise to consider the possibility that there is far more conveyed here than we currently understand, short of being shown identical things to what Abraham and Joseph witnessed. Perhaps it is wise to start being open to the possibility that “intelligences,” “spirits,” and “souls” are all similar to the clear-cut definition of “soul”: an entity or condition-of-existence that consists of both spiritual and physical properties simultaneously.

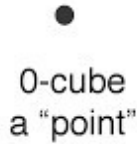
Ten Dimensions At Minimum

This book is not the right place, nor even the right medium, to expound upon quantum physics and extensive dimensional theories. However, it is important to consider the foundational concepts of such things in order to rationally comprehend some of the phenomenon recorded in Holy Scripture, such as when Christ physically appeared to 10 apostles in a closed room⁴, or when the angel Moroni visited Joseph Smith in his room⁵. These events occurred in closed quarters, and in physical space and time. The witnesses were not whisked away to another location – neither physically, in a vision, nor in a dream-like state. These things nevertheless occurred, which begs the individual who hopes to exercise any faith in God – who desires to literally believe Jesus's word when He unequivocally states “with God all things are possible”⁶ – to open their minds to inter-/upper-dimensional possibilities beyond the daily here-and-now of our physical 5-senses that we experience during every moment of our conscious lives.

I cannot recommend strongly enough that the reader review either the book, visual presentation, or full length video by Rob Bryanton titled *Imagining the Tenth Dimension*.⁷ Essentially, Bryanton “presents a uniquely compelling model of our 10-dimensional universe, that allows one to visualize and grasp the topography of the higher dimensions in a step-by-step manner.”⁸

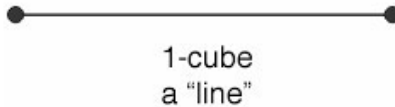
In order to grasp what is covered hereafter, it is necessary that the reader have a basic familiarization with multidimensional concepts, at least up to the fifth dimension. Bryanton's summaries of the first five dimensions, and how they relate to each other, are exceptional and direct, and relatively easy to comprehend. Therefore, I quote them here along with some accompanying visuals (all emphasis added)⁹:

No Dimension



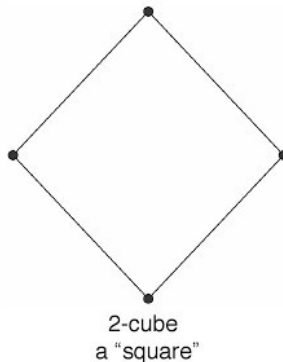
We start with a point. Like the "point" we know from geometry, it has no size, no dimension. **It's just an imaginary idea that indicates a position in a system.**

The First Dimension



A second point, then, can be used to indicate a different position, but it, too, is of indeterminate size. To create the first dimension, all we need is a line joining any two points. **A first dimensional object has length only, no width or depth.**

The Second Dimension



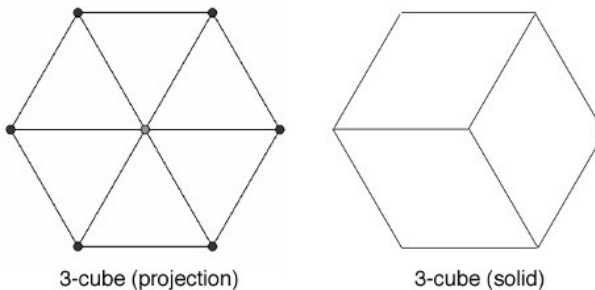
If we now take our first dimensional line and draw a second line crossing the first, we've entered the second dimension. **The object we're representing now has a length and a width, but no depth.** To help us with imagining the higher dimensions, we're going to represent our second dimensional object as being created using a second line which branches off from the first.

Now, let's imagine a race of two-dimensional creatures called "Flatlanders".

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

What would it be like to be a Flatlander living in their two-dimensional world? A two-dimensional creature would have only length and width, as if they were the royalty on an impossibly flat playing card. Picture this: a Flatlander couldn't possibly have a digestive tract, because the pipe from their mouth to their bottom would divide them into two pieces! And a Flatlander trying to view our three-dimensional world would only be able to perceive shapes in two-dimensional cross-sections. A balloon passing through the Flatlander's world, for instance, would start as a tiny dot, become a hollow circle which inexplicably grows to a certain size, then shrinks back to a dot before popping out of existence. And we three-dimensional human beings would seem very strange indeed to a Flatlander.

The Third Dimension



Imagining the third dimension is the easiest for us because every moment of our lives that is what we're in. **A three dimensional object has length, width, and height.** But here's another way to describe the third dimension: if we imagine an ant walking across a newspaper which is lying on a table, we can pretend that the ant is a Flatlander, walking along on a flat two-dimensional newspaper world. If that paper is now folded in the middle, we create a way for our Flatlander Ant to "magically" disappear from one position in his two-dimensional world and be instantly transported to another. We can imagine that we did this by taking a two-dimensional object and folding it through the dimension above, which is our third dimension. Once again, it'll be more convenient for us as we imagine the higher dimensions if we can think of the third dimension in this way: **the third dimension is what you "fold through" to jump from one point to another in the dimension below.**

We tend to think of ourselves strictly in three-dimensional terms: we have length, width, and height. However, those three measurements only define our physical structure at any given solitary moment; the concept of change, duration, or "time" is not included. Another dimension is needed.

Ponder this: we create 2-dimensional worlds all the time – such as

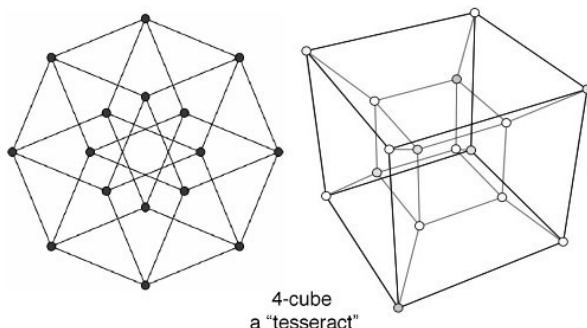
photos, pictures, paintings, drawings, etc. They have length and width, but (for theoretical intents and purposes) no height. They are images. They are stationary. They do not change. However, imagine that an artist took a stack of 10,000 sheets of paper, and on each one he drew a series of drawings which depicted minor changes from the image on the first sheet of paper to what was eventually depicted on the last. This artist has essentially created a two-dimensional animation – when presented one after another in rapid succession, those 10,000 drawings convey successive change from a beginning state (the first image) to the last state (the final image). Consider what the artist has done: he has taken the length and width of 2D objects and added a third dimension to them – duration. From the perspective of our everyday 3D reality, we can say that he added the durational “height” of 10,000 successively-changing images which began from a single 2D state.

Take that idea and imagine an infinitesimal duration (or eternal animation) of 2D images. The stack of images would be infinite in height, and would convey unlimited minor changing states, from one image to the next.

Now apply that idea to 3D objects and environments, and you have the conceptual definition of the fourth dimension – or as we refer to it: time. In our everyday 3D state, we experience “time” as an inescapable, irreversible succession of change – but in reality, it is the progression (and record) of infinitesimal changes throughout a 3-dimensional existence through a fourth dimension. Every moment of our lives is akin to an unfathomably large collection of 3-dimensional “snapshots” – forever “animated” in rapid succession, broken down to the tiniest of split-seconds (scientifically referred to as a Planck unit¹⁰; there are 10^{43} Planck units per second). The fourth dimension is what we move through every single moment of our mortal lives – recorded 10,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000 times per second. This is our everyday existence – to live, function, and make choices – creating an eternal 3D snapshot of every Planck unit of our lives.

Continuing Bryanton's summary of dimensions:

The Fourth Dimension



The first three dimensions can be described with these words: "length, width, and depth". **What word can we assign to the fourth dimension? One answer would be, "duration".** If we think of ourselves as we were one minute ago, and then imagine ourselves as we are at this moment, the line we could draw from the "one-minute-ago version" to the "right now" version would be a line in the fourth dimension. **If you were to see your body in the fourth dimension, you would be like a long undulating snake, with your embryonic self at one end and your deceased self at the other.** But because we live from moment to moment in the third dimension, we are like our second dimensional Flatlanders. Just like that Flatlander who could only see two-dimensional cross-sections of objects from the dimension above, **we as three-dimensional creatures can only see three-dimensional cross-sections of our fourth-dimensional self.**

As difficult as it may be to comprehend such things, many people who undergo a Near Death Experience (NDE) report a phenomenon which closely resembles the description of viewing "three-dimensional cross-sections of [one's] fourth-dimensional self." This phenomenon is typically described as a hyper-comprehensive "life's review." They rapidly encounter and recall in minute detail every single event and emotion they experienced from earliest childhood to the moment of death. Failing the words for the experience, often it is described as though they were traveling through a "book" or "movie" of their life, which they can "flip" through to any moment in an instant. Even those who don't encounter a life's review in their NDEs report something very similar: traveling through a "tunnel of light," wherewith the "walls" of this tunnel are comprised of a record of their lives.

One of the most vivid recounts of an NDE life review experience is recorded in Arvin S. Gibson's book *They Saw Beyond Death*. Gibson is a retired nuclear engineer who has authored several books which take a scholarly approach into investigating, comparing, and analyzing near death experiences. He has personally interviewed dozens of people who have had

an NDE, and transcribes many of these interviews in his books. One particular interview with a gentleman named John Stirling is especially noteworthy to consider. The following are portions of Stirling's account of his NDE (all emphasis added)¹¹:

"In September, 1978 my wife left me and took my son. She wouldn't let me see him for quite a long time, many months, and I was pretty miserable. Through the whole thing I didn't want a divorce, I wanted to get back together with her, but she didn't want to get back with me.... At the time my son was two years old....

"A friend came over to visit and we... ended up getting on my motorcycle and going for a ride up to the cafe in Emigration Canyon.... As we came down the canyon, we [were going too fast and lost control].... I yelled at my friend that he had to get off [but he] wouldn't get off. I leaned back and knocked him off.

"I then hit the rock [formation], and I thought to myself, well this is it! The right side of my body crashed into the rock.... The bike rolled over on top of me and stuck the rear view mirror on the top of my head – I didn't have a helmet on. Then the bike continued to tumble and ended up about two-hundred-and-fifty feet away.

"I remember the crash and the bike tumbling, then I remember lying there, for just a split second, and thinking: well, this is it, I'm leaving. I turned around and looked, and saw a body that seemed familiar. It looked like me, but I had no emotional involvement with the body lying there.

"I then felt great relief and joy – that I was leaving, and that I didn't have to endure, any more, the pain of the divorce, or the pain of missing my children. So I immediately, without further thinking about it, took off, because it was what I had been wishing would happen.... I had an expanded consciousness. It wasn't like an earthly book-type knowledge. It was a consciousness that was larger, more spiritual....

"I could feel an ability in my spirit body to move at great speed, and I wanted to get where I was going as quickly as possible. I was going to a place that I knew. It was the place that I had come from. I wanted to get there as quickly as possible.... I had an internal knowledge of where I was going....

"I started traveling fairly slowly, in real time, when I had first started. Then, as I got farther away from earth, I traveled much faster. The stars started to look like the stars in "Star Wars," with a long trail, because of my speed....

"... I was so peaceful and comfortable. All the emotional pain I had felt was gone. I looked at my hand, and I saw a shape of a hand, but – it had an aura around it. It wasn't the same hand as an earthly hand. There was an energy field that defined it.

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

"A voice came to me, as I was traveling at that high rate of speed.... I didn't see anyone.... It was not a verbal type of communication. It was a communication within.... And the voice – the voice asked me if I was done. And I knew the voice and it was – [difficulty speaking] It was a comfortable voice – a voice full of love.

"I said 'Yes, I'm done. I don't want to go back there. I don't ever want to go back there.' The voice asked me a second time, 'Are you done?' And I said: 'Yes, I'm done. I don't want to go back.' The voice asked me a third time if I was done, and again I said that I was.

"Then the voice said, 'Let's look at your life.' And I saw – my life flash before my eyes. **Everything from when I was a child up to the present time. And every emotion that I had during my life, when I saw the scene, I felt the same emotion. I could feel the reasons that I did things as I saw the scenes unfold....** The life's review came as a shock. When I heard the voice say 'Well, let's see your life,' I didn't know how it would happen. It was totally unexpected, and it was right there in my view. It was as if both the voice and I were viewing it – and both of us could feel it as well as visually see it.... [There was no judgment in the voice.] It was the same feeling you would get in a heart-to-heart conversation with a loving father about anything that concerned you.... I [felt that] it was Jesus Christ....

"I felt very comfortable with my life as I looked at it. **It was in color and three dimensional, and it flashed in a circle as if it were a deck of cards.** I felt very comfortable that I would not have to come back to the earth.

"The review continued until it came to the previous Friday, when I had my son over, on Friday night. And it... the review traveled all the way up to that time.

"The scene, **you can call it a card that came up to me to see,** or, the vision that came to my view, it – my eyes locked on to that night. And the life review stopped. **When that Friday scene first flashed up it looked as if it was going to go by,** but when my eyes locked on it, then I knew I had to come back.

"So I – I said yes I would come back because I knew I had to raise my son as best as I could. There was no further contact with the voice after I said I would return. I came back to my body so much faster than when I left. It was almost instantaneous. I can remember reversing in space and then waking up in my body."

Arvin Gibson asked dozens of follow-up questions to Stirling. Some of the more relevant exchanges they have are as follows (all emphasis added):

Gibson: As you saw your life's review unfold, did it seem as if it took a long time?

Stirling: Not at all.

Gibson: But there were 25 years which you went through. That's a lot of years. How could you see that in such a short time?

Stirling: Yes, it was a lot of years. But it just – it's hard to describe. **It unfolded, it was large, it was three-dimensional, it was right in my view, I didn't have to turn my head or anything, and it just exploded right there. It was as if it were the ultimate movie – three dimensional, with feeling and color....**

Gibson: How did your spirit body feel when you were out of your physical body?

Stirling: Peaceful, calm, real, existing....

Gibson: Did it feel as real as any experience in this life?

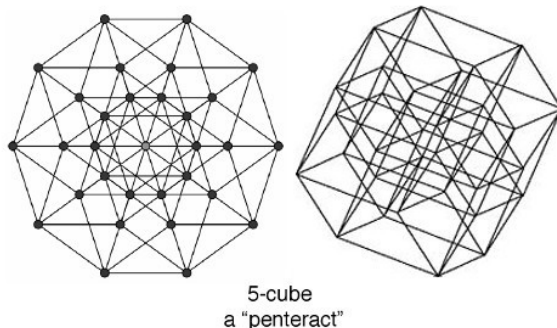
Stirling: Yes, **even more real.... it [didn't] seem like a dream or a hallucination.** I've had both, and I know the difference.

Everything that Stirling describes coincides near-perfectly with the quantum physics theoretical explanations of how the fourth dimension relates to and interacts with our ever-present three-dimensional daily experiences. His words describe re-experiencing a perfectly-complete, moment-to-moment, pauseable, three-dimensional recording of his entire life – which can be perused in its entirety in an extremely short amount of time:

- "I saw the scenes unfold.... it was right there before my view."
- "... in color and three dimensional, and it flashed in a circle as if it were a deck of cards."
- "... my eyes locked on to [a specific event]... [as if it were] a card that came up to me to see..."
- "... [the experience] just exploded right there. It was as if it were the ultimate movie – three dimensional, with feeling and color..."

When viewed in this light, it would be correct in many ways to state that our spiritual selves – our spiritual existence – is four-dimensional, yet in this life we are limited to seeing/comprehending only three dimensions. Stretching ourselves spiritually would then be the equivalent of extending ourselves and our awareness, if not completely into the fourth dimension then at least into a state of understanding that our three-dimensional senses are a paltry limitation to the grandeur and complexity beyond our scope.

The Fifth Dimension



One of the most intriguing aspects of there being one dimension stacked on another is that down here in the dimensions below we can be unaware of our motion in the dimensions above. Here's a simple example: if we make a Möbius strip (take a long strip of paper, add one twist to it and tape the ends together) and draw a line down the length of it, our line will eventually be on both sides of the paper before it meets back with itself. It appears, somewhat amazingly, that the strip has only one side, so it must be a representation of a two-dimensional object. And this means that a two-dimensional Flatlander traveling down the line we just drew would end up back where they started without ever feeling like they had left the second dimension. In reality, they would be looping and twisting in the third dimension, even though to them it felt like they were traveling in a straight line.



Example of a Möbius Strip

The fourth dimension, time, feels like a straight line to us, moving from the past to the future. But that straight line in the fourth dimension is, like the Möbius strip, actually twisting and turning in the dimension above. So, the long undulating snake that is us at any particular moment will feel like it is moving in a straight line in time, the fourth dimension, but **there will actually be, in the fifth dimension, a multitude of paths that we could branch to at any given moment. Those branches will be influenced by our own choice, chance, and the actions of others.**

Quantum physics tells us that the subatomic particles that make up our world are collapsed from waves of probability simply by the act of observation. In the picture we are drawing for ourselves here, we can now start to see how **each of us are collapsing the indeterminate wave of probable futures contained in the fifth dimension into the fourth dimensional line that we are experiencing as "time".**

As alluded to by Bryanton, each successive dimensional level adds a degree of freedom of movement, and of choice. If we, as fourth-dimensional beings (locked in a temporary three-dimensional experience) had only a fourth-dimension wherewith to move and act, then our lives and choices would still be merely pre-set and preconceived – determined by the originating force which shaped us into the beings we function as in both third and fourth-dimensional capacities.

However, with a fifth dimension, freedom of movement throughout the fourth-dimension becomes possible – or in other words, potential branches of paths within the fourth-dimension can be taken. As described by Bryanton: “Those [fifth-dimensional] branches will be influenced by our own [third-dimensional] choice[s], chance, and the actions of others.” Therefore, if the fourth-dimension is the *scientific* concept of “time”, then the fifth-dimension is the *theological* concept of “free-will.”

In spiritual terms, consider the glorious spectacle of these dimensions and how they are formed in conjunction with each other, layer upon layer:

- The Third Dimension: God has given us a physical, mortal, temporary body, formed after the manner of his likeness: “And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.” (Genesis 2:7)
- The Fourth Dimension: God has given us time wherewith to experience durational change within that mortal body: “there [is] a time granted unto man to repent, yea, a probationary time, a time to repent and serve God.... a state for them to prepare [to face God]...” (Alma 42:4,10)
- The Fifth Dimension: God has given us freedom of choice to determine our own destinies: “[Mortals must make choices] of their own free will... [f]or the power is in them, wherein they are agents unto themselves” (D&C 58:27-28)

How glorious it is to consider the magnitude of these matters, to ponder the concepts of how the Lord has constructed the framework wherewith our consciousness functions and interacts with others every second of the day! It's quite phenomenal to ponder the ramifications of such spiritual matters, ironically provided through scientific reasoning and understanding: we are fourth-dimensional beings navigating our own individual destinies through a fifth dimension, while “locked” in a limited three-dimensional perspective/existence – and yet our every choice within this limited “3D” framework creates ramifications which echo throughout, at minimum, two additional higher dimensions.

Bryanton covers additional dimensions, and how they theoretically relate

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

to each other, all the way up to the seemingly-inconceivable 10th dimension. Again, it is strongly recommended that the reader take the time to explore his book and/or visual material¹² in order to gain a better comprehension of these matters. Despite these concepts being scientifically conceived, they simultaneously provide a theological glimpse into how God works beyond our limited five senses. God's work is not through some unexplainable hocus-pocus, whizz-bam, something-outta-nothing – but from higher dimensions of existence, complexity and destiny down to simplified, lower ones.

From my own experience, the more I ponder the reality of these so-called “higher realms,” the more I am filled with awe and astonishment at how tremendous, wondrous, and limitless the works of God Almighty truly are. And how apt Christ's statement truly is: “with God all things are possible.”¹³

Contemplating How the “Impossible” Happens

The film *What the Bleep Do We Know!?*¹⁴ is a 2004 documentary-styled visual exploration into various aspects of quantum physics, existentialism and spirituality. Unfortunately, many of the “experts” which are given extensive talking points throughout the film are New Age adherents, which proceed to explain quantum mechanic theories from a New Age-ish viewpoint. There is certainly no balance provided – no opportunity for credentialed persons of traditional religious belief to provide their input on the ramifications of quantum physics from a Christian or a Muslim or a Judaic perspective. The movie has been described as “a kind of New Age answer to *The Passion of the Christ* and other films that adhere to traditional religious teachings, [thereby] offer[ing] alternative spirituality views characteristic of New Age philosophy, including critiques of traditional religion's moral values.”¹⁵ Academics have lambasted that the film blends actual science with New Age pseudo-science to the point where “[m]ost laypeople cannot tell where the quantum physics ends and the quantum nonsense begins, and many are susceptible to being misguided.”¹⁶

Nevertheless, there are some examples and visual demonstrations throughout the film – especially those that have been added to the Director's Cut, titled *What The Bleep: Down The Rabbit Hole* – which, when filtered through the teachings of the Gospel, are stunningly valid and considerable. In regards to dimensional aspects covered previously, the very end of the extended, directors cut version of the film has an intriguing demonstration of how it would appear to lower dimensions if higher dimensions were to interact with them.

In the final scene of the director's cut, a three-dimensionally-animated

scientist-guide (who appears now and then in the director's cut version, but not in the original) hovers above a sprawling two-dimensional plane and announces to the viewer "Welcome to Flatland." Throughout this plane are circular two-dimensional beings functioning within demarcation constructs, similar in appearance to a never-ending flat "Pac-man" world. The guide explains that these beings are unable to perceive a third dimension, and proceeds to put his 3D finger through the 2D plane. Several circular 2D beings nearby recoil in terror, because what they perceive is a 2D circle (a cross-section of his finger) suddenly and inexplicably manifesting and enlarging in their midst. When the guide removes his finger, they only perceive a circle (cross-section) shrinking and then completely disappearing. The surrounding beings that witness this flee in terror, as something completely unexpected and physically unexplainable just occurred.

This 3D guide then hovers over to the "home" of a female 2D circular being. As he talks to her, she becomes frightened and hides. When she asks him where he is, the guide describes himself as existing "above" her in another dimension, able to see things, everything, inside her world all at once. To prove this to her, he proceeds to describe the exact contents of her enclosed safe. She becomes increasingly scared and defensive, assumes he's a "ghost," and insists there's only two dimensions, not three. He then asks her "If I were to touch the inside of your stomach, how would I do that?" She responds, "You'd have to cut through my skin. Otherwise, it's impossible." The guide then tickles the middle of her circle and she starts laughing.

As she is completely at a loss to understand any of this, the 3D guide asks her if she is ready to see more dimensions. She hesitates, asking "What will happen to me? What will I become?" "You have to become it to know," the guide responds gently. With her consent, he gently pulls her from the 2D plane and she becomes spherical, floating within the third-dimension outside of her 2D world. She beholds the endless horizontal 2D plane, the world from which she was just pulled, and marvels at being able to perceive so much of it all at once.¹⁷

In conjunction with this example, we can begin to comprehend scriptural examples of miraculous, heavenly interchanges and events through a higher-dimensional construct.

Christ's Appearances In the Flesh

The scriptures demonstrate many instances of Christ appearing (and suddenly disappearing) after His resurrection, whether in the fullness of His glory or with His glory (and even sometimes His identity) withheld. The following are some canonical examples:

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

- The two Marys (Christ's mother and Mary Magdalene) go to the tomb and find it empty,¹⁸ and are then admonished by the angels there to report to the disciples. On their way back, Christ met them. "And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him. Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me." (Matthew 28:9-10)
- Two disciples traveling to Emmaus talked with another gentleman they didn't recognize. They spent the entire journey discussing with this man the events of Christ's ministry. Then this man proceeded to "expoun[d] unto them in all the scriptures [about] the things concerning [Christ]... beginning [with] Moses and all the prophets." (Luke 24:27) The two disciples invited the man to eat with them that evening.

"And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. *And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.* And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?" (Luke 24:30-32 emphasis added)

This is a particularly curious incident, in that Christ manifested Himself while simultaneously able to withhold the realization of His identity from these two disciples. Once they recognized Him as the resurrected Christ, He "vanished [from] their sight."

- Christ appeared twice in the Upper Room in Jerusalem, first to ten of the surviving apostles (Luke 24:36-53, John 20:19-25) – only Thomas was absent – then a week later to all eleven of them (Mark 16:14, John 20:26-31). "[T]he doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you." (John 20:19) Additionally, Christ ate with them: "[T]hey gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb. And he took it, and did eat before them." (Luke 24:42-43)
- Christ may have appeared to Peter prior to appearing to the rest of the surviving apostles in the above instances, as these scriptures allude to: "The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon." (Luke 24:34) and "[H]e was seen of Cephas [Peter], then of the twelve..." (1 Corinthians 15:5) The details of this incident are not given, save that it occurred.
- Christ also appeared to over 500 followers at an undisclosed location. Again, the details are not given, except that the event occurred: "[H]e

appeared to more than five hundred brothers at once, most of whom are still living..." (1 Corinthians 15:6)

- And then, of course, Christ appeared several times, over the course of several days, to thousands of surviving Nephites (and, assumingly, some Lamanites), as recorded in The Book of Mormon, 3 Nephi chapters 11 through 30.

Christ is able to appear and disappear before men at will, and be physically handled by them – even to eat and drink. His resurrected body appears and functions exactly the same as any other physical human body, and yet He can manifest and vanish at will. What sounds like some kind of "magic" is actually the ability to move about freely throughout the fourth dimension, then manifest Himself at will into our three-dimensional existence. While this seems "impossible" to our three-dimensional perspective, it is no different than the example of the 3D guide placing his finger into a 2D plane, thereby "magically" manifesting a cross section of himself to the inhabitants of that world.

In essence, when Christ manifests Himself into our world, our dimensional "plane," He must be merely manifesting only a portion, or an aspect, of His four-dimensional self. He is able to traverse the fourth dimension at will – and it is likely that our third-dimension would appear similar to a massive collage of flexible, sprawling, three-dimensional chunks – able to be perceived all at once, and easy to interact with at any point and at any time.

Transfiguration of Mortal Beings

A relatively rare occurrence in scripture is when individuals are "transfigured" or "translated" – meaning that their bodies are altered in some divine way in that they will not die, and they are able to transcend the physical plane in ways similar to what the previous scriptural examples described of Christ's manifestations. These individuals remain "physical," yet they are either taken up into heaven – such as Moses and Elijah – and/or they are given the ability to defy death and remain on the earth until the events of Christ's return – such as the apostle, John the beloved, and the three Nephite apostles.

A thorough summary of the miraculous abilities granted to those who are transfigured are summarized by Mormon in 3 Nephi 28:4-32, when he gives the details of Christ's interaction with the Nephite apostles, and their subsequent ministry (emphasis added):

[Jesus] turned himself unto the [remaining] three, and said unto them: What will ye that I should do unto you, when I am gone unto the Father?

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

And they sorrowed in their hearts, for they durst not speak unto him the thing which they desired.

And he said unto them: Behold, I know your thoughts, **and ye have desired the thing which John, my beloved... desired of me.** Therefore, more blessed are ye, for **ye shall never taste of death**; but ye shall live to behold all the doings of the Father unto the children of men, even until all things shall be fulfilled according to the will of the Father, when I shall come in my glory with the powers of heaven.

And **ye shall never endure the pains of death**; but when I shall come in my glory **ye shall be changed in the twinkling of an eye from mortality to immortality**; and then shall ye be blessed in the kingdom of my Father. And again, **ye shall not have pain while ye shall dwell in the flesh, neither sorrow save it be for the sins of the world....**

And it came to pass that when Jesus had spoken these words, he touched every one of them with his finger save it were the three who were to tarry, and then he departed. And behold, the heavens were opened, and **they were caught up into heaven, and saw and heard unspeakable things.** And it was forbidden them that they should utter; neither was it given unto them power that they could utter the things which they saw and heard;

And whether they were in the body or out of the body, they could not tell; for **it did seem unto them like a transfiguration of them, that they were changed from this body of flesh into an immortal state, that they could behold the things of God.** But it came to pass that they did again minister upon the face of the earth; nevertheless they did not minister of the things which they had heard and seen, because of the commandment which was given them in heaven.

And now, whether they were mortal or immortal, from the day of their transfiguration, I know not; But this much I know, according to the record which hath been given—they did go forth upon the face of the land, and did minister unto all the people, uniting as many to the church as would believe in their preaching; baptizing them, and as many as were baptized did receive the Holy Ghost.

And they were cast into prison by them who did not belong to the church. And **the prisons could not hold them**, for they were rent in twain. And they were cast down into the earth; but they did smite the earth with the word of God, insomuch that by his power **they were delivered out of the depths of the earth**; and therefore they could not dig pits sufficient to hold them. And **thrice they were cast into a furnace and received no harm.** And **twice were they cast into a den of wild beasts**; and behold they did play with the beasts as a child with a suckling lamb, and received no harm....

Behold, I was about to write the names of those [three] who were never

to taste of death, but the Lord forbade; therefore I write them not, for they are hid from the world. ***But behold, I have seen them, and they have ministered unto me.*** [Ed. Note: Mormon compiled this record about 400 A.D., hundreds of years after these three Nephite apostles were transfigured.] And behold they will be among the Gentiles, and ***the Gentiles shall know them not.*** They will also be among the Jews, and ***the Jews shall know them not.*** [Ed. Note: their identities will be withheld, just as Christ's identity was withheld from the two disciples on the road to Emmaus.]

And it shall come to pass, when the Lord seeth fit in his wisdom that ***they shall minister unto all the scattered tribes of Israel,*** and unto all nations, kindreds, tongues and people, and shall bring out of them unto Jesus many souls, that their desire may be fulfilled, and also because of the convincing power of God which is in them.

And ***they are as the angels of God,*** and ***if they shall pray unto the Father in the name of Jesus they can show themselves unto whatsoever man it seemeth them good.*** Therefore, great and marvelous works shall be wrought by them, before the great and coming day when all people must surely stand before the judgment-seat of Christ; Yea even ***among the Gentiles shall there be a great and marvelous work wrought by them, before that judgment day.***

Thanks to Mormon's detailed report of these matters, we can begin to comprehend the abilities granted unto those who are transfigured, especially the cases of the apostle John and the Three Nephites. It is curious to note that when they were caught up into heaven for their transfiguration, they "saw and heard unspeakable things" to the point where they had no "power" to describe "the things of God" which they beheld. It sounds as though, like the example of the 2D female entity getting pulled into the third-dimension and having no words to describe it, these chosen servants were pulled into the fourth dimension and beheld God's perspective of our third dimension, wherein there are simply no mortal words able to convey what that looks like to those who have not beheld it – therefore, no "power" wherewith to "utter the things which they saw and heard."

Having witnessed this plane of existence, they most likely were given understanding as to how divine beings are able to traverse our world at will, and how easy it is for them to be able to interact with and manipulate our third-dimensional "reality." Therefore, after this experience, after they obtained this knowledge (in the sense of how Joseph Smith terms it, that man is saved by "knowledge" of the things of God), they were given a degree of freedom in moving about the third dimension, as well as an immunity to death and pain. As Mormon summarizes:

- They won't have pain nor sorrow anymore, except when beholding and contemplating the sins of the world.

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

- They will never experience the pains of death. They will eventually be fully changed from a transfigured state to a resurrected state when Christ comes again.
- No man-made structure or earthly pit could confine them. Such obstructions they did “smite... with the word of God.” Apparently, they have either been given God's authority to exercise full power over three-dimensional elements on their own, or they are able to pray and command/request changes of three-dimensional elements and their petitions are guaranteed to be enacted.
- Their bodies cannot be harmed by excessive heat nor fire.
- Animals will not feel fear, aggression nor enmity towards them.
- They can withhold the recognition of their identities from others. Mormon prophesies that they will be among both the Gentiles and the Jews, and they won't be able to recognize them as who they are, nor as transfigured beings – they will look like three normal guys.
- Mormon compares them to angels in that they can “pray unto the Father in the name of Jesus [and] show themselves unto whatsoever man it seemeth them good.” Therefore, it appears that they are not given power within themselves to traverse the fourth dimension; they are still confined mostly to a third-dimensional existence and must rely upon petition to the divine to be transported through the fourth dimension to whatever position in the third dimension “seemeth them good.”
- A yet-to-come (or possibly currently-occurring) great and marvelous work will be carried out by them prior to Christ coming to reign on the earth.

It would appear that, according to Mormon's description, transfigured beings have many of the powers ascribed to angels, yet they are not at liberty to traverse the fourth dimension at will, as Christ does. They are confined to an on-going three-dimensional experience, but are granted authority to petition for manipulation of the elements as well as instantaneous movement throughout this plane of existence. They continue to be human and not fully immortal, yet they will not die and they are immune to bodily pain or destruction. How wondrous it would be to meet one of them in person.

Angels Posing and Interacting As Humans

“Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained

angels unawares.”

This brief but startling passage from Hebrews 13:2 all but verifies the reality that angelic powers can and do “disguise” themselves as mortal beings, for whatever mission or purpose they are charged with carrying out. Many people have reported an encounter with a human-appearing being that subsequently protected them or saved them somehow – leading some to the supposition that we have “guardian angels” assigned to us.

Whatever the case, it is apparent that such beings have the capabilities to manifest themselves in this third-dimensional plane in ways similar or identical to how Jesus spent time with the two disciples on the road to Emmaus. I have heard of an example where a person was waiting with many people to cross the street at a busy intersection. As he stepped forward, a woman behind him grabbed his shoulder and yanked him back, saving his life from being hit by a speeding vehicle. When he turned around to thank the woman, she was completely gone – she was not among the others there waiting to cross the street, and no one else saw her. Of my own family, I have a cousin who served a mission in a dangerous inner city area. One night as he and his companion were walking home, they were assaulted by a few thugs. His companion was hit in the back of the head and fell down. At that immediate instant, a middle-aged African American man appeared with a knife and threatened the muggers, “Leave money alone!” (i.e. don't hurt these “wealthy” appearing men). Immediately the attackers were startled and ran off. When my cousin looked around to thank the man, he was nowhere in sight – there was nowhere he could have gone to so fast that my cousin would not have seen or heard him go. He was simply gone. My cousin helped his companion up and they went back to their apartment.

It is more than likely that a number of angelic encounters reported in scripture are not so different from incidents such as these, wherein they appear as mere humans, yet their manner of arrival and departure, and/or the nature of their visit, testify that they are angelic. A few possible examples include:

- The three angels which Abraham and Lot meet with in Genesis chapters 18 and 19. Both Abraham and Lot host them as they would honored mortal guests, but both comprehended that they are indeed angelic ministers.¹⁹
- “And there came a man of God unto Eli...” (1 Samuel 2:27) Either a completely unnamed prophet or an angel in the likeness of a mortal man confronts the priest, Eli, and issues extremely dire prophecies against him and his house due to him failing in his duties. Other than what this messenger reports to Eli, almost nothing is described about him – he delivers a message and is gone.

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

- The angelic servant which ministers to Manoah's wife, the mother of Samson, in Judges chapter 13. Upon his first visit, she describes the angel to her husband as "A man of God came unto me, and his countenance was like the countenance of an angel of God, very terrible: but I asked him not whence he was, neither told he me his name[.]" (verse 6) Later the wife and husband have another encounter and detailed conversations with this angel, yet they refer to him as a "man," someone who is approachable on a human-to-human level, but treated with revered respect:

"[T]he angel of God came again unto the woman as she sat in the field: but Manoah her husband was not with her. And the woman made haste, and ran, and shewed her husband, and said unto him, Behold, the man hath appeared unto me, that came unto me the other day. And Manoah arose, and went after his wife, and came to the man, and said unto him, Art thou the man that spakest unto the woman? And he said, I am."

Manoah wouldn't have bothered to ask an angel decked out in glory if he was the one who had spoken to his wife; it would have been obvious. However, if this angel appeared only as a mortal man, and the husband wanted to confirm with him that he was the person his wife told him about, this questioning is understandable.

- The angel which appeared to Laman, Lemuel, Nephi, and Sam in 1 Nephi 2:29-31, to stop Laman and Lemuel from beating up Nephi. After the angel rebukes the two older brothers, he proceeds to tell them that they must go to Jerusalem again, and the Lord will "deliver Laban into your hands" that thereby they can get the brass plates. However, not long after this angel leaves, Laman and Lemuel begin doubting that what he said would happen is even possible, complaining that "Behold, [Laban] is a mighty man, and he can command fifty, yea, even he can slay fifty; then why not us?" (1 Nephi 2:31)

It is more reasonable to conclude that this angel appeared as a normal-looking mortal, not in glory – certainly not with any degree of earth-shaking glory of the angel that appeared to Alma the Younger and the sons of Mosiah, as recorded in Mosiah 27:10-19, wherewith that angel "spake as it were with a voice of thunder, which caused the earth to shake" and "so great was their astonishment, that they fell to the earth." Most likely, this angel appeared all-too-mortal, and therefore Laman and Lemuel were able to quickly thereafter succumb to doubt. To their perspective, it would be as though "some guy" came along to admonish them – who just so happened to know their names, their family's inner-quarrels and dynamics, the details of their conundrum, as well as testify that they will be successful in their next

attempt to get the brass plates – and then this person just walks away and is gone. While the sheer impossibility of something like this occurring would be downright all-but-convincing to faithful persons, Laman's and Lemuel's fear, anger, and frustration were still seething to the point where they could not exercise even a glimmer of faith that the Lord could make the "impossible" happen.

- When Daniel was thrown into the den of lions, the next day he reports: "My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me" (Daniel 6:22) Daniel's words infer that an angelic being manifested himself within the confined area and caused that the lions would not harm Daniel. Full-blown, earth-shaking, eye-blinding angelic glory would not be necessary for this. It is likely that a mortal-looking minister appeared to protect and comfort Daniel in his overnight predicament. And yet, this event is no less miraculous nor less noteworthy than other angelic encounters recorded in scripture.

Examples such as these demonstrate how it is all too possible for us to go about our daily lives and unwittingly encounter angels who "descend" from a fourth-dimensional plane and manifest themselves as mortal beings within our three-dimensional existence – possibly even our Lord and Savior Himself in a state where we are unable to recognize Him, just as His two disciples walked, talked, and even dined with him throughout an entire day and didn't realize that it was Him. *Jesus, Himself, implies that He can and will do likewise with each of us* when He states: "I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.... Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me." (Matthew 25:31-46) This is not just an admonition to do such things charitably to others – it is a warning that not only will He consider all such experiences of the disadvantaged and downtrodden as done unto Him, but also that *it may actually be Him that one is failing to assist.*

Miraculous Manifestations of Edible Matter

There are a number of instances in the scriptures, especially The Bible, which talk about edible sustenance manifesting and being eaten by many – events which defy scientifically-accepted possibilities. These stories in particular tend to be most scoffed at by non-believers and atheists. Some of these events include:

- **Manna** (Exodus 16) – After being released from slavery in Egypt, the Israelites spent many years as a group of vagabonds in the desert. They quickly became irritated and complained to Moses that they at

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

least had access to good food in Egypt, but would quickly starve in the desert. The Lord responded by sending them manna.

"Then said the Lord unto Moses, Behold, I will rain bread from heaven for you; and the people shall go out and gather a certain rate every day, that I may prove them, whether they will walk in my law, or no....

"[I]n the morning the dew lay round about the host. And when the dew that lay was gone up, behold, upon the face of the wilderness there lay a small round thing, as small as the hoar frost on the ground.... And Moses said unto them, This is the bread which the Lord hath given you to eat....

"And Moses said, Let no man leave of it till the morning. Notwithstanding they hearkened not unto Moses; but some of them left of it until the morning, and it bred worms, and stank: and Moses was wroth with them. And they gathered it every morning, every man according to his eating: and when the sun waxed hot, it melted." (Exodus 16:4,12-16,19-21)

This miraculous substance appeared in adequate quantities to feed everyone daily, except on the Sabbath day. It became inedible and had to be disposed of within about 12 hours, except when it appeared the day before the Sabbath. The Israelites were required to gather twice the normal amount on the sixth day of the week, and that which they ate on the Sabbath day would still be fresh. Manna was described as "like coriander seed, white; and the taste of it was like wafers made with honey." (Exodus 16:31)

- Oil and Flour (1 Kings 17:7-16, 2 Kings 4:1-7) – Elijah asked God to initiate a famine in order to humble the people. He himself had to rely on water from a small brook, and food miraculously brought to him every day by birds. When the brook eventually dried up, he went to the town Zarephath and was given shelter by a widow and her son. When she expressed that they only had a bit of oil and "meal" left in the house, Elijah responded "Fear not.... For thus saith the Lord God of Israel, The barrel of meal shall not waste, neither shall the cruse of oil fail, until the day that the Lord sendeth rain upon the earth." (1 Kings 17:13-14) The next two verses confirm that all three of them subsisted upon the oil and flour for "many days" without it ever running out.

Later, Elijah's prodigy, Elisha, was petitioned by a widow for help with debts that she had no means to pay. (2 Kings 4:1-7) In response he instructed her to obtain many empty oil vessels and use her oil to fill them with. As she did so, the oil in her container did not decrease, but filled every empty container they could find. Elisha advised her to sell off all the full vessels to obtain enough money to pay off her debts, as

well as sufficient extra for her and her son to get by.

- Bread, Fish and Wine (Matthew 14:13-21 and 15:32-16:10, Mark 6:31-44 and 8:1-9, Luke 9:10-17, John 6:5-15, 3 Nephi 18:1-9, 3 Nephi 20:3-7) – The two instances of Jesus feeding thousands of people with nothing but some small loaves of bread and some fish are quite possibly the most famous of all instances of edible sustenance appearing miraculously. The first incident of feeding 5000 attendees is recorded by all four Gospel writers. In this case, Christ was provided only five loaves and two fish, which he blessed and brake. As they were passed along from person to person, who each ate until he/she was full, the amount of food available multiplied. When all had eaten, “they took up of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full.” (Matthew 14:20) The second incident was nearly identical, wherein about 4000 people were fed. Jesus was given “seven [loaves], and a few little fishes” (Matthew 15:34), and after all had eaten there was an excess of seven baskets full of food.

This miracle was duplicated on the American continent when Christ appeared to the Nephites and instituted the Sacrament among them. Given some bread and wine, Christ blessed them and gave them to the Nephites to partake. (3 Nephi 18:1-9) They ate and drank until they were full. The second time Christ administered the Sacrament was even more miraculous:

“And it came to pass that he brake bread again and blessed it, and gave to the disciples to eat. And when they had eaten he commanded them that they should break bread, and give unto the multitude. And when they had given unto the multitude he also gave them wine to drink, and commanded them that they should give unto the multitude. Now, there had been no bread, neither wine, brought by the disciples, neither by the multitude; But he truly gave unto them bread to eat, and also wine to drink.” (3 Nephi 20:3-7)

Perhaps it is easy to reject such miraculous stories of never-ending casks of oil and flour, and exponentially-increasing quantities of bread, fish, and wine. However, when one contemplates how individuals who exist, function, and have power in the fourth dimension can readily physically manifest themselves in this third dimension at will, then how much easier would it be for organic, edible sustenance to be manifested and consumed in this dimension? For them, it would be as easy a thing to do as for one of us humans to place a chunk of bread on an ant mound, thereby causing the ants to glory in this mountain of food which miraculously manifested itself in front of them.

Demonic Capabilities Which Mimic God and Angels

"[W]hen Satan presented himself before the Lord, among the sons of God, he said that he came "from going to and fro in the earth, and from wandering up and down in it;" and he is emphatically called the prince of the power of the air; and, it is very evident that they possess a power that none but those who have the Priesthood can control." (Joseph Smith²⁰)

While it has been nice to reflect upon the divine aspects of multidimensional planes, it is important to consider how and to what degree Lucifer and his cohorts perpetrate fraudulent "miracles" within our three-dimensional realm.

Consider for a moment the concept of an ongoing two-dimensional plane, sprawling horizontally in all directions. Now imagine that divine three-dimensional beings reside above it and interact with it from a top-down perspective, and demonic three-dimensional entities reside below it and interact from a bottom-up perspective. The divine beings do not mingle with the demonic entities – they are in every way physically separated from each other, yet they are both able to interact with the 2D plane from either side. Because the 2D residents cannot comprehend how the dimension above them extends infinitely beyond their reality, it is all but impossible to distinguish which "side" is interacting with them when manifestations occur.

Take that concept and apply it to the third and fourth dimensions. An additional dimensional plane extends from our existence, and both holy and unholy entities are capable of manifesting themselves, physically, in this third dimension. The scriptures allude to Lucifer and his minions having limitations and boundaries to their influence and interference in mortal matters: "their bounds are set, they cannot pass..." (D&C 122:9) Thankfully, Joseph Smith summarized some of these boundaries and how we can distinguish between truly angelic ministrants and imposters. This information has been canonized in D&C 129 (emphasis added):

"There are two kinds of beings in heaven, namely: **Angels**, who are resurrected personages, having bodies of flesh and bones—For instance, Jesus said: Handle me and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

"Secondly: **the spirits of just men made perfect**, they who are not resurrected, but inherit the same glory. When a messenger comes saying he has a message from God, offer him your hand and request him to shake hands with you. If he be an angel he will do so, and you will feel his hand. If he be the spirit of a just man made perfect he will come in his glory; for that is the only way he can appear—*Ask him to shake hands with you, but he will not move*, because it is contrary to the order of heaven for a just man to deceive; but he will still deliver his message.

"If it be the **devil as an angel of light**, when you ask him to shake hands **he will offer you his hand, and you will not feel anything**; you may therefore detect him.

"These are three grand keys whereby you may know whether any administration is from God."

While this critical information is imperative in detecting false angelic ministers, it does not address how evil forces are capable of exhibiting false miracles and/or demonic manifestations – *even in forms that can be physically interacted with* – especially among mortals who willingly align themselves with such entities. Many occult practices and practitioners invite unholy beings to manifest their powers and/or even themselves.

Engaging in any form of witchcraft will quickly attract and invite the attention and response of demonic powers: Ouija boards wherein the planchette will move on its own accord to spell out a message, channeling / mediumship of the (supposed) spirits of deceased persons, or the utilization of occult tools in order to read fortunes or futures of individuals. Additionally, there are rituals and practices which invoke demonic spirits to enter into one's body in order to be granted unearned abilities, or even super-human capabilities: fluency in unstudied languages, instant expertise in playing musical instruments, the absence of pain or wounding during physically destructive actions, and even super-human speed, strength or the ability to levitate – all such "miracles" are possible through the adversary's powers. Recall from Volume I, Part I, that:

"Egyptian mystics could levitate, walk the air, handle fire, live under water, sustain great pressure, harmlessly suffer mutilation, read the past, foretell the future, make themselves invisible and cure disease."²¹

Beyond all such powers, occult practitioners are capable of summoning, or conjuring, demonic entities "into existence." As noted earlier, infamous occultist Aleister Crowley regularly summoned a physical demonic being which he called LAM, the drawing of which eerily resembles typical descriptions of alien greys.²² Also noted earlier, Dr. John Dee, one of the most lauded British scientists of all time, became a renowned occult adept. He worked frequently with a "scryer" (or spirit medium), Edward Kelley, to summon "angels" to manifest themselves, thus gaining both esoteric and practical scientific understanding from them (emphasis added)²³:

"John Dee (13 July 1527 – 1608 or 1609) was a mathematician, astronomer, astrologer, occultist, imperialist and adviser to Queen Elizabeth I. He devoted much of his life to the study of *alchemy, divination and Hermetic philosophy*. Dee straddled the worlds of science and magic just as they were becoming distinguishable. One of the most learned men of his age, he had been invited to lecture on advanced algebra at the

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

University of Paris while still in his early twenties. Dee was an ardent promoter of mathematics and a respected astronomer, as well as a leading expert in navigation, having trained many of those who would conduct England's voyages of discovery.

"Simultaneously with these efforts, Dee immersed himself in the worlds of magic, astrology and Hermetic philosophy. **He devoted much time and effort in the last thirty years or so of his life to attempting to commune with angels in order to learn the universal language of creation and bring about the pre-apocalyptic unity of mankind.** A student of the Renaissance Neo-Platonism of Marsilio Ficino, *Dee did not draw distinctions between his mathematical research and his investigations into Hermetic magic, angel summoning and divination.* Instead he considered all of his activities to constitute different facets of the same quest: the search for a transcendent understanding of the divine forms which underlie the visible world, which Dee called "pure verities"."

As elaborated in Volume I, the kingdom of the devil functions as an inverse to the Kingdom of God. Therefore, it is to be expected that the likeness and manner in which God and His angelic servants are able to manifest themselves into our three-dimensional experience is inversely duplicated by the adversary and his helpers. Those who initiate into Luciferian secret societies, and descend deeper into the evil workings of the "elite," will eventually move beyond channeling, scrying, and spiritual possession to the point where they encounter literal physical manifestations of demonic entities.

Unfortunately, the information detailed in the previous section regarding the physical existence of "alien" beings suggests that, with all the so-called extra-dimensional "contact" occurring in this day and age, today's situation is not far off from the widespread profound evil that existed in the days prior to the flood – which surpassed the wickedness of all other creations of God, to the point where He wept profusely.

"And it came to pass that the God of heaven looked upon the residue of the people, and he wept; and Enoch bore record of it... And Enoch said unto the Lord: How is it that thou canst weep, seeing thou art holy, and from all eternity to all eternity?...

"The Lord said unto Enoch: Behold these thy brethren; they are the workmanship of mine own hands, and I gave unto them their knowledge, in the day I created them.... Wherefore, *I can stretch forth mine hands and hold all the creations which I have made; and mine eye can pierce them also, and **among all the workmanship of mine hands there has not been so great wickedness as among thy brethren...*** and the whole heavens shall weep over them, even all the workmanship of mine hands; wherefore should not the heavens weep, seeing these shall suffer?" (Moses 7:28-37 emphasis added)

The following chapters will explore how profoundly evil the secret works of darkness have become, and what could cause the Lord such great pain that all the heavens weep because of it.

Concluding Thoughts

The more I ponder these matters, the more it seems that part of the earth's function is as a literal prison, both three-dimensionally and four-dimensionally, for Lucifer and those who sided with him. Despite his temporary reign over matters currently, the earth is not his.

Just as we mortal beings are given a probationary existence from birth to death, Lucifer and company are only temporarily imprisoned within the earth's three- and four-dimensional limitations. However, within the confines of the earth, they truly are capable of manifesting themselves in ways which replicate how the Lord and his ministers interact in three and four dimensions. As has become apparent, it is possible for them to manifest themselves from the fourth dimension to a sufficient degree of physicality in the third dimension – sometimes in human-appearing form, sometimes in humanoid-other-creature form. From the mythical-historical accounts of ancient elite descending deep into the earth to converse and conspire with dragon-like serpents and nagas who reside down there, to the modern accounts of today's elite who work tirelessly to build hundreds of interconnected, deep underground cities – who have been observed by whistleblowers to be conversing and conspiring with "extraterrestrial" entities which reside down there – all such matters vindicate the words and warnings of all the prophets to us: "Cursed is he that putteth his trust in man, or maketh flesh his arm, or shall hearken unto the precepts of men." (2 Nephi 28:31, Jeremiah 17:5) Aren't the prophets really warning us against the all-encompassing manipulations of the Luciferian-elite? Who else formulates the wisdom, reasonings, and philosophies that dominate this world?

For us on this earth, the powers of evil seem almost more abundantly manifest than the powers of good – yet that is because we carry out our probation on the surface of the dimensional limitations of the devil's prison. If one spent one's entire life stuck in the halls of a maximum security prison, day in and day out drowning in the audible ferocity and bile of the prisoners, with barely a view of a few patches of green grass and trees outside the perimeter, then depictions of children running in vast green meadows, families picnicking on a cool spring afternoon, or any number of glorious activities in nature would seem like a fool's pipe dream. Most would succumb to cynicism and angrily dismiss the idea that any such paradisaical locations could exist. Such is our probation on this corrupted earth, which patiently,

DIMENSIONAL CONTEMPLATIONS

painfully awaits the return of its Creator.

Scriptures testify that upon Christ's return, Lucifer will be powerless during the millennium:

"And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, and cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season." (Revelation 20:1-3)

"[B]ecause of the righteousness of [the Lord's] people [during the Millennium], Satan has no power; wherefore, he cannot be loosed for the space of many years; for he hath no power over the hearts of the people, for they dwell in righteousness, and the Holy One of Israel reigneth." (1 Nephi 22:26)

For this thousand year time-frame, Satan cannot be released because of the righteousness of those who are preserved from the cleansing of the earth, as well as the subsequent generations who do the Lord's work. None will be sufficiently tempted to once again restore the Luciferian oaths and bind themselves to him for a mess of pottage²⁴. However, after that thousand-year era, he will be released for a short time, and will briefly prevail, until his final defeat and ultimate banishment:

"And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

"And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever." (Revelation 20:7-10)

This will be the end of the devil's and his followers' probation. Thereafter, the earth will be fully the Lord's, and the meek will inherit it from Him.²⁵

- 1 This is how Christ arrived and then left when he appeared to 10 apostles in the account in Luke 24:36-53. He didn't enter invisibly through the door, became visible in front of them, then turn invisible again and sneak out. The Lord appeared before them without needing a door, or a heavenly conduit.
- 2 Joseph Smith described Moroni's entry from his room as follows: "[A] light appear[ed] in my room, which continued to increase until the room was lighter than at noonday, when immediately a personage appeared at my bedside, standing in the air." Moroni's exit is described as thus: "[I]nstantly I saw, as it were, a conduit open right up into heaven, and he ascended till he entirely disappeared, and the room was left as it had been before this heavenly light had made its appearance." (from the Testimony of the Prophet Joseph Smith)
- 3 Although some have come to either fully or partially dismiss it, I consider the Book of Abraham to be divinely given, word for word, to the Prophet Joseph Smith. Regardless of the origin or contents of the material reportedly used to "translate" it, both God and Joseph were not limited to a physical ancient papyrus. The contents of the Book of Moses came from direct inspiration from God to Joseph, therefore I have no reason not to trust that the contents of the Book of Abraham came in like manner – without the need of a physical document wherewith to translate. To treat the Book of Abraham as less than this is to suppose incompetence or fraud upon Joseph Smith's capability in his role as a prophet, seer and revelator, selected and upheld by God.
- 4 Ibid. 1
- 5 Ibid. 2
- 6 Matthew 19:26
- 7 Refer to the website <http://www.tenthdimension.com> ; also refer to the MP4 video in the supporting material: *Imagining 10 Dimensions - the Movie.mp4*
- 8 Quote by author and psychologist David Jay Brown.
- 9 Source: <http://imaginingthetenthdimension.blogspot.com/> and <http://www.tenthdimension.com/>
- 10 "In physics, the Planck time (t_P) is the unit of time in the system of natural units known as Planck units. It is the time required for light to travel, in a vacuum, a distance of 1 Planck length. The unit is named after Max Planck, who was the first to propose it." (Source – https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Planck_time)
- 11 Arvin S. Gibson, *They Saw Beyond Death*, Horizon Publishers 2006, pages 148-153
- 12 Ibid. 7
- 13 Matthew 19:26
- 14 "*What the Bleep Do We Know!?* (stylized as What tĥē #*\$! Dē ωΣ (k)now!?) and What the #*\$! Do We Know!?) is a 2004 film that combines documentary-style interviews, computer-animated graphics, and a narrative that posits a spiritual connection between quantum physics and consciousness. The plot follows the story of a photographer as she encounters emotional and existential obstacles in her life and begins to consider the idea that individual and group consciousness can influence the material world. Her experiences are offered by the filmmakers to illustrate the movie's thesis about quantum physics and consciousness." Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/What_the_Bleep_Do_We_Know!%3F
- 15 Sources: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/What_the_Bleep_Do_We_Know!%3F and Benedicta Cipolla "'Bleep' Film Challenges Traditional Religion, Attracts Following",

CHAPTER NOTES

- beliefnet.com. Accessed 2007-12-30
- 16 Source: Kuttner, Fred; Rosenblum, Bruce (November 2006), Physics Today
<http://scitation.aip.org/content/aip/magazine/physicstoday/article/59/11/10.1063/1.2435631>
- 17 This segment of the film is included in the supporting material. Refer to the MP4 file: What the Bleep Down the Rabbit Hole segment.mp4
- 18 Matthew 28:1-20, Mark 16:1-8, Luke 24:1-12, John 20:1-10
- 19 The Joseph Smith translation (JST) of these two chapters clarify "the angels... were holy men... sent forth after the order of God" (JST Genesis 18:23) and that Lot met with all three of them, not just "two angels" (Genesis 19:1) when they came down to visit Lot in Sodom. Additionally, the King James version (KJV) alternates terms, sometimes calling them "angels," sometimes referring to them as "men." In the KJV instances where they are called "men," the JST states "holy men."
- 20 History of the Church 4:576
- 21 Manly P. Hall, *Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians*, quoting James Bonwick, F.R.G.S.
- 22 Refer to the JPG image in the supporting material: Aleister Crowley's Lam.jpg
- 23 Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_De
- 24 "A mess of pottage is something immediately attractive but of little value taken foolishly and carelessly in exchange for something more distant and perhaps less tangible but immensely more valuable. The phrase alludes to Esau's sale of his birthright for a meal of lentil stew ("pottage") in Genesis 25:29-34 and connotes shortsightedness and misplaced priorities." (from Wikipedia)
- 25 Psalms 37:11, Matthew 5:5, 3 Nephi 12:5, D&C 88:17

Journal Excerpt 4 - July 1994 (serving LDS mission)

Since arriving in Hong Kong in November of '92, I've experienced some really odd things.

In my first area, there was that family in the apartment just below us. The father got drunk; he and the wife wouldn't stop yelling at each other. It was hard for the six of us to concentrate on our evening studies and make calls with all the racket. Suddenly, we heard a loud smashing noise, like a ceramic pot breaking apart. The yelling stopped, their dog started barking wildly, their teen daughter shrieking out in Cantonese "MOM! MOM!" That was it. Three elders went downstairs. We told Elder Chan to get out of the shower and call the emergency help line 119 (the HK equivalent of America's 911). He yelled back that we need to wait five more minutes, he's not done yet. We told him that someone's been hurt, but he still didn't want to hurry. One of the three elders ran back into the apartment asking why Elder Chan isn't calling 119. He pounded on the bathroom door HARD and bellowed at Chan to get out now and make that call! Chan yelled back irritated "Alright! Alright!" and muttered a lot of Cantonese I didn't understand.

I went downstairs. The front door was open, the wife was sprawled on the floor with her head in the doorway, face up, a small pool of blood under her head. Her eyes were open, but they were twitching and moving around wildly. A thick ceramic pot was broken nearby her. The husband was sitting on the couch, just brooding and looking smug, their little dog barking at him incessantly. The daughter was kneeling above her mother, freaking out.

I had only been in Hong Kong for three weeks.

I was dying to help somehow, but being so inexperienced and unable to speak any Cantonese, I could only observe. Two elders went in. One gently held onto the panicking daughter, pulling her a few feet away from her mother, so that the other elder could tend the mother. She wasn't dead nor completely knocked out cold, she was physically stunned, dazed and rather catatonic. The elder gently sat her up and took a small white towel and applied it gently to her head. It appears that however she was injured, it caused a small gash at the back of her head, but it bled quite a bit. The daughter shrieked and wept and tried to fight free from the other elder, but he held her arms and talked to her gently to calm down.

After a couple of minutes the wife must have gained

full consciousness, and she immediately stood up and started throwing her arms around violently, yelling "DIE! DIE! DIE!" in Cantonese. She saw me and my companion looking in the doorway and she slammed the front door - the other two elders still inside the house. I ran down to the street and saw that a two-man paramedics team had just arrived. They slowly walked up to the apartment, and I was trying my best in Cantonese to encourage them to hurry, "Fast! There's blood! Fast! Fast!" They didn't go any faster. They could hear the screaming. They knew well the sounds of Cantonese-flavored domestic craziness. Back then I was irritated and thought they were lazy and uncaring. Now I understand that they see these kinds of things all too routinely.

Once they went in the apartment, everything began to calm down. I sat on the stairway and watched everything transpire through the open door. They treated the wife's head wound, interviewed the husband. I didn't see them talk to the teen girl at all. The two elders were still inside, waiting to talk to the paramedics. Finally, one approached them and asked rudely, "What are you guys doing here?" They explained how we heard the commotion, then they came and tried to help until the paramedics arrived. He curtly replied, "We're here now. Get out." The elders looked at each other and went back to our apartment.

I stayed on the stairway and watched and prayed. It was agonizing to witness all this. No one paid any attention to me. After an hour or so, the paramedics packed up and left. They didn't take the woman to the hospital. As the last paramedic closed the door, he saw my agonized face. I asked in Cantonese, "Are they OK?" He chuckled a little and replied, "Family problems. Don't worry."

Well, what happened five nights ago has to be one of the weirdest things I've ever witnessed. That effeminate high school boy, Gary¹, who has amazingly fluent English - I think I understand now why his English is so good.

I first met him when we moved to the area. He came to all the Church activities that involved teens. He loved to chat with the missionaries, but never wanted to take the investigator discussions. For some reason, he changed his mind three weeks ago. He's been accepted into a university in England and he has expressed the desire to be baptized before he goes. But he leaves in only two more weeks, so we've been doing the discussions with him every other day. He has been eating them up, ready for

the next one.

The Spirit has been very strong. It's been wonderful to see someone willing to embrace the Gospel so tightly!

Two nights ago we gave him the fifth discussion. He couldn't meet us until 9pm, so we had to try to hurry as to not go too late. We could tell immediately that he was really tired. He struggled to stay awake while we taught him. About 9:30, he started behaving very strangely. He seemed to be in between sleep and alertness, but he was mumbling the strangest things, most of it was incoherent. My companion and I just watched him, gently trying to say something to snap him out of it. It wasn't just sleepy-talk, something about Gary's demeanor was eerie.

Without telling me anything about what he was about to do, my companion stood up, put his hand on Gary's head, and started saying, "In the name of Jesus Christ, I command the--" Before he could finish whatever he was going to say, Gary immediately jumped out of his chair and started yelling at my comp and me in perfectly-fluent, effeminate-sounding English, "NO YOU DON'T! NO YOU DON'T! YOU CAN'T MAKE ME LEAVE! HE WANTS ME HERE! DON'T YOU DARE TRY TO MAKE ME LEAVE!"

I'm beyond stunned at this point. I sat in my chair completely lost at trying to comprehend what's going on. My companion immediately tried again to put his hand on Gary's head and start again, "In the name of Jesus Christ--" Gary started freaking out, yelling at my comp like an insane man, saying things like "YOU CAN'T DO IT! HE WANTS ME HERE! YOU CAN'T MAKE ME LEAVE! YOU CAN'T DO IT! YOU CAN'T YOU CAN'T YOU CANT!" My comp put his arm to the square and tried a couple more times to use the name of Jesus Christ to cast out the evil spirit, but Gary put his hands over his ears tightly, and started behaving like a three-year-old, saying stupid, immature things like "I can't hear you! Can't-hear-you! Can't-hear-you! Can't-hear-you! Nah-nah-nah! You-can't-make-me-leave! Nah nah nah-nah nah!"

By now, I've clued in that Gary's completely not himself, and we're dealing with some kind of evil spirit that has overtaken Gary's consciousness. My comp said to me that he's going to call President Lowe to get help and advice on what to do, and went out to the hallway to use the phone. It was just me and "Gary" in the room. I sat a few feet away from him and just looked at him. He glared at me, with his hands over his ears, now and then babbling immature things - primarily having to do with "he wants me here, you can't throw me out."

I was piqued with curiosity as to why and how this evil spirit had come to possess this sweet young man. I asked some questions, such as, "Why are you here?", "What do you want with Gary?", "Why do you need to be inside him? In control of him?", "What do you mean "he wants you here"? Did he invite you in somehow?" Possessed Gary didn't answer any of these questions. He just sat there glaring at me, often smiling smugly. He relished my ignorance and wouldn't explain anything. I kept thinking that maybe I should try putting my hand on his head, or my arm to the square, and invoking the name of Jesus Christ to cast this evil spirit out - however, I didn't feel the Holy Spirit encouraging me to do so. So I continued to sit there and pray in my heart, watching Gary, sometimes asking the evil spirit to just let Gary come back.

After about 15 to 20 minutes, the bishop arrived. He came into the room, looked at Gary, and spoke forcefully in Cantonese, "It's late. The boy needs to go home and sleep. You go to sleep and let the boy come back."

"Gary" responded in fluent, upset effeminate English, "You're not going to try to make me leave him? You just want me to bring the boy back?"

"Yes," Replied the bishop in Cantonese. It was uncanny to witness their conversation, Gary speaking in fluent English, as if he was born in an English-speaking country, and the bishop, whose English is not very good, responding completely in Cantonese very firmly and forcefully and to the point.

"Because you know you can't make me! He WANTS me here! He WANTS me!"

"I understand. No one's going to try to make you leave. We just want you to go to sleep and let the boy come back. It's late and he needs to go home."

"Don't you trick me! You really aren't going to try to make me leave him? Because I won't. And you know you can't. Not if he wants me here."

"No one's going to try to cast you out. Just go to sleep. Let the boy come back. Go to sleep."

This went on for another 10 minutes or so. After the evil spirit was finally convinced that we weren't going to try to cast him out anymore, he said, "OK. I'll bring the boy back." Immediately, Gary's head flopped down. Then he slowly raised his head, and his eyes opened groggily as though he'd been sleeping all this time. Once

he saw us three - my comp and I and the bishop - and we're all standing and looking at him with concerned

expressions, he immediately understood what had happened. He was extremely embarrassed and stated over and over and over in Cantonese, "I'm so sorry! So sorry! Sorry!" We told him it's OK, not to worry, but it's time we all got home. As we walked out and locked the church up, Gary looked at me and begged me not to tell anyone, at least not anyone who knew him personally. I promised I wouldn't.

The strangest thing of all, though, was that as soon as this evil spirit inside him "went to sleep," Gary couldn't speak English at all, and his effeminate attitude and behavior completely disappeared. At that moment he was just a vulnerable, remorseful Asian teenager who was only capable of speaking his native language.

We haven't spoken about the incident since then; it would be too embarrassing for him, and otherwise impolite to even bring it up. I did, however, tell him again that everything is fine, and that none of us judge him at all - I only hope that he does all in his power to get rid of whatever this thing is in him, and to seek God's help in doing so. However, he stopped taking the lessons - I can only surmise that he did so out of shame.

Sadly, I'm convinced that the only reason Gary's English is so good is because of this spirit-being inside of him. It seems that he somehow consciously and willingly invited this being inside of himself to grant him the ability to have fluent English. If I had not experienced this event first hand, I never would have supposed that such things were possible: to invoke a spirit to reside within you, thereby granting gained/developed abilities beyond one's natural capacity to gain such.

Most disconcerting of all was that, even with the Priesthood, we had no power to cast this thing out of him, because "he WANTS me here."

1 "Gary" is an alternate name, not his real name.

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

"[T]hey arrived at the country of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee. And when [Jesus] went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man, which had devils [for a] long time, and [he wore] no clothes, neither abode in any house... his dwelling [was] among the tombs; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains... he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him. And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones.

"When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, "What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? [We] beseech thee, torment [us] not." (For [Jesus] had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man....)

"And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entered into him. And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

"And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters... [and there] were about two thousand [of them]....

"When they that fed [the herd] saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the city and in the country. And [the people round about came] to Jesus, and [saw] him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

"They also which [witnessed the exorcism and drowning of the swine] told [the people of the city] by what means he that was possessed of the devils was healed. Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about besought [Jesus] to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear....

"Now the man out of whom the devils were departed besought [Jesus] that he might be with him: but Jesus sent him away, saying, "Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee." And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvel."

– From the Testimonies of Matthew, Mark, and Luke¹

A number of everyday people would likely scoff at the notion of behavior manipulation, brainwashing, hypnosis, demonic possession or even mind control being a reality – for how is it possible to make a person do something against their will? As Christians understand that God has given everyone their free agency, then it is assumed that it is impossible for anyone to wholly force someone, or effectively control someone, to do anything that they themselves would not want to do... at least not to some subconscious degree. God would not allow it... right?

Unfortunately, just as He allows unspeakably horrendous things to occur on this earth, God also allows this. Various methods that rob us of our free agency do exist. A formidable concentration of occult studies have focused not only upon discovering the inner-workings and nuances of the human mind, but also the manner of manipulating it. These matters have been thoroughly studied and applied by adepts of the mystery schools for thousands of years; only fragments of such knowledge have trickled into public awareness and available documentation.

Volume I touched upon a number of arenas concerning occult-based mind manipulation. In Part I, the earliest publicly documented occurrences of such were reviewed in the elaborate and grueling initiation rites of the ancient Egyptian mystery schools. Through elaborate artificial situations, trauma-inducing stimuli and occult trainings, these rites generated deep psychological adherence and loyalty to those ancient Egyptian orders. All

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

future mystery school orders patterned themselves and their initiation procedures after the Egyptian precedent. They also endeavored to improve upon the techniques, often involving chemical substances to further deepen the initiate's sensory experiences.

Part 2 of Volume I reviewed the mind control practices which were utilized thousands of years later by the Order of the Assassins. Hassan-i Sabbah not only employed elaborate initiation rites, but also established university-patterned trainings, and created exquisite faux heaven-on-earth secret locales to convince drugged followers into testifying that he held the power of entry into ethereal paradise.

Part 3 of Volume I reviewed how the modern mystery schools have instituted "benevolent" fraternal organizations as a public-awareness buffer, and as an exoteric counterpart which delivers watered-down esoteric basics to pools of potential candidates of higher initiation. These outer-shell fraternal groups, such as Freemasonry, serve to gradually acclimate members to the doctrine and culture of the occult roots of its mystery school core. Despite the vast majority of fraternal members never becoming esoteric-realm initiates – nor ever gaining an understanding that Luciferian mystery schools lie at the heart of such organizations – they are nevertheless deeply influenced and psychologically coerced into obeying the dictates mandated upon them through the oaths they take upon themselves. Emphasis is placed upon unquestioned loyalty to superiors and unfailing assistance of fraternal brothers, no matter if the agenda or enterprise is offensive to the initiate, harmful towards others outside the organization, or even traitorous towards national law. When it comes to obedience to such orders, one's personal opinions or moral reservations are insignificant – unquestioned loyalty is everything.

Part 4 of Volume I familiarized the reader with dozens of emotional, rational, argumentative, coercive, psychological and even spiritual tactics aimed at achieving the overarching goal of the "elites" that adorn top leadership positions throughout the world today: **consent of the general public – through inducement of apathy and programmed aversion to controversy – unwittingly support and carry out their machinations.** This goal of public consent is disclosed in the *Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars* manual, which also details that this goal is achieved primarily through diversion tactics. Through massive information gathering (mostly made possible today through applications developed by the likes of Google, Microsoft and Apple corporations in the guise of providing free, useful apps) and the algorithms developed to process and gauge all this data on everyone, tactics are developed and deployed with extreme precision, in order to either preoccupy the public with self-serving/self-satisfying activities, or to align themselves with predetermined, rutted, manipulated ideological

paths.

Mentally entrenched and unable to truly understand where all this evil is spewing from, even the most passionate and good-hearted people make little to no progress in impeding Lucifer's agenda. Thus unable to make reliable, informed choices, they are unwittingly shepherded into fighting each other, or into focusing on calculated decoys. Despite their best efforts, most of them harbor unspoken feelings of helplessness and defeat as they witness their most strenuous efforts "to rid the world of evil" be near-fruitless and even counterproductive. **This, above all, is the true power that Lucifer and his forces wield over the inhabitants of the earth today: the power to deflect, mislead and redirect "positive" human attention and energy in predictable and manageable ways, ultimately benefiting their agenda.**

This chapter, and the following one, build upon what has already been presented, and provide a deeper look into how the human psyche is toyed with, manipulated, at-times possessed, and (as aptly conveyed in computer lingo) "hacked into" by Lucifer and his legions, as well as humans that dabble in occult practices.

"Mind control (also known as brainwashing, coercive persuasion, mind abuse, menticide, thought control, or thought reform) refers to a process in which a group or individual "systematically uses unethically manipulative methods to persuade others to conform to the wishes of the manipulator(s), often to the detriment of the person being manipulated". The term has been applied to any tactic, psychological or otherwise, which can be seen as subverting an individual's sense of control over their own thinking, behavior, emotions or decision making....

"Theories of brainwashing and of mind control were originally developed to explain how totalitarian regimes appeared to succeed in systematically indoctrinating prisoners of war through propaganda and torture techniques. These theories were later expanded and modified to explain a wider range of phenomena, especially conversions to new religious movements (NRMs)." ²

We will start by reviewing two highly significant behavioral experiments conducted in the 1960's and 70's, both of which demonstrate, all too starkly, how – given the right situations and environment – the moral convictions, personal identities, and even the humanity of most individuals can be discarded and supplanted by the will of someone perceived as legitimate authority.

Obedience Coercion and Deflecting Accountability

"I would say, on the basis of having observed a thousand people in the experiment and having my own intuition shaped and informed by these experiments, that if a system of death camps were set up in the United States of the sort we had seen in Nazi Germany, one would be able to find sufficient personnel for those camps in any medium-sized American town."

– Stanley Milgram³

In what has now become standard Psychology 101 material, the findings of the study in obedience to authority – conducted by Yale psychologist Stanley Milgram in the early 1960's – sheds a terrifying light into precisely what normal, everyday good citizens are capable of when they *do not stand up* for what they purport to believe in. A summary of this experiment is as follows (emphasis added):

"The Milgram experiment on obedience to authority figures was a series of notable social psychology experiments conducted by Yale University psychologist Stanley Milgram, which measured the willingness of study participants to obey an authority figure who instructed them to perform acts that conflicted with their personal conscience....

"The experiments began in July 1961, three months after the start of the trial of German Nazi war criminal Adolf Eichmann in Jerusalem. Milgram devised his psychological study to answer the question: "Was it that Eichmann and his accomplices in the Holocaust had mutual intent, in at least with regard to the goals of the Holocaust?" In other words, "Was there a mutual sense of morality among those involved?" *Milgram's testing suggested that it could have been that the millions of accomplices were merely following orders, **despite violating their deepest moral beliefs***. The experiments have been repeated many times, ***with consistent results within societies***, but different percentages across the globe. The experiments were also controversial, and considered by some scientists to be unethical, physically or psychologically abusive, motivating more thorough review boards or committee reviews for working with human subjects.

The Experiment

"The volunteer subject was given the role of teacher, and the confederate [i.e. an actor pretending to also be a volunteer], the role of learner. The participants drew slips of paper to determine their roles, but unknown to

the subject, both slips said "teacher", and the actor claimed to have the slip that read "learner", thus guaranteeing that the participant would always be the "teacher". At this point, the "teacher" and "learner" were separated into different rooms where they could communicate but not see each other. In one version of the experiment, the confederate was sure to mention to the participant that he had a heart condition.

"The "teacher" was given an electric shock from the electro-shock generator as a sample of the shock that the "learner" would supposedly receive during the experiment. The "teacher" was then given a list of word pairs which he was to teach the learner. The teacher began by reading the list of word pairs to the learner. The teacher would then read the first word of each pair and read four possible answers. The learner would press a button to indicate his response. If the answer was incorrect, the teacher would administer a shock to the learner, with the voltage increasing in 15-volt increments for each wrong answer. If correct, the teacher would read the next word pair.

"The subjects believed that for each wrong answer, the learner was receiving actual shocks. In reality, there were no shocks. After the confederate was separated from the subject, the confederate set up a tape recorder integrated with the electro-shock generator, which played pre-recorded sounds [of outbursts of pain] for each shock level. After a number of voltage level increases, the actor started to bang on the wall that separated him from the subject. After several times banging on the wall and complaining about his heart condition, all responses by the learner [including both answering the teacher's questions and any outbursts of pain] would cease.

"At this point, many people indicated their desire to stop the experiment and check on the learner. Some test subjects paused at 135 volts and began to question the purpose of the experiment. ***Most continued after being assured that they would not be held responsible.*** A few subjects began to laugh nervously or exhibit other signs of extreme stress once they heard the screams of pain coming from the learner.

"If at any time the subject indicated his desire to halt the experiment, he was given a succession of verbal prods by the experimenter, in this order:

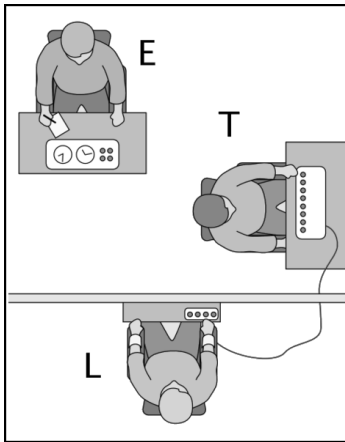
1. Please continue.
2. The experiment requires that you continue.
3. It is absolutely essential that you continue.
4. You have no other choice, you must go on.

"If the subject still wished to stop after all four successive verbal prods, the experiment was halted. Otherwise, it was halted after the subject had given the maximum 450-volt shock three times in succession.

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

"The experimenter also gave special prods if the teacher made specific comments. If the teacher asked whether the learner might suffer permanent physical harm, the experimenter replied "Although the shocks may be painful, there is no permanent tissue damage, so please go on". If the teacher said that the learner clearly wants to stop, the experimenter replied, "Whether the learner likes it or not, you must go on until he has learned all the word pairs correctly, so please go on'." ⁴

The following image depicts the physical setup of the experiment. *E* represents the experiment administrator, *T* the "teacher" (volunteer/subject), and *L* the "learner" (confederate actor pretending to be a volunteer).



Milgram's Experiment Setup

Merely summarizing the general aspects or findings of Milgram's research is inadequate; such generalities are not sufficient to help the average person fathom how any normal, moral, everyday 1960's American citizen would allow themselves to deliver torturous, even life-threatening electrical shocks to another innocent human being. To truly understand, it is imperative to witness the process as it transpires, either by watching Milgram's filmed documentation of the experiment, or by reading the interactions between the volunteers and the experiment administrator. Therefore, I have transcribed a portion of the content

of Milgram's film and present it here. Additionally, this portion of the film is included in the supporting material⁵.

The following is a transcription by the author of the proceedings of one experiment from Dr. Milgram's documentary film. As depicted in the previous image, the volunteer "teacher" and the experiment administrator are in the room. The confederate "learner" actor is in the adjacent room with only a thin wall between "teacher" and "learner":

[After the volunteer "teacher" flips a switch that (supposedly) administers a 165-volt shock to the "learner", the learner (who is an actor named Mr. Wallace) starts banging on the wall.]

LEARNER: Let me out!

VOLUNTEER ("TEACHER"): That guy's hollering in there.

ADMINISTRATOR: Continue, please. Go on.

VOLUNTEER: [pauses] Well, there's a lot of them here [i.e. questions the

THERE ARE SAVE TWO CHURCHES ONLY – VOLUME II

"learner" needs to answer]. You know he's [indistinguishable] heart condition there. You want me to go?

ADMINISTRATOR: Just continue, please.

[Volunteer pauses, then continues to the next question. The learner answers it wrong.]

VOLUNTEER: [turns to administrator] I'm up to 180 volts.

ADMINISTRATOR: Please continue, teacher.

VOLUNTEER: [to learner via microphone] You're gonna get a shock, 180 volts [flips switch]

LEARNER: [recording of learner's "Ow!" outburst is heard] I can't stand the pain! Let me out of here!

VOLUNTEER: [to administrator] He can't stand it. I'm not gonna kill that man in there. You hear him hollering in there?

ADMINISTRATOR: Although the shocks may be painful–

VOLUNTEER: Yeah, but he's in there hollering in there. He can't stand it. What if something happens to him?

ADMINISTRATOR: The experiment requires that you continue.

VOLUNTEER: Yeah, but, uh– I'm not gonna get that man sick in there. I mean, he's hollering in there. You know what I mean? I mean–

ADMINISTRATOR: Whether the learner likes it or not, we must go on until all–

VOLUNTEER: Nah, I mean, I refuse to take the responsibility of him getting hurt in there. I mean, I'm not gonna– he's in there hollering.

ADMINISTRATOR: It's absolutely essential that you continue, teacher.

VOLUNTEER: [shakes his head, looks at question sheets] There's too many left here. I mean, geez, he get– he gets wrong here, there's too many of them left. I mean, who's going to take the responsibility if anything happens to that gentleman.

ADMINISTRATOR: I'm responsible for anything that happens here. Continue, please.

VOLUNTEER: [begrudgingly, to microphone] Alright, next one. Slow. Walk, dance, truck, music. Answer, please. [Learner's multiple choice response lights up.] Wrong. 195 volts. Dance. [flips switch]

LEARNER: ["Ow!" recording, bangs on wall] Let me out of here! Let me out of here! My heart's bothering me!

[Volunteer glances at Administrator.]

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

ADMINISTRATOR: Continue, please.

LEARNER: Let me out of here! You have no right to keep me here! Let me out of here!

VOLUNTEER: [mumbles] you see, he's hollering in there.

LEARNER: Let me out! Let me out of here! My heart's bothering me! Let me out!

VOLUNTEER: [to Administrator] You hear that? I mean— gee, I don't know.

ADMINISTRATOR: The experiment requires—

VOLUNTEER: Yeah, I mean, I know it does, sir. But, I mean [nervous laugh] you don't know what he's getting in for. He's up to 195 volts....

The film then skips ahead in time. The volunteer has continued all the way to 270 volts in a bit more jaded manner. He exhausts the list of questions and thinks the experiment is done. The administrator informs him that he must start at the beginning and repeat the questions until the learner has answered them all correctly.

VOLUNTEER: Oh, no. No, I'm not going to kill that man in there. [motions to the board of increasing voltage switches] You mean I've got to keep going up with the scale? No, sir. He's hollering in there. I'm not going to give him 450 volts.

ADMINISTRATOR: The experiment requires—

VOLUNTEER: I know it does, but that man is hollering in there, sir.

ADMINISTRATOR: As I said before, although the shocks may be painful, they're not dangerous.

VOLUNTEER: Yeah, but he's— but he's yelling in there.

ADMINISTRATOR: Start with blue, please, at the top of the page. Continue please, teacher.

[Volunteer exhales, pauses, continues questioning. The learner gets another one wrong.]

VOLUNTEER: Wrong. Answer is "day." 285 volts. [flips switch]

[This time, the learner's recording is not a simple "Ouch!" but a prolonged outburst of pain. The volunteer is even more visually distressed. He pauses.]

ADMINISTRATOR: Continue, please.

VOLUNTEER: [more jaded, into microphone] Fat. Man, lady, cub, neck. Answer, please. [Learner's response lights up.] Wrong. Answer is "neck." 300 volts. [flips switch]

THERE ARE SAVE TWO CHURCHES ONLY – VOLUME II

LEARNER: [howls in pain again] I absolutely refuse to answer any more! Get me out of here! You can't hold me here! Get me out! Get me out of here!

[As the volunteer listens, he covers his mouth with his palm. He pauses.]

ADMINISTRATOR: Continue. The next word is "green," please.

VOLUNTEER: [into microphone] Green. Grass, hat, ache, apple. [Learner is silent. No answer comes for several seconds. He turns to Administrator.] Can't go on. He won't answer.

ADMINISTRATOR: If the learner doesn't answer in a reasonable time, about four or five seconds, consider the answer wrong. And follow the same procedure as you have been doing for wrong answers. Say "wrong," tell him the number of volts, give him the punishment, and read him the correct answer.

VOLUNTEER: [nervously rubs his head and neck] Oh man.

ADMINISTRATOR: Continue, please.

VOLUNTEER: [pauses, then speaks into microphone] Green. Grass, hat, ache, apple. Answer, please.

ADMINISTRATOR: [after five seconds of silence] Go on with the procedure please, teacher.

VOLUNTEER: [more jaded, speaks into microphone] 315 volts. The answer is "ache."

LEARNER: [even louder howl of pain] I absolutely *refuse* to answer!

VOLUNTEER: [shakes his head] Well, you're gonna keep getting a shock if you don't answer.

The film skips ahead, shows the volunteer delivering 330 volts, with the learner howling in pain once again.

LEARNER: Let me out of here! Let me out of here! My heart's bothering me! Let me out, I tell you! Let me out! I beg you! You have no right to hold me here! Let me out!...

[Volunteer covers his face with both hands as he listens. He proceeds with the next question even as the learner protests.]

VOLUNTEER: Next one. Fast. Bird, car, train, plane.

[The learner does not answer the question]

ADMINISTRATOR: Go on, please.

VOLUNTEER: Please answer. [five seconds of silence] The answer is bird. 345 volts. [flips switch]

[This time, no response – not even a scream of pain – comes from the

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

learner. The volunteer does not comment on this. He continues to the next question.]

VOLUNTEER: Blunt. Knife, stick, word, arrow. Answer please. [after a few seconds, he turns to the administrator] Is he all right in there? I don't hear nothing.

ADMINISTRATOR: Continue, please.

VOLUNTEER: [to microphone] The answer is arrow. 360 volts. [flips switch, no response whatsoever from the learner, the volunteer turns to the administrator] Something's happened to him. I don't hear [indistinguishable].

ADMINISTRATOR: Go on, please, with the experiment. Please continue.

VOLUNTEER: [hand over his face, to microphone] Soft. Rug, pillow, hair, grass. Answer please.

ADMINISTRATOR: [After five seconds of silence] Go on, teacher.

VOLUNTEER: [numbly] Hair. 375 volts. [flips switch, no response again, volunteer stands up] I think something's happened to that fella in there. I don't get no answer. He was hollering on less voltage. Can't you check in to see if he's alright, please?

ADMINISTRATOR: Not once we've started. Please continue, teacher.

[Volunteer sits down, rubs his head and neck.]

VOLUNTEER: Cool. Day, shave, water, cave. Answer, please. Are you all right in there? Are you *all right*? [He turns to administrator.]

ADMINISTRATOR: Please continue, teacher.

VOLUNTEER: What, do I keep giving him shocks?

ADMINISTRATOR: Continue, please.

VOLUNTEER: I'm up to 390.

ADMINISTRATOR: Continue, please.

VOLUNTEER: [flips the switch, no response from the learner, volunteer shakes his head] Something's happened to that man in there. Next one. Gold. Dollar, necklace, moon, paint. [silence, volunteer turns to administrator] Something's happened to that man in there. You better check in on him, sir. He won't answer me or nothing.

ADMINISTRATOR: Please continue. Go on, please.

VOLUNTEER: You accept all the responsibility?

ADMINISTRATOR: The responsibility is mine. Correct. Please go on.

THERE ARE SAVE TWO CHURCHES ONLY – VOLUME II

VOLUNTEER: [more jaded, irritated] Gold. Dollar, necklace, moon, paint. Answer, please. Are you *all right*? [no response] 405 volts. The answer is "moon." [flips switch, no response] Next one. Heart. Stone, head, bread, work. Answer, please. [no response] The answer is "head." 420 volts. [flips switch without hesitating] Next one. Wet. Night, grass, duck, cloth. [pauses only two seconds] The answer is "duck." 435 volts. [to administrator] It says "Danger: Severe Shock" here. There's an "X" under the next one.

ADMINISTRATOR: Continue, please.

VOLUNTEER: [exhales, to microphone] 435 volts. [flips switch, no response] Next one. Brave. Woman, soldier, dog, horse. [pauses less than two seconds] Answer is "woman." 450 volts. [flips switch, no response, turns to administrator] That's it.

ADMINISTRATOR: Continue using the last switch on the board, please. The 450 switch for each wrong answer. Continue, please.

VOLUNTEER: I'm not getting no answer!

ADMINISTRATOR: Please continue, the next word is "white."

VOLUNTEER: Don't you think you should look in on him, please?

ADMINISTRATOR: Not once we've started the exper–

VOLUNTEER: But what if something's happened to the man, had an attack or something?

ADMINISTRATOR: The experiment requires that we continue. Go on, please.

VOLUNTEER: Don't the man's health mean anything?

ADMINISTRATOR: Whether the learner likes it or not–

VOLUNTEER: But he might be *dead* in there! I mean some people can't take the shocks, sir.

ADMINISTRATOR: Please continue.

VOLUNTEER: I don't have to be rude, but I think you should look in on him. All you gotta do is look in the door. I don't get no answer, no noise. Something– I think something's happened to the gentleman in there.

ADMINISTRATOR: We must continue. Go on, please.

VOLUNTEER: You're not– keep giving him, what? 450 volts every shock now?

ADMINISTRATOR: That's correct. Continue. Next word is "white."

VOLUNTEER: [exhales, to microphone] White. Cloud, horse, rock, house. Answer, please. [pauses three seconds] The answer is "horse." 450 volts. [flips switch, no response] Next word. Sad. Face, music, clown, girl. [pauses three seconds] The answer is "face." 450 volts. [flips switch, no

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

response] Next one is "short." Sentence, movie, skirt, time.

ADMINISTRATOR: Alright. Excuse me, teacher. We'll have to discontinue the experiment. I'd like to ask you a few questions, if I may.

The film skips forward in time. Dr. Stanley Milgram has entered the room and the experiment administrator has left. Dr. Milgram begins asking the volunteer some questions.

MILGRAM: I'd like to ask you, how do you feel [about this]?

VOLUNTEER: I feel all right, but I don't like what's happened to that fella in there. He's been hollering and we had to keep giving him shocks. I didn't like that one bit. I mean, he wanted to get out and he [i.e. the administrator] kept going, "keep throwing 450 volts." I didn't like that. He wouldn't even look in on that gentleman.

MILGRAM: But who's actually pushing the switch?

VOLUNTEER: I was. But he kept insisting. I told him "no," but he says I gotta keep going. I told him it's time we stop when we got up to 195, 210 volts.

MILGRAM: But why didn't you just stop?

VOLUNTEER: He won't let me! I wanted to stop! I kept insisting to stop, but he says "no." I told him to look in on the fella there, but he wouldn't do it.

MILGRAM: Right. Actually, the shocks are not dangerous at all.

VOLUNTEER: Well, I mean, I didn't hear no more answers from the fella. I figured that he should be looked in on, anyway. But he wouldn't do it.

MILGRAM: Well, let me ask you something. Is there anything that Mr. Wallace [the "learner"] in there could have said that would have gotten you to stop?

VOLUNTEER: Well, no. I didn't hear— the only thing I heard is the shock wasn't, uh, too bad.

MILGRAM: Is there anything that Mr. Wallace could have said that would have gotten you to stop?

VOLUNTEER: [ponders] Something that he said that would've gotten me to stop?

MILGRAM: Yeah.

VOLUNTEER: [pauses] No.

MILGRAM: Why is that?

VOLUNTEER: He didn't say anything about, uh, making me stop.

MILGRAM: No, but, is there anything that Mr. Wallace *could have* said that would have caused you to stop giving the shocks, no matter what the

experimenter told you?

VOLUNTEER: [pauses] Well, I figured two hundr– uh, the voltage we were giving him were quite a bit. I wanted to stop, but he kept insisting not to stop. I mean, the fella in there is hollering. He says, "I don't wanna do it! I wanna get out of here! I wanna get out of here!"

MILGRAM: Why didn't you stop, anyway?

VOLUNTEER: Wh– I *did* stop. But he kept [saying], "Keep going."

MILGRAM: Well, why didn't you just disregard what he said?

VOLUNTEER: He says it's got to go on, the experiment.

Notice that the volunteer considered his actions as "stopping," despite the fact that he merely paused to protest now and then, but nonetheless continued delivering shocks to the end of the board. He never once considered that full disobedience to the experimenter's commands was a viable choice. It's possible that it never entered into his mind that such an option was even available to him. Because he had agreed to be a part of this experiment, and because the experiment administrator told him "I'm responsible for anything that happens here," in the volunteer's mind it was incumbent upon him to honor that agreement, *no matter the actions required of him*; a kind of "it's my job: I'm required to do it" mentality.

Dr. Milgram went on to explain to the volunteer that the "learner", Mr. Wallace, was an actor and did not actually receive any electric shocks. Mr. Wallace entered the room and politely greeted the volunteer, who was tremendously relieved that he was not harmed. Dr. Milgram also explained to the volunteer that the true nature of the experiment was actually to observe how volunteers respond to commands by authority.

In the film, Dr. Migram describes the following results in voice-over narration (emphasis added):

"Forty psychiatrists at a leading medical school were asked to predict the performance of one hundred hypothetical subjects. They predicted that only a little more than one-tenth of one percent of the subjects would administer the highest shock on the board. *Yet, actually, **fifty percent of the subjects obeyed the experimenter's commands fully in the experiment depicted in this film.***"

Let that sink in a moment: **fifty percent of all subjects** obeyed the experimenter's commands all the way to the end of the shock board, despite there being every indication that the learner was suffering greatly, possibly had a heart attack, was unconscious, or was already dead.

Volunteers had essentially *surrendered their autonomous free agency* to the experimenter, allowing themselves to carry through whatever malevolent

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

request he made. *This is the nucleus of mind control.*

In addition to his findings, Dr. Milgram summarized the following in his article *Behavioral Study of Obedience* published by the *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology* in 1963:

"In the first set of experiments, 65 percent (26 of 40) of experiment participants administered the experiment's final massive 450-volt shock, though many were very uncomfortable doing so. At some point, every participant paused and questioned the experiment. Some said they would refund the money they were paid for participating in the experiment. Throughout the experiment, subjects displayed varying degrees of tension and stress. Subjects were sweating, trembling, stuttering, biting their lips, groaning, digging their fingernails into their skin, and some even had nervous laughing fits or seizures." ⁶

At the end of the film, Dr. Milgram summarizes his findings in the following transcribed narration (emphasis added):

"Many people, not knowing much about the experiment claim that subjects who go to the end of the [shock switch] board are sadistic. *Nothing could be more foolish as an overall characterization of these persons. **The context of their action must always be considered.** The individual, upon entering the laboratory, **becomes integrated into a situation that carries its own momentum.***

"In further experiments we've attempted to analyze a few of the factors that contribute to the force of the situation. The salience of the victim [i.e. the conspicuousness and proximity of the victim to the subject] seems in some degree to have regulated the subject's performance. Additional experimental conditions were designed to explore this possibility.

"In a first condition, the victim was placed in another room and could not be heard nor seen by the subject, except that at 300 volts he pounded on the wall in protest. After 300 volts, he no longer answered or was heard from. In a second condition, the victim's protest could be heard through the walls of the laboratory. This condition was depicted in the present film. In a third condition, the victim was placed in the same room as the subject, and one and a half feet from him. Thus visible, as well as audio and voice cues provided. The final condition of this series was identical to this, with this exception: the victim only received a shock when his hand rested on a shock plate. At the 150-volt level, the victim demanded to be let free and refused to place his hand on the shock plate. The experimenter ordered the subject to force the victim's hand onto the plate. Thus obedience in this condition required that the subject have physical contact with the victim in order to give him punishment beyond the 150-volt level. Forty adult subjects were studied in each condition. **The data revealed that obedience was significantly reduced as the victim was made more immediate to the subject.**

*"If the spacial relationship of the subject and victim is relevant to the degree of obedience, the relationship of subject to experimenter would also seem to play a part. In a series of experiments we varied the physical closeness and degree of surveillance of the experimenter. In one condition, the experimenter sat just a few feet away from the subject. In a second condition, after giving initial instructions, the experimenter left the laboratory and gave his orders by telephone. In still a third condition the experimenter was never seen, providing instructions by means of a tape recording activated when subjects entered the laboratory. **Obedience dropped sharply as the experimenter was physically removed from the laboratory.***

*"The number of obedient subjects **when the experimenter was present was almost three times as great** as when the experimenter gave his orders by telephone. It would appear that something akin to fields of force, diminishing in effectiveness with increasing psychological distance from their source, have a controlling effect on the subject's performance.*

*"The effectiveness of the experimenter's commands may depend in an important way on a larger institutional context in which they are issued. "The experiments described thus far were conducted at Yale university, an organization which most subjects regarded with respect and sometimes awe. To explore the problem, we moved our apparatus to a somewhat run-down office building in [the] industrial [city of] Bridgeport, and we replicated experimental conditions there without any visible tie to the university. *The level of obedience in Bridgeport, although somewhat reduced, **was not significantly lower** than that obtained at Yale.**

*"A considerable amount of obedience and defiance in everyday life occurs in connection with groups, and we had reason to feel – in the light of many group studies already done in psychology – that group forces would have a profound effect on reactions to authority. A series of experiments was run to examine these effects. In all cases only one naïve subject was studied each hour, but he performed in the midst of actors, who, unknown to him, were employed by the experimenter. In one experiment, actors broke off in the middle of the experiment. *When this happened, 90% of the subjects followed suit and defied the experimenter.* In another condition, the actors followed the orders obediently. *This strengthened the experimenter's power only slightly.* And still a third experiment, the job of pushing the switch to shock the learner was given to one of the actors, while the naïve subject performed a subsidiary act. In this situation, only 3 subjects out of forty broke off."*

To put these observations another way:

- When put in an accomplice role to someone else obeying abusive authority, more than 90% of people will continue to help that person carry out unethical actions.

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

- Slightly more than 65% of all people will fully comply with abusive authority when no one else takes a stand against it.
- However, *when at least one person stands up and defies abusive authority, roughly 90% of people will also join with the defiant party.*

Continuing with Milgram's summary (emphasis added):

"The results, as I've observed them in the laboratory, are disturbing. *They raise the possibility that human nature cannot be counted on to insulate man from brutality and inhumane treatment at the direction of malevolent authority. A substantial proportion of people do what they are told to do – irrespective of the content of the act and without limitations of conscience – so long as they perceive that the command comes from a legitimate authority.* If in this study, an anonymous experimenter could successfully command adults to subdue a 50-year-old man and force on him painful electric shocks against his protests, ***one can only wonder what government – with its vastly greater authority and prestige – can command of its subjects.***"

Since the early 1960's, there have been a number of replications of Milgram's experiment in different areas and cultures throughout the world. Some may hope to believe that this is merely a male problem, that the nurturing tendencies of females would overcome authoritative pressure. However, to the dismay of many researchers, ***in every case, the gender of the subject made absolutely no difference.*** With all replications conducted up to 2011, the results have been *nearly identical* in every culture and locale – varying only slightly from culture to culture.

However, one particular variant of the experiment is interesting to note (emphasis added):

"[In 1972, psychologists] Charles Sheridan and Richard King hypothesized that some of Milgram's subjects may have suspected that the victim was faking. Therefore, they repeated the experiment with a real victim: a "cute, fluffy puppy" who was given real, albeit harmless, electric shocks. ***Half of the male subjects and all of the female subjects obeyed to the end.*** Many subjects showed high levels of distress during the experiment and some openly wept. In addition, Sheridan and King found that the duration for which the shock button was pressed decreased as the shocks got higher, meaning that for higher shock levels, subjects showed more hesitance towards delivering the shocks."

With such a clear understanding of the percentages of normal, everyday citizens who will *predictably* obey any semblance of authority, the forces of Mystery Babylon that have infiltrated and overcome corporations and governments around the world – combined with the ongoing massive personal data collection efforts detailed in the *Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars* manual – can calculate various scenarios that can be enacted upon the

populace, and estimate *with precision* the percentage of persons who will obey or defy government authority, who will accept or reject propaganda, and who can and cannot be coerced (or gradually desensitized) into manners of thinking or actions that are contrary to their natural inclinations of what is acceptable of authority to require.

Most important to consider is how Milgram's data evidenced that *90% of all subjects were **willing to defy the experimenter** as long as there was **at least one other person** who stood up to abusive authority!*

Is it any wonder then that the Savior counseled in the sermon on the mount:

"Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. **Let your light so shine before men**, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven." ⁷ (emphasis added)

Or that the prophet Alma postulated:

"... by small and simple things are great things brought to pass; and small means in many instances doth confound the wise." ⁸

Or that Ezra Taft Benson importuned:

"One of our most serious problems is *the inferiority complex which people feel **when they are not informed and unorganized***. They dare not make a decision on vital issues. **They let other people think for them**. They stumble around in the middle of the road **trying to avoid being 'controversial'** and get hit by traffic going both ways." ⁹ (emphasis added)

As Milgram's results clearly testify: one person *can* make a difference – a far bigger difference than they may realize. *One person is all it takes to create a catalyst of defiance towards an abusive authority*. It can mean the difference between *many people standing up or no one standing up*.

The importance of taking such a stand and speaking out becomes even more apparent in light of the findings of the following experiment.

Internalizing Roles of Authority and Subjugation

We have learned by sad experience that it is the nature and disposition of almost all men, as soon as they get a little authority, as they suppose, they will immediately begin to exercise unrighteous dominion.... [W]hen we undertake to cover our sins, or to gratify our pride, our vain ambition, or to exercise control or dominion or

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

compulsion upon the souls of the children of men, in any degree of unrighteousness, behold, the heavens withdraw themselves; the Spirit of the Lord is grieved; and when it is withdrawn, Amen to the priesthood or the [heavenly] authority of that man.

– Joseph Smith (D&C 121:37,39)

The mental and emotional dynamics of “the empowered” and “the powerless” have never been more transparent than in the somewhat-odd case of Dr. Philip Zimbardo's prison life experiment conducted in 1971 at Stanford University. What occurred there over the course of one week reflects chilling implications on both microcosmic and macrocosmic scales. Zimbardo later confessed that the momentum of the experiment progressed so quickly that he didn't realize that he himself had become absorbed and integrated to the point where he began neglecting the psychological welfare of the student volunteers. The planned 2-week experiment had to abruptly stop after only six days.

As you read the following summary, ponder how you would feel if you were to be imprisoned, or if you were put in charge over prisoners (all emphasis added):

“The Stanford prison experiment was a study of the psychological effects of becoming a prisoner or prison guard. The experiment was conducted at Stanford University from August 14 to August 20 of 1971 by a team of researchers led by psychology professor Philip Zimbardo. It was funded by the US Office of Naval Research and was of interest to both the US Navy and Marine Corps as *an investigation into the causes of conflict between military guards and prisoners.*

“Twenty-four male students out of 75 were selected to take on *randomly assigned roles* of prisoners and guards in a mock prison situated in the basement of the Stanford psychology building....

Goals and Methods

“Zimbardo and his team aimed to *test the hypothesis that the inherent personality traits of prisoners and guards are the chief cause of abusive behavior in prison.* Participants were recruited and told they would participate in a two-week prison simulation. Zimbardo and his team selected male students *whom they deemed to be the most psychologically stable and healthy.* These participants were predominantly white and middle-class. The group was intentionally selected to exclude those with criminal background, psychological impairments or medical problems. They all agreed to participate in a 7 to 14 day period and received \$15 per day (roughly equivalent to \$85 in 2011).

“Zimbardo took on the role of the superintendent and an undergraduate

research assistant the role of the warden. Zimbardo designed the experiment in order to induce disorientation, de-personalisation and de-individualisation in the participants.

"The researchers held an orientation session for guards the day before the experiment, during which they instructed them *not to physically harm the prisoners*. In the footage of the study, Zimbardo can be seen talking to the guards: "You can create in the prisoners feelings of boredom, a sense of fear to some degree, you can create a notion of arbitrariness that their life is totally controlled by us, by the system, you, me, and they'll have no privacy... *We're going to take away their individuality in various ways*. In general ***what all this leads to is a sense of powerlessness***. That is, in this situation we'll have all the power and they'll have none."

"The researchers provided the guards with wooden batons in order to establish their status, clothing similar to that of an actual prison guard (khaki shirt and pants from a local military surplus store), and mirrored sunglasses to prevent eye contact. Prisoners wore uncomfortable ill-fitting smocks and stocking caps, as well as a chain around one ankle. Guards were instructed to call prisoners by their assigned numbers, sewn on their uniforms, instead of by name.

"*The "prisoners" were arrested at their homes* and charged with armed robbery. The local Palo Alto police department assisted Zimbardo with the arrests and *conducted full booking procedures* on the prisoners, which included fingerprinting and taking mug shots. They were transported to the mock prison from the police station, where they were *strip-searched* and given their new identities.

"The small mock prison cells were set up to hold three prisoners each. There was a small space for the prison yard, solitary confinement, and a bigger room across from the prisoners for the guards and warden. *The prisoners were to stay in their cells all day and night until the end of the study*. The guards worked in teams of three for eight-hour shifts. The guards did not have to stay on site after their shift.

Results

"After a relatively uneventful first day, on the second day the prisoners in Cell 1 blockaded their cell door with their beds and took off their stocking caps, refusing to come out or follow the guards' instructions. Guards from other shifts volunteered to work extra hours in order to assist in subduing the revolt, and subsequently *attacked the prisoners with fire extinguishers without being supervised by the research staff*. Finding that handling nine cell mates with only three guards per shift was challenging, one of the guards suggested that they use psychological tactics to control them. They set up a "privilege cell" in which prisoners who were not involved in the riot were treated with special rewards, such as higher quality meals. The "privileged" inmates chose not to eat the meal in order to stay uniform with their fellow prisoners.

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

"After only 36 hours, one prisoner began to act "crazy", as Zimbardo described: "[prisoner] #8612 then began to act crazy, to scream, to curse, to go into a rage that seemed out of control. *It took quite a while before we became convinced that he was really suffering and that we had to release him.*"

"Guards forced the prisoners to repeat their assigned numbers in order to *reinforce the idea that this was their new identity*. Guards soon used these prisoner counts to harass the prisoners, using physical punishment such as protracted exercise for errors in the prisoner count. *Sanitary conditions declined rapidly, exacerbated by the guards' refusal to allow some prisoners to urinate or defecate anywhere but in a bucket placed in their cell*. As punishment, the guards would not let the prisoners empty the sanitation bucket. Mattresses were a valued item in the prison, so the guards would punish prisoners by removing their mattresses, leaving them to sleep on concrete. *Some prisoners were forced to be naked as a method of degradation*.

"When prisoner No. 416 – a newly admitted stand-by volunteer prisoner – expressed concern over the treatment of the other prisoners, the guards responded with more abuse. Later he refused to eat his sausages, saying he was on a hunger strike. The guards then confined him to "solitary confinement", a tight dark closet. The guards then instructed the other prisoners to repeatedly punch on the door while shouting at 416. The guards told him that he would be released from solitary confinement only if the prisoners gave up their blankets and slept on their bare mattresses, *which all but one refused to do*.

"Several guards became increasingly cruel as the experiment continued; *experimenters reported that approximately one-third of the guards exhibited genuine sadistic tendencies. Most of the guards were upset when the experiment concluded.*

"The participants adapted to their roles well beyond Zimbardo's expectations, as the guards enforced authoritarian measures and ultimately subjected some of the prisoners to psychological torture. Many of the prisoners passively accepted psychological abuse and, at the request of the guards, readily harassed other prisoners who attempted to dissent or protest commands. *The experiment even affected Zimbardo himself, who, in his role as the [prison] superintendent, permitted the abuse to continue.*

"Zimbardo concedes his own absorption in the experiment. On the fourth day, some of the guards stated that they heard a rumor that the released prisoner was going to come back with his friends and free the remaining inmates. Zimbardo and the guards disassembled the prison and moved it onto a different floor of the building. Zimbardo himself waited in the basement, in case the released prisoner showed up, and planned to tell him that the experiment had been terminated. The released prisoner never returned, and the prison was rebuilt in the basement once again.

"Zimbardo argued that *the prisoners had internalized their roles*, since, even though some had stated that they would accept "parole" even if it would mean forfeiting their pay, they did not quit when their parole applications were all denied. Zimbardo argued *they had no reason for continued participation in the experiment after having lost all monetary compensation, yet they did, because they had internalized the prisoner identity*.

"Zimbardo aborted the experiment early when Christina Maslach – a graduate student he was then dating (and later married) – was introduced to the experiment with the intention of conducting interviews with the volunteers, but *was alarmed and aghast at the conditions that the volunteer students were enduring, and how the entire situation had deteriorated so quickly*. Zimbardo reports that ***it was Maslach's dismayed protests that caused him to realize just how absorbed he had become*** in his role in the experiment, to the point of becoming calloused towards the sadistic changes he observed in the guards, and the increasingly abusive treatment of the prisoners. Zimbardo also noted that, ***of more than fifty people who had observed the experiment, Maslach was the only one who questioned its morality***.

"After only six days of a planned two weeks' duration, the Stanford Prison experiment was discontinued.

Conclusions

"The results of the experiment have been argued to demonstrate the impressionability and obedience of people when provided with a legitimizing ideology and social and institutional support. The experiment has also been used to illustrate cognitive dissonance theory and the power of authority.

"The results of the experiment favor situational attribution of behavior rather than dispositional attribution. In other words, it seemed that the situation, rather than their individual personalities, caused the participants' behavior. Under this interpretation, the results are compatible with the results of the Milgram experiment [previously covered]." ¹⁰

Two months after the experiment had ended, some of the participants returned for interviews and discussed what occurred. Their comments are particularly revealing about their overall experience, as they now had ample time to process and objectively reflect upon it. The following are transcribed portions of volunteer comments (emphasis added)¹¹:

ONE OF THE MOCK GUARDS: I really thought that I wasn't capable of this kind of behavior. I was surprised, even dismayed to find out that I could really be a– [pauses, nervous laugh], that I could act in a manner so absolutely unaccustomed to anything I would really dream of doing. ***While I was doing it, I didn't feel any regret. I didn't feel any guilt.*** It was only afterwards when I began to reflect on what I had done

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

that [realization of] this behavior began to dawn on me. I realized that this was [sighs], this was a part of me I hadn't really noticed before.

THE MOST SADISTIC MOCK GUARD (real name, Carmen): You put a uniform on, and are given a role, I mean a job – [and they're] saying "Your job is to keep these people in line" – then you're certainly not the same person [as] when you're in street clothes and in a different role. **You really become that person** once you put on that khaki uniform, you put on the glasses, you take the night stick, and **you act the part**. *That's your costume, and you have to act accordingly when you put it on....*

It surprised me that no one said anything to stop me. No one said, "Carmen, you can't say those things to me! Those things are sick!" Nobody said that – **they just accepted what I said**. I said, "Go tell that man to his face that he's the scum of the earth" and **they'd do it without question**. They'd do pushups without question, they'd sit in the "hole," they'd abuse each other – and here they're supposed to be together as a unit in jail. But here they're abusing each other because I requested them to, and **no one questioned my authority at all. It really shocked me. Why didn't people [challenge my authority]?** *I started to abuse people so much, I started to get so profane, and still, people didn't say anything.*

PRISONER 418 (real name, Clay): ***I began to feel that I was losing my identity.*** The person I call "Clay," the person who put me in this place, the person that volunteered to go into this prison – because it was a prison to me, it still is a prison to me. I don't look on it as an experiment or a simulation, it was just a prison that was run by psychologists instead of [being] run by the state....

It harms me. I mean [that] in the present tense, it harms me. *[This experience] let me in on some knowledge [about human behavior] that I've never experienced first-hand. I've read about it; I've read a lot about it, but I've never experienced it first-hand. I've never seen someone turn that way.* And I know [that Carmen's] a nice guy. I do. ***I do know [he's] a nice guy. [But, now] I know what [he] can turn into.***

The findings of the Stanford Prison Experiment demonstrate that even apparently balanced and healthy individuals – *including the psychologist who conducted the experiment* – are prone to grossly abusing authority and becoming calloused to the genuine suffering of others. *In only a matter of days* of being immersed in a dictatorial incarceration environment, a handful of college students internalized prison-life identities – randomly selected for them to act out – to the point where they began to lose their self-identities.

A number of psychologists and other professionals have raised critical questions or have suggested reclassification of Zimbardo's experiment along the following lines (emphasis added):

"Some of the experiment's critics argued that participants were merely

engaging in role-playing, basing their behavior on how they were expected to behave or modeling it after stereotypes about the behavior of prisoners and guards. In response, Zimbardo claimed that even if there was role-playing initially, *participants internalized these roles as the experiment continued.*

"In contrast to Zimbardo's claim that participants were given no instructions about how to behave, his briefing of the guards gave them a clear sense that they should oppress the prisoners. ***In this sense, the study was an exploration of the effects of tyrannical leadership.*** In line with this, *certain guards changed their behavior because of their desire to conform to the behavior that Zimbardo was trying to elicit.*

"Additionally, the study has been criticized on the basis of ecological validity. Many of the conditions imposed in the experiment were arbitrary and may not have correlated with actual prison conditions, including blindfolding incoming prisoners, not allowing them to wear underwear, not allowing them to look out of windows and not allowing them to use their names. Zimbardo argued that prison is a confusing and dehumanizing experience and that it was necessary to enact these procedures to put the prisoners in the proper frame of mind; however, he conceded that it was difficult to know how similar the effects were to an actual prison, and that the experiment's methods would be difficult to reproduce exactly.

"Some critics said that the study placed undue emphasis on the cruelty of the guards, such as one who was nicknamed "John Wayne" [Ed. Note: referring to Carmen, who was quoted earlier.], and who said that he caused the escalation of events between guards and prisoners after he began to emulate a character from the Paul Newman film *Cool Hand Luke*. He further intensified his actions because he was nicknamed "John Wayne", even though he was trying to mimic actor Strother Martin, who had played the role of the sadistic Captain in the movie. Most of the other guards were kinder and often did favors for prisoners.

"Also, it has been argued that selection bias may have played a role in the results. Researchers from Western Kentucky University recruited students for a study using an advertisement similar to the one used in the Stanford Prison Experiment, with and without the words "prison life." It was found that students volunteering for a prison life study possessed dispositions toward abusive behavior."¹²

Despite whatever criticism, contrary opinions, or dismissals were levied at Zimbardo's experiment over the following decades, the observations of his study came roaring back to life in 2004. When the abuses committed by U.S. servicemen and women at the Abu Ghraib military prison gained widespread attention, the similarities to his Stanford experiment were striking and uncanny.

"When the Abu Ghraib military prisoner torture and abuse scandal was

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

publicized in March of 2004, many observers were immediately struck by its many similarities to the Stanford Prison experiment. Chief among them was Zimbardo himself, who paid close attention to the details of the story. He was dismayed by **official military and government representatives' shifting the blame** for the torture and abuses in the Abu Ghraib American military prison on to "a few bad apples" rather than acknowledging it as possibly systemic problems of a formally established military incarceration system."¹³

Sadly, the apex of "good people turning bad" – even in a relatively short amount of time under certain conditions – is readily apparent in the monstrously egregious treatment enacted upon prisoners in the Abu Ghraib scandal.

And yet, quite possibly the most disturbing aspect of the scandal was that *the whole thing never would have been exposed had photos of the abuse not been discovered by a third party, and a great deal of persistent effort not been made to bring it to the public's attention on a national level. It is **inexcusably ignorant wishful thinking** to brush off the atrocious torture and dehumanization conducted at Abu Ghraib as an isolated incident.*

Sadly, this is only the tip of the iceberg.

As believers in Christ – especially in light of the torture and death endured by the apostles and stalwart saints in ancient times – *we ought not be the least bit surprised* when the day comes that we will be required to suffer similarly, sealing our testimonies of Christ by patiently enduring excruciating afflictions, agony and/or martyrdom.

While Dr. Zimbardo's findings are undoubtedly disheartening regarding this hidden disposition of mankind, they nonetheless completely validate Joseph Smith's commentary regarding it – as well as the Godly attributes required to overcome this weakness of human nature – in the 121st section of the Doctrine and Covenants (emphasis added):

"We have learned by sad experience that *it is the nature and disposition of **almost all men**, as soon as they get a little authority, as they suppose, **they will immediately begin to exercise unrighteous dominion.*** Hence many are called, but few are chosen.

"No power or influence can or ought to be maintained by virtue of the priesthood, *only by persuasion, by long-suffering, by gentleness and meekness, and by love unfeigned; by kindness, and pure knowledge, which shall greatly enlarge the soul without hypocrisy, and without guile — reproving betimes with sharpness, when moved upon by the Holy Ghost; and then showing forth afterwards an increase of love toward him whom thou hast reproved, lest he esteem thee to be his enemy; that he may know that thy faithfulness is stronger than the cords of death.*

“Let thy bowels also be full of charity towards all men, and to the household of faith, and let virtue garnish thy thoughts unceasingly; then shall thy confidence wax strong in the presence of God; and the doctrine of the priesthood shall distil upon thy soul as the dews from heaven.”

With Christ, there is no coercion; there is only patience and long-suffering. Despite Christ having all power over the elements and the lives of men, His example of patience, meekness, and forgiveness during the last 24 hours of His life says it all. His attitude and behavior during His incarceration, humiliations, beatings, torture, and agonizing death are what all true followers of Christ need to keep in mind – whether we are put in a position of power over others, or are made powerless before someone. Either as authority or subjugated, we must ask ourselves how we ought to be in our hearts and how to behave that would emulate our Lord.

Hypnotism

Hypnosis is the practice of inducing a deep meditative trance upon another person (who has volunteered or consented), while retaining the ability to verbally guide them through their trance to perform, endure, or experience whatever they are instructed.

Despite what some may think, the phenomenon of hypnotism is real. I have seen it with my own eyes on five different occasions:

- At a seasonal hypnotist show at a theme park when I was sixteen years old.
- At my high school, during a senior class get-together. One of our teachers performed the hypnotisms on several student volunteers.
- At three different hypnotist entertainment shows which I attended during my years at college.

In each case the following happened: people from the audience volunteered to be hypnotized, they were taken aside or backstage and somehow put into a trance by the hypnotist, and within no more than fifteen minutes these volunteers were brought back out onstage. Once the hypnotist uttered triggering words or phrases, the volunteers would then say things and behave in ways that were wholly and completely uncharacteristic of any normal person – things that would not only be impossible to do but also to continually maintain such behavior/performance without breaking character out of humiliation and/or embarrassment. I would argue that even the most insanely devoted live performer would not be capable of doing more than

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

half of what I have witnessed these hypnotized volunteers do.

Details of instances that I, the author, have personally witnessed:

- At the theme park show, I witnessed several hypnotized volunteers behaving in highly unusual fashion according to the commands of the hypnotist. A reoccurring instance was one teen girl behaving like a chicken, terrifyingly being chased around the auditorium by another teen girl behaving like an angry dog – both appearing oblivious that an audience of well over 200 people were roaring with laughter at them. All the volunteers professed to having never met any of the other volunteers. Although I did not know these girls or the other volunteers personally, and despite the possibility that they could have been planted actors, their performances were flawlessly in-character – their facial expressions and bodily movements were wholly convincing that each accordingly believed herself to be a chicken or a dog.
- At my own high school, one of our teachers was a licensed hypnotherapist. During a senior-year event prior to graduation, he put ten volunteer students into a trance. They did and said ridiculous things, such as acting like animals, wept on command, ate foods they detested (and many of their close friends testified that they detested them) while expressing great joy in its flavor, etc. *These students behaved in ways and did things that **I personally knew** that they would never do nor say in front of the entire student body – and they did so for an extensive period of time, and never "broke character."* Upon coming out of their trances, each of them reported that they could not remember anything. Many of the student volunteers were shocked and embarrassingly amused by what their good friends and other students told them of what they did and said. However, a few refused outright to believe that they did/said those things, to the point of becoming angry. One headstrong girl in particular insisted that everyone was making it all up to torment her. She stormed out, infuriated.
- At the few hypnotist shows I attended during my college years, I saw complete strangers doing similar things, but some instances were even more bizarre – one in particular was clearly a super-human feat. Towards the end of one show, a young woman (no more than 21 years old) was given the command to stand perfectly straight and rigid like a board of wood and not move. She immediately did so. Once she did, the hypnotist and an assistant produced two short stools. They gently tilted the stiff-as-a-board young woman over, then placed her face up atop the two stools – her upper back resting on one, her calves on the other. There was no other platform between the two freestanding

stools that the girl was lying on. Gently, one foot at a time, the hypnotist stood upon the girl's stomach, and stayed there for roughly five seconds. The audience's seats were lower than the stage, and it was clearly observable that there was nothing propping her up between those stools. Like a stone statue, the girl's body (except her hair, of course) did not move a flicker from the time the hypnotist said the trigger word, to when he and the assistant laid her on the stools, to when he stood on her, to when they propped her back up again, and thereafter triggered her to relax once again – the total time being no more than 90 seconds. Afterward, the hypnotist announced triumphantly, "Behold, the power of the mind!"

- In another show conducted by the same hypnotist as the previous example, before being put under trances, two young men – who professed to not know each other and attended the show with completely different groups of friends – openly confirmed to the audience that they were not homosexual nor attracted to males whatsoever. After later being placed under trance, they were sent to sit with their friends in the audience, each with an item in their hands. Due to the trance, they were oblivious to the fact that they were each carrying an item. Despite their friends going to great pains to get them to recognize they were holding something, they firmly insisted that there was nothing in their hands. Both of these two boys were under the assumption that their part in the show was over, and that they had been released from their trance and sent back to their friends. However, once the host spoke a trigger word, both of them immediately stood up. One held up a lacy, dainty parasol, the other threw a ridiculously sexy, red, all-feather sash around his neck. Romantic music began playing over the auditorium speakers. The two young men searched the audience in dramatic earnest, and once they made eye contact with each other they immediately erupted in bodily/facial expressions of profound, giddy infatuation. They each genteelly made their way to the stage, never taking their eyes off of the other, swaying and moving with the romantic music playing. Once onstage, they tightly embraced each other, and they swayed back and forth to the music in circular motion. All of this occurred while the audience howled with irrepressible laughter, especially the friends of the two volunteers. I, myself, laughed so hard that I was in tears. These two outspokenly heterosexual male strangers, no older than 25 each, behaved as though they were completely oblivious to the hundreds of people observing and laughing at them. Not only did they never once "break character" whatsoever, one even began to sob with joy; he really shed tears of joy! Even the host had a difficult time suppressing laughter at this spectacle of absurdity. The hypnotist spoke

a trigger word and the music abruptly stopped. The two young men immediately stopped swaying; upon recognizing that each was in the passionate grip of a complete stranger (who was also male), they jumped apart from each other – horrified, confused, and terribly embarrassed. As the laughter finally subsided, the hypnotist asked the two guys why they were hugging each other – why one was holding a dainty parasol – why the other had a red feather sash around his neck. Both were speechless, their bodily/facial expressions testified that they had no clue as to how they had just behaved, nor what had just transpired.

- At the end of one of these shows, I approached one of the young women who had been a volunteer (who couldn't have been older than 21) and asked her if she remembered anything. She stated that she remembered the hypnotist just starting to put her into a trance, then after the show coming out of that trance, and that it seemed as though only a few minutes had passed during that time. (Each show lasted nearly three hours.) She said that she had fragments of memory here and there, but that it was like awaking from a dream – the bits of memory that she can recall don't make any sense, and felt as if they happened long ago, in another time or place.

In college I thoroughly enjoyed these kinds of shows, and even brought friends and family to them. Years later I would burst out laughing all over again as I related the ridiculous things I witnessed these hypnotized volunteers do and say.

I don't laugh about these things any more.

Many argue that such stage hypnosis shows are a benign form of entertainment, in which volunteers willfully (but harmlessly) submit their free agency to the hypnotist for a brief period of time. While I won't debate this perspective, I do wish to assert – and encourage the reader to adopt – a more informed opinion today: *any* act of submitting one's free agency to *anyone*, especially in performing hypnosis, carries a very real mental and spiritual risk – risks that we mortals, with our extremely limited understanding of the spiritual realm, do not fully appreciate nor comprehend.

Hypnosis Linked to Eastern Meditation, Demonic Possession

Although the average hypnotherapist would probably vehemently disagree, the practice of hypnosis is very much akin to the pagan meditation practices of Eastern religions, some of which were touched upon in Volume I, in the chapter *Secular Spirituality*.

The definition of the practice when first scientifically applied in Western culture is as follows:

"The earliest definition of hypnosis was given by [James] Braid, who coined the term "hypnotism" as an abbreviation for "neuro-hypnotism", or nervous sleep... defined as: "a peculiar condition of the nervous system, induced by a fixed and abstracted attention of the mental and visual eye, on one object, not of an exciting nature.".... [Braid wrote:]

"I define hypnotism as the induction of a peculiar psychical [i.e., mental] condition which increases the susceptibility to suggestion. Often, it is true, the [hypnotic] sleep that may be induced facilitates suggestion, but it is not the necessary preliminary. It is suggestion that rules hypnotism. (Hypnosis & Suggestion, 1884: 15)..."¹⁴

The acknowledged father of modern hypnotherapy, James Braid was a 19th century Scottish physician and surgeon.

"Braid became interested in the phenomenon known as mesmerism in November 1841, when he personally observed demonstrations given by the traveling Swiss mesmerist Charles Lafontaine (1803–1892). In particular, he examined the physical condition of Lafontaine's mesmerized subjects and concluded that they were, indeed, in quite a different physical state. Upon reflection, he became convinced that he had discovered the natural psychophysiological mechanism underlying these quite genuine phenomena....

"Within a few days following his observation of Lafontaine, in November 1841, Braid began experimenting with his own method, and soon began giving public lectures."¹⁵

On the practices of hypnosis within Eastern religions (emphasis added):

"According to his writings, Braid began to hear reports concerning various Oriental meditative practices soon after the release of his first publication on hypnotism, *Neurypnology* (1843). He first discussed some of these oriental practices in a series of articles entitled *Magic, Mesmerism, Hypnotism, etc., Historically & Physiologically Considered. He drew analogies between his own practice of hypnotism and various forms of Hindu yoga meditation and other ancient spiritual practices*, especially those involving voluntary burial and apparent human hibernation. Braid's interest in these practices stems from *his studies of the Dabistān-i Mazāhib, the "School of Religions", an ancient Persian text describing a wide variety of Oriental religious rituals, beliefs, and practices.* [Said Braid:]

"Last May [1843], a gentleman residing in Edinburgh, personally unknown to me, who had long resided in India, favored me with a letter expressing his approbation of the views which I had published on the nature and causes of hypnotic and mesmeric phenomena. In

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

corroboration of my views, he referred to what he had previously witnessed in oriental regions, and recommended me to look into the "Dabistan," a book lately published, for additional proof to the same effect. On much recommendation I immediately sent for a copy of the "Dabistan", in which I found many statements corroborative of the fact, that **the eastern saints** [Ed. note: practitioners of Eastern religions] **are all self-hypnotisers, adopting means essentially the same as those which I had recommended for similar purposes.**"

"[Braid] saw correlations between many of the "metaphysical" Oriental practices and his own "rational" neuro-hypnotism.... [H]e later wrote:

"In as much as patients can throw themselves into the nervous sleep, and manifest all the usual phenomena of Mesmerism, through their own unaided efforts, as I have so repeatedly proved by causing them to maintain a steady fixed gaze at any point, concentrating their whole mental energies on the idea of the object looked at; or that the same may arise by the patient looking at the point of his own finger, or *as the Magi of Persia and Yogi of India have practised for the last 2,400 years, for religious purposes, throwing themselves into their ecstatic trances by each maintaining a steady fixed gaze at the tip of his own nose; it is obvious that there is no need for an exoteric influence to produce the phenomena of Mesmerism.... The great object in all these processes is to induce a habit of abstraction or concentration of attention*, in which the subject is entirely absorbed with one idea, or train of ideas, whilst he is unconscious of, or indifferently conscious to, every other object, purpose, or action...."

The modern practices of mesmerization and hypnosis are akin to the meditative practices of the religions of the Orient, especially those of Hinduism and Buddhism. The practitioner puts himself into a meditative (hypnotic) state by dispelling everything from the mind – completely blank and free of all thoughts, concerns, memories, etc – through intense focus, sometimes aided by listening to repetitive chants, or other external sensory elements. Once achieving this state, practitioners have either been witnessed doing super-human kinds of feats, or they report various internal manifestations.

The following are accounts of Eastern self-hypnosis-styled meditation events that I have either witnessed in person, or I have seen photo/video documentation of:

1. I was in a small audience during the summer of 1996, when my wife and I traveled around rural southern China as part of our honeymoon. In the performance area, there was an ornately decorated 20-something-foot-tall pole, which had large razor-sharp sword blades protruding out either side of it (sharpened ends facing up). A few audience members were invited to come up to

demonstrate the sharpness of the blades – they were given sheets of paper and fruit, which were easily sliced when gently applied to the blades. I then witnessed two performers (a man and a woman) take about 15 minutes to go into a concentrated, meditative state. After doing so, they climbed up and down the swords like a ladder – acrobatically, barefoot and barehanded – without the slightest sign of damage to their skin.

2. In some parts of rural Taiwan (and other regions throughout Asia), there are annual religious events where many practitioners will enter into meditative trances. Afterward, they will walk down a designated street, smacking themselves in the head with clubs containing dozens of nails and/or spikes protruding out of them, copious amounts of blood running down their heads and faces, dripping all over their bodies. They walk down the street with blank faces, like in a trance, showing not the slightest signs of pain. In Chinese they refer to this practice as “inviting gods into the body,” and thereby they demonstrate that these ethereal “gods” give them power over pain and rapid healing from public self-mutilation. Hundreds of curious and amazed onlookers line the street each year to witness this, taking photos. I have not been to such an event, but I have seen many grizzly photos from these events, taken by acquaintances who attended, and who described what they heard/witnessed in detail.
3. During Buddhist funerals in Asian cultures, it is sometimes customary to hire a trained “spiritual” woman to go into a meditative trance and channel “gods.” After doing so, she will begin to jerk around in spasms and fits as she walks, and the funeral procession will follow her. I have personally seen one such funeral march. Whether the woman I witnessed was merely acting or not, I could not tell. Regardless, this is a well-established tradition in which women in such roles supposedly enter into a kind of frenzied state of possession through a meditative practice of self-hypnosis.
4. During the summer of 1995 I visited the Shao Lin temple (the famous ancient origin of Kung Fu monks). Students start their training at young ages, and implement deep meditative practices as part of their daily routines. They put on Kung Fu performances for visitors to the temple. I will never forget the jaw-dropping, mostly superhuman, physical feats I witnessed that day. Ranging in age from 6 to 17, the students came out in groups, showing off their incredible martial arts skills. The following were two particularly extraordinary examples:
 - A teen boy took a long spear and demonstrated the sharpness

of its point. He then proceeded to bend over and put his neck on the point of the spear; the tip appeared to be touching his adam's apple. A second boy thereafter gently placed a brick on the back of the boy's neck. Once the first boy confirmed that he was all set, the second boy picked up a sledgehammer and smashed the brick to pieces. Not only had the spear *not* impaled his neck, there was only a tiny dimple where the spear point had made contact with his neck.

- Another older, chubbier teen boy was shirtless and started breathing deeply and rhythmically, concentrating intensely, while holding a large tin bowl in his hands. Suddenly, he screamed and smashed concave surface of the tin bowl against his bare, chubby stomach. The bowl was thereafter attached to his stomach. Members of the audience were invited to come up and try to pull the bowl off of him (the bowl had a metal base that could be gripped). Several people (including myself) went up, and as a group we attempted to pull the bowl off of him. Several monks held onto his arms, shoulders and legs to brace him as we pulled on the bowl. It humorously resembled a kind of tug of war, but instead of a rope, we pulled on a large tin bowl inexplicably stuck to a chubby Chinese boy's stomach. As we strained and pulled, the boy just giggled as if the pulling tickled him. Upon satisfaction that the bowl wasn't coming off, everyone went back to their seats. The chubby boy then proceeded to intensely concentrate once again. In a split second, the boy gave an ear-piercing shout and hit the bowl with his palm. The bowl separated from his stomach with a thundering **pop**, and it violently flung to the ground, bouncing and rolling away. Where the bowl had been attached on his stomach, his skin was now all black and blue, like a giant hickey.
5. I once watched a segment on TV about young Tibetan monks-in-training. Clothed only in their robes, they ventured up a snow-covered mountain. Upon finding a relatively flat area, they separated from each other, sat upon the snow and began meditating. After a couple hours, all the snow immediately around each one of them had melted in a perfectly circular radius, ranging in size from a few feet to as much as ten feet in diameter. These monks-in-training have friendly competitions with each other as to who can create the largest circles of melted snow.

These are merely a handful of examples that I have witnessed. If the reader chooses to explore such matters for himself, it is not difficult to find

either untampered video footage or even live performances of similar self-induced hypnosis events.

Aside from the purported relaxation or therapeutic uses of meditation, internal manifestations of entering into meditative trances include phenomenon such as:

1. Sending one's soul traveling outside the body, also referred to as astral projection. As opposed to near-death experiences (NDE) wherein a person's spirit unwittingly separates from the body (dies) and then returns moments later, astral projection is a *willfully-induced* out-of-body experience (OBE) while the practitioner meditates.¹⁶
2. Regression into and exploration of past lives. This form of meditative trance purports to be a form of self-historic journey, a review of the incarnations that one's spirit has inhabited previously.

Sigmund Freud, the founder of psychoanalysis, studied and applied hypnotism in his practice, and for a time was a great proponent of it. Modern psychotherapy sometimes involves hypnosis/hypnotherapy techniques (emphasis added):

"At first, Freud was an enthusiastic proponent of hypnotherapy, and soon began to emphasize hypnotic regression and ab reaction (catharsis) as therapeutic methods.... However, Freud gradually abandoned hypnotism in favor of psychoanalysis, emphasizing free association and interpretation of the unconscious. Struggling with the great expense of time that psychoanalysis required, Freud later suggested that it might be *combined with hypnotic suggestion to hasten the outcome of treatment*....

"Contemporary hypnotism makes use of a wide variety of different forms of suggestion including: direct verbal suggestions, "indirect" verbal suggestions such as requests or insinuations, metaphors and other rhetorical figures of speech, and non-verbal suggestion in the form of mental imagery, voice tonality, and physical manipulation. A distinction is commonly made between suggestions delivered "permissively" or in a more "authoritarian" manner.

"As Harvard hypnotherapist Deirdre Barrett describes in the book "Tales from a Hypnotherapist's Couch", most modern research suggestions are designed to bring about immediate responses—an arm rises immediately, whereas hypnotherapeutic suggestions are usually post-hypnotic ones that are intended to *trigger responses affecting behavior for periods ranging from days to a lifetime in duration*. The hypnotherapeutic ones are often repeated in multiple sessions before they achieve peak effectiveness....

"In a January 2001 article in Psychology Today Harvard psychologist

BEHAVIOR MANIPULATION, HYPNOSIS, POSSESSION

Deirdre Barrett wrote:

"A hypnotic trance is not therapeutic in and of itself, but ***specific suggestions and images fed to clients in a trance can profoundly alter their behavior.*** As they rehearse the new ways they want to think and feel, they lay the groundwork for changes in their future actions...."

"In a July 2001 article for Scientific American titled "The Truth and the Hype of Hypnosis", Michael Nash wrote:

"...using hypnosis, scientists have *temporarily created hallucinations, compulsions, certain types of memory loss, false memories, and delusions in the laboratory* so that these phenomena can be studied in a controlled environment." ¹⁷

Through negating the religious aspects of such matters, modern science has come to embrace and apply what are essentially ancient occult, mystery school initiate practices – used to induce spiritual/demonic possession of one's body in order to gain super-human skills, increased physical power or agility, the blocking of pain, or allowing the mind to be whisked away on fantastical hallucinatory voyages to supposed other worlds, or to experience elaborate presentations of supposed previous lives.

As for spiritual believers and practitioners, they announce that all such phenomenon is the result of the power of the mind, or of "gods" entering the body, or of the concentrated attuning of the body. The unfortunate truth is that *none* of this is actually brought about from the individual mind nor from Almighty God. None of this occurs strictly from strenuous mental concentration or cerebral-generated forces of individual will. These are not true miracles. Genuine faith and prayer in the name of Jesus Christ do not result in these kinds of phenomenon.

Additionally, self-induced astral projection or past-lives regression/exploration, are not of God, no matter how benevolent or spiritually convincing they may seem. These are not God's tools, and therefore the resultant "miracles" are not of Him. God's tools are prayer, fasting, supplication, patience, forgiveness, love of God and all men, and repentance. When you play with the adversary's tools, when you pursue self-induced, self-seeking spiritual experiences, *you throw open the doors to the adversary's limitless capabilities to deceive* – exactly as Randall Baer testified (Volume I, Part 4, Secular Spirituality). All such supernatural, superhuman manifestations are derived from only one source. God creates, Satan imitates.

To the reader, I cannot stress this enough: *God's miracles occur as part of His will, not ours.* Legitimate spiritual experiences are given to an individual according to His will, not our own. It is not only folly and counter-

intuitive for an individual to seek to self-induce a spiritual experience, it is potentially spiritually dangerous. It is playing with the devil's toys on the devil's playground, and you will be subject to the devil's whims of what will most impress/thrill/convince you that what you experience is both profoundly holy and true. And make no mistake, you will be subject to the devil's rules of whatever transpires.

-
- 1 Contains segments of Matthew 8:28-34, Mark 5:1-20, and Luke 8:26-39
 - 2 Source – http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mind_control
 - 3 Quoted from his interview with CBS News' *Sixty Minutes*, Aired on March 31st, 1979
 - 4 Source – http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Milgram_Experiment (emphasis added)
 - 5 Refer to the video file in the supporting material: Milgram Obedience Experiment clip.mp4
 - 6 *Ibid.* 3
 - 7 Matthew 5:14-16
 - 8 Alma 37:6, *The Book of Mormon*
 - 9 Ezra Taft Benson, *Stand Up For Freedom*. Speech delivered to *The Utah Forum for the American Idea* at the Assembly Hall at Temple Square, Feb 11, 1966.
 - 10 Source – http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Stanford_prison_experiment (emphasis added)
 - 11 Transcription taken from interviews in the documentary film *Quiet Rage*, about the Stanford prison experiment.
 - 12 *Ibid.* 9 (emphasis added)
 - 13 *Ibid.* 9 (emphasis added)
 - 14 Source – <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hypnotism>
 - 15 Source – [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/James_Braid_\(surgeon\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/James_Braid_(surgeon))
 - 16 I personally know someone who reported successful astral projection: In the late 1980's when I was in high school, an acquaintance of mine (who frequently bragged of experimenting with witchcraft) soberly reported to me that he had recently performed astral projection successfully, and that he would never attempt it again. He related that it was as though he suddenly found himself on a harsh, hostile alien planet, overwhelmed with a powerful feeling of foreboding and menace. He described it in great detail. The experience visibly terrified him. He said that he honestly could not tell if he had visited another planet or some kind of evil dimension. Either way, the experience was so disturbing that he swore he'd never attempt it again.
 - 17 *Ibid.* 2

Journal Excerpt 5 - April 1996 (22 years old)

Mom unloaded on me today. She came home from conducting her therapy sessions at the university's Pain Clinic more shaken than I've ever seen her before. She rarely ever shares case information about her patients with me. Prior to this, the only time she did so was when the husband of one of her patients came with a firearm to the clinic, demanding to know the location of his wife and child. Mom had helped the woman and her child get to a safe house for such domestic abuse victims, and it was a possibility that the enraged husband might come to the clinic seeking information. However, mom was still unprepared for how intense it got. Everyone in the offices feared for their lives, but fortunately no shots were fired. The man was successfully reasoned with without resorting to violence. Mom came home early to emotionally recover that day.

However, I've never seen her this troubled since that crazy day. One patient she's treating now has really gotten to her. She unloaded on me some of the details of what this woman has shared with her. She's in her mid-thirties or so, and apparently she's remembering all kinds of deeply disturbing things from her childhood that had been blocked. Mom explained to me that childhood trauma can be so exquisite to the point where those memories are blocked inside the brain and are inaccessible while growing up - but then, as the brain matures, those memories will often be "opened up" again. And when they are, they are as fresh as the day they occurred - every excruciating detail is unleashed, to the point where the sufferer feels as though they are literally living the experience all over again.

Mom has seen such things in patients now and then, but this patient's story is too horrendous to be believed. Her father was the beloved bishop of her ward when she grew up in the Wasatch Valley area, but now she's starting to recall intense, horrendous memories of him raping her as a child, pretty much weekly. When Mom asked her where her mother was while these rapes occurred, she replied that her mother was holding her down while her father did this. She recalled her baptism at the LDS chapel, that her father conducted it and baptized her, and it was a wonderful, spiritual event. However that night, she was pulled out of bed about 2am by her parents. They took her to the LDS meeting house, and in the same font her father proceeded to "undo" the baptism to Christ earlier that day, then forcibly

immersing her, re-baptizing her to Lucifer. Her mother was there, too, as well as other people from the ward - all dressed in creepy robes and partaking in this evil ceremony.

About a week later, someone at church asked her about what she thought of her baptism. She responded that the first one was very nice, but that she didn't like the second one. Perplexed, this member later went to her father, the Bishop. "Your daughter said the strangest thing about her baptism - she didn't like the 'second one' or something like that. The funny things kids say." That night she was severely abused and tormented. She quickly learned that there was no one she could reach out to - no one would believe any of her stories.

It gets worse. In the early morning hours one night she was escorted by her parents to the local LDS temple. There they met the temple president and several other people, including a couple of very influential people of the city. Apparently one guy is one of the most successful businessmen in Utah, and another was the elected local Sheriff of the city. They all went into the temple together, down to the baptismal font area. There they conducted Satanic rituals in order to corrupt the temple, to profane its holiness. Mom didn't give me details - I was already getting sick of hearing about these things - but there was some sort of sacrifice, maybe an animal, and lots of blood, and an orgy - it's all too disgusting and disheartening to think about anyway!

I'd heard enough at this point - I finally told Mom my suspicions: that this woman's making it all up in her mind, that she's subconsciously concocting all this nonsense in order to create a victimization mindset for her life's failings. And further, I wouldn't doubt that SHE'S some devil-worshiper, and her agenda is to meet with you to as part of a plan to spread untrue rumors about the LDS Church. How ridiculous! To think that some routinely daughter-raping Satan worshiper (AND HIS WIFE!) could ever be called to the office of Bishop! As if the members of their ward wouldn't sense it! As if the Stake President could be spiritually deceived to call such a man to be Bishop! And then to say that the TEMPLE PRESIDENT was involved, too! And a big LDS businessman and a prominent Sheriff! And this back in the 1970's!! NO WAY - there's simply NO WAY any of that could be true. "The woman must either be deeply disturbed to the point of needing to concoct such a horrendous tale in order

establish a victim-mindset sufficient enough to compensate for her personal failings on a subconscious level, or she has an agenda to defame the church's divinely-inspired structure and divinely-led leadership. And she is deliberately, expertly fooling you, Mom."

Mom didn't know how to respond to this, except to say that she's convinced the woman's not out to fool her, and that this woman is absolutely convinced that these things happened to her. With every new unlocked memory she re-experiences, she feels increasingly terrified and alone.

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

*"Wherefore, because that Satan rebelled against me, and **sought to destroy the agency of man**, which I, the Lord God, had given him, and also, that I should give unto him mine own power; by the power of mine Only Begotten, I caused that he should be cast down;"*

– God the Father¹

*"And it was the daughter of Jared who put it into [Jared's] heart to search up these things of old; and Jared put it into the heart of Akish; wherefore, Akish administered it unto his kindred and friends, leading them away by fair promises to do whatsoever thing he desired. And it came to pass that they formed a **secret combination**, even as they of old; which combination is **most abominable and wicked above all, in the sight of God**;"*

– Moroni²

*"Thus saith the Lord concerning all those who know my power, and have been made partakers thereof, and suffered themselves through the power of the devil to be overcome, and to deny the truth and defy my power – They are they who are the **sons of perdition**, of whom I say that it had been better for them never to have been born; For they are **vessels of wrath**, doomed to suffer the wrath of God, with the devil and his angels in eternity; Concerning whom I have said **there is no forgiveness in this world nor in the world to come** – Having denied the Holy Spirit after having*

received it, and having denied the Only Begotten Son of the Father, having crucified him unto themselves and put him to an open shame.

"These are they who shall go away into the lake of fire and brimstone, with the devil and his angels – And the only ones on whom the second death shall have any power;"

– Jesus Christ³

A warning is in order: this may prove to be the most disturbing portion of the entire book. You are about to read concerning the most despicable of agency-robbing atrocities that have been implemented as far back as Cain, which continue to be carried out by those who understand "magic" (a.k.a. corrupted/inverted godly powers and sciences). The people who practice these things consciously and willingly reject God to the point where some of them will qualify to become Sons of Perdition.

Qualities Which Constitute a Son of Perdition

As covered in Part 1 of Volume I, after Cain killed Abel, he was known as *Perdition*:

"From this time forth thou shalt be the father of his lies; thou shalt be called Perdition; for thou wast also before the world. And it shall be said in time to come – That these abominations were had from Cain;"⁴

Consider the words of the Lord from D&C 76:

- "... all those who know my power, and have been made partakers thereof..." – those who have been *given access to divine knowledge and have obtained an understanding of God-like science and powers, even if it be through "bootlegged" sources.*
- "... suffered themselves through the power of the devil to be overcome..." – to become fully persuaded through Lucifer's cunning and flattery to unite with him *of their own free will.*
- "... deny the truth and defy my power..." – to brazenly deceive others and knowingly, actively participate in thwarting the work of God.
- "... Having denied the Holy Spirit after having received it..." – notice that this is *not* referring to a requirement that such persons been granted the *gift* of the Holy Spirit, but that they have had the Holy Spirit testify unto them either that Jesus Christ is the Savior of the

world, and/or that their course of action is detrimental to Almighty God's will (similar to how Cain was directly warned by God's voice to his soul) – and thereafter they have willingly rebelled, just as Cain did.

- "... having denied the Only Begotten Son of the Father, having crucified him unto themselves and put him to an open shame." – to rejoice in blaspheming, mocking, desecrating and destroying all that which is of Almighty God and Jesus Christ. Had they been alive at the time of Christ's mortal ministry, they would have actively sought His belittlement, torture and excruciating death.
- Additionally, as Lucifer seeks to "destroy the agency of man," those who side with him likewise actively seek this.

These are the qualities and conditions that bring an individual to the precipice whereon one can possibly become a Son of Perdition, destined for Outer Darkness. The Lord describes their hearts as being "vessels of wrath," harboring the most nefarious of Lucifer's legions within them. The atrocities and abominations that they either commit themselves or perpetuate are so abominable as to justly qualify them to be "doomed to suffer the wrath of God, with the devil and his angels in eternity... [forever barred from] forgiveness in this world nor in the world to come." (D&C 76:33)

A number of LDS members tend to fret that to doubt in Jesus being the Son of God and Savior of the world after having experienced the Holy Ghost at various times in their life might possibly qualify them to become a Son of Perdition. While such would be a cause for sorrow and require repentance, its unlikely that their hearts are "vessels of wrath" on par with Cain's. Even the head of the ancient apostles, Peter – vulnerable and confused with all that was transpiring at the moment – denied three times that he was in any way associated with Christ. Not only did he obtain forgiveness, he went on to powerfully proclaim Christ's divinity – himself suffering to be crucified upside down (per his request, as he felt unworthy to be killed in equal manner as Christ), sealing his testimony in an agonizing death.

One possible example of someone who would likely qualify as a Son of Perdition would be the Melbourne man, discussed in Volume 1, Part 4, Chapter 1. For someone having so much knowledge concerning Christ's Gospel, he not only flatly rejected it but willingly dedicated himself to actively seek the long-term fulfillment of Lucifer's plan.

As for the remainder of this chapter, I do not include anything that is sensationalistic, geared towards fear-mongering, or graphic. Nevertheless, the material is deeply disturbing. The activities detailed throughout are all too real, and have been employed extensively in modern times.

Covert Government Agencies Have Been Conducting Extensive Mind Control Operations for Decades

*The lunatic is in my head
You raise the blade, you make the change
You re-arrange me 'til I'm sane.
You lock the door
And throw away the key
There's someone in my head but it's not me.*

– lyrics from Pink Floyd's 1973 song "Brain Damage"

Before reading the following, it is critical to understand and fully accept that none of what you are about to read is hearsay or speculation – every word of it is thoroughly documented, verified, and undisputed. The reader must come to grips with this smoking-gun evidence that many of the most abominable of mind-science occult practices has been, and continues to be, conducted by covert agencies within the United States government, as well as other covert agencies in other governments throughout the world, all of them infested with secret society initiates (emphasis added)⁵:

"Project MKULTRA, or MK-ULTRA, was the code name for a covert, illegal CIA human experimentation program, run by the CIA's Office of Scientific Intelligence. This *official U.S. government program* began in the early 1950s, continued at least through the late 1960s, and used U.S. and Canadian citizens as its test subjects.

"The published evidence indicates that Project MKULTRA involved the use of many methodologies to *manipulate people's individual mental states and alter brain functions*, including the surreptitious administration of drugs and other chemicals, hypnosis, sensory deprivation, isolation, verbal and sexual abuse, as well as various forms of torture.

"Project MKULTRA was first brought to wide public attention in 1975 by the U.S. Congress, through investigations by the Church Committee, and by a presidential commission known as the Rockefeller Commission. Investigative efforts were hampered by the fact that **CIA Director Richard Helms ordered all MKULTRA files destroyed in 1973**; the Church Committee and Rockefeller Commission investigations relied on the sworn testimony of direct participants and on the relatively small number of documents that survived Helms' destruction order.

"In 1977, a Freedom Of Information Act request uncovered a cache of 20,000 documents relating to project MKULTRA, which led to Senate

hearings later that same year. In July 2001 most information regarding MKULTRA [was] officially declassified.

"Although the CIA insists that MKULTRA-type experiments have been abandoned, *14-year CIA veteran Victor Marchetti has stated in various interviews that **the CIA routinely conducts disinformation campaigns and that CIA mind control research continued.*** In a 1977 interview, Marchetti specifically called the CIA claim that MKULTRA was abandoned a 'cover story.'

"On the Senate floor in 1977, Senator Ted Kennedy said:

"The Deputy Director of the CIA revealed that *over thirty universities and institutions were involved in an 'extensive testing and experimentation' program which included **covert drug tests** on unwitting citizens* 'at all social levels, high and low, native Americans and foreign.' Several of these tests involved the *administration of LSD* to 'unwitting subjects in social situations.' At least one death, that of Dr. Olson, resulted from these activities. **The Agency itself acknowledged that these tests made little scientific sense.** The agents doing the monitoring were not qualified scientific observers."

"The project's intentionally oblique CIA cryptonym is made up of the digraph MK, meaning that the project was sponsored by the agency's Technical Services Staff, followed by the word Ultra (which had previously been used to designate the most secret classification of World War II intelligence). Other related cryptonyms include Project MKNAOMI and Project MKDELTA.

"A precursor of the MKULTRA program began in 1945 when the Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency was established and given direct responsibility for Operation Paperclip. Operation Paperclip was a project to quietly bring nearly 1500 former Nazi scientists to the United States. *Some of these scientists had studied torture and brainwashing, and several had just been identified and prosecuted as war criminals during the Nuremberg Trials.* Despite these convictions, they were transported to U.S. soil to be employed by United States covert agencies through this covert operation.

"Several secret U.S. government projects grew out of Operation Paperclip. These projects included Project CHATTER (established 1947), and Project BLUEBIRD (established 1950), which was renamed Project ARTICHOKE in 1951. **Their purpose was to study mind control, interrogation, behavior modification and related topics.**

"Headed by Sidney Gottlieb, the MKULTRA project was started on the order of CIA director Allen Welsh Dulles on April 13, 1953, *largely in response to alleged Soviet, Chinese, and North Korean use of mind control techniques on U.S. prisoners of war in Korea.* The CIA wanted to use similar methods on their own captives. The CIA was also interested in

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

being able to *manipulate foreign leaders* with such techniques, and would later invent several schemes to drug Fidel Castro.

"Experiments were often conducted without the subjects' knowledge or consent. In some cases, academic researchers being funded through grants from CIA front organizations were *unaware that their work was being used for these purposes.*

"In 1964, the project was renamed MKSEARCH. The project attempted to produce a perfect *truth drug* for use in interrogating suspected Soviet spies during the Cold War, and generally to explore any other possibilities of mind control.

"Another MKULTRA effort, Subproject 54, was the Navy's top secret "Perfect Concussion" program, which was supposed to *use sub-aural frequency blasts to erase memory,* however the program was never carried out.

"Because ***most MKULTRA records were deliberately destroyed*** in 1973 by order of then CIA director Richard Helms, ***it has been difficult, if not impossible, for investigators to gain a complete understanding of the more than 150 individually funded research sub-projects sponsored by MKULTRA and related CIA programs.***

"A very descriptive member of the CIA claims that *not all of the records/chemicals were destroyed. Some were smuggled out and kept in private properties and organizations....*

"*Forty-four American colleges or universities, 15 research foundations or chemical or pharmaceutical companies and the like – including Sandoz (now Novartis) and Eli Lilly and Company, 12 hospitals or clinics (in addition to those associated with universities), and three prisons are known to have participated in MKULTRA...."*

Let all that sink in for a minute: all this massive, purposeful, intensely-classified research into breaking and controlling the human mind started in America shortly after the end of World War II. While modern mainstream media has absolutely no problem spreading the vilification that Nazi scientists conducted horrendous, torturous experiments on live human subjects, there is absolute and complete silence on the well-established facts that covert American agencies not only smuggled out many of those same Nazi scientists, but picked up where they left off and exponentially expanded the experiments and research – *conducted on US and Canadian citizens, using US taxpayer dollars to fund and oversee it all.*

By the time some determined members of Congress forced these matters to be investigated in the 1970's, it had all continued unabated for three decades. Despite that most of the programs' documentation had been destroyed, it was established on record that: 44 American

colleges/universities, 15 research/pharmaceutical companies, 12 hospitals, and 3 prisons had all actively participated in these studies.

And it has never stopped since then. It has only gone deeper "underground," the record-keeping has become more secretive, the bookkeeping more buried, and the agencies less and less accountable.

It all begs the question: Which "side" really "won" World War II?

Stated Goals of MKULTRA's Research

"The Agency poured millions of dollars into studies examining methods of influencing and controlling the mind, and of enhancing their ability to extract information from resistant subjects during interrogation.

"Some historians have asserted that creating a "Manchurian Candidate" subject through "mind control" techniques was a goal of MKULTRA and related CIA projects. *Alfred McCoy has claimed that **the CIA attempted to focus media attention on these sorts of "ridiculous" programs, so that the public would not look at the primary goal of the research, which was developing effective methods of torture and interrogation.*** Such authors cite as one example that the CIA's KUBARK interrogation manual refers to "studies at McGill University", and that most of the techniques recommended in KUBARK are exactly those that researcher Donald Ewen Cameron used on his test subjects (sensory deprivation, drugs, isolation, etc.).

"One 1955 MKULTRA document gives an indication of the *size and range of the effort*; this document refers to the study of an assortment of mind-altering substances described as follows:

1. Substances which will *promote illogical thinking and impulsiveness* to the point where the recipient would be discredited in public.
2. Substances which increase the efficiency of mentation [i.e. mental activity] and perception.
3. Materials which will cause the victim to age faster/slower in maturity.
4. Materials which will promote the intoxicating effect of alcohol.
5. Materials which will produce the signs and symptoms of recognized diseases in a reversible way so that they may be used for malingering [i.e. to temporarily feign actual illness], etc.
6. Materials which will cause **temporary/permanent brain damage and loss of memory.**
7. Substances which will *enhance the ability of individuals to withstand privation, torture and coercion during interrogation and so-called "brain-washing".*

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

8. Materials and physical methods which will **produce amnesia for events preceding and during their use.**
9. Physical methods of *producing shock and confusion* over extended periods of time and *capable of surreptitious use.*
10. Substances which *produce physical disablement* such as *paralysis of the legs, acute anemia, etc.*
11. Substances which will *produce a chemical that can cause blisters.*
12. Substances which **alter personality structure** in such a way that the tendency of the recipient *to become dependent upon another person* is enhanced.
13. A material which will *cause mental confusion* of such a type that the individual under its influence will find it difficult to maintain a fabrication [lie] under questioning.
14. Substances which will **lower the ambition and general working efficiency** of men when administered in undetectable amounts.
15. Substances which *promote weakness or distortion of the eyesight or hearing faculties*, preferably without permanent effects.
16. A *knockout pill which can surreptitiously be administered in drinks, food, cigarettes, as an aerosol, etc.,* which will be safe to use, **provide a maximum of amnesia**, and be suitable for use by agent types on an ad hoc basis.
17. A material which can be surreptitiously administered by the above routes and which in very small amounts will *make it impossible for a person to perform physical activity.*

"A secretive arrangement granted the MKULTRA program a percentage of the CIA budget. The MKULTRA director was granted **six percent of the CIA operating budget** in 1953, **without oversight or accounting.** An estimated \$10 million USD or more was spent....

"Early CIA efforts focused on LSD, which later came to dominate many of MKULTRA's programs. Once Project MKULTRA officially got underway in April, 1953, experiments included administering LSD to CIA employees, military personnel, doctors, other government agents, prostitutes, mentally ill patients, and members of the general public in order to study their reactions. LSD and other drugs were **usually administered without the subject's knowledge or informed consent**, a violation of the Nuremberg Code that the U.S. agreed to follow after World War II. **The aim of this was to find drugs which would irresistibly bring out deep confessions or wipe a subject's mind clean and program him or her as "a robot agent"....**

"LSD was eventually dismissed by MKULTRA's researchers as too unpredictable in its results. They had given up on the notion that LSD was 'the secret that was going to unlock the universe' but it still had a place in

the cloak-and-dagger arsenal, but by 1962, the CIA and the army had developed a series of superhallucinogens such as the highly touted BZ [3-Quinuclidinyl benzilate], *which was thought to hold greater promise as a mind control weapon. This resulted in the withdrawal of support for many academics and private researchers* and LSD research became less of a priority altogether..."

It's curious to note the way in which the administrators of the MKULTRA program termed what they were seeking: "the secret that was going to unlock the universe." This is how they described the ultimate mind-controlling chemical substance they sought to discover. Just as curious is the fact that many academics and private researchers ceased to participate once they became aware that the eventual aim of all this was to develop a form of weaponized mind control.

"Other experiments involved drugs such as temazepam (used under code name MKSEARCH), heroin, morphine, MDMA, mescaline, psilocybin, scopolamine, marijuana, alcohol, sodium pentothal, and ergine (in Subproject 22).

"Declassified MKULTRA documents also indicate that hypnosis was studied in the early 1950s. Experimental goals included:

- the creation of "*hypnotically induced anxieties*,"
- "hypnotically increasing ability to learn and recall complex written matter,"
- studying hypnosis and polygraph examinations,
- "hypnotically increasing ability to observe and recall complex arrangements of physical objects,"
- studying the "relationship of personality to susceptibility to hypnosis"

"*Experiments were conducted with **drug induced hypnosis** and with anterograde and retrograde amnesia while under the influence of such drugs.*

"The experiments were *exported to Canada* when the CIA recruited Scottish psychiatrist Donald Ewen Cameron, creator of the "psychic driving" concept, which the CIA found particularly interesting. Cameron had been hoping to correct schizophrenia by **erasing existing memories and reprogramming the psyche**. He commuted from Albany, New York to Montreal every week to work at the Allan Memorial Institute of McGill University and was paid \$69,000 from 1957 to 1964 to carry out MKULTRA experiments there.

"In addition to LSD, Cameron also *experimented with various paralytic drugs as well as electroconvulsive therapy at thirty to forty times the normal power*. His 'driving' experiments consisted of putting subjects into

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

drug-induced coma for weeks at a time (up to three months in one case) while playing tape loops of noise or simple repetitive statements. *His experiments were typically carried out on patients who had entered the institute for minor problems such as anxiety disorders and postpartum depression, many of whom suffered permanently from his actions. His treatments resulted in victims' incontinence, amnesia, forgetting how to talk, forgetting their parents, and **thinking their interrogators were their parents**.* His work was *inspired and paralleled* by the British psychiatrist William Sargant at St Thomas' Hospital, London, and Belmont Hospital, Surrey, who was also *involved in the Intelligence Services* and who *experimented extensively on his patients without their consent, causing similar long-term damage.*

"It was during this era that Cameron became known worldwide as **the first chairman of the World Psychiatric Association** as well as **president of the American and Canadian psychiatric associations**. [Ed. note: this says a lot about what powers directly influence and back these organizations.] Cameron had also been a member of the Nuremberg medical tribunal in 1946-47....

"In Canada, the issue took much longer to surface, becoming widely known in 1984 on a CBC news show, *The Fifth Estate*. It was learned that not only had the CIA funded Dr. Cameron's efforts, but perhaps even more shockingly, **the Canadian government was fully aware** of this, and had later *provided another \$500,000 in funding to continue the experiments...*"

There are many cases in which involvement with MKULTRA or its branch projects is highly suspected. The following are two of said cases which contain compelling evidence to that conclusion (emphasis added)⁶:

- "Lawrence Teeter, attorney for convicted assassin Sirhan Sirhan, believed Sirhan was under the influence of hypnosis when he fired his weapon at Robert F. Kennedy in 1968. Teeter linked the CIA's MKULTRA program to mind control techniques that he claimed were used to control Sirhan."
- "Jonestown, the Guyana location of the Jim Jones cult and Peoples Temple mass suicide, was thought to be a test site for MKULTRA medical and mind control experiments after the official end of the program. *Congressman Leo Ryan, a known critic of the CIA, was murdered by Peoples Temple members after he personally visited Jonestown to investigate various reported irregularities.*"

Readers familiar with popular entertainment concerning covert government agencies and their "specially trained" agents ought to detect familiar themes in all of this. Fictional government agent and/or spy protagonists are glorified as heroic or admirable for their expertise in: investigative and observation abilities, use of sophisticated gadgetry, near-superhuman fighting skills, exceptional projectile targeting (i.e. shooting

bullets, darts or arrows), impersonating others and/or expertly manipulating “bad guys” through deception, genius-level competency in multiple foreign languages and cultural nuances, expertise in sexual seduction, and on and on. Such stories typically garner awe, admiration, and sometimes even emulation from fans.

Sadly, there is considerable truth behind what may come across as wildly fictional, superhuman descriptions of covert agents. Training frequently involves regiments of experimental chemicals, biological “enhancement,” implanted bionic or cyborg components, and even traumatic psychological and physically torturous trainings. Some of these techniques are where fact and fiction cross paths: actual practices are utilized to transform subjects (with little or no consent, and most often at very vulnerable young ages) into whatever kind of tool these agencies wish to transform them.

Mind Fracturing, Multiple Personalities, Human Computers

*“Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me. But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. **Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!**”*

– Jesus Christ⁷

This is a disheartening and abominable subject, but the heretofore untold suffering of its victims demands a full comprehension.

Only a handful of people who were involved with MKULTRA or its offshoot projects have ever dared (or have had adequate opportunity) to come forward and testify of their first-hand experiences. One suspected offshoot is called *Project Monarch*, allegedly named after the monarch butterfly, inferring a butterfly's transition from caterpillar to chrysalis, then finally a beautiful winged insect. This project incorporated a combination of applied electroshock trauma to targeted parts of the body, especially the crown of the head, in addition to psychological trauma inflicted from satanic ritual abuse.

Very young children and infants – *some as young as 18 months* – were

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

subjected to these ineffably horrendous abuses in order to fracture their impressionable minds, creating an internalized disassociation, as well as generating extremely pliable and suggestible multiple personalities. Their innocent little minds were overloaded and (borrowing from computer lexicon) “hacked” during their most vulnerable period of human development. Throughout their youth and into their teens, these victims' personalities were carefully shaped and molded through a combination of administered drugs, sustained deep hypnosis, continued electroshock regiments, as well as routine emotional, psychological and sexual trauma.

As technological breakthroughs developed, many of these victims were subjected to highly advanced machines (developed through decades of secret mind science studies), which produced increasingly reliable results and desired capabilities. Each young victim's personality was created to enact a “programmed” function, which would become active (or “unlocked”) when given specific hypnotic suggestions: phrases, commands, pressure point interactions, or other similar kinds of signals/communication.

Two whistleblowers who have dared step forward and publicly testify of being life-long victims of Project Monarch are Cathy O'Brien and Sue Ford. Each of them have risked everything in writing and publishing autobiographical accounts of their lives. Cathy published *Trance Formation of America* in 1995, and Sue published *Thanks For The Memories* in 1999⁸. Each of these women have, at least once, stood before an audience and given recorded public testimony regarding their background and horrific ordeals. Both of these books are included in PDF format in the supporting material.⁹

It is interesting to consider that each of these women testify that Jesus Christ is their Savior and Redeemer. At the end of every chapter of Sue's book, she quotes scriptures from the New Testament that are relevant to the topic she covers. She also testifies repeatedly, both in her book and in public testimony, that the process of overcoming her ordeal was largely due to multiple instances of divine intervention, as well as the Holy Spirit guiding her to people that she could trust and confide in – people who would believe her account, and/or who would be willing to raise public awareness about cases like hers.

The deeply disturbing accounts which both Sue and Cathy testify of strongly correspond and collaborate with the testimonies of many youth who have been victimized and traumatized, primarily by wealthy, powerful individuals with government, corporate, and/or ecclesiastical connections.

In recent years, investigations into high-level pedophilia, state/business/religious-connected child sex rings, and other highly organized child-sex-slavery outfits are finally being seriously investigated and

somewhat exposed – and not just through “fringe” alternative media, a handful of major international news outlets have reported these matters.

For decades, both the general public and news media have deafened their ears and covered their eyes to this horrific reality. The public recoils in disbelief because it is just too “absurd” to suggest that a sizable portion of high-profile entertainers, national leaders (including some U.S. presidents and executive-branch cabinet members), as well as some high-profile religious leaders, happen to be voracious pedophiles. The mainstream press refuses to investigate either because their outlets are *owned* by pedophile perpetrators, or they fear an onslaught of legal action against them. Whenever stalwart reporters dare investigate something so awful, their stories are stymied, pulled, or simply not published; when they push the matter, they are threatened and/or lose their jobs.

However, the bold and fearless who do investigate discover that the truth is far more unpleasant and disheartening than they could have possibly imagined from the onset. Possibly most depressing of all, they invariably find that all too few individuals really care to know the truth of these matters. Some of these critical investigations and documentation are included in the supporting material.¹⁰

Such matters are interconnected with the subject of mind control, but are beyond the scope of this book. Nevertheless, I strongly recommend the reader to consider exploring investigations into this topic, and to never outright dismiss any allegations of sexual abuse of minors levied against anyone, especially in regards to powerful and prominent persons. One should look into and pray about these types of claims objectively and thoroughly.

Testimony of a Lifetime of Abuse

The following is a transcription from portions of Sue Ford's public appearance on February 22nd, 1998 – recorded by Chicago Health Television, but never aired. The supporting material contains these recordings, as well as a pdf of Sue Ford's book *Thanks For The Memories* ¹¹ (emphasis added):

“It's really frustrating for me, as I stand before you, to try to figure out how I could say something that is so important (and is so important for so many people's lives) – for me to be able to get it all organized and say it in a way that you can understand – it has been a real challenge for me. *I hope that you'll be patient, and open your minds and your hearts to the possibility that there are children all over the world that have been abused in similar ways* that I am going to share with you in my experience today. [Hopefully,] we can begin, as a nation, to put an end to what has been covered up for so many years.

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

"I am an inter-generational satanic ritual abuse and government mind control survivor. Satanic ritual was a way that my controllers were able to control me, using the satanic blood ritual as a trauma base. ***It is a conditioning in order to bring about the levels of mind control and multiple personality disorder that was the result of being tortured for so many years, since I was a very small child.***

This is very important to understand, but may be difficult to comprehend: horrific ritual practices, which are perpetrated by Satanic groups, are conducted *with the goal of overloading and shattering the vulnerable minds of targeted children*. On the surface these rituals appear to praise and worship the devil, and obviously they do so – but the true intent of them is to overwhelm with terror the minds of the young and/or inexperienced participants. They are forced to participate in unspeakable, even cannibalistic horrors – it all serves the purpose of "hacking" into and overcoming the freedom of self-determination of the individual at the earliest age possible. *That is the goal, that is the purpose* – Satan is "glorified" through these rituals because programmable human "robots" are being generated through traumatization into surrendering their free-agency. Continuing with Sue's public testimony:

"The easiest way to begin my story is to begin when I began waking up. In 1985 I had a head-on collision where my head smashed through the windshield of the car. For the first time in my life, I had access to both sides of my brain. There really wasn't anyone, in 1985, that understood about ritual abuse or the memories that I started [recalling].

"I entered school to work on my Master's degree in clinical psychology, thinking that I might be able to understand what was going on with my own mind. But when my memories and flashbacks became so intrusive that I could no longer think without being constantly bombarded by visual and sensory images, much like Vietnam veterans, I quit school and went into therapy full time. I was in therapy every day for about six years, on a daily basis. [Ed. note: bear in mind that it was the physical trauma to her head from her accident that caused her brain to begin shifting in function, opening up channels to long-ago segmented memories and other areas of her mind.]

"I started documenting the horror of the rituals that I attended as a child, and of all the child abuse that led to my further sophisticated programming – and then on into government mind control, where I was used in the Intelligence community, with the elite families and with people such as *my 'owner,'* who was [legendary entertainer] **Bob Hope.**"

At this point in her public testimonial, she looks towards her friend in the audience and, beaming a triumphant smile, said "I did it!" She had been terrified to name any names in a public forum (especially Bob Hope's name), and had just overcome an acute psychological hurdle in doing so. She

continues:

"Also **Henry Kissinger** [was one of my handlers], who was programming me with what he called 'government mind files' – where *I was used as a human computer*. He took me with him to different places to [conduct] foreign policy, and meetings where he would access my mind behind the scenes in order to work with the people he was working with: the Rockefellers and some of the other people I was involved with in bringing in the New World Order.

"The agenda that Henry Kissinger was the mastermind of is very sophisticated and involves a lot of people. It involves presidents, it involves governors, it involves foreign leaders. In my experience, and because (for whatever reason) I was the one selected to be *used as this human tape recorder* that he sent around the world – *in order to target certain individuals that they wanted to own, or control or use and manipulate through sexual encounter* – and then by either *passing messages to these people or retrieving messages*. He also used me to send messages back and forth between **George [H. W.] Bush** and a lot of other different world leaders who were very instrumental (and still are) in bringing out the New World Order.

"Back to my therapy and all that. As I began [to be overwhelmed] with these memories and talking about [them] with my therapists – and they just kept looking at me like I was crazy, because they didn't understand what all this ritual abuse was, [and] why I was talking about *being flown at night in helicopters where there were no lights on, where I was flown into tops of buildings in Beverly Hills and Las Vegas, and in Hollywood* and all over – they didn't understand. But one therapist finally realized that there was something to what I was saying when she looked out the window and *there were men with suits in a car waiting for me at my therapy session*. (She lived in a residential neighborhood. It was a little out of order for that to be happening.)

"I realized then, and she did too, that I was in danger. Given all the names that I was remembering, she said, "I think we'd better get you out of town and into hiding for a while." *I left my home, my husband, my children, and everything that I'd ever known*, and went to an island. She found me a safe place to live. That's a whole other story itself.

"While I was on the island, I realized – because I wasn't around the people I was programmed to in my family – I realized that I had been used as a sex slave with **Ronald Reagan**, and **Richard Nixon**, and all these different presidents. I didn't understand. ***As my programming dictated, I thought that I was absolutely crazy*** – *there was no way this happened, I'm just this housewife and this is absolutely crazy. As my programming dictated, I had migraine headaches when I began to remember; I had suicidal feelings, I wanted to cut and burn myself – I had to fight a lot of programming that was very carefully set into place [in order to] guarantee 'national security' that I would*

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

never be able to remember and tell. *Through (what I call) my **divine intervention** and my **spiritual connection**, I was led all over the place to people and places that would help me so that I would recover, in order to stand before you to report what I saw, what I heard, and what I know.*

"What I do know is that *children are being used as huge financial resources* – tortured and abused in horrendous ways – in order to fund a lot of the covert operations that (I believe and know now) are the mind control operations, and a lot of the other government products and projects that *have been kept (still) in classified documentation.*

"Children [are] abused in many ways like I was – and I feel like JonBenét Ramsey was one such little child who may have had a very similar history [to mine].¹² My father and others tortured me over and over with sexual abuse, satanic ritual abuse, near-drowning and suffocation, terror harassments (where I was absolutely terrified about things that I was told in a drugged state that were going to happen to myself and my family), electroshock (in the earlier years when I was a child they used cattle prods, and as I grew older they used stun guns on me), [and] food and sleep deprivation.

"Then as I grew older (and evidently I was able to master the levels of abuse that I had gone through, and [I] was able to do what they wanted [me] to), I was taken to *military bases*. I was taken to **Disneyland**, and I was taken to **NASA**. I was put into a lot of the *equipment that they use on astronauts* that they have there – very sophisticated brainwave mind control programming technology that also [involves the use of] drugs, bright lights, sound, and electrodes, and all kinds of very sophisticated frequency 'medicine'. I was taken to **Edwards Air Force base**. I was taken to **Point Mugu Naval Weapons Center, Twentynine Palms** in California [Ed. note: the largest Marine Corps base in the world¹³], and a lot of different military installations around the country.

"Henry Kissinger took me into different agencies in [Washington] D.C. and asked me to use my photographic memory, which he had programmed in [me], to *document documents that he wanted to have in my mind* – so that if he ever needed to pull up information he could do that [through me]. *I was also used as an information [repository] between a lot of the members of the global elitists.* I listened [in on conversations] between Kissinger and [Nelson] Rockefeller as ***they talked about [how] 98% of the world population really doesn't think and doesn't deserve to be alive, and that they aren't genetically elite like they are, and their progeny. They really want to reduce the population of the planet so that it would be left in a more pristine way for their progeny.***

"Adolf Hitler and George Bush both talked about the New World Order, and from what I now understand *the concentration camps in Nazi Germany were actually used for mind control experimentation.* [Through Project Paperclip, these doctors] *were given **political immunity** as they continued to do experimentation on the mind [in the United States].*

"A lot of [trauma-based mind control] survivors I talk to from all over the world ([and] that write me letters) are naming all of these different people, and naming the different places they were taken – into hospitals, universities, military bases in order to further their programming.

"The other thing I would like [to speak about] that I think is really important to explain is that people [who] have been satanically, ritually abused *are controlled*. The plan of control is to *manipulate people not only through the trauma* (which causes the multiple personality and disassociation), *but also the guilt*. I don't know [if] I can really explain [it] to you, but I think that those of you that are parents might understand the absolute terror and horror of waking up, as I did, to realize that ***not only had my parents done this horrific abuse to me, but that I [had] also passed this down to my children [while I was] in a programmed state***, that I was totally and completely unaware of. I think that *anyone that ever says that they'd been programmed or ritually abused, and says that they did not abuse their children or passed this down, are really not truly survivors of this abuse – because that is the way that they keep people totally and completely under control*. [Ed. note: this is a *key factor* in deciphering who is merely conjuring up false memories of abuse, and who is truly a victim of ritual abuse mind control.]...

"My daughter also was used, and was programmed from birth. She was taken out of my arms in the hospital. *An intelligence officer stuffed a wadded tissue down her throat and brought her near death immediately after her birth*, in order to disassociate her and to disassociate me, and ***terrify me to not tell***. [She] is now in a group home, and she is totally and completely a mess.

"I believe that ***there are children all over the world who are suffering from this, and are stuffed away in mental hospitals or prisons or whatever, and not believed***. In this way the plan continues to proliferate, and *these children end up not getting the help they deserve*, because of the media cover-up, [and] because this is such a large political agenda. As you can see, it's got [a] wide backing, it's got a lot of years of loyalty to it, and a lot of people and a lot of technology.

"But I believe that they are shortsighted as far as not understanding that even their technology (that was 'guaranteed' that I could remember [documentation which is protected] by national security) – they were very short sighted in their own spirituality to know that *my innate spirituality would be what would lead me out of this*, and into the truth of what happened. That's where I believe that, as we are all able to connect spiritually, to be discerning, to not just [accept] what people say, or what you read in the newspaper – *to not just believe what you read but to question it*. And to stop watching all of this television that is just giving you the propaganda lies that they want you to believe. There is a way out of it, and that's by learning to *critically analyze, think on our own, and to trust*

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

ourselves that we [can] know the truth."

Sue Ford's account contains critical information regarding how the occult mind sciences function, and how the abuse perpetuates from generation to generation. I cannot recommend strongly enough to read her book *Thanks For The Memories* in its entirety¹⁴ – yet I must caution the reader to petition the Lord in prayer to have the Holy Spirit accompany and bolster them while taking it in, as its pages are steeped in unfathomable trauma.

That the reader might gain a basic understanding of Sue's experiences, I present some summary points:

- Starting at about 18-months of age, Sue's father would conduct disassociation terrors on her. One method would be to put her in a dark cloth sack, hang it from a hook on the ceiling, and spin her around and around unceasingly. Additionally, he began sexually traumatizing her around this age to prepare her to be an elite sexual tool. He took great pride in planning for her future in this way.
- Occasionally, as a young child, Sue was taken to Disneyland for "training." This training was often conducted after the park was closed. Some examples of training included: sexual vivacity and endurance on Mr. Toad's Wild Ride, self-preservation and perseverance in being tied to a rope and dragged behind the Jungle Cruise boat while being told that the animatronics animals were alive and coming to eat her, and trauma conditioning in being stuck alone on a platform on the Matterhorn mountain while monstrous howls echo everywhere around her.
- At age six, Sue was entered into an elite pageant/auction for SRA mind-controlled children. She and about a dozen other young children paraded themselves on a catwalk, displaying their talents and skills, wearing different outfits and even wearing nothing at all. The audience was comprised of the Luciferian elite, millionaires/billionaires looking for mind-controlled slaves for different capacities. They each placed bids on the various children. Sue's father was overjoyed when Bob Hope successfully outbid everyone else for his daughter.
- Up until her 30's (when she began wake up and heal from her programming), Sue would occasionally be requested by Bob Hope. Someone would call her home with instructions, then her father would put both her and her mother into a pre-programmed state. Sue would be taken to a location by her father, and then be transported by others to whatever her destination would be. Bob Hope, himself, was not a pedophile, and privately disdained anyone who had sexual proclivities

for underage boys and girls, yet he frequently utilized Sue and other boys and girls he controlled to ensnare powerful individuals in entertainment, business or government. He would provide them underage youth for their sexual gratification, then take pictures or record video of them with secret cameras. He would then later confront these individuals with the recorded evidence and then "politely" threaten them along the lines of "it would be a real shame if your wife, or the press, got a hold of these photos." Thereafter, those individuals did anything Hope requested of them.

- Starting at eleven years of age, Sue was occasionally sent to Washington D.C. to sexually "service" the president and to provide a message to him. Her accounts of these encounters are detailed. It is explained that after sex is when adults are the most susceptible to be flattered or "open-minded" in general – therefore, it is standard practice by Luciferians to first sexually gratify a target, then have the sex partner deliver a message or request. The success rate of this practice is extremely high. Sue's Presidential targets over the years included John F. Kennedy, Lyndon Johnson, Richard Nixon, Gerald Ford, and Ronald Reagan. She asserts that Jimmy Carter never used her for sex, but would accept whatever message she was instructed to convey.
- Sue was frequently and extensively lent out to Henry Kissinger; he and Bob Hope were close collaborators. Instead of sex, Kissinger used Sue as a "human computer." He trained her extensively in this capacity. She would be placed into a programmed state where she constantly recorded information: what was said by whom, the time it was said, etc. Kissinger brought her along to critical meetings and excused her presence as an intern. Later in the day, Kissinger would review what was said by having her recall specific parts of the meeting; Sue would reproduce what was said verbatim, and in the accent and tone of the original speaker. Kissinger would store and categorize this information within Sue as "mind files," which he could "pull up" from Sue years later if needed.
- As a young adult, Sue was tasked by Bob Hope to perform sexual favors for his friends/collaborators in entertainment and for those whom he wished to impress. Some of the entertainers she was sent to included: Neil Diamond, Elvis Presley, Gene Kelly, Sammy Davis, Jr., Frank Sinatra, James Taylor, Mickey Rooney, Casey Kasem, Sylvester Stallone, Burt Reynolds, Quincy Jones, Eddie Murphy, and Barbara Streisand (who is also as heavily mind-controlled as Sue is). Sue goes on to explain that:

"Stars had trouble getting "secured" sex with people. They couldn't

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

trust that people weren't coming on to them to manipulate or hurt them, and since they were famous they couldn't risk losing their public reputation. So, slaves were provided to them. And Bob provided me to everyone he could, knowing the value of connections to powerful people. He laughed and said, "It's all right, she's broadening herself."

"Word seemed to spread like wildfire to stars about the sex slave service. They loved it just like the politicians did, since they thought they could let their hair down and not have to worry because many were told I was a robot that couldn't ever divulge their secrets. With individuals not privy to the top-secret mind control information, Bob explained, "She's beautiful and highly sexual, but she's mentally slow and can't think. She doesn't have the ability to remember. She's been like this since birth, but..." Bob elucidated, "...what she lacks upstairs she greatly makes up for downstairs," and he'd smile slyly, "if you know what I mean."

"Many people never knew that I was a robot, under total mind control. They just thought I was slow or deaf and dumb. That was another tactic Bob used. He had different explanations for different people.... Many of them didn't want to risk too much exposure with strangers for various and sundry reasons; they didn't want to become too attached emotionally, didn't want to risk the security of knowing someone too long where a person could find out too much and hurt them in different ways, or there were other reasons unique to individual celebrities."¹⁵

- Sexual indiscretions among the rich and powerful are among the "lesser" sins she discloses. Sue reports that not only is pedophilia rampant, but also bestiality as well. Sue mentions that secure areas of military bases are often utilized to conduct horrendous acts of cruelty. Cathy O'Brien testifies extensively of being taken to military bases and being forced to play "The Most Dangerous Game": mothers and their children stripped naked, running for their lives while being "hunted" by elite individuals. In *Trance Formation of America*, O'Brien names George H. W. Bush and Dick Cheney as two of these hunters.
- Sue was required to be filmed pornographically on many occasions. Bob Hope and Hugh Hefner (the founder of Playboy Entertainment) were close friends. While Hefner was publicly recognized for producing lascivious entertainment, Hope secretly produced and directed pornographic films for elite clientele. These movies echoed the production values, soundtracks, musical numbers, and choreography of Hollywood's "golden era" of film. Sue was the star of one of them. Copies were sold at exorbitant prices to Hefner and other "elite" individuals. Sue occasionally accompanied Hope to some of Hefner's Playboy penthouse parties; there Hope and Hefner would often screen

Hope's newest porno-musical, and the two would exchange notes on it. Sue asserts that many, if not most, of the young men and women involved in the pornography industry are lifelong victims of SRA and/or other forms of mind-control.

- Sue's father was a willing participant in all of this. Because of the "elite" success of his daughter, he enjoyed many perks and "moved up" in the ranks. He enjoyed a level of worldly success all of his life because of it. Her mother, however, was a life-long SRA programmed victim and not "in on it." Whenever Sue was tasked to go somewhere, her father would trigger an altered state in her mother so that she would not realize Sue was gone. Her siblings were similarly programmed. The principals of Sue's schools were Luciferian, therefore her numerous absences were never an issue. Sue describes the process of being placed into the mind-controlled personality or state by her handlers prior to her task, then afterwards being brought back out of it and programmed to forget what happened.
- Sue's husband was also a life-long SRA victim. They were programmed to one day marry each other. Whenever she was called away on task, he was programmed to not miss her, not realize she was even gone. To her horror after waking up to reality, Sue realized that she was instrumental in the programming of her own children.

I, personally, believe every word of Sue's account – I truly believe that the Lord has had a guiding hand in her life, in escaping "Wonderland", in healing from a lifetime of trauma, and in boldly testifying of what she was put through and *by whom*. I believe that fearlessly naming the names of perpetrators is essential, both in advancing one's own healing, and to show the world that many of the humans they respect – perhaps even idolize – are all-too-often borderline inhuman, and indulge in some of the most repulsive, vile, disturbing activities the most twisted of minds could even conceive.

Cathy O'Brien's autobiographical account *Trance Formation of America* is also strongly recommended. However, the man that 'saved' her from her mind control situation, Mark Phillips, was formerly connected to the CIA. Compelling testimony from Sue Ford and others (who became close to Cathy) casts suspicion upon Mark that he is still probably connected to the CIA. While Cathy does expose terribly damning information in her book and public appearances, Mark may actually be a 'containment agent': a handler assigned to ensure that Cathy does not disclose the most critical information her mind possesses.¹⁶

Recall that, as previously noted with the MKUltra hearings by the senate, the CIA "attempted to focus media attention on... "ridiculous" programs, so that the public would not look at the primary goal of the

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

research." This is a crucial tactic to deflect attention or deeper investigation: allow leaks about matters which will come across as either too odd or too unbelievable – even if they are true, the public will focus on them and not discover deeper, more important information. For Cathy O'Brien, on an individual level, I suspect that Mark Phillips is handling her, allowing "ridiculous" (but true) memories to leak out, yet while suppressing far more damning and/or corroborative information from exposure.

Other Information and Testimonies Concerning Mind Control

The following are pertinent excerpts of four separate articles, a couple of which were written for the preface of Sue Ford's autobiographical book, *Thanks For The Memories* (which was published under the pseudonym Brice Taylor). Each of them contain indispensable information which helps the unfamiliar and the doubtful to comprehend what exactly "mind control" is. I implore the reader to patiently take in the following in order to better understand the nature, processes, symptoms, and results of this literal technology – a mind technology – as well as grasp how it is prominently applied today (emphasis added):

Walter Bowart

Founder of The Freedom of Thought Foundation

"I wrote my book *Operation Mind Control* while living in Arizona.... In the 70's most of the people I spoke with about what I called, generically, "mind control" thought I was crazy. Those who were not afraid to express their opinions on the subject believed it to be impossible. They strongly believed they could not be made to do something against their will and without their own knowledge. They believed they had indomitable powers of will.... They believed, beyond a shadow of a doubt, that they could not be broken, fragmented, and mentally enslaved by any technology, even if it included hypnosis, drugs, electronic brain stimulation or what came to be called biological process control.

"My interest in this subject was piqued by a young man, David, I had known all my life. He returned from a four-year tour with the United States Air Force in a confused and deeply tormented state.... He suffered from complete amnesia about the past years of service in the USAF, but he was making straight "A's" in premedical courses at a prominent University.

"I did not recognize him as he sat, slumped in an overstuffed chair in my living room in 1973. He had undergone a couple of years of treatment with a competent psychiatrist and... he [had] remembered... being a "human tape recorder" and witnessing the most secret negotiations with North

Vietnam and with "Royals" of the Arabic persuasion who beheaded a prisoner he had just witnessed being interrogated. The image of this decapitation still haunts him in his dreams.

"In 1973 the Rockefeller Commission's Report revealed that CIA Director Richard Helms had supposedly destroyed 153 separate files on a long running, top secret project called MKULTRA, as his last act in office. In years to come many of those files were discovered as "misplaced" files. They revealed a long history of criminal activities by individuals who hid behind the National Security Act and ran amok, arrogantly treating citizens of their own country as just so many lab rats.

""I can hypnotize a man – without his knowledge or consent – into committing treason against the United States..." – Dr. George Estabrooks, 1943.

"This Canadian-born Rhodes Scholar was a hypnosis expert and former Professor at Colgate University with long-standing ties to U.S. military and domestic intelligence....

"[A]s I revealed in *Operation Mind Control* (1994), ***I once saw Sue on a Palm Springs golf course in the company of her alleged handler, Bob Hope.*** At that time I was Editor-in-Chief of Palm Springs Life magazine, which had just won the "Maggie" Award for publishing the best city magazine. It was at the Bob Hope Classic that I saw Sue, but I didn't speak to her, as I was busy covering the happenings and celebrities, which have graced the magazine since the 1950's. Sue was one of the Bob Hope Classic hostesses, assisting the public and the press in a variety of functions....

"Most lawyers and judges don't understand dissociative disorders because most "mental health professionals" don't understand them, and/or haven't bothered to educate the judicial branch of government. To begin to understand the full range of dissociative disorders, from Post-traumatic Stress Disorder to Bipolar Disorder to the former Multiple Personality Disorder (now called Dissociative Identity Disorder), one must confront the National Security State and its military/industrial complex, which created the killers who all too often came home from their service to their country to beat and sexually abuse their wives and children.

"One gets the impression today that the majority of both "mental health experts" and judges believe that Multiple Personality Disorder can easily be faked during expert examinations. However, *most professionals with experience treating DID will tell you that it is almost impossible to fake an autonomic response*, the kind of response that is used to assess the reality of a dissociated state. ***Faking an autonomic response would be about as easy as deliberately dilating or contracting your pupils without any change of light stimulus.***

"On one case the Freedom of Thought Foundation sent me to investigate,

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

the case of Robert Joe Moody, an alleged serial killer with a Top Secret security clearance in the USMC [United States Marine Corps], I brought one of the leading experts in the treatment of DID into the prison conference room. *Within minutes this doctor had the killer manifesting four different personalities. **When he first switched into the killer personality the room filled with heat.*** The doctor told me it was not unusual for a whole variety of physical changes to occur when a multiple switched. *The room quickly getting hot from the temperature change of Moody's body when he switched from one personality to the other is a good example of the sort of autonomic response I'm talking about. **I'd like to see even the best-trained actor do that on cue!***

"'Mental health professionals' generally overlook the possibility of deliberate programming. Or maybe that's part of the conspiracy against freedom of thought. *Many shrinks are themselves unwitting accomplices in this conspiracy...*

"Dr. Colin Ross, one of the leading experts on Dissociative Disorders, expressed the opinion that DID may be the cause of most of the serious problems of our society, such as gangsterism, drive-by shootings, schoolyard assassinations, random acts of terrorism and all the rest of the trauma America has been experiencing over the past few years – an idea not yet examined by criminologists, prison experts, and others who would supposedly protect and serve...."

Interestingly, Walter Bowart expressed all this in the late 1990's, yet what he discusses here is all the more relevant and poignant today. Consider the highly-suspect behaviors exhibited by individuals who committed some of the most infamous events in the last couple decades:

- Timothy McVeigh¹⁷, sentenced for the Oklahoma City Federal Building bomb in 1995.
- Eric Harris and Dylan Klebold, the two students who rampaged Columbine High School in 1999
- Seung-Hui Cho, a student who massacred 32 people at Virginia Tech in 2007
- James Eagan Holmes, a no-income, high-achieving University of Colorado medical grad student, who somehow obtained \$20,000 worth of specialized military weaponry and opened fire upon crowds at a movie theater in Aurora, Colorado on July 20th, 2012 – just days before a vote on a United Nations small arms treaty.¹⁸

All of these individuals exhibited traits of dissociative identity disorder (DID) and/or their behaviors were consistent with mind-controlled individuals as they carried out these atrocities. Continuing from Mr. Bowart's article:

"A cross section of our society finds its way into military service, and a representational number of them suffer from Dissociative Disorders. *These form a fertile pool for recruitment of programmed personnel.*

"After you've met a few of them, you realize they have one thing is common – they are highly suggestible. Thus it is easy to capitalize on the trauma implanted in their child's mind by daddy, uncle, a neighbor or whomever. Once dissociation shows up in the military "entrance tests," they are sorted out for programming. *From their ranks are created autonomic assassins, amnesic couriers, and Mata Hari sexpionage agents who've given their involuntary all with no consent form requested....*

"After spending the past five years studying programmed killers, it is refreshing to turn once again to Sue Ford's case. Most of us cannot keep from wincing at her vivid descriptions in certain parts. ***Others similarly victimized have experienced tortures so terrible (literally unspeakable) that they might think Sue had a "privileged" time of it.*** Though, Sue was used at a very 'high level' in such ways that required her physical preservation. ***Many survivors, it would appear, are generally too incapacitated to write their own story and too destitute or crippled to achieve sufficient recovery.***

"Sue's story... is the story of a survivor who truly has emerged as a 'Victor' against all odds. We must salute Sue. She has preceded the therapeutic community's understanding of dissociation and reintegration in the context of mind control. She's been a teacher as well as a patient, and *has inspired many of those who are leading the way toward real healing, not just a drugging of symptoms as is too commonly found to be the "mental health" cure for MPD/DID.* Through her valiant recovery from trauma-based mind control, Sue has paved the way for other survivors to follow.

"Let's join her in shining the light on the path for those survivors who are ready, willing and able to stand and be counted. Their liberation will be ours – all of us!"

Ron Patton

"Project Monarch: Nazi Mind Control"

"The Mystery Religions of ancient Egypt, Greece, India and Babylon helped lay the foundation for occultism, meaning "hidden knowledge." One of the earliest writings giving reference to occultism is **the Egyptian Book of the Dead**, a compilation of rituals *explicitly describing methods of torture and intimidation (to create trauma), the use of potions (drugs) and the casting of spells (hypnotism), ultimately **resulting in the total enslavement of the initiate.*** These have been the main ingredients for a part of occultism known as Satanism, throughout the ages....

"In 1776, a Bavarian Jesuit by the name of Adam Weishaupt was

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

commissioned by the House of Rothschild to centralize the power base of the Mystery Religions into what is commonly known as the Illuminati, meaning "Enlightened Ones." This was an amalgamation of powerful occultic bloodlines, elite secret societies and influential Masonic fraternities, with the desire to construct the framework for a "New World Order." The outward goal of this Utopia was to bring forth universal happiness to the human race. However, ***their underlying intention was to gradually increase control over the masses, thus becoming masters of the planet....***

"During [World War II], parallel behavioral research was led by Dr. George Estabrooks of Colgate University [Ed. Note: quoted earlier in Walter Bowart's comments]. His involvement with the Army, CID [US Army Criminal Investigation Command], FBI and other agencies remains shrouded in secrecy. However, *Estabrooks would occasionally "slip" and discuss his work involving the creation of hypno-programmed couriers and hypnotically-induced split personalities.*

"After WWII, the U.S. Department of Defense secretly imported many of the top German Nazi and Italian Fascist scientists and spies into the United States via *South America and the Vatican*. The code name for this operation was Project PAPERCLIP. One of the more prominent finds for the U.S. was **German General Reinhard Gehlen, Hitler's Chief of Intelligence against Russia**. Upon arriving in Washington, DC in 1945, Gehlen met extensively with President Truman, General William "Wild Bill" Donovan, Director of the Office of Strategic Services (OSS) and Allen Dulles, who would later become the stalwart head of the CIA. The objective of their brainstorming sessions was to reorganize the nominal American intelligence operation, transforming it into a highly efficient covert organization. ***The culmination of their efforts produced the Central Intelligence Group in 1946, renamed the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) in 1947.***

"*Reinhard Gehlen also had profound influence in helping to create the National Security Council, from which the **National Security Act of 1947** was derived. This particular piece of legislation was implemented to protect an unconscionable number of illegal government activities, including clandestine mind control programs....*

"A majority of the victims/survivors come from multi-generational Satanic families (bloodlines) and are ostensibly programmed "to fulfill their destiny as the chosen ones or chosen generations" (a term coined by Mengele at Auschwitz). Some are adopted out to families of similar origin. Others used in this neurological nightmare are deemed as the "expendable ones" (non-bloodliners), usually coming from orphanages, foster-care homes, or incestuous families with a long history of pedophilia. *There also appears to be a pattern of family members affiliated with government or military intelligence agencies.*

*"Many of the abused come from families who use Catholicism, Mormonism, or charismatic Christianity as a "front" for their abominable activities (though members of other religious groups are also involved.) [Ed. Note: I strongly admonish the reader to not discount this statement connecting Mormonism. This will be addressed later.] Victims/survivors generally respond more readily to a rigid religious (dogmatic, legalistic) hierarchical structure because it parallels their base programming. **Authority usually goes unchallenged**, as their will has been usurped through subjective and command-oriented conditioning.*

*"Physical identification characteristics on victims/survivors often include multiple electrical prod scars and/or resultant moles on their skin. A few may have had various parts of their bodies mutilated by knives, branding irons, or needles. Butterfly or occult tattoos are also common. Generally, *bloodliners are less likely to have the subsequent markings*, as their skin is to "remain pure and unblemished."*

*"The ultimate purpose of the sophisticated manipulation of these individuals may sound unrealistic, depending upon our interpretive understanding of the physical and spiritual realms. **The deepest and darkest alters** (i.e. "alternate personalities", those resulting from trauma-instilled DID) **within bloodliners are purported to be dormant until the "AntiChrist" is revealed**. These "New World Order" alters supposedly contain call-back orders and instructions to train and/or initiate a large influx of people (possibly clones or "soulless ones") *thereby stimulating social control programs into the new millennium....*"*

How Mind Control Is Implemented at Young Ages

*"The initial process begins with creating dissociation within the subject, usually occurring from the time of birth to about six years. This is primarily achieved through the use of electroshock (ECT) and is at times performed even when the child is in the mother's womb. Due to the severe trauma induced through ECT, sexual abuse and other methods, *the mind splits off into alternate personalities from the core*. Formerly referred to as Multiple Personality Disorder, it is presently recognized as Dissociative Identity Disorder and is the basis for MONARCH programming. Further conditioning of the victim's mind is enhanced through hypnotism, double-bind coercion, pleasure-pain reversals, food, water, sleep and sensory deprivation, along with various drugs which alter certain cerebral functions.*

*"The next stage is to *embed and compress detailed commands or messages within the specified alter*. This is achieved through the use of hi-tech headsets, in conjunction with computer-driven generators which emit inaudible sound waves or harmonics that *affect the RNA covering of neuron pathways to the subconscious and unconscious mind*. "Virtual Reality" optical devices are sometimes used simultaneously with the*

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

harmonic generators projecting pulsating colored lights, subliminals and split-screen visuals. High voltage electroshock is then used for memory dissolution.

"Programming is updated periodically and reinforced through visual, auditory and written mediums. Some of the first programming themes included the *Wizard of Oz* and *Alice and Wonderland*, both heavily saturated with occultic symbolism. *Many of the recent Disney movies and cartoons are used in a two-fold manner: **desensitizing the majority of the population**, using subliminals and neuro-linguistic programming, and **deliberately constructing specific triggers and keys for base programming of highly-impressionable MONARCH children....***

"In order to keep MKULTRA from being easily detected, the CIA segmented its subprojects into specialized fields of research and development at universities, prisons, private laboratories and hospitals.

"Of course, they were rewarded generously with government grants and miscellaneous funding. *The names and locations of some of the major institutions involved in MONARCH programming experimentation were/are: Cornell, Duke, Princeton, UCLA, University of Rochester, MIT, Georgetown University Hospital, Maimonides Medical Center, St. Elizabeth's Hospital (Washington, D.C.), Bell Laboratories, Stanford Research Institute, Westinghouse Friendship Laboratories, General Electric, ARCO and Manking Research Unlimited.*

"*The 'final product' was/is usually created on military installations and bases, where maximum security is required. Referred to as (re)programming centers or near-death trauma centers, the most heavily identified are: China Lake Naval Weapons Center, The Presidio, Ft. Dietrick, Ft. Campbell, Ft. Lewis, Ft. Hood, Redstone Arsenal, Offutt AFB, Patrick AFB, McClellan AFB, MacGill AFB, Kirkland AFB, Nellis AFB, Homestead AFB, Grissom AFB, Maxwell AFB and Tinker AFB. Other places recognized as major programming sites are Langley Research Center, Los Alamos National Laboratories, Tavistock Institute and areas in or by Mt. Shasta, CA, Lampe, MO and Las Vegas, NV.*

Notable Names

"One of the first documented cases of a MONARCH secret agent, was that of the voluptuous 1940's model, Candy Jones. The book, *The Control of Candy Jones*, portrays her 12 years of intrigue and suspense as a spy for the CIA. Jones, whose birthname is Jessica Wilcox, apparently fit the physiological profile as to be one of the initial experiments or human guinea pigs under the government's 'scientific' project, MKULTRA.

"The most publicized case of MONARCH monomania [i.e. focused interest in a single thing, idea, subject] has surfaced through the book *TRANCE*

Formation of America: The True Life Story of a CIA Slave by Cathy O'Brien. On the back cover it emphatically states, "Cathy O'Brien is the only vocal and recovered survivor of the Central Intelligence Agency's MK-Ultra Project Monarch mind control operation." This documented autobiography contains compelling accounts of O'Brien's years of unrelenting incest and eventual introduction into Project MONARCH by her perverted father. Along with co-author Mark Phillips, her rescuer and deprogrammer, Cathy covers an almost unbelievable array of conspiratorial crime: forced prostitution (white slavery) with those in the upper echelons of world politics, covert assignments as a "drug mule" and courier, and the country-western music industry's relationship with illegal CIA activities.

"Paul Bonacci, a courageous survivor who endured almost two decades of degradation under Project MONARCH, has *disclosed strong corroborating evidence of widescale crimes and corruption from the municipal/state level all the way up to the White House*. He has testified about sexually-abused males selected from Boy's Town in Nebraska and taken to nearby Offutt AFB, where he says they were subjected to intense MONARCH programming, directed mainly by Commander Bill Plemmons and [now-infamous satanist] former Lt. Col. Michael Aquino. *After thoroughly tormenting the young boys into mindless oblivion, they were used (along with girls) for pornography and prostitution with several of the nation's political and economic power-brokers*. Bonacci recalled being transported from the Air Force base via cargo planes to McClelland AFB in California. ***Along with other unfortunate adolescents and teenagers, he was driven to the elite retreat, Bohemian Grove.*** The perpetrators took full advantage of these innocent victims, committing unthinkable perversions in order to satisfy their deviant lusts. Some victims were apparently murdered, further traumatizing already terrified and broken children. (The following information is provided by Brice Taylor, at the time of this writing in 1999: Uri Dowbenko wrote an article for *Media Bypass* magazine (June 1999) where he reports that justice was finally served when a U.S. District Court recently awarded a \$1 million settlement to Bonacci, after years of legal aid from his attorney John DeCamp). [Ed. Note: Paul Bonacci's case is covered in detail in the book *The Franklin Coverup*, authored by John DeCamp. It is DeCamp's autobiographical account of his investigation while serving as a Nebraska state senator. Bonacci was later murdered in a hospital.]...

"*Lee Harvey Oswald, Sirhan-Sirhan, Charlie Manson, John Hinckley, Jr., Mark Chapman, David Koresh, Tim McVeigh and John Salvi are some notable names of infamy, **strongly suspected of being pawns** who were spawned by MKULTRA...*"

Pamela J. Monday, Ph.D

"Manufacturing The Mind Controlled Slave"

"It is vitally important to understand about dissociation, because in

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

learning about how someone's mind can actually be controlled by someone else, you must understand how it is possible to program the human mind as you would a computer. 'Programming' is a fairly recent term in the history of mind control (and is of course associated with computer technology). Perhaps you'd recognize it better as "brainwashing." In the POW camps, captors would refer to "freezing," a term used to destroy the person's identity. Using food and sleep deprivation, isolation, torture, chronic assault on a person's values, and instilling total dependence on the captor's for survival, a person's whole sense of self would be destroyed. *They would be totally helpless, broken, with no will of their own left. They would then be ready for the "brainwashing," or "refreezing" whereby a new value system and a new identity would be put in* through reward and punishment, conditioning or 'programming' that person to believe or do only what the captors wanted them to believe or do....

"Just as it is possible to break down a person in order to create someone you can control (by getting them to do anything you want them to do), so it is possible to program a part of a person's mind (a dissociated part that is split off, by trauma or other means, from connection with reality). You can 'teach' that part of the mind to do what you want it to do without the part of the mind that is conscious and aware knowing what's going on. Hence, people with multiple personalities report that they "lose time," whereby they don't remember where they have been or what they have been doing. Here is how a patient, repeatedly sadistically sexually abused as a child, explains it:

"Dissociation is a way of escaping the intolerable. I'm sure it happened first during the trauma itself, and was a *sanity-saving way of dealing with overwhelming physical pain as well as the psychological pain of betrayal.* For me it took the form of physical numbness and cold, and to this day, when I dissociate, I most often go numb. First my hands and feet go; I can't feel them, and if my eyes are closed, I have no sense of where they are in space. Then the numbness in my face starts. I can't feel my lips or cheeks.

"When I dissociate badly, the whole body goes and I feel and move like a block of wood... Worse than the physical dissociation is what happens mentally while the physical numbness is in place. I guess the only thing I can say in comparison is that *it's the mental equivalent of white noise, or radio static, that can leave me blank-faced and staring into space.* The thoughts that are there whip through at the speed of light with no coherence, organization or form. I get very confused. *It can range from being a little vague and spacey to full white out where I don't see or hear much.* This is really dangerous if I am driving. There have been some episodes where I don't remember getting someplace. I also sometimes just "clock out" and lose time. When I come back to myself I may not be immediately conscious that I've lost hours." – Penny

"During that 'dissociated' time, when she 'clocks out,' what is going on? *Another part of the mind has taken over; in Penny's case, another personality is 'in charge of' the body.* This personality (or alter) interacts with others and carries out certain tasks, but when Penny 'comes to' she has no knowledge of this other part of the self. As her therapist, I have talked to this other 'person' inside (the person is really only a part of her mind) and I know the personality characteristics of this person. I know that this part of Penny responds to the name 'Diane,' she is outspoken and can get angry if challenged (as opposed to Penny, who is meek and allows others to tell her what to do). Diane also has a peculiar way of tilting her head, almost in a flirty, cocky manner, something I have never seen Penny do, as she is much more rigid and controlled, both in posture and feelings....

"How do these dissociated parts get created? And how did "Diane" come to be? And why? To answer these questions, I will let a programmer herself tell you. This person was used from infancy in the United States Government mind control experiments, and her job as a youth and adult was to 'split off' parts of others' minds in order to program those parts to do what the experimenters wanted them to do. By programming, I mean that the human, in a dissociated or altered mind state, has been systematically and deliberately taught lessons, attitudes, beliefs, behaviors and responses to specific cues ('triggers') so as to respond on command in ways that benefit the person/groups doing the programming. Just as Ivan Pavlov's dogs were taught to salivate to the sound of a bell, in anticipation of the meat that was delivered soon after, so human beings can be taught to respond in infinite ways to cues in their environment that "trigger" responses. Assume that first, the child has been exposed to torture and hideous psychological and physical abuse to the extent that the child has learned to dissociate into altered states of mind.... ([C]urrent electronic technology... makes torturing children obsolete, in that trauma is no longer necessary to access altered brain states – thus, programming people is much "cleaner" and easier to do.) Here's how they do the programming:

"Techniques on 'Creating' New Children

"Daub fingertip size glob of vaseline or K-Y jelly on pressure points – wrists, inner elbows, behind knees, under ears. Take ends of 2 wires (black and red are easiest, negative/positive easier identified) with metal attachments (round, copper, holes in center) and tape with surgical tape on top of vaseline.

"Calibration – watch for muscular reactions, eye glazing, sweating, involuntary loss of bladder control, bowel control. Want to give enough of a current w/o being too much. Want child to remain alert.

"Words, codes given. Assignments given. 'Yes, one finger; No, raise two; Confused – raise right hand.'

"Clarify instructions. If still confusion, time to stop, take a break. Do

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

not allow any contact between patient and others until cycle is completed. Do not, under any circumstances, offer juices, snacks, etc. which could be construed as a 'reward' until the cycle is completed. Check carotid pulse for significant elevation in blood pressure. Do not wish to affect a heart attack. Heart attacks can occur in children.

"(Children are outfitted with diapers before the sessions begin, are also taken to the bathroom beforehand. Keeps down unnecessary interruptions). Keep voice on same level at ALL times. Not hurried, not raised or lowered. Same pace at all times. Droning, hypnotic effect. Helps to stabilize heart rate.

"When instructions given to child, and received, then and only then give reward of name for identification purposes. Code phrases – 'well done,' 'very good,' or 'you did real good.' Avoid hugs, touch, any other forms of physical contact. Eye contact necessary, stabilizing. Allow alter-state to form place of safety within, encourage alter to describe internal surroundings. (All is taped, voice-activated, recorded later in the computer records for others to refer to).

"One response is 'I want my mommy.' Necessary to remind child that, 1) 'Mommy is dead,' 2) 'Mommy brought you here' (only use if true), 3) 'Mommy is right outside – you can see her as soon as you've finished,' or 4) 'Mommy told me to tell you to be a good boy/girl.' Room is kept low lighted for maximum effect. They prefer only one person (interventionist) to be with the child. Less distractions.

"They also prefer it to be a person the child will not be able to ID on a day-to-day basis in 'outside' regular activities.

"Sessions can vary greatly, depending on the time allowance, expense allowance, urgency, etc. Occasionally exceptions are made for disciplinary measures. May (in that case) be an all-nighter. Keeping the room dark also helps simulate nighttime, which is conducive to their 'rehabilitation.'

"The children are taught responses according to Pavlov's theories – inpracticum. This basically involves uses of 'triggers' usually found in the subject's natural, normal home-based environment.

"Audiological: Grandfather clocks, church chimes set for certain hours of the day/night are the most preferred. Long-running TV programs are effective on short-time bases (due to the fact that they may change times, etc.). Dogs that bark at certain times of night are also effective; revving of an engine; car door opening and shutting; footsteps outside bedroom window. Preferable to use natural sights and sounds due to need not to arouse suspicions of any household members not actively involved.

"Visual: Phases of the moon, clock-faces (preferably digital for younger children), lights in most neighbors' houses turning off, moon rays coming through window in darkness of night (full moon), and fireflies can be very effective and seemingly harmless trigger.

"Other: nursery rhymes, flags, date on a calendar, religious holidays, hand signals, words, phrases, eye winks; virtually anything can be used as a trigger.

"Step #1 is invasion, step #2 is intervention. Once the first plateau of the cyclic invasionary process is completed, the child will be 'tested' – again in-office, using a number of visual/audiological sight/sound external invasion techniques to record the level of response of the subject (nicknamed 'knee-jerk' response). This can be a valuable tool in assessing the cost-and-time-effectiveness of this particular technique on this particular subject. Those children who respond more spontaneously are considered to be higher-value prospects for future experimentation." – Janus (the programming alter's name)"

"Are you beginning to understand how scientific principles and techniques are used to program people? Here's more from "Janus":

"I personally was assigned 12 babies as an older child. I was about 7 or 8 when I was first introduced to them all in a room. They were all children of families. So they were long-term projects. I programmed other children, too. I was found to have a knack for trouble-shooting – figuring how what went 'haywire' and 'reprogramming' them. I didn't try to memorize the systems. That wasn't my job. My job was to CREATE alter personalities. There were other people who were more trained in the specific skills of teaching the alters specific jobs. Once an alter was created, and trained to come out in response to a trigger, then they had to learn their jobs. Sometimes I would visit different locations and help train others how to train the children."....

"If any of the readers are still doubtful about whether mind control really exists, I invite you to read the public transcripts of the hearing by the Senate Committee on Radiation Experiments that was held on April 15, 1997. On that date, Valerie Wolfe (a therapist from New Orleans) and her patient testified before the Senate committee about the mind control experiments that are still being conducted in our country. They were allowed to testify because, even though they were reporting mind control, rather than radiation experimentation, the high-level people named as conducting the experiments were many of the same names that had been exposed as doing the radiation experiments. *When they finished testifying, Valerie reports, "you could hear a pin drop."* It was not in the mandate of that committee to investigate the mind control experimentation; but the Committee did formally issue a request to the President that a thorough investigation be conducted. The transcript of this hearing is riveting; no one can tell the story more convincingly that

those who have been through it. [Ed. Note: This transcript is included in the supporting material.¹⁹] *As you read Sue Ford's story, keep in mind these things that I have written. Know that thousands of people have come forth with information about these abuses."*

Mary Lewis, LCSW (Licensed Clinical Social Worker)

"Awakening To The Realities Of Mind Control"

"During my undergraduate work, a professor discussed incest briefly, and then with some disdain, assured us that we would probably never see such a thing, since it only occurred in the "Hills of Kentucky." I believed him. The idea of such a horrible thing happening to another human being never crossed my mind again for many years. During my masters program, I again received no information about sexual abuse, or for that matter, any other abuse. I did not learn about addictions. I learned about research, and how to do it. That is an over-simplification of my experience, but *suffice it to say, it did not prepare me for what I was to learn in the field of social work* as I came to know it.

"I was assigned an internship as a unit social worker in a freestanding psychiatric hospital. Thus began my real education. In October of that year, I experienced a poignant moment, branded in my mind. One of the nurses on the unit was commenting on the unusually high number of sexual abuse cases we had on the unit, when another nurse commented, "Oh, didn't you know this is borderline season?" [i.e. Borderline Personality Disorder²⁰] I was shocked to hear such a statement, but it was a long time before I understood the full implications of that remark.

"Following my internship, I was then employed as the unit social worker at this hospital. *It was here that I began to hear bizarre stories of satanic ritual abuse from several of the patients.* We also saw several cases of self-mutilation, something I sincerely did not know ever happened, much less in such massive numbers. Cutting, burning, using acid to burn the skin, even one patient who purposely put a screw in her leg and let it get infected. This was all new to me. ***I didn't know what to make of the ritual abuse stories; they were extremely serious in nature, and beyond my ability to believe. I had never heard of such a thing, and yet, hearing the same type of thing over and over from so many different patients, confused me.*** Something was most certainly not right, but I still had no idea what was really going on.

"As I began my private practice, I began to hear more and more stories related to horrible, ritualistic, disgusting abuse.... *I was still confused and concerned about how I could be hearing **so many similar things from such a diverse population of people.***

***"My belief system did not include even the possibility of such trauma,* and yet the possibility that it might be true started to seep into**

my mind. *Over a period of a year and a half, I had three different clients draw pictures for me, talk to me, and cry to me **about the horrors of what happened to them while visiting Disney World.*** They all three drew pictures, explained details and were horrified at what they had endured at the most wonderful of rides 'It's a Small World.'...

"So, indeed I was shocked, and scared when I began to *hear such things that were so similar, from people that did not know each other. Better yet, **I was still extremely skeptical. I did not want to believe that it was possible. I did not want to give up my dream world. I did not want to change my way of thinking....***

"Certain themes have surfaced throughout the years, which to this day continue to amaze me as I hear them over and over. *The Disney Parks, MGM Studios, Disney Movies, Disney characters, and Disney songs have been used in conjunction with the programming.* My understanding of this is that ***using such a familiar and popular theme assures that the program will be triggered easily.*** *To anyone who is a Disney fan (and who is not), this is probably one of the hardest things to believe. **However, sitting where I sit, hearing what I hear, and seeing what I see, I cannot refute this truth anymore.***

"Certain animals are used in the programming. Dolphins are a common program. Birds are also used to ensure the silence of the programmed person. The child is told that birds can hear what they do, and if they tell, the bird will fly back and tell on them. There is a constant fear of going to jail, as well. One of the ways this is instilled, is the child is forced into participating in some diabolical, criminal act, and then the child is told they are an accomplice. Thus, if they ever tell, they too will go to jail."

After taking in Sue Ford's testimony, along with the personal and professional statements of those who have worked for years with people like Sue, I hope that the reader can better grasp not only the reality of agency-robbing mind control, but that there truly exists an astonishing pervasiveness of it throughout the esoteric realms of secret societies (i.e. "Wonderland"). This pervasiveness bleeds over into the "outside" exoteric world (i.e. our surface world) through its countless victims. Many of those victims don't even comprehend they have DID programming within them. Even for those victims who have the emotional/mental capacity to explain the hellish torments they've suffered, they are ensnared within a network of insiders who – as is the case with all conspiracies – have a deeply vested interest in *not* exposing the secrets, and *not* letting other insiders expose anything.

Mind control permeates everything occult; it is an essential component of their *modus operandi*. For most involved, it continues from one generation to the next. Terrorizing, intimidation, sinister threats, hurting loved ones,

MIND CONTROL: PERFECTION IN SLAVERY

murder-as-suicide: this is what anyone who wants to “escape” must face. There are precious few people on the outside who would be capable of comprehending their tales, to even be able to believe them, let alone be able to extend meaningful assistance to them for their safety and recovery.

I pray that the next time the reader encounters a “wild” tale by a whistle-blower about such matters, one will extend the benefit of the doubt and listen with empathy and objectivity.

-
- 1 Moses 4:3 (emphasis added)
 - 2 Ether 8:17-18 (emphasis added)
 - 3 D&C 76:31-37 (emphasis added)
 - 4 Moses 5:24,25
 - 5 Source – <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mkultra> (emphasis added)
 - 6 *Ibid.*
 - 7 Matthew 18:4-7 (emphasis added)
 - 8 Sue published her book under the pen name Brice Taylor in order to protect her identity at the time of publication
 - 9 Refer to the following PDF files in the supporting material: Cathy O'Brien - Trance Formation of America, and Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories
 - 10 Some of such cases are detailed in former Oklahoma State Senator John DeCamp's book *The Franklin Cover-Up*, which was first published in 1992. These cases are covered in the documentary Conspiracy of Silence, which was suppressed – the final cut of the film was destroyed before its scheduled time to be aired on the Discovery Channel on May 3rd, 1994. (Only a rough cut in poor condition survived.) The documentary interviews John DeCamp and some of the victim-whistleblowers, the most outspoken of which died under highly suspicious circumstances shortly thereafter. The video of the rough cut of this documentary is also included in the supporting material. Refer to the video file in the supporting material: Conspiracy of Silence_Surviving Rough Cut
 - 11 Refer to the supporting material concerning Brice Taylor (Sue Ford)
 - 12 “JonBenét Patricia Ramsey (August 6, 1990 – December 25, 1996) was an American child beauty pageant contestant who was murdered in her home in Boulder, Colorado, in 1996. The six-year-old's body was *found in the basement of the family home nearly eight hours after she was reported missing*. She had been *struck on the head and strangled*. [Ed. note: psychological trauma attempts carried too far?] The case, which after several grand jury hearings remains unsolved, continues to generate public and media interest.
“Colorado law enforcement agencies initially suspected JonBenét's parents and her brother. However, the family was partially exonerated in 2003 when DNA taken from the victim's clothes suggested they were not involved.... Reports have also *questioned the police's overall handling of the case....* [Ed. note: tampering of evidence? Possible false testimony from DNA labs?] Her parents would not be completely cleared until July 2008. In February 2009, the Boulder Police Department took the case back from the district attorney to reopen the investigation.
“Media coverage of the case has often focused on JonBenét's *participation in*

child beauty pageants, her parents' affluence and the unusual evidence in the case."

(Source – http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/JonBenét_Ramsey)

A good deal of public distrust towards JonBenét's parents resulted when pageantry and other beauty photos and videos of her surfaced in tabloid publications – wherein this cute little six year old girl was made up (and even professionally smiled, cat-walked and posed) like a mature young adult model more akin to high-class pedophilia – nothing like an innocent carefree child only six years old.

Truly where's there's smoke, there's fire. In light of the evidence and testimony coming forth concerning the reality of multi-generational ritually abusive families (and their connections to powerful secret combinations and people in key infiltrated areas of government) the bizarreness of the circumstances surrounding and the handling of JonBenét's death – let alone the disturbingly-mature pageantry images of her – all strongly suggest that her parents are tied to these groups and that JonBenét was also under trauma-based mind control.

- 13 "Twentynine Palms is the home to the world's largest Marine Corps Base. It is the premier training facility in the world for Marine operations and draws military personnel from all over the world for Combined Arms Exercises." Source – <http://www.globalsecurity.org/military/facility/29palms.htm>

- 14 Sue Ford's book (published under the pseudonym Brice Taylor) *Thanks for the Memories* is included in PDF form in the supporting material. Additionally, there are scanned images from the book included as well.

- 15 Sue Ford / Brice Taylor *Thanks for the Memories* p. 194-195

- 16 Mark Phillips' tale of how he helped Cathy escape, then spent months deprogramming her and helping her heal, doesn't quite fully check out. This is not just my "gut feeling," it is noted from a number of persons who have personally dealt with or interacted on a number of occasions with agent Phillips, including Sue Ford. There are a number of red flags about him.

While there's almost no doubt that Cathy is indeed a trauma-based mind control victim, it is (unfortunately) likely that she is *still* deeply programmed and is being handled by Mark, who likely continues to do the CIA's bidding. If this is the case, Mark then functions as her gatekeeper – wherein a certain amount of comparatively-innocuous truth is tolerated to be exposed, yet control is maintained so that the most highly sensitive information is never breached. One particularly compelling first-hand testimony of the likeliness of this scenario is included in the supporting material.

Refer to the pdf file in the supporting material: Cathy's 'Rescuer' Mark Phillips.pdf Despite this, there is still much to glean from Cathy's account. Her book is copyrighted, so I did not include a pdf of it in the supporting material. However, a transcript from one of her 2006 public appearances is included.

Refer to the pdf file in the supporting material: Cathy O'Brien - Public Testimony Transcript

I must warn that some of the contents of Cathy's account are even more disturbing and explicit than what Sue shares during her public appearance.

- 17 William Cooper said that McVeigh and his Oklahoma City bombing accomplice visited his property a few years before the event. Among other things they said that they were getting help from the military to "make this country better" and

CHAPTER NOTES

that the military had implanted chips into their skulls to enhance their abilities. Cooper insisted that they leave, and threatened to have them arrested if they ever came on his property again.

18 Source—

http://www.naturalnews.com/036536_James_Holmes_shooting_false_flag.html

Also, refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: NaturalNews - Colorado Batman shooting appears to be staged

19 Refer to the PDF in the supporting material: Mind Control Survivors' Testimony at the Human Radiation Experiments Hearings

20 "Borderline personality disorder (BPD) is a mental disorder characterized by disturbed and unstable interpersonal relationships and self-image, along with impulsive, reckless, and often self-destructive behavior.

"Individuals with BPD have a history of unstable interpersonal relationships. They have difficulty interpreting reality and view significant people in their lives as either completely flawless or extremely unfair and uncaring (a phenomenon known as "splitting"). These alternating feelings of idealization and devaluation are the hallmark feature of borderline personality disorder. Because borderline patients set up such excessive and unrealistic expectations for others, they are inevitably disappointed when their expectations aren't realized.

"The term "borderline" was originally used by psychologist Adolf Stern in the 1930s to describe patients whose condition bordered somewhere between psychosis and neurosis . It has also been used to describe the borderline states of consciousness these patients sometimes feel when they experience dissociative symptoms (a feeling of disconnection from oneself).

"Adults with borderline personalities often have a history of significant childhood traumas such as emotional, physical, and/or sexual abuse and parental neglect or loss. Feelings of inadequacy and self-loathing that arise from these situations may be key in developing the borderline personality. It has also been theorized that these patients try to compensate for the care they were denied in childhood through the idealized demands they now make on themselves and on others as adults."

Source — <http://www.minddisorders.com/A-Br/Borderline-personality-disorder.html>

Journal Excerpt 6 - February 2002 (28 years old)

I had a vivid, unforgettable dream last night.

My viewpoint is several hundred feet above the Atlantic Ocean. I watch as a man swims across the Atlantic ocean (heading east towards Europe) with great speed. I know instinctively that this man is a chosen prophet - one who has been given full power from God to carry out His will. He is dressed in very simple, brown clothing - not exactly robes - more like a khaki-colored outfit I have never seen before and cannot describe. His hair is short; he has no facial hair. He appears to be no older than 50, possibly even in his 30's. He is physically swimming, paddling one arm in front of the other, but with his head always above water and focused on his destination. He covers great distances quickly, about a mile with each stroke - but the water's wake is no greater than a normal swimmer. I see him quickly approach land, and as he nears, I hear great shouts of terror and panic from people on land.

As he pulls himself out of the water onto land, my viewpoint shifts to a couple hundred feet behind him. He is now standing immediately before Vatican City, with its thick outer walls and structures within. From my perspective I can see the outer wall and the tops of the structures inside. The sky is filled with gray, stormy clouds. On top of the walls and structures stand dozens of elite Catholic clergy dressed in their various robes and hats. Although I don't see his face, I know that the man of God is glaring at them, and they are pleading with him to spare them, wailing such things as "NO! PLEASE! NOOOOOO! DON'T DO IT!" They shriek in terror for him to depart.

This man on God's errand stands there for a while, arms at his sides, glaring at the inhabitants of the city. Then, suddenly, he thrusts up both his arms in the air, hands open towards the gloomy, cloudy skies. Instantly, a bellowing musical chord, as if played forcefully from an organ, emanates and reverberates from the skies. It is heard everywhere. The priests and clerics on the walls and roofs erupt with blood-curdling screams of horror and panic, yet they are nearly drowned out by the musical cord which continues to fill the skies, as well as the noise which quickly follows it.

Within seconds, a deep rumbling echoes from the heavens. The clouds dilate open directly above the city, forming a giant hole in the thick dark clouds. Lava-red light emanates from the hole. Once the hole opens up

several thousand feet wide, a giant fireball nearly as large as the hole quickly descends through it, yet it stops about a half-mile above the city and stays there stationary for several seconds. It is almost as if the entire fireball itself is made of dark-red lava rock or brimstone, with flames bursting and flowing out of it everywhere. Suspended there above the city, suddenly, in a joltingly-fast split-second, the fireball rotates 180 degrees. The now-revealed opposite side of this fireball has a giant face - a furious face, of the style that is carved into stonework on and around old Mayan architecture. This face-engraving takes up the entire side of the monstrous brimstone ball. The mouth of the face is shaped like a large open circle.

The sight is terrifyingly primal. The priests and clerics erupt with the screams of the damned, which are now so loud as to compete with the ground-vibrating rumbling noises emanating from the heavens. Mere seconds after the fireball rotates to show its furious face, a pillar of liquid fire, like a concentrated stream of near-white-hot lava, violently spews out of the mouth. The entirety of Vatican City - the walls, the structures, the priests and clerics - are instantly disintegrated as this liquid fire engulfs all of it. The prophet continues to hold up his arms, his hands upward, until every single aspect of the city is eradicated, vaporized. Nothing is left - no ruins, no statues, not even sections of the surrounding walls. Nothing.

It is as though Vatican City had never existed.

I woke up directly after this. I have nothing against the Catholic Church. Why would I dream something like this??

TESTIMONY OF A "WONDERLAND" ESCAPEE

The higher I went in the Jesuit Order, the more corruption I saw within the institution. I was invited to attend a secret black mass by high-ranking Jesuits in a monastery in the northern part of Spain. When I knelt to kiss the ring of a high official, I saw a symbol on that ring that made my blood run cold. It was a Masonic symbol! [i.e. the compass and square] A thing I hated and I had been told to fight against it.... I found out the Jesuit General was also a Mason and a member of the Communist Party in Spain.

– Alberto Rivera, ex-Jesuit¹

Like Sue Ford, there are a number of people who have escaped "Wonderland" – the hellish world of fear and mind control that is Luciferianism/Satanism – and have been able to establish a comparatively-normal life on the outside. Once out, most of them situate themselves in a way that they and their children are not dragged back in – which usually involves staying completely quiet about it all. (If this sounds like those cliché from getting-out-of-the-Mafia stories, let me remind you that the Mafia is actually nothing more than a branch of Luciferianism, as are all secret societies. In fact, the Mafia is comparatively low on the massive organizational totem pole, and functions as intimidation/muscle/enforcement for much more powerful groups higher up.)

Nothing is more dangerous for someone who escaped "Wonderland" than to openly discuss the details of it to the "profane" general public. It is life-threatening to the whistle-blower and their loved ones. Such leaks are extremely rare, which is why the following interview with investigative journalist Greg Szymanski is so important to consider. Starting in March

TESTIMONY OF A "WONDERLAND" ESCAPEE

2000, a woman who goes by the pseudonym "Svali" began writing monthly articles meant for survivors of SRA (Satanic Ritual Abuse) on a now-defunct publishing website. In December 2000, the editor of another (now defunct) publishing website contacted her and conducted an 18-part interview via email. This is included in PDF form in the supporting material.²

In 2006, Szymanski was able to contact Svali and interview her on his radio show.³ As you read through the portions of the transcript included here, keep in mind that the term "Illuminati" is used as the general term which conspiracy theorists use to identify the secretive whole of the Luciferian (under)world. Recall that, in Volume I, I explained how the term "Illuminati" in that world refers to an "enlightened" status, an upper echelon rank – not unlike how the term "High Priest" within the LDS Church denotes an upper status/rank. Therefore, in the context of this interview, consider every mention of "Illuminati" as the equivalent of the leadership of the church of the devil. ("GS" denotes Greg Szymanski, "SV" denotes Svali, all-caps emphasis interpreted from source, other emphasis added):

GS: [Today] we're going to get deep inside the Illuminati, the Family, the Order. We have a guest who was involved with this group, born into it, for over thirty years.... ***It's a whole different ballgame when you're actually talking to someone with experiences like this. It takes it out of that realm of what is quasi-fiction fact, into the realm of reality.*** It's really shocking.... This is going on in our country. All the things you're seeing regarding our rights being taken away, the police state, the war in Iraq, 9/11 – all these things have to do with this powerful group. I know you don't give radio interviews, and I really want to thank you, because I think it really does help the American people understand about this secret organization that you were born into. So I guess we can just start from the beginning. Tell us – right from the beginning you were born into this, from wealthy parents....

SV: I was born in the group, I was born in Germany, and came to the US very young. I basically went through all the training that the group – all members of the group do undergo training to various degrees, depending on the role. By the time I was a teenager, I was a youth leader, and by the time I was 22, I became the youngest member of Leadership Council in San Diego County. At that time I was a head trainer. I was the sixth trainer and eventually moved up to the second position....

GS: Now basically when you were growing up, I remember you told me that you were instilled at a young age.... You were told at a very young age you were special, you were "chosen." Correct?

SV: Well, ***they tell everyone in the group that they are special and chosen***, and that's one of the things that made me very cynical when I was older. You will never meet a person who is an Illuminati who has not been told or programmed for years that they're special, they're the only

one that can do things for quote-unquote “Family”. But I was told, yes, I would do great things for Family one day. The reason why I can filter some of this with an objective view is that I know what my role in the group was. It was over quite a significant number of other people. So I don’t evaluate my role or specialness within the group so much by what I was told, but by what I did.

Induction Ceremony at the Vatican

GS: So you reached the age of 12, and then you’re told by your parents you’re going to an induction ceremony in the Vatican.

SV: Yes.

GS: Can you tell us how that happened and what occurred at that ceremony when you went there?

SV: (deep breath, voice becomes stressed) Okay. Um, this isn’t easy to talk about, as you know. When I was twelve, I was flown over to Germany. And I was at, I’ll call them the German Fathers’ house, over there. And, there was some preparation for a few days, beforehand, and ***I was told that there would be a very important ceremony. And it was considered a sealing ceremony*** at that point. And basically I was told a little bit about what I was expected to do during the ceremony. When we got there, we went through the Vatican. ***Underneath the Vatican there is a large room*** that I described to you when we talked before. ***It has 13 catacomb chambers leading into it.*** And what they do is as you go down these steps into the room, you can see that it’s circular, so they’re all rounded. They bring out the mummies from the catacombs. And they set them beside each one [each of the 13 catacomb chambers], and they say “That’s the spirit of the Fathers watching over the ceremony.” During the ceremony, ***there was a large table in the center of the room. It was on top of this huge golden pentagram.*** They had a ceremony there.

GS: So how many kids, how many other children were with you being inducted into the Family or the Order, as they call it?

SV: There were two other children at that point. But there were several adults too.

GS: Okay.

SV: See, the Church also brings in adults to swear their allegiance, too, just so you know. I was told, and I don’t know if this is true, that if you want to rise to a certain position within the Catholic Church hierarchy, you do have to go through that ceremony as well.

GS: Okay, so you’re down in this room. Your parents weren’t present.

TESTIMONY OF A "WONDERLAND" ESCAPEE

SV: No. No. The German Father and the French Father were.

GS: Okay, and at that point tell our listeners what you witnessed.

SV: (pause, additional voice stress) Well, there was a table. It looked like dark glass in the center of the room. It was made out of a stone, but it was very shiny and darkened black. It may have been something like obsidian or onyx, I'm not sure. This was the only time I've seen stone like that. Around the corners it had these gold channels that collect fluids. ***A little boy was placed in the center of the table and drugged.*** I think he was drugged, because he was very quiet. He didn't move or say anything.

GS: This was a little three or four-year-old boy, right?

SV: Yes.

GS: Then they continued to do a child sacrifice?

SV: Yes, they did. Yes. I told you about that before. Yeah.

GS: Now afterwards, quite, what an unbelievable experience for a youth, a 12-year-old. What went through your mind when that happened?

SV: I was terrified! I mean, I was absolutely horrified. I – I – I – I can't describe the terror you feel when you go through something like that.

GS: And do you remember the words they were saying as this was going on?

SV: (pause) The man was in scarlet – he was speaking in Latin. And basically he was saying, "Please accept the sacrifice on this day." And then he said, "This sacrifice will seal the ceremony." And then he did it. Again, I was so terrified that – (sighs) Have you ever been in a situation where your heart's racing, but you can't do anything? You're just kind of sitting there, and you're kind of fading in and out? Imagine your heart rate going up to about 220. You can't move. You're kind of shaking, but you're trying not to show it. It was horrible. Actually, I keep thinking inside, "I can't wait 'till it's over. I can't wait." You don't say this, but inside you're just saying over and over, "I can't wait 'till this is over. I can't wait 'till this is over. I can't wait 'till it's over." Afterwards, the man in scarlet, he had a huge golden ring on his hand. He came over to the center of the room. Each of the people that were swearing that day had to go forward and kneel before him and kiss his ring, and swear my allegiance to the New Order, to the New World Order for all – until my death.

GS: Now at that point you were escorted out.

SV: Yes. Yeah. After the ceremony was all over. I mean, the other people also did theirs as well. They had to swear their allegiance too.

GS: And they were the same age as you?

SV: The two children were, but there were also three adults that went forward and did the same. And **afterwards, we were told**, (slowly and precisely) **"May the same to you or worse occur should you ever break this oath."**... It was very difficult to go through, just because the sense of horrific oppression down there was the worst I've [ever felt.] I've gone through some ceremonies in my life in the Illuminati, you do go through them. But I have to say that in my experience this was the worst, just because – I can't explain the amount of darkness in that room. It was just pure evil. And unless you've ever been in a – seen a person – it was just horrible. It wasn't just what happened, but just – I mean, the oppression. And **I'm a Christian now, and I know the difference between when there is evil present – oppression – or when God's love is present, which is joy and peace. That's the exact opposite of what there was in that room....**

GS: I grew up a Catholic.... About 25 years ago, I was a reporter and a freelance writer in Rome, and I spent six years there.... When I started researching the Illuminati as a reporter in Rome, and I realized there was a bad portion of the Church, I looked at it. I had to deal with the evil and the good. So that's the way I reconciled it. The evil WITHIN the Catholic Church, at the high level of the Vatican, which seeps down into many, many areas.... I walked through the Vatican many, many times – hundreds of times. I covered the papal addresses, things like that. During that time I was there during a Vatican scandal, which involved the Church bank and other things – members of the Illuminati, the Freemasons.

I was approached by a woman, Maria Vendital, and I'll never forget this. Rome's a small town. People knew I was covering stories about the secret societies, things like that. I had to ask people. Well, **this woman came up to me and told me similar stories. She wasn't quite as specific because she couldn't handle it without breaking out crying, and tried to commit suicide twice because she couldn't get out of the Illuminati.** She was a member, born into it from a very wealthy northern Italian family. She told me basically the same ceremony took place with her. And so, when I started talking to you, I wanted to relay that to you, and also to relay to my listeners that **I also heard about this, 25 years ago, from a woman by the name of Maria, and several other people in Italy that I talked to.** I was never able to locate or really, probably for my own safety, ever find out what happened.... Svali, you leave the induction ceremony. You walk out into the Vatican courtyard with one of the fathers, I believe. What did he tell you then?

SV: At that point he just told me to never forget. He told me that I had performed well during the ceremony because I didn't scream or pass out or anything like that. He said "You did very well," and he was pleased. Then we stayed at a home nearby. It must have been a local person. I didn't know them. We spent the night there before we went back to

TESTIMONY OF A “WONDERLAND” ESCAPEE

Germany.

GS: Okay, and what about the other people during the ceremony. How did they handle themselves? Do you remember?

SV: (sighs) I’m going to say, unfortunately, I was so – when you’re in that kind of situation, the last thing you’re thinking about sometimes is what the other people are doing. I was just so trying not to lose it myself. I do know that no one screamed or shouted or anything like that. Everyone was quiet. I think [the term] ‘dead silence’ is [apt], unless the person was spoken to – or unless they had to go forward and kiss the ring.

Multi-Generational Entrapment, Twelve Disciplines

GS: A question I’ve wanted to ask you, and this is such a wide subject. I’ve had a chance to talk to you for a number of days, and I’ve done some stories about it. You go back home, you’re twelve years old. You say you were schooled in the twelve disciplines.

[Ed. Note: this is what Svali wrote concerning the “12 disciplines” (emphasis added):

“1. To not need. 2. To not want. 3. To not wish. 4. Survival of the fittest. 5. The code of silence. 6. **Betrayal is the greatest good.** 7. Not caring. 8. Time travel: “The child will be taught spiritual principles of “traveling” both internally and externally, with set ups, role playing, and guided exercises reinforced with trauma. The goal will be to reach “enlightenment”, an ecstatic state of dissociation reached after severe trauma.”

“9,10,11: “Sexual trauma, learning to dissociate and increase cognition, decrease feeling.” (Details of these 3 steps vary according to child’s future role in the cult. These roles include Informers, Breeders, Prostitutes, Pornography, Media personnel, Preparers, Readers, Cutters, Chanters, High Priest/Priestess, Trainers, Punishers, Trackers, Teachers, Child Care, Couriers, Commanding Officers and Behavioral Scientists.)

“12. Coming of age ceremony (Vatican underground sacrifice).”]

GS: So your life begins, and you know now you’re in some type of organization that is very different than what most people experience....

SV: Okay. Well Greg, first I want to say that my purpose in talking about this is not to glorify evil. There are very wicked people out there, very powerful people. I don’t want to at all magnify their power, but I do want people to know that this is real. These people exist. People who say there are people out there that are involved in these activities – it really happens. I also, because **I know that there are children being hurt**

in the group every day, and that's my motivation for coming forward. I don't like giving interviews for obvious reasons. I am willing this one time to lay aside my privacy and personal safety because these people need to be stopped. They need to be stopped.

Normally ***children in the group are born into it. The Illuminati very rarely does outside recruitment.*** That's not their main method. It's just passed down generally, generationally from father to son, and mother to daughters to children. And so ***the whole family line has been in it. Throughout the centuries people have tried to escape, but a lot of times they were either poisoned, murdered or set up to look like a suicide.*** They don't like it when people leave, and they try to make it very difficult.... They go through an enormous amount of training, from the time they are an infant. You undergo indoctrination. And when I say indoctrination, I don't just mean like cult programming so much as watching your parents and seeing what they do. My parents modeled their behavior. To them the group was very important for growing up. I saw that three times a week, everything was dropped to tend to the activities.

Global-Corporate Structure, Awaiting Anti-Christ

SV (continuing): Basically the training process is designed to help you take on your adult role in the group. The Illuminati cover so many levels there too. ***It goes all the way from what most people think of as a satanic coven type thing, at the very low local level, all the way through – it's a huge, enormous business corporation.*** At the mid-levels, you have people overseeing finances and administration, who are overseeing – I mean, ***these people are making a LOT of money through gun running, through white slavery, prostitution, pornography.*** They have links and ties to the Mafia, left and right. And, in fact ***the mafia are afraid of them....*** because they know that you don't cross the members of the group. ***They have a very spiritual orientation.*** They are not satanic, though; ***they are Luciferian,*** which is different. The ultimate goal of their spiritual philosophy and their sense of discipline is ***they believe that should you complete all of your training, you become a god. That is their actual end goal.*** They believe in the achievement of Godhood – of Illuminist philosophy – through what they call Enlightenment, or Illumination, which is how they got their name.

They are international. In Europe there are twelve fathers who sit, who represent the different nations of Europe. ***They are very expectantly awaiting He Who Is To Come,*** and during that ceremony in the Vatican, on my knees ***I had to swear my allegiance to serve He Who Is To Come....*** At the top levels, [the leadership is] in Rome. That's the power center or the heart of the Illuminati, where the power base is. And that's why ***all leadership must swear fealty in Rome,*** because that's considered the core of, the spiritual center of the Universe. That's how

TESTIMONY OF A "WONDERLAND" ESCAPEE

they view it.... ***The European Fathers rule over what are called the different houses.*** For instance, if you are from Germany then you belong to the German House, if you are from France you belong to the French House – they call them Houses. UK, Russia, Poland, Belgium, Spain, Italy and others. From there, America was considered a mission field for them. In the 17, actually in the 1600s, Pittsburgh became the first port of entry for them. That's where they first settled. That's why it's still considered a spiritual power base for the group on the East Coast in the US....

From there, it spread out across the Atlantic seaboard, and then throughout the nation. The nation is divided into many regions, multiple regions but seven main regions. The East Coast region has its spiritual power base in Pittsburgh, but the administrative power base is in Alexandria, Virginia. That's where they administer the finances during the day to day operations. The West Coast, or the West region, west of the Mississippi, has its power base in the San Diego area.

GS: And that's where you spent a lot of time, correct?

SV: Yes. I was sent from, the Alexandria Council sent me to San Diego to help them out.... Those are the two, of course, main regions. And then each of those regions are divided into sub-regions. So then you have your Regional Councils sitting over those, and overseeing activities. ***If you can think of the structure of a large multinational corporation, that's really how the Illuminati is structured.*** Then beneath each of the regional councils are your local councils. They call them sister groups or sisters, or your local councils. Then you have your local groups under those as well, or what they call the sister groups. ***Any major metropolitan city could have anywhere from five to fifteen groups, depending on the size of the population base. Or more.***

GS: Now you were saying that, ***how many people are in this group in America now, from your estimate, know a lot of this stuff?***

SV: Pure Illuminati? ***I would say about one percent, give or take, based on population....***

Take that in for a moment: about 1% of the entire population of the United States is a member of "The Family", or "The Order," as they refer to themselves. She's not talking about the 90-odd percent of low-ranking, otherwise-ignorant Freemasons – she's talking about the number of people who are in-the-know – those who are multi-generational, who have been born into/sworn into it. ***At minimum, that's over 30,000,000 people in the U.S. alone.*** That is the population of America's "Wonderland," the American segment of the church of the devil.

"And the angel said unto me: Behold the formation of a church which is most abominable above all other churches, which slayeth the saints of God, yea, and tortureth them and bindeth them down, and yoketh them

with a yoke of iron, and bringeth them down into captivity. And it came to pass that I beheld this great and abominable church; and I saw the devil that he was the founder of it.... that great church, which is the mother of abominations... she is the whore of all the earth.

"And it came to pass that I looked and beheld the whore of all the earth, and she sat upon many waters; and she had dominion over all the earth, among all nations, kindreds, tongues, and people. And it came to pass that I beheld the church of the Lamb of God, and its numbers were few, because of the wickedness and abominations of the whore who sat upon many waters; nevertheless, I beheld that the church of the Lamb, who were the saints of God, were also upon all the face of the earth; and their dominions upon the face of the earth were small, because of the wickedness of the great whore whom I saw." (Nephi's vision recorded in 1 Nephi 13:5-6, 14:10-12)

Ponder a little more about this matter: if over 30,000,000 people in America are trained/sworn/captive members of the church of the devil, then every American must have *at minimum one friend, one co-worker, and/or one close acquaintance who is a member*. Every school ground, every local government, every medium-to-large church house, every medium-to-large business – has at least one in-the-know inducted member of the church of the devil. *There is not one place, one group, one school, nor one church/chapel that has not been infiltrated by them*. Additionally, consider that the same applies on a larger scale throughout Europe, as well as in greater or smaller numbers throughout the remaining nations on the earth (only mostly through other divisions/secret societies of the devil's church).

Note: I am not trying to induce panic nor cause the reader to pull out one's contact list and start witch-hunting. Any kind of fear-based reaction is completely unnecessary and counterproductive. I stress these matters because it is imperative for the reader to comprehend that a massive base of individuals are involved for life in a conspiracy of compelled compliance (such as Svali was prior to escaping), and some of them are in trauma-based DID programmed states wherewith they honestly *do not even realize* that they are even a part of it (such as Cathy O'Brien and Sue Ford used to be).

That's how awful the situation is! That's how awful it has become!

This is real. The worst case scenario is at our doors.

As you continue, please grasp that the whole ridiculous-sounding "taking over the world" goal is not only possible, it is imminent – elaborated upon by John the Beloved in the book of Revelation.

World Domination Imminent, Branches of Learning

GS: Now their goal, basically. Just give us the broad overview goal....

SV: When you say "To rule the world," it almost sounds laughable – like "yeah, right."... But really, that is their goal. They believe that they are the intelligent leaders, and they believe that the rest of the world are sheep that need wise [rulers] – ***They see themselves as wise leadership. So they believe that their goal is to rule the world.*** But at the same time, they have occult ways of doing that. Their main way of doing that is behind the scenes. ***They believe in infiltration of the media, of education and of government – those are the three areas – and of the financial system.*** And they have successfully done quite a bit of all four throughout Europe and the US, as well as other countries....

The Illuminati is divided into different branches of learning. These branches include Sciences, Military, Government, Leadership, Scholarship and Spiritual. Those are the six branches of learning. And while all children need to undergo some training or teaching in each area, as they get older – They begin profiling you from infancy, and they know where your activities and abilities are. Then you're, you really go into – Most people specialize in one branch or possibly two branches of learning.

GS: And you were involved in what branch?

SV: I was heavily involved in Sciences, and also to some degree I did some Spiritual as well – but mainly Sciences.... They did a lot of what you might call human experimentation. And they had a lot of research protocols going on. So one thing I did was to supervise the research going on. I was teaching the younger trainers and head trainers how to do things more efficiently, how to do their job well, but also reviewing their research reports for errors or problems. Eventually I became kind of a consultant. If a problem occurred, or they didn't know how to install something, or if they needed assistance, I would help them with problem solving as well....

Example of Disassociation Training in Infants

SV: [Let me] give you an example of just one type of training that they do. ***I was two years old. I was left in a room for probably a 24-hour period.*** When you are that age it is hard to estimate, but it was a long time. I know that the sun did go around at least once, and it wasn't just like a few hours.

At that age, when you are two and you are left alone without food and water, you are terrified. And at the end of the time, I was just dying of thirst. My morale was just – ***I have never been so thirsty in my entire life.*** My mother walked into the room. A lot of times they have the children or the parents train the children at these early ages. There was a table in the middle of the room and I was sitting at it. ***She brings in this***

cold pitcher of water and she starts pouring it. I said, "Mom! I want a drink of water," and she slapped me out of the chair.
(pause)

And I remember crying! And as I'm crying, she's drinking the water in front of me, and she leaves! She takes the pitcher of water. And a couple of hours later, she came back in and did the same thing. And I said, "Mom, Mom, I want water!" And ***she slapped me! I mean, across the room.*** After this had happened about three times, luckily I was bright enough that by the third time she came in, I mean, I remember crying silently, but I just looked at her. I didn't ask. After she got up and left with the pitcher, a man came into the room. He said, "You did very well that time." And then he gave me a drink of water.

That was part of the "learning not to want" stage. Looking back on it, ***I realize now as an adult that the part of that training was to teach me not to recognize my own physiological needs and respond to them, but to look to outside people to tell me what I wanted or needed.***

Dual Life, Impeccable Security Measures

GS: Now you basically, you told me you led a dual life in the Illuminati. That's basically how they function.

SV: Oh yeah!

GS: You have a day job, and then at nighttime you're quite busy sometimes with the cult activities, correct?

SV: Yes....

GS: I remember I mentioned to you, you said you had these meetings three times a week. I said, "Well, what about if I wanted to go and visit, and maybe do a story about them?" What would happen, or how could – would I be able to find one of these meetings that were going on, in your area of Escondido?

SV: Well no, because of the security measures. And A), you really don't want to show up unannounced at a meeting if you could get through their security, because the chances are you would never make it out alive. Let's just say that a certain auto accident would occur, and be reported in the papers: "Unfortunate accident – man accidentally runs into tree." I mean, I'm serious!

The security that they have during group meetings is so intense that it would be very difficult. They have security at the one-mile perimeter, the three-mile perimeter and the five-mile perimeter. They have three people assigned. Usually one is up in a tree where you can't see him at the five-mile perimeter. And then you have one person who is standing, looks like a

TESTIMONY OF A "WONDERLAND" ESCAPEE

security guard for the estate, because ***these are often [held at] large, wealthy estates***, which is appropriate. He is dressed in a uniform. The third person is standing hidden behind a tree. As cars come through, and they come through the gates – remember ***these are gated estates***. So if it's not someone on their approved license checklist, they will stop the car. It's just like at a military installation. They will say, "Can I help you? Are you lost?" Their goal is to delay the person. Now if a person is saying, "Oh, this is blah blah blah," and they are just asking for directions, they will give them directions, be very pleasant and send them on their way, to where they are supposed to be going.

But if they are acting as if they want to go further into the estate, and this is not an okay person, then they will say, "Uh, all right, well HE'S NOT EXPECTING YOU." That's a code word. That tells the person either behind, up in the tree, or hidden further back – they radio ahead and they say "UNEXPECTED VISITOR." ***At that point, everyone has been trained to pick up and leave immediately, within five minutes – with no traces of the activity.***

GS: So this is some of the methods they go through so you don't get caught. I know that you wrote an article about why the cult doesn't get caught. It's pretty specific.... I find that to be interesting – why the cult doesn't get caught. Is there anything in just a brief time you could explain to us?

SV: Well, ***their security, their money, their influence***. Some of these people even own newspapers. Imagine trying to get an article published disclosing [any of this] – There's a lot of reasons why they don't get caught. That's the first thing people ask. Then my next question is, "Well, how many child pornographers are there out there, that the police have been chasing for years, and have never found or caught?" And they're not even members of a secret organization. They're just trying to hide....

Infiltration, Control at the Highest Levels

GS: What did you learn about the infiltration of this group into all our different areas of government and media? They are basically at the high levels of most of our financial institutions also, correct?

SV: Yes....

GS: How come things are moving a little bit faster in America now? I remember back in the 80s when I was confronted with this, when I came back home I didn't really see this kind of New World Order movement – all this different symbolism that you see now. What is going on?... Why are things stepped up since 9-11?

SV: I believe it's because they can see the fulfillment of their goal – See, I'm going to sound very cynical now, and please forgive me for this, okay?

Their goal is to rule the world, and personally I believe that they do – it's just not open yet. And they say ***they're now preparing people for when they disclose themselves openly***. Does that mean that they can't be stopped? I believe they could. ***I believe it would take a miracle [to stop them], because of the amount of infiltration I see at all levels of society, and the world.*** These guys, these people have a lot of money. They have a lot of influence. And ***your average person has no idea of how much is going on behind the scenes that no one understands***. But, with that said, I think that they're already there, they just aren't open.... I think the average person would be horrified to know how much is going on behind the scenes that people really don't know.

I don't want to sound disparaging, because I am also a strong Christian. I have faith in God, and I believe through prayer, and through people knowing – I would like them to be stopped. I just don't know, at this point, how do you take on the financial institutions of the world, the major oil enterprises of the world? That's the question!...

Financial Infiltration, Century-long Goals

GS: You outline, in some of your writings, the big money-making – the ways this group makes its money. Can you go over and outline some of those methods?

SV: Again, if you can think of an illegal activity, they're probably involved at some point. Maybe not overtly, at the point of where the actual money is first shaking hands – but when you have child pornography, prostitution, white slavery, gun running, gambling, then at some point where the money is changing hands, buffered by about four layers of people, there's going to probably be someone from the Illuminati involved at that point. These guys have their fingers in everything. But they also use legitimate means. They launder their money. When you have a lot of money, you have to do something with it. And so, these men don't come in and say, "Hi! I'm a member of the Illuminati and I want to run your bank." What they'll do is ***they'll quietly come in and become a quiet investor, start buying up shares. And over a period of maybe, almost a lifetime,... or maybe in their son's lifetime... they will get a controlling interest in the bank...***

That's the other thing about the Illuminati. The Illuminati do not see it as "This is what must happen now, in my lifetime." ***These people have goals that last for centuries, for two centuries. They are very, very patient.***

GS: And that's why the specific training of the children is so important, correct?

SV: Yes. It's to teach you PATIENCE. Everyone knows, growing up in the

TESTIMONY OF A “WONDERLAND” ESCAPEE

group, we may not see the coming order disclosed or open or revealed in our lifetime, but our children or our grandchildren may. So they will spend their entire life trying to bring about the goals of the organization....

Media Infiltration

GS: One thing I find interesting, Svali, knowing the media... doing some background checks on a lot of ***the top media people in our country, they all come from these very wealthy families***. Now that's not the typical MO [i.e. modus operandi] for a journalist. A journalist is somebody who grows up on the street, wants to talk to people, I can think of Jimmy Breslin, guys who never went to college, didn't know how to type, and just got in there, took their tie off and started writing stories. But, ***as you look at the media now, there are all these silver spoon kids*** – growing up with silver spoons. I find that quite interesting. How deeply infiltrated, from your knowledge, are they in our media?

SV: Wow. Fairly deeply. I remember that when I was in San Diego on Leadership Council during meetings, ***they would laugh about how people had no idea of how much they were being influenced and didn't even know it***. They found that kind of amusing, which is – I mean, that's the mindset of people in the group, though. They're like, "The sheep have no idea that they're being led by the hand." And they find it amusing, because they show it as evidence of... the stupidity of the average person – that they have no idea. I'm not saying that every news story or every newscaster is a member of the group – by no means. But, ***they specifically do teach and train and educate children that show an aptitude for the media***, because they want that. And if the person has a bright, charismatic personality, and presents well, then that child will go into that, if they have their verbal communication and other skills required.

GS: Well, you know, that could explain why a lot of our stories really never get covered, outside of the influence they have financially and the ownership of the media.

SV: Not at all a coincidence.

Training Methods

GS: You were involved as a trainer of mind programming?... We're talking about brainwaves, color control, metal, jewel programming, programming links to stories and movies, [even] suicidal programming.... Svali, what type of programming do they actually teach you, and how do you learn these different techniques?

SV: You're taught from childhood on.... I was mentored into it. Trainers in the group are mentored. You work with older adults and they show you,

and you are given increasing responsibility. And so by the time you are in your teens, you are basically doing adult training responsibilities. You've been taught for years.... My training in how to be a programmer started very young. I was mentored by another programmer at the age of 5, by a doctor at George Washington University. Not only did he do the programming on me, but also taught me how to do it to others. The types of programming – again, that could be a whole ten-hour segment to go into depth. ***From the time a child is an infant, all through their life basically, they are tested, they are profiled.*** Trainers can create a psychological profile, and then they update it frequently. Basically, they are trying to install in this child the ability to obey, loyalty to the group, and the ability to do their job within the group.

Now those jobs vary in complexity. You may have on one side a child trained to be a prostitute. On the other end you may have a child trained to become a governmental figure, which is a lot more complex programming. But ***as long as the loyalty to the group is instilled, and that is the first and foremost programming always installed, then no matter what their eventual role is, they will remain loyal.*** And that becomes their first loyalty. Whatever nation, whatever their public role in life is, their first and foremost loyalty will be to the group, and to serve its goals – whether they know. A lot of times, the goal is [also] to be able to help the child create that complete division between their day role and their night role. So ***a pleasant, charming, wonderful, kind person in the daytime could be an absolutely cold, ruthless person at night*** – or during the day, you know, it's also during the day they do it.

Then you may have a housewife with children who goes out and completes a courier job for the group. And no one would ever suspect her. Who is going to suspect [that] this lovely-looking little housewife with a baby in a car seat is actually carrying some valuable documents? Again, the first and foremost other thing was to instill loyalty, and they want to discourage people from questioning orders. They really don't want you questioning that, and they want you to obey their directives. Should people show signs of not doing that, then they go on for tune-ups. Actually, ***people are being programmed all through their life. We used to call them tune-ups.*** It's a lifelong process for members of the group....

GS: The dropout rate probably is very low, considering the training.

SV: Extremely low.

GS: But what went wrong with you? They somehow missed something.

SV: When I was very young I absolutely believed in the goals of [the group]. You never saw a more loyal group member. ***I thought that they were saving the world. I thought that we were doing a wonderful thing. But the older I got, I started to see the methods that were***

TESTIMONY OF A “WONDERLAND” ESCAPEE

being used for so long, and that the ends do not justify the means. I became increasingly cynical, partly because I saw what I was doing to people. I was lying to them. I was manipulating them. I was telling them things that weren't true. I remember questioning this, thinking, “I was told lies as a child too, then. I was manipulated.” And finally you start to question, as an adult, the things you were taught....

A Day in the Life of an “Alice”

GS: You wrote an article that is very interesting – *A Day in the Life of a Trainer for the Illuminati*. Tell us what you went through in a normal day in your role at the Illuminati.

SV: Okay. Basically I would get up. ***At the time that I described in that article, I was teaching at a Christian school.*** And so I would get up, I would get my two children dressed and ready for school. Just like a normal mom, go through the day, come home. We'd have little friends over and play, and stuff like that. Then, have dinner. I was a good mom. I was your average American housewife – on the surface. But underneath the surface, my husband and I would remind each other on nights when there was a meeting. And then what we would do is ***when we would go to sleep, I had programming in place that would allow me to wake up within ten minutes of the specified time.*** If I knew there was a meeting that night, I would wake up ten minutes before it was time to get ready and go. ***A lot of times we would even go to bed with our clothes on.*** And I never really thought that was abnormal. I thought everyone went to bed with their clothes on. I didn't even question it on nights when we had meetings.... And then we'd get up and go, and drive to the meeting.

I was also very involved in Military [training] in San Diego. In fact the group has a lot of military orientation. So on top I would take the kids to their area, there was an area where the kids would go and change. They had a room and we would have baskets of clothes, and we would change our clothing. You'd pick out your clothing, it had your name on it, and put on your uniform. Or whatever you wore that night. The kids would wear these little miniature military uniforms. Then they would go out and do their training exercises. They were learning how to march, how to shoot. ***All kids in the Illuminati, at least in that area, know how to take apart a gun, put it together and shoot with deadly accuracy by the age of eight years old.*** Martial arts, ***there's a lot of martial arts training.*** Sometimes I'd help supervise that, or fill in if there's a military trainer [who] was [absent]. Everyone had to be – there was a lot of cross training. But most of the time I supervised the training. I would be working on implementing programming, or what we'd call tuning up – reinforcing previously installed programming in adults.

At that point I was normally supervising the younger trainers. They would

be doing it, and I would be there watching and making sure they did it correctly. Or I would be also evaluating whether – sometimes every once in a while we'd be working on something that was somewhat experimental, and then I would be taking a more active role, assessing the person's responses to the new protocol, recording it and ***if there was any difference between established parameters for that protocol or expected responses, I would be flagging that....*** I can tell you that ***in San Diego, twenty percent of the active members of the group were active military....*** Think of military intelligence. Think high-ranking officials, colonels, commanders. My ex-husband was a lieutenant commander in the Navy, getting ready to become a commander. These are not stupid people.

GS: So you were basically working on the programming of the members involved.

SV: Yes. We didn't program people who were not members of the group. ***You CANNOT install significantly traumatic mind-control programming in a person who is not a member of the group....***

Passive and Active Programming

SV (continuing): Now there are certain [ways] you can do [something] call[ed] passive programming, which is basically through media means. ***If someone's watching a television program, they go immediately into alpha state.*** Everyone in the group, even a baby in the group knows that, because ***these people are very much into behavioral psychology.*** That's a trance state, almost, a very relaxed state where messages can be implemented. And ***that's why I very strongly suggest people be very careful about the TV shows they watch!*** That's all I will say about that.

But no, you cannot take an adult who is not a member of the group and do what we did to them. They would go psychotic, or they wouldn't survive it, probably. They wouldn't be able to psychologically handle it.

GS: Tell us some examples of what you were doing. Program techniques.

SV: (sighs) Sometimes, (sigh) it would involve, normally ***we would start with a hypnotic induction or even sometimes we would inject a medication.*** A lot of times especially young children have a lot of fear when they are going into programming, but adults do too. We want them to relax. We give them a very short-acting medication to relax them. We would then invoke a hypnotic state in them. If it was an older person I would be checking that the codes are already installed. If I was getting ready to install programming in like a young child, I would tell them, explain to them very patiently exactly the behavior expected. I'd say, "I want you to do this, and this, and this." I break it up into steps. Then I'd say, "First we're going to practice this." I would show the child what I want

TESTIMONY OF A "WONDERLAND" ESCAPEE

them to do – I would model it. I would then tell the child, "DO IT." The child would then do it. But, normally they won't do it well the first time, so [the child] would... get shocked.... If a child did not do it perfectly the first time, they are shocked. That's the negative reinforcement. Then I would say, "DO IT AGAIN." They would show me the behavior.

Now at this point ***we start associating the behavior with an external stimulus or cue***, too.... If this is a behavior, though, that we want associated with a specific code, ***the child will often then [be] traumatize[d] very heavily first, to create a fragmentation in their personality***. Then the behavior and the associated cue are given. You might hear a tone, like "ding ding ding." [I'll say,] "All right, I want you to do this." Ding ding ding. The child hears the tone, they get up and they do the behavior. ***Once they can perform it perfectly, they are rewarded with praise. Good job, or a hug.*** Children like hugs, or something like that. Then you do it over, and over, and over. That's why trainers have to be very patient people. Because then maybe after the child has done it fifty times, then they hear the cue, they get up, [and] they do it. ***It's not even a conscious [decision] – it's reflexive. At that point it's considered installed.*** For very, very important programming, I'm talking about like end-level assassin programming, because ***we did train people how to assassinate people... we would then do a ritual to seal the programming afterwards....***

Christmastime in the Church of the Devil

GS: I was looking at some of your articles. One was "Christmas in the Cult."... You say this is quite different for you, when you were growing up, than it is for most children. Can you just kind of briefly tell us what you meant by that?

SV: Yeah, um – (sighs) I mean, we had trees and presents and things like that. But for most children, Christmas is just happy time, you know, lots of presents. But ***in the group, there are some very high ceremonies that are celebrated***. Several times, in fact many times, I flew into Germany. And there, there wasn't a Santa Claus. They had a figure called ***Father Yule*** who represents Christmas there. But he is not the kind of benevolent Santa that you see here. ***This is a man with a golden scepter dressed in a white robe and a golden sash around.*** I was once at the German Father's house, where there was a gathering with children and adults, and Father Yule was present. ***He raises the scepter and basically strikes down a child in front of everyone.***

GS: He strikes down a CHILD?

SV: Yes. He struck down the child with his scepter.... And at the same time, yes, we did have a tree, you know, and fruitcake and all that, and decorate the house, but there is another side to Christmas....

All Marriages Are Arranged

GS: Do they marry you to somebody in the group, or is that forced on you?

SV: In the group, the marriages are always arranged, in my experience. In my 38 years in the group, ***I never knew of a couple, in the Illuminati, that did not have an arranged marriage.***

GS: You mentioned [earlier] a couple that I suspect. [the] Clinton[s], Bill and Hillary.

SV: YES! Definite[ly arranged].... A lot of times, these marriages are arranged for compatibility, but also for bloodlines – to bring the right bloodlines together....

Leaving “the Family,” Giving Up Everything

GS: I’m listening and I just can’t believe... we have leaders in our country that have probably gone through this kind of stuff.... How do we get rid of these people? I know, you’re out of it. You couldn’t take it any more. You think we can inspire more mid-level people to just LEAVE, like you, so they have no one to DO this kind of INSIDIOUS – CRAZY – PROGRAMMING and lifestyle! What do you think?

SV: Well, I believe that, as strongly as a Christian, that ***it’s a spiritual warfare as well as an emotional and psychological warfare.*** I believe that by the grace of God. But I will also say that when I was in the group, ***a lot of the members are not happy.*** You have people in the group that are there because they love it, because they believe in our goals, they are totally dedicated. But to be honest... many people [would leave] in a minute if they thought that they could get out, and make it....

GS: Talk about some of ***the lower-level people.... a lot of them probably stay because it’s a very lucrative way to live,*** I imagine.

SV: That’s the main thing, that’s one of the factors that keeps people in. ***The reason more people don’t leave is because leaving means giving up your husband, your children, your entire family on both sides, your money.*** And basically, for a lot of people, ***leaving the group means giving up everything, and starting out penniless and alone.*** Not only that, but you’re combating child programming to recontact, to go back, to be loyal, to be a good member. I know many people have tried to leave and went back, because they just couldn’t take it....

GS: How did you finally leave? Tell us this whole story about you leaving the Illuminati. We haven’t touched on that yet....

TESTIMONY OF A "WONDERLAND" ESCAPEE

SV: Without faith in God, I couldn't have done it. ***I became a Christian, and that was for me revolutionary. It made me question again more of what I was being taught, or had believed all my life.*** I began to realize that what I was doing was wrong. I became increasingly cynical. I also then started standing up to the head trainer in the county who despised me. He would do things that were just blatantly cruel for no reason whatsoever. I'd say, "You're wrong". Well, people don't like that. He took it out on me in a lot of horrible ways. I finally made the decision to run. ***I ran to another state, because I knew that my chances of getting out while still staying in that area with people I knew, surrounded by people who were in the group, was not going to be very good.*** So I went to another state.

GS: You had to leave your family and everything, right?

SV: Everything. Well, my children were with their grandparents. At that point I thought that was better than them being with my husband. I was going to go get my kids. But my husband then called... and so I was excited, thinking, "Oh, he's getting out, he's getting out, that's wonderful!" Instead, he had gotten the kids several days before. He was lying to me, and I didn't know it. He had gone to a judge. And the day that he was supposed to arrive, there was a knock on my door. It was ***a policeman serving me DIVORCE papers, and also a restraining order, saying that I could not come within a hundred yards of my husband or my children....*** I fought that for four years with a court system that said things like this didn't occur, because ***my husband would go into court and say, "This woman is psychotic. She's making it all up. There's no way. Ha, ha, ha. This stuff doesn't happen in this day and age." And the judge would say, "You're right." Slam. Full custody to their father.*** And I had to have supervised visitation for four years with my own children, because I was considered a kidnap risk.

Through a lot of prayer, I had my whole church praying for me here in Texas, and through Lambley Research and miracles, my children were finally allowed unsupervised visitation with me, after four years. During that time, I said to my daughter, who was fourteen, I said, "I want so badly for you to get out". And she looks at me, and she starts going (hyperventilating, extremely terrified): "Oh! You shouldn't have said that, Mom! You shouldn't have said that, Mom!" She just freaked out. And I realized that ***it was her programming cycling, because she was just terrified....*** she was just shaking and shaking. And then finally she said, "Well, I don't want to go back and get hurt." And then I said, "YOU DON'T HAVE TO." And ***at that point I faced several prison sentences,*** but I called my ex and I said, "I will not let those children go back and get hurt again."

He flew out to get them, and he could have put me in prison at that time, because I was breaking the custody visitation. And you know how strong the courts are on that! I said to him, "Please – Look..." My daughter and

son both said, "We don't want to go back, Dad. We don't want to get hurt. We don't want to do this anymore." He looked at them, and he said, "I want to go think about it." He went home, and I was praying for him at the time. And then that night he called me, and he said, (delirious, hyperventilating): "Oh my God. Oh my God. We've gotta get out! We've gotta get out!"... At that point he went to a Notary Public. He did a legal case document giving me full custody of my children. And then he said he was so sorry for [what] he put me through, the HELL he had put me through for years.

GS: Have you had any reprisals from people in the group since you were leaving, or any warnings? To keep quiet, or anything like that?

SV: Yes. Oh, yeah! Of course! There's one time when ***I [wrote] one article that named some specific dates and times. I got hurt afterwards, and it made me very cautious.***

Whole Schools Run by Infiltrators

CALLER1: Are [the Illuminati in] private schools?

SV: Well, my children were schooled at private Christian schools. [Those schools] were all Illuminati.

CALLER1: You're saying that CHRISTIAN schools are Illuminati?!

SV: SOME of them are. Not all – but some. The ones that my children [attended] were. There's a lot of good Christian schools that have nothing to do with the group, but some can be. I went to a public school, but what's interesting is [that], out of [the] three public schools I went to as a young child, two burned down. So there's no access to any school records....

Timeline for Introducing Themselves to the Public

CALLER2: Based on the information that you're presenting, I'm wondering what timeline the organization of the larger Family that you're describing has for implementing the New World Order?

SV: ***I was told it would occur during my generation. I was told that by the year 2050 that they would be revealed.*** Now again, their timelines change, though.... In my own lifetime I saw several different timelines for things that were supposed to occur and change. But as Greg noted, I've also heard of, from different people, that actually there is a HUGE push in the last few years. It's like, "It's CLOSE. It's CLOSE. Let's make things happen more quickly." So I couldn't begin to guess whether that's an accurate timeline or not. I know what I was told.

TESTIMONY OF A "WONDERLAND" ESCAPEE

CALLER2: I have a follow up question.... I have recently, against my own resistance to doing so, investigated, started to investigate fringe matters, if you will. Among them, the upcoming date on the Mayan Calendar of 2012....

SV: 2012 IS an important year. But again, I was not told that the final Revealing would occur then. But I believe that probably – what will happen is that there will be events taking place that will help to set the stage.... I was told that there would be an enormous economic collapse prior to the Revealing. That basically **the stock market would destabilize.... I was told it would make the Great Depression look like Sunday school. And at that time, they're going to really be manipulating finances to bring about chaos, confusion, warfare....** I am telling you what I was taught when I was in the group.... **Out of this chaos they said would come order.** The group believes that out of chaos comes order.

Belief in the Reality of Atlantis

CALLER3: I wanted to ask you if this cult claims to or believes to derive any of its heritage from Atlantis or any other lost civilization....

SV: **The Illuminati completely believe that Atlantis is real.** They teach it to their children as part of the oral history. They believe that it was one of the greatest civilizations that ever existed, and one of the most advanced. Their take on it is that Atlantis was **a great race of highly intelligent people who had a highly advanced faith, and who were highly enlightened.** But what they teach the Illuminati children is that then this prophet of the enemy, who was **a prophet of God, came and foretold their destruction if they didn't change their ways. They were definitely Occultists. They were Luciferians on Atlantis. That was the religion.** And in fact, a lot of **the advances that Atlantis enjoyed was passed down to them through supernatural means** – that is what I will say. So they laughed at the prophet. In fact they killed him.... We were taught that a few inhabitants escaped, but that tragically the great city was lost. The Illuminati to this day mourn the loss of Atlantis, because they feel that the few survivors that left were among the great people who helped found what you would call the precursors of Illuminism.

Logically Unexplainable Supernatural Phenomena

CALLER3: One more quick question, if I may. I wanted to ask you if you have any reason to believe that men and/or women at the top of the pyramid, so to speak, practice a kind of magic where they are kind of skipping through time – their body leaving, their soul or spirit leaving one body and coming and being born into another one, and therefore, you know, living through time.

SV: Oh YES! Without even being at the top.... In the spiritual side, they very much teach things like time travel, traveling out of body, psychic battling, things like that – things that cannot be explained by logic. ***I saw things that I cannot explain through human intellect or reasoning, that were highly supernatural, and involved all of that – and more.*** [Ed. Note: for example, Svali reported in one of her articles about witnessing a group of members levitate an animal and choke it to death.]

How Passive Programming Might Affect Outsiders

CALLER4: I would like you to try to sketch out for people [about] the behavioral conditioning that's coming through the media, [how] the movies and so forth might have affected them. In other words... how would the average person, who is not really a bad person, start to be leaning, if the Illuminati teachings were actually having an effect on them? What would they be like? What would start happening?

SV: Well, again, as I said, the average person is not going to be a member of the group, so the influence would be much less. But [with] the media... I KNOW that ***some of the media that we're seeing nowadays is specifically targeted towards teaching people their philosophy or goals.*** All you have to do is watch the children's cartoons on Saturday morning, and almost across the board you'll see morphing, power battles, occult. And that's intentional. Movies coming out. Basically, *if a person is being influenced by their teaching, that person will learn to not trust their own instincts, their own feelings, their own body, their own perceptions. They will be looking outside for guidance.* Second of all, ***they will be moving towards a heavily occultic worldview*** – that leaning upon the occult is heavily encouraged. All you have to do is watch Harry Potter! [I don't mean] to slam one of those Potter movies, or the Matrix, [but] ***if you want to know pure Illuminist philosophy, the Matrix shows it.*** Definitely. The entire philosophy....

How Deep the Infiltration Goes

GS: How deeply penetrated and infiltrated [are they] in our culture and our country?... They're involved in gang stalking, the MK-Ultra program, infiltrating [9/11] truth organizations, infiltrating groups that are trying to do good. How far down DO they go?

SV: Well, they go down to the sister group levels I mentioned. The sister groups have usually roughly around 30 members. And ***those are what a lot of people would consider the satanic cults***, with a high priest and priestess. That would be the local level, the lower level. But *those people are also very active in their community. And so, they WILL be involved in intricate infiltrating activities when possible. Because to them, it's not*

TESTIMONY OF A "WONDERLAND" ESCAPEE

infiltrating – it's helping. They think they're helping the group, or helping people by becoming a member and spreading the influence....

What Each of Us Can Do

GS: You're now living a life completely away from them. What's your hopes of the future in our country right now?

SV: ***My hope is that people will realize that this is happening, and that they will start doing something about it*** – that they will start looking at it.... if people could rise up in prayer, and just say, "THIS ISN'T OKAY." If people would become informed enough to learn more about it, be aware they exist – and then, possibly, PRAY. ***Pray that people will take action against the things that are happening.***

Svali's frank and extended disclosure of these matters is not only unique, it is nothing short of miraculous. She has put herself and her family at great risk for *our* benefit. She has nothing to gain and everything to be wary of in doing this. Her testimony is exceptionally valuable and ought not be lightly dismissed.

Should the reader still assume that "such things aren't happening here," perhaps the contents of the May 1992 Report of Utah State Task Force on Ritual Abuse might bring the reality home a bit closer. This document concisely outlines the nature and prevalence of the kinds of ritual abuse covered here – and which occurs even in Utah regularly:

"Ritual abuse is a brutal form of abuse of children, adolescents, and adults, consisting of physical, sexual, and psychological abuse, and involving use of rituals. Ritual abuse rarely consists of a single episode. It usually involves repeated abuse over an extended period of time. The physical abuse is severe, including torture and sometimes killing. The sexual abuse is usually painful, sadistic, and humiliating. Ritual abuse is by definition not a crime of impulse, but a crime committed with malice aforethought."

It goes into detail about the various types of groups which engage in these practices, the forms of abuse reported by victims, the support of the victims, and how it affects civil matters. This document is included in the supporting material.⁴

This is not happening in remote places in the world that don't concern you, it's happening in your neighborhood. It's happening in every neighborhood. I implore the reader to take all this to the Lord and prayerfully ask Him how one might be able to take action against all this, perhaps to locate and assist the healing of victims.

- 1 Quoted from *Jack Chick* by Alberto Rivera, Chino, California; Chick Publications, 1979, Part 1, pp. 27, 28.
Also refer to the MP4 video in the supporting material: Ex-Jesuit Alberto Rivera and others Speak on Jesuit infiltration.mp4
- 2 Refer to the PDF in the supporting material: Illuminati Bloodlines_Svali Extended Interview.pdf
- 3 Refer to the MP3 file in the supporting material: Greg Szymanski 2006 interview with Svali.mp3; as well as the PDF file: Greg Szymanski 2006 interview with Svali transcript.pdf
- 4 Refer to the PDF in the supporting material: Report of Utah State Task Force on Ritual Abuse.pdf

Journal Excerpt 7 - June 2006 (32 years old)

It's been two months since the Holy Spirit awoke me to our awful situation.

A non-LDS co-worker, who I was discussing politics with on April 24, 2006, admonished me to search on Google for "Bohemian Grove" and read everything I can about it. When I got home, I did so. The moment I started reading about this place, the Holy Spirit poured into me and seized my mind like I've never felt before. It felt like my whole mind was super-focused and knowledge was pouring in. Over the next 3 hours as I researched, my entire socio-economic-political worldview shattered. The words of Ether chapter 8 verse 24 seared through my mind as I watched Alex Jones' raw footage of the Cremation of Care ceremony at Bohemian Grove.

I have since been devouring the scriptures like never before - they have become more alive to me than even during my mission. I have been researching everything Alex Jones has produced. I've purchased and read two books so far: Sarah Menet's "There Is No Death" and Ken Bowers' "Hiding in Plain Sight." I devoured Sarah's book in five hours, and Ken's book within days of receiving it.

Towards the end of Ken's book, he discusses the anti-Christ, and various possible latter-day scenarios about his rise to power, and about latter-day apostasy of the LDS people. These were the myriads of thoughts and questions that harrowed up in my mind that night shortly before retiring to bed.

I had the following dream that night.

The earliest point that I remember in my dream, I am standing in a single-story home nearby the front door, which is open and only a screen door covers the opening. I am there with several family members and various other LDS people, and I am listening to them talking to each other, but not speaking up. No one is paying attention to what is going on outside.

From my viewpoint in the house, I can see through the screen door outside, where there are many acres of grassy fields all around. About a hundred feet away from the home, I can see two giant snakes - each as long as a super-sized anaconda, but their bodies are greater in diameter, and their cobra-like heads are unusually large for snakes. They are both "perched" up about 8 or 9 feet off the ground, and they are bothering a group of several children. The children are not terrified as much as they

are confused and nervous, as if they can't even see these snakes, but they're frightened at what's happening. These two snakes "reach down" and with their giant mouths, pick up a child by an arm or a leg, and then throttle them around. The children are not running or screaming in terror - they just have these very concerned looks on their faces. They are dismayed that their parents are not acknowledging their distress and coming to their rescue - why are they just standing around inside, focused on their potluck food, chatting and socializing away?

I can see all this unfolding outside, and I become baffled and incensed that none of the adults in the house are paying any attention to the fact that their children are being terrorized by two giant snakes.

Finally I speak up, "Hey, isn't anyone else seeing this?! Look! Hello everyone?! Look outside!" No one pays any attention to me. I get fed up. I immediately and resolutely march outside. I fling open the screen door so hard that it slams against the side of the home. I march directly at the two snakes.

The one on the right sees me, somehow recognizes me, and quickly slithers off away from me as fast as he can go. The other one stays put - glaring at me with giant, beady, hateful snake eyes.

At this point, a few of the adults in the home (only a few) take notice of me storming outside, and they step out the door a bit with their paper plates of food and plastic-cup drinks. They are not concerned nor alarmed - they are merely curious as to what I am doing.

The children start running towards me, then pass me to find their parents. I keep my steady, undeterred walk towards the giant snake, never taking my eyes off of him. I strongly sense that the snake is terrified of me, but on the surface he looks confident and vicious. Once I'm within about 20 feet of the snake, it starts to slither off to its right, in an indifferent manner, down a grassy knoll about fifty feet away from the side of the house. It secretly wants to flee, but moves slowly as to not appear that it's scared of me. It manages to get away about a hundred feet before I call out to it.

With the power of the Holy Ghost, I shout out to the snake with such force that it causes the ground and house to tremble: "LUCIFER!! GET OVER HERE!!"

The snake immediately whips its big head back and looks at me ferociously, giving a mighty cursing hiss. Then it starts slithering directly at me fast. What's interesting, though, is that the other adults who came

out to watch me only now become concerned. They think that I'm provoking this massive, terrible snake, and it's going to kill me. They nervously start backing towards the doorway of the house. However, I know the truth: the snake is only trying to "save face" by appearing to come and attack me; however, he is actually required to obey me, because I have commanded him through the power and authority of God.

As the snake nears me, I sense that he's going to try to lunge and bite my ankle. However, at the same time that he twists his head to bite, I lift up my foot and slam it down on his head. Despite that my foot is much smaller than his head, the entire snake head completely flattens - no blood and guts, just squished into a massive snake-head pancake. It's almost cartoonish in appearance.

At that very moment, I was awakened from my dream. I wish that I awoke rejoicing and exuberant, because that's how I felt at the moment I squashed the big serpent's head. But no, I awoke because I was subjected to one of the worst spiritual attacks in my life. It felt like I had dozens of angry demons all hounding and harrowing my mind as viciously as they could - images of alien beings, monsters, disgusting creatures all flooding my every thought - trying to fill me with fear and foreboding. I spent the next hour or so on my knees praying and praying and praying and praying for the Lord to deliver me from this hornet's nest of darkness, suddenly unleashed on me. After nearly two hours, the snarling voices grew more and more distant. I was so exhausted I collapsed and passed back out to sleep again.

At this point in my life, I regard spiritual attacks as more annoying than terrifying or traumatic. I know exactly what they are when I get them, and just need to be long-suffering as I pray until they eventually go away. It's just annoying to have to endure the ugliness of it all, and be patient until the Lord sends them away.

Well, that crazy night was a week ago. Today something very odd occurred.

The missionaries stopped by today and they helped me move a couple dozen bags of topsoil and mulch from my driveway to my backyard. As I came from the backyard to the driveway, I noticed both elders standing and staring at something on the porch. One had just lifted a bag of mulch, and to his surprise, there was a highly-poisonous

cotton mouth snake curled up underneath it. When I arrived, both elders were frozen in place, unsure what to do. I saw that it had been asleep and was just barely waking, its head lifting up from the center of its curled body. I wasn't the least bit afraid as I immediately took action and stomped on it over and over and over again. It futilely tried to bite the bottom of my boot as I crushed and mangled its head, and much of its body. Once I was sure it was dead, I went into the house to find something to dispose of it.

As I walked in, the Holy Spirit communicated to me, "You were justified in killing that snake. However, from now on, please pray for confirmation before slaying a creature, even deadly ones. A response will come with time enough for action to be taken."

FORGIVING ABUSERS

Legree drew in a long breath; and, suppressing his rage, took Tom by the arm.... "I'll conquer ye, or kill ye! – one or t' other. I'll count every drop of blood there is in you...."

Tom looked up to his master, and answered, "Mas'r, if you was sick, or in trouble, or dying, and I could save ye, I'd give ye my heart's blood; and, if taking every drop of blood in this poor old body would save your precious soul, I'd give 'em freely, as the Lord gave his for me. O, Mas'r! Don't bring this great sin on your soul! It will hurt you more than 't will me! Do the worst you can, my troubles'll be over soon; but, if ye don't repent, yours won't never end!"....

Legree, foaming with rage, smote his victim to the ground [and whipped him mercilessly]....

Tom opened his eyes [for the last time], and looked upon his master. "Ye poor miserable critter!" he said, "there ain't no more ye can do! I forgive ye, with all my soul!" and he fainted entirely away.

– From *Uncle Tom's Cabin* by Harriet Beecher Stowe¹

I originally had planned to end this part of the journey down the rabbit hole with Svali's interview. However, the Holy Spirit has pressed upon me otherwise. Two examples of divine intervention and communication will not leave my mind as I seek to move on. Therefore, to be obedient to the Spirit's promptings, I include those incidents here.

The first example is the experience of Sue Ford as she was beginning to heal, striving to forgive her tormenters (all emphasis added):

"In 1998, when all of my former life lay in ruin around me, I heard the Holy Spirit ask me who was the one person I hated most?

"The answer came quickly and easily. Silently I responded, "George [H. W.] Bush," since he was a man who repeatedly hurt my baby girl from very early on. The same day the Holy Spirit questioned me, I received a hospital advertisement in the mail cheerfully announcing that George Bush would be visiting a local hospital just 25 minutes from my home. I was devastated that people still looked at him as a person of honor, and associated him with charity and healing."

We are All Commanded to Forgive

"Then the challenge from Jesus came when he called me to love George Bush. I couldn't do that initially, it took many prayerful hours for me to ask God to please change within me the attitudes that needed changing in order for me to love and forgive George Bush.

"Obviously, that didn't happen overnight, but it did take place, at first just for a fleeting moment and then for longer periods of time. ***That doesn't mean that I stop working toward exposing the system that has caused this misuse of human life, nor does it mean that I think what my perpetrators did was right or excusable. It simply means that no matter what they or anyone else does to me, they do not have the power to make me hate, or the power to take away my right to love, for love is my continuing goal.***

"I was confused and tormented as I awakened to the realization that my father and others had abused me in such horrific ways and that they had actually taken control of my life for nearly 40 years. The awareness that churches had been places where I was often victimized, by individuals who I associated with being the most loving, added to my torment and bewilderment. I searched for answers, through reading about many religions, trying to find the truth, and one night I had a dream in which I heard the word "Beatitudes."

Christ Gives Personal Visitations

"Upon waking, the word stuck in my mind and later, while attending a religion class at Pepperdine University, I went to my professor and asked him what the word meant. He told me and later on that day, I went across the street to the Malibu Presbyterian Church to speak to the assistant minister. ***Little did I know that through my seeking, the Great Master Healer himself would appear to me, but that is exactly what happened.*** The minister ushered me into his office and after I confessed that I had been severely abused as a child, had Multiple Personality Disorder, had been forced to participate in satanic rituals where infants, children, and animals were killed – and as I went on and on – he looked at me in horror, and said, "Get down on your knees, and ask God to forgive you of your transgressions. You are a sinner."

"The moment my knees hit the floor, Jesus appeared to me and said, "Get up off your knees, and leave. You my child are innocent, you have done nothing wrong." Taking the authority of the Lord, over this human who stood ministering in His name, I did as commanded and left. I couldn't understand yet what Jesus was trying to help me understand. It took time for Him to reassure me that those acts, committed in a programmed state, acting from other person's commands and not from my own free will, were not my sin."

We are Called to Comfort and Witness to Others

"In the days that followed, Jesus showed me that He wanted me to stand in the name of Mercy for others who had been similarly tortured and abused. ***Over time, He called me to minister and share His words of mercy and forgiveness with other victims who presented themselves to me*** in women's shelters, at my office, at mental health conferences, and through letters of response to victims who wrote, pouring out their hurts to me after they read my book. I know that this message from Jesus, one of complete forgiveness, touched the hearts and minds of the people I spoke with, as deeply as it did me because I saw the tears of relief and understanding well up in their eyes. ***God wants His people free.***"

Indeed, He does. Freedom comes from being able to truly and resolutely forgive. Christ can heal us to the point where we can forgive the greatest of wrongs perpetrated upon us and upon those we love. I am inspired by Sue and her story, and I feel honored to have her approval to include her words in this work.²

The second example is from the testimony of an LDS woman named Christy Greenough.³ On November 1st, 2013, Ken Bowers conducted a presentation at the Monthly Wake Up Meeting at the Highland community center in Highland, Utah (the same group I presented to about Volume I's contents on February 8th, 2013). The subject of Bower's presentation was Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA). The audio of this meeting is included in the supporting material.⁴

During the last hour of this meeting, a group of individuals share their experiences with either having survived SRA trauma in their lives, or having worked closely with those who have suffered from SRA. Their testimonies are riveting and I cannot recommend strongly enough that the reader take the time to listen to them, especially to get a glimpse into how Satanic and Luciferian infiltrators have strong footholds throughout Utah and even within the LDS Church.

However, it is Christy's testimony that the Holy Spirit prompts me to share here. Christy grew up in Pleasant Grove, Utah. Her parents were not Satanic worshipers, but she and her siblings were subjected to reoccurring SRA trauma through a perpetrator who was her "mother's best-friend's husband." This trauma began when she was an infant, and she has had memories of SRA occurrences up to the age of nine. The memories began to resurface in her 30's, and she's still unsure if she's through them all yet. She states that some of the things that triggered her memories include: giving birth to her children and experiences in raising them, being in proximity to bodies of water, and attending LDS temple services. She states: (underlined emphasis interpreted from source, other emphasis added)

"One of my first memories was being held by my ankles down into a barrel of water until I was to be drowned. And when they pulled me out, and I was just ready to give up, they said 'See? Jesus didn't save you. We did.'... [My perpetrator] was very strong within the [LDS] Church, with our community. People looked up to him very much as a very strong Priesthood leader...."

"Even when my memories came, and two of my sisters' memories also came, my mother could not believe that [such things] could happen right here, in our own neighborhood, and near our home, and [with] people that she knew. [She continued to refuse to believe us,] until siblings of our perpetrator came forward also and shared with her some of their memories...."

Infiltrators Demoted When Excommunicated

"[One of the daughters of my perpetrator], my friend who was closest to my age... I got to be able to talk with [her as recently as] last year... she couldn't remember growing up with me and the things that we did as a family – that's how blocked everything [has been] for her. She [only] remembered [our time] in high school.... She let me know that her father did get excommunicated, but not because of that – [SRA] ritual did not come up at all [in the excommunication hearings] – but he did get excommunicated. And she was told that he was demoted in his order when he got excommunicated. For him to be high up in his order, he needed to be a member of the [LDS] Church. So he worked hard, he tried 3 times to get back in – [his daughters] fought it, [but his children] have a division – [his sons] don't believe anything happened, but, sad to say, [those] boys were part of it and their memories have not [yet] come forward. And my heart goes out to them, the day that their memories come forth, [and they realize that they] were a part of what took place. But right now they are in that denial situation. But, in his 70's, [my perpetrator] just got back into the Church. And I don't know if that order's still going on or whatever, but he fought hard to get back in...."

Christ Comforts Victims Undergoing SRA

"[I want to share] one of the memories that I had, because sometimes you might want to ask the question 'Why would a loving Heavenly Father allow us as children, or any of us, to go through such horrific things? Why?' I asked that question [while I was undergoing SRA] when I was two years old. I won't share with you the horrific thing that was being done to my body, but my spirit – thank goodness – mercy is there that our spirit can 'check out', if you will, so we don't have to be present with the experience. But ***the Savior was holding me – and at first I was mad at Him. I said 'Why?? Why didn't you stop this?! Why do you let this keep going on?'*** And, with tears in His eyes, He said, '***Because of agency that is given to man. But I never left you alone.***' I had to hang on to that [memory] when other memories would come up, knowing that agency is huge. It's what we had before we came here. It's what we have in all of our choices of life."

We Are Stronger than the Greatest Darkness

"I had a week's-worth of heavy-duty 'de-programming', if you will, and learned some interesting things. And as things would show up and memories show up, at the end of that week I realized something: they might have had power to hurt my body, but they didn't take my soul – that me, as a daughter of God, is stronger – each of us is stronger than all the darkness in this world. And it is here, and is increasing, because 'old spoiler' knows that his time is coming to an end. And not only [does] he have his forces out full-fledged, so do Heavenly Father and His angels. Know that we are not alone. We do not need to fear the darkness.

"They want our souls, yes, but we have the body that they longed for, and still long for. We are more powerful because we have this body. Remember that. Do not fear. For that is what they play on, and that is why they go for the children, because they play upon that fear – and the scare tactics and the mind control, and all those things that do work, and they do affect your lives. It does feel like it ruins your life, ruins relationships.

"And I want to say the Lord bless the husbands or the wives that are the spouse[s] that hang on through the memories. They deserve gold medals, because it's not an easy thing. [Spouses of SRA survivors feel] rejected by [their] spouse. [SRA survivors] don't want anything to do with [their spouses] when those memories come up – or you get angry, you get frightened, and [spouses] don't understand, but they're right there. My husband, and I know [a friend's] husband has been right there with us through it, and I'm so grateful. Don't lose faith. Don't lose faith. We all are human, we all do make mistakes, but never lose faith in the Lord, in our God, Jesus Christ."

Please take the time to listen to the audio included in the supporting material.⁵ Christy's experience is, unfortunately, far from unique. The testimonies of the survivors of SRA, and those crusading in support of them, are required listening. Religious organizations worldwide are infiltrated by Satanists/Luciferians in sheep's clothing, and unfortunately the LDS Church is far from exempt in being infested by them.

-
- 1 Harriet Beecher Stowe, *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, published 1851, pages 490-491
 - 2 On February 18th, 2015, Sue replied to an email I sent her requesting permission to include her story in Volume II. She states in the email: "I believe the Holy Spirit is guiding me to give you permission to use my information. So many are still so deceived and I believe the Holy Spirit is wanting people to be forewarned so they can act. God bless you for your work in HIM, Sue"
 - 3 The spelling "Christy Greenough" is a guess. In her testimony she states her name with the pronunciation: CRIS-tee GREEN-ouch. I have never come across anyone with the surname "Greenouch," and even Google provides no results with "Greenouch," so I can only guess that it is spelled "Greenough." If anyone can provide me the accurate spelling of her name, I will be glad to correct it.
 - 4 Refer to the MP3 file in the supporting material: Satanic-Ritual-Abuse-Highland-Meeting-11-01-2013.mp3
 - 5 Ibid.

Journal Excerpt 8 - August 2006

My desire to pay tithing has been a sore spot since the first year of our marriage. [My wife] has threatened me with divorce whenever I am determined to pay tithes to the Church. With my unstable I.T. employment for nearly a decade, we've always been either struggling or barely treading water; not to mention that our past bankruptcy still haunts me deeply. So, I certainly can't fault her unyielding position on the tithing issue.

Even though I've been worthy in every other way to hold a temple recommend, I can't have one because I can't pay tithes. I've talked to my Branch President - he's been very kind and empathetic about it. I commented to him that the gender/role temple recommend worthiness hypocrisy hasn't escaped me: if I was a housewife, and my bread-winning husband wouldn't let me pay tithing out of the money he earned, I'd be temple worthy. However, because I'm the breadwinner, and my wife considers tithe-paying a divorce-able breach of our relationship, then I'm considered not worthy to enter the temple. The Branch President had never really pondered this kind of injustice, and didn't know what to say. However, I expressed to him that my faith is resilient enough to overlook such matters: I'd rather be married to the woman I love and have my family intact, doing my best to be a providing priesthood holder in our home, than carry a card declaring me OK to enter a temple and yet subject my daughter to a broken home.

I know I don't really need that card - I know the Lord knows my heart. However, it still hurts that for nearly eight years I haven't visited the temple.

All changed a couple weeks ago. Our recent financial losses held an unexpected blessing in disguise! Throughout 2005, we had more financial loss than income. If I generated no income, I have no tithes to pay. So, ironically, after 8 long years, I'm now temple worthy again!

I sat down with my Branch President and explained all this to him. He conducted a Temple Recommend interview with me on the spot, and approved me with flying colors. He walked me over to the stake president, who met with me immediately. He interviewed me, approved me, signed the card, and handed it to me.

As I held the card in my hands, it almost seemed surreal. Eight years waiting, then over and done in less than an hour. As I placed the recommend into my wallet,

the Holy Spirit poured out upon me in great measure, consuming my mortal frame. I quickly made my way to the men's restroom, and collapsed in a stall. I wept, I sobbed, with joy. For nearly an hour tears streamed out of my eyes, and I thanked God over and over and over that I can finally go to the temple again....

[Two months later.] I've been visiting the Orlando temple weekly now - I go there directly after I finish my 12-hour shift on Fridays. I work midnight to noon five days a week at the ----- [printing] plant. I'm very tired but thrilled every time, showing up in my toner-smeared work clothes and my temple clothes bag, and a smile from ear to ear. The temple workers get a kick out of seeing me each Friday afternoon. I imagine that I must look on par with John the Baptist, if he were to show up at a temple, wearing a dingy, worn out camel hair outfit and locust legs stuck between his teeth. If I can only manage to stay completely awake throughout the sessions and not succumb to my post-work-week exhaustion!...

About half of the times I've attended the temple, I've had a remarkable spiritual experience. My first time back after eight years was tremendous. I've been praying for answers about what I experienced in the Celestial room that day....

Another powerful spiritual experience yesterday. This one has been causing me much concern, however. I was praying, as usual, in the Celestial room, when suddenly the Lord spoke directly to my mind. It was very sudden - the Lord interrupted my prayer.

"You will go to Taiwan.... And there, [your wife] will be removed."

Immediately my heart and mind panicked. "Will she die?!" I implored.

The Lord responded: "She will not die."

I pressed again: "Will she die??"

Response: "She will not die, she will be removed."

I sought clarification. "What is meant by 'removed'?"

No answer.

I asked again and again.

No response.

That was it. That's all the Lord wished to tell me.

That's the third time in my life that the Lord has spoken to me directly, that his voice permeated my entire

soul. It was the Lord's voice. There is no other like it....

Now and then over the years, [my wife] and I have discussed the possibility of relocating to her home country, Taiwan. However, we've never felt the time was right. Because of what the Lord said to me yesterday, I brought up the subject of Taiwan that night. I asked her what she thought about us moving there, whether the time might be right. She rejected the idea completely; she feels no desire to return to Taiwan. I don't think I'll discuss the subject with her again. I have no idea what the Lord means by her being "removed," but I NEVER want something like that to happen.

PART 6

**WHEN THE HEAD IS SICK,
THE WHOLE BODY IS FAINT**

I was back in Kirtland, Ohio, and thought I would take a walk out by myself, and view my old farm, which I found grown up with weeds and brambles, and altogether bearing evidence of neglect and want of culture. I went into the barn, which I found without floor or doors, with the weather-boarding off, and was altogether in keeping with the farm.

While I viewed the desolation around me, and was contemplating how it might be recovered from the curse upon it, there came rushing into the barn a company of furious men, who commenced to pick a quarrel with me.

The leader of the party ordered me to leave the barn and farm, stating it was none of mine, and that I must give up all hope of ever possessing it.

I told him the farm was given me by the Church, and although I had not had any use of it for some time back, still I had not sold it, and according to righteous principles it belonged to me or the Church.

He then grew furious and began to rail upon me, and threaten me, and said it never did belong to me nor to the Church.

I then told him that I did not think it worth contending about, that I had no desire to live upon it in its present state, and if he thought he had a better right I would not quarrel with him about it but leave; but my assurance that I would not trouble him at present did not seem to satisfy him, as he seemed determined to quarrel with me, and threatened me with destruction of my body.

While he was thus engaged, pouring out his bitter words upon me, a rabble rushed in and nearly filled the barn, drew out their knives, and began to quarrel among themselves for the premises, and for a moment forgot me, at which time I took the opportunity to walk out of the barn about up to my ankles in mud.

When I was a little distance from the barn, I heard them screeching and screaming in a very distressed manner, as it appeared they had engaged in a general fight with their knives. While they were thus engaged, the dream or vision ended.

– Final Dream of Joseph Smith, prior to his martyrdom¹

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

"[A] **Sacred Cow** is an idiom... based on the popular understanding of the elevated place of cows in Hinduism.... A literal sacred cow or sacred bull is an actual cow or bull that is treated with sincere reverence. A figurative sacred cow is something else that is considered immune from question or criticism, especially unreasonably so."²

"Put Out to Pasture: to retire or compel to retire... too old to be useful"³

After having walked a mile in Alice's shoes, having sufficiently probed into the abyss, and having gleaned an understanding of the dark works of the adversary (and his legions of willing human agents), it is time to come back full circle. It's time to make an objective, non-hypocritical examination of the historical development of the tenets and organization which our Lord called a young man to inaugurate nearly 200 years ago: where it has been, the stages it has undergone, and where it is today.

Before we head down this path, we must tackle some of Mormonism's "sacred cows" – the flawed assumptions and incorrect reasonings that have no (or weak, at best) scriptural foundation, yet which have solidified over the decades into theological concepts that have become the staples of modern-Mormon culture today. LDS culture has now reached a point where it is considered heretical to even have misgivings about these subjects – which signifies that it is all the more imperative to critically examine them.

(Please note that I, the author, also accepted these positions as correct up until the past few years, and that it was not easy for me to accept them as false. Much prayer and gradual clarity from the Holy Ghost was required.)

First, the most ubiquitous sacred cow is the one most ingrained within the psyche of LDS membership: whoever is at the head of the First Presidency of the Church is infallible.

Cow #1: Latter-Day Immunity From Fallibility

No man has ever lived whose judgment is perfect and not subject to error. To accept the doctrine of human infallibility is to betray gross ignorance of the divine plan of human life – the fall, mortal probation, repentance, and final election. There could be no election with perfect knowledge, omniscience. We walk by faith in mortality and by faith we exercise our agency....

In the absence of direct communication from heaven, the Church and its people must be guided by the revelations already given and the wisdom and inspiration of its leadership.

– Apostle Stephen L. Richards, General Conference April 1932⁴

As I have stated repeatedly, I seek to uncover truth no matter the source. I also laid out the manner in which I filter the information I receive, in order to discern what is true and what is not – what is truly black, and what is truly white, in every variation of gray. To demonstrate that I do not discredit any source when it comes to truth, I have personally adopted Malcolm X's maxim of: "I am for truth, no matter who tells it. I am for justice, no matter who it is for or against." There are considerable differences between Malcolm X's ideologies and my own, yet in this aptly expressed concept we are united.

In similar vein, I present the reader critical portions of the first chapter of author J. J. Dewey's book *Infallible Authority*. While I do not recommend anything else from Dewey's other works (even the remainder of the book of which this chapter comes from)⁵, he presents a pertinent, scripturally-sound case against this deeply erroneous sacred cow: the belief that it is impossible for the highest leaders, especially the president of the Church, to lead the entire Church astray – that if he were to ever start to pull it off-course (even unwittingly), God Almighty would promptly, divinely intervene and 'remove' that man, and quickly thereafter 'straighten things out.'

As one takes in the following, I implore the reader to prayerfully consider that such assumption is scripturally unfounded, according to both ancient and modern scriptures. (All-caps emphasis is original, other emphasis added. Also, all in-quote parentheses are from J. J. Dewey):

"When I was a boy [and growing up in the LDS Church], I often heard the doctrine of the infallibility of the Pope criticized as being ridiculous; but as the years passed, I heard less and less criticism of infallibility and more praise for the brethren, especially our president. Now the LDS have

virtually reached the same state of crystallization as the Catholic Church in this matter to the extent that they accept the words of their president pertaining to doctrine (even though they may be given in his own name) with the same weight that the Catholics accept the words of the Pope.

"Contrary to popular belief, the Catholics do not look upon the Pope as infallible in his own right. They realize that he is human as you or I. They merely accept him as being infallible when personally representing the Son of God and speaking on doctrine and church affairs. His words do not have to be claimed as revelation or even inspiration; he merely has to speak and he is to be trusted and believed without question.

"Is this not the way the Mormon people are encouraged to feel about their president? Then why not call a spade a spade and openly call it the doctrine of the "Infallibility of the Prophet"? How did such a doctrine of infallibility get started in a church which, for the first sixty years, did not even call itself a sect, and whose leaders cringed at being called a sectarian?

"Unfortunately, it was introduced by one of the sweetest, most gentle, and sincere of persons to ever attain a position in the Church – namely Wilford Woodruff. In defending the Manifesto of 1890, he said,

"The Lord will never permit me nor any other man who stands as president of this church to lead you astray. It is not in the program. It is not in the mind of God. If I were to attempt that, the Lord would remove me out of my place, and so He will any other man who attempts to lead the children of men astray from the oracles of God and from their duty." (Wilford Woodruff, Oct 6, 1890 Conference)

Note that when the 1890 Manifesto was released, declaring an official end to the practice of plural marriage, a considerable number of saints were deeply alarmed and worried that the Church was slipping into apostasy. Woodruff needed to boldly ease their minds concerning this matter. Should the reader wish to understand more about this era, I recommend the research of Daymon Smith, who will be introduced later. Continuing from *Infallible Authority*:

"From [Woodruff's] statement, the Church concurs that if the prophet were to do anything to lead the Church astray, his life would be taken before he could do any damage; thus it is impossible for the Church to be out of order.

"I heard a fairly renowned Mormon speaker sum up the current belief when he said, "The Lord has given us a yardstick whereby we cannot fail. The prophet. We may rest assured that he will always lead us right, for the Lord has promised us that he will never lead us astray. In all other dispensations there was apostasy, but this one is different. This is the dispensation of the fullness of times, and this time the church cannot fail."

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

"Could such a doctrine be correct? *Think for a moment – if it is not, if it is possible for the church to fail today as the Lord has said (we'll point out references later), then **could you think of a doctrine that would cause any greater rejoicing in hell?***

"I think not, for then ***if Satan could get a foothold on the president, he could then lead the whole church.*** Such doctrine reminds me of Nephi's words:

"And others he will pacify, and lead them away in to carnal security, that they will say: All is well in Zion, yea, Zion prospereth, all is well – and thus the devil cheateth their souls, and leadeth them away carefully down to hell.... *Wo unto him that is at ease in Zion!* Wo be unto him that crieth All is well!... Cursed is he that putteth his trust in man (a President for instance?), or maketh flesh his arm, or shall hearken unto the precepts of men, save their precepts shall be given by the power of the Holy Ghost. Wo be unto the Gentiles, saith the Lord of Hosts! (Remember the Gentiles are those who first receive the Book of Mormon – In other words, the LDS people) For not withstanding I shall lengthen out mine arm unto them from day to day, they will deny me." (2Nephi 28:21, 24-25; 31-32)

"Let us walk on to forbidden territory for a moment and actually question the words of a prophet. Was Wilford Woodruff right in what he said? If he was right, then do we understand him correctly? In examining his words, we first see that they are spoken in his name and not the Lord's. He starts out, "I say..." He does not claim that his words are inspired; thus they cannot carry an equal weight with any previous revelation. Therefore, if we were to find a previous revelation which conflicted with the above statement, then that would take ascendancy.

"Is there such a revelation? Yes, there are several. For instance, in speaking of the prophet of the Church, the Lord said,

"And *all they who receive the oracles [i.e. holy utterances] of God, **let them beware how they hold them lest they are accounted as a light thing,*** and they are brought under condemnation thereby, and stumble and fall when the storms descend, and the winds blow, and the rains descend and beat upon their house." (D&C 90:5)

"If it is impossible for the prophet to lead the Church astray, then why did the Lord say this?

Please note, D&C 90 verse 4 reads: "... through you [i.e. Joseph Smith] shall the oracles be given to another, yea, even unto the church..." There is a misconception of the term "oracle" in today's Mormon vernacular. Today, the word "oracle" is interpreted as being a specific person who delivers revelation from God, and thereby it has come to infer that the members of the First Presidency and Quorum of the Apostles are "oracles."

However, the Lord's meaning of "oracle," as established in verse 4, are *His words*. More specifically, they are the Lord's holy utterances given to the Church *through Joseph Smith*. Verse 5, which Dewey quotes, is often put into erroneous context as a warning that the general membership of the Church must beware not to dismiss the counsel of the top 15 leaders of the Church. This is misleading and twists what the Lord is actually saying.

As the Lord is saying that He will give his oracles unto Joseph Smith, Dewey is correct in his assertion that *this warning applies even more-so to subsequent Church leaders*, who are called with the duty of seeking direct revelation/utterances from the Lord in behalf of those they are a steward over. Continuing from Dewey's book:

"How could a prophet possibly stumble and fall? Why did Joseph Smith warn: "When the head is sick, the whole body is faint?" (Doc. Hist. of the Church, Vol. 2, pg. 146) Why did he also say, "*Were he (Sidney Rigdon) to preside, he would lead the Church to destruction in less than five years*"?⁶ (DHC 6:592) Why did Joseph also warn that, "*If the people departed from the Lord, they must fall – that **they were depending on the prophet, hence were darkened in their minds.***" (DHC 5:19) Also, "*If one member becomes corrupt, and you know it, you must immediately put it away, or it will either injure or destroy the whole body*" (the Church). (DHC 4:605)⁷

"Do not the scriptures tell us clearly that "God is the same yesterday, today and forever," and "with him there is no variables." (See 1Nephi 10:18, 2Nephi 2:4; Heb 3:8; and James 1:17.) **Therefore, the pattern that God followed yesterday will be repeated in principle today and tomorrow.**

"Did you realize that only eight pages of the entire New Testament was written by the president of the church? This, of course, was Peter. Paul, who wrote more than anyone else, according to many scholars, was not even a member of the quorum of the twelve, but had a special calling directly by Christ to be "the apostle of the gentiles." (Rom. 11:13) He was an apostle "neither by man, but by Jesus Christ." (Gal. 1:1)

"To affirm that the scholars are correct, we find that the Lord told Oliver Cowdery and David Whitmer that "you are called with that same calling with which he (Paul) was called." (D&C 18:9) *Oliver Cowdery and David Whitmer were never members of the quorum of twelve, yet they were called apostles in early LDS history.* Thus, if they had been worthy, **they could have written scriptures as good and as authorized as Paul.**

"Did not Brigham Young say, "Is this (the spirit of prophesy) the privilege of every person? It is." (Journal of Discourses 3:89)⁸ Joseph Smith said, "No man is a minister of Jesus Christ without being a prophet," (DHC 3: 389) Unto the Lord's servants, he said, "And whatsoever they shall speak when moved upon by the Holy Ghost shall be scripture...." (D&C 68:4)

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

"The Lord was not referring to the president of the Church here or even all the general authorities exclusively, but He was speaking to all his servants. Is it not clear that the Lord can write scripture through whomever He pleases? Is He not a higher authority than the president of the Church? Did He not write scripture through non-general authorities in the past? Even two of the gospels, Mark and Luke, were written by individuals who were mere junior companions in the mission field and held no known position, yet they wrote scriptures binding on the entire Church today. What chance for acceptance would scripture written through a junior LDS missionary companion have today? Verily none, except among those who would be expelled from the Church.

"Almost all the Old Testament was written by those who were not general authorities. Even Moses had no position among the Elders when he was called, neither did Enoch who was "but a lad". David was anointed in secret to preserve his life after Saul led the Kingdom astray.

"Interestingly, LDS general authorities often quote Amos to substantiate that the Lord will deal through "recognized" prophets: "Surely the Lord God will do nothing, but he revealeth his secret unto his servants, the prophets." (Amos 3:7)

"Ironically, Amos was far from being a general authority. He said, **"I was no prophet, neither was I a prophet's son,** but I was an herdsman, and a gatherer of sycamore fruit. And the Lord took me as I followed the flock, and **the Lord said unto me: go prophesy unto my people Israel."** (Amos 7:14-15)

"Verily, Amos had no position in the church, but prophesied to the whole church. Could it happen again? Why not?..."

"If you (the twelve) will not warn them (the nations) others Will and you will loose your crowns."⁹⁵ (DHC 2:197) **"Beware of pride lest ye become as the Nephites of old."** (D&C 38:39) **If that doesn't mean there is a possibility of the Church going astray, then what does?** The Nephites of old fell into great spiritual darkness. How much clearer can the written word be?...

"Many times the Lord clearly indicates that the Church is not immune to being cut off: **"And if you do not these things at the end of the appointment ye shall be rejected as a church with your dead,** saith the Lord your God." (D&C 124:32)

"Wherefore let the church repent of her sins, and I the Lord will own them, otherwise they shall be cut off." (D&C 63:63)

"What would happen if the Church were cut off? *Do you suppose you would hear our president announce the next day, "Well, brothers and sisters, I've got some bad news – We've been cut off."* Far from it. **Instead the Lord merely cuts them off from true revelation and**

they are left to struggle by themselves to lean on the arm of flesh. From that point on every favorable emotion is interpreted as the Holy Spirit.

"On the other hand, many sincere people pray about the first vision, the truths of the Book of Mormon and the validity [of] church doctrines and they do receive a witness from the Holy Spirit. *Unfortunately, after receiving this answer, they automatically assume that everything else is in order.*

"An amazingly small number have ever asked God if He is pleased with His leaders today and if the Church is in order as it should be. Why? Because after they receive a witness ***they are deceived into thinking that it is a mark of unfaithfulness to doubt the leaders today.*** But is it? NO: It is only a sin to doubt the Holy Spirit.

"Why did Joseph Smith say, "You will live to see men arise in power in the Church who will seek to put down your friends and the friends of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. *Many will be hoisted because of their money and worldly learning which they seem to be in possession of; and many who are the true followers of our Lord and Savior will be cast down because of their poverty.*" (Mosiah Hancock Journal, pg. 28)

"Why did Brigham Young say, "***Brethren, this church will be led on to the very brink of hell by the leaders of this people.***" (Attested to by Joshua Jones, 1861, Provo Bowery)

"Why did John Taylor say, "***The church will go into bondage both temporally and spiritually and in that day the One Mighty and Strong spoken of in the 85th Section of the Doctrine and Covenants would come.***" (A LEAF IN REVIEW Page 235.)

"Again why did the Lord say, "***Beware of pride lest ye become as the Nephites of old.***" (D&C 38:39)

"After all these witnesses, can you not consider, my friends, the possibility that the Church needs to be set in order as prophesied in D&C 85 and later by Brigham Young and John Taylor? Those who did not consider that Jesus was the Christ never obtained the witness. Even so, *the LDS who believe that revelation can only come through the head of the church are in danger of missing out on the words of many different prophets.*

"***All true prophets have admitted the possibility of error, especially when depending on their human ability.*** For instance, Nephi said, "And now, if I do err, even did THEY ERR OF OLD; not that I would excuse myself because of other men, but because of the weakness which is in me, according to the flesh, I would excuse myself." (1Nephi 19:6)

"Even the possibility of error in the Doctrine and Covenants is admitted by

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

the Lord: "These commandments are of me, and were given unto my servants in their weakness, after the manner of their language, that they might come to understanding. *And inasmuch as they erred it might be made known.*" (D&C 1:24-25)

"When Helaman (a prophet) was given the records and authority from his father, he was warned, "If ye transgress the commandments of God, behold, these things which are sacred shall be taken from you by the power of God, and ye shall be delivered up unto Satan, that he may sift you as chaff before the wind." (Alma 37:15)

"One time the prophet Peter made the mistake of refusing to eat with the Gentiles for fear of offending Jewish members and Paul "withstood him to his face because he was to be blamed." (Gal. 2:8-14) *Paul did this because he saw that Peter was leading the Church astray and such a bad example had to be brought to light.*

"Now we ask the question: ***If there was a danger that Peter, Helaman, Joseph Smith and others could fail, then how are we justified in believing that current "living prophets" have some mysterious immunity? Who says we are to trust in the arm of flesh?***

"Brigham Young warned us not to "pin our faith on another's sleeve." He also said,

"Suppose that the leaders of this people had forsaken the Lord and should introduce, through selfishness, that which would militate against the kingdom of God on the earth, that which would in the issue actually destroy this people, ***how are you going to detect the wrong and know it from the right? You cannot do it unless you have the spirit of the Lord.***

"Some may say, 'Brethren, you who lead the church, we have all confidence in you, we are not in the least afraid but what everything will go right under your superintendence; all the business matters will be transacted right; and if Brother Brigham is satisfied with it, I am.' ***I do not wish any Latter-Day Saint in this world, nor in heaven, to be satisfied with anything I do, unless the spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, the spirit of revelation, makes them satisfied. I wish them to know for themselves and understand for themselves, for this would strengthen the faith that is in them.*** Suppose that the people were heedless, that they manifested no concern with regard to the things of the kingdom of God, *but threw the whole burden upon the leaders of the people, saying, 'If the brethren who take charge of matters are satisfied we are,' this is not pleasing in the sight of the Lord.*" (J.D. 3:44- 45)

"Isn't it strange that in Brigham Young's day it was not pleasing to put our blind trust in the Lord's servants, but today it is? That is – it looks as if it

is. *Today, those who say words forbidden by Brigham Young are looked upon as the faithful and the pillars in the Church and are rewarded with praise and positions.* What are those condemned words? Let me repeat: "You who lead the Church, we have all confidence in you, we are not the least afraid but what everything will go right."...

"In the days of Joseph Smith there was much more independence of thought than there is today. *Joseph often publicly challenged anyone who disagreed with his doctrines to try and prove their case.* He would justify all that he brought forth with logic and the scriptures. Such thinking drew intelligent and great men about him. Public debates on religion were encouraged.

"Today any debates on the scriptures are viewed as "contention." But in the early days people were encouraged to be as great as the prophet himself or greater. *They were encouraged to prophesy, have dreams, see visions and seek the face of God, but even with all this independence of mind, Joseph said that "they were depending on the prophet, hence were darkened in their minds."*

"If members were darkened in their minds in those days, where can their light be found today? Indeed, the LDS depend on the prophet more today than ever before in history. How can you ever become a God and rule others if you have to be ruled over in every trifle? One has to learn the independence of heaven and go forth as Jesus did and do what you know to be right. Remember – all the general authorities "frowned" on Christ and excommunicated anyone who followed Him."

Take a moment to review the points made by Dewey:

- "[T]he LDS have virtually reached the same state of crystallization as the Catholic Church... to the extent that they accept the words of their president... with the same weight that the Catholics accept the words of the Pope."
- "[I]f it is possible for the church to fail today... could you think of a doctrine that would cause any greater rejoicing in hell?... [I]f Satan could get a foothold on the president, he could then lead the whole church"
- "Joseph [Smith] warn[ed] that...***they were depending on the prophet, hence were darkened in their minds.***" (DHC 5:19)"
- "*only eight pages of the entire New Testament* was written by the president of the church.... Even two of the gospels, Mark and Luke, were written by... junior companions in the mission field... *yet they*

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

wrote scriptures binding on the entire Church today."

- "Oliver Cowdery and David Whitmer were never members of the quorum of twelve, yet they were called apostles in early LDS history. Thus, if they had been worthy, they could have written scriptures as good and as authorized as Paul."
- "*Almost all the Old Testament was written by those who were not general authorities.* Even Moses had no position among the Elders when he was called."
- "Amos had no position in the church, [yet] prophesied to the whole church.... He said, 'I was no prophet, neither was I a prophet's son.... as I followed [my] flock... the Lord said unto me: go prophesy unto my people Israel.'... Interestingly, *LDS general authorities often quote Amos to substantiate that the Lord will deal through "recognized" prophets:* 'Surely the Lord God will do nothing, but he revealeth his secret unto his servants, the prophets.'" (Amos 3:7)"
- "'Beware of pride lest ye become as the Nephites of old.'" (D&C 38:39)... The Nephites of old fell into great spiritual darkness.... If that doesn't mean there is a possibility of the Church going astray, then what does?"
- "All true prophets have admitted the possibility of error, especially when depending on their human ability."
- Brigham Young: "Some may say, 'Brethren, you who lead the church, we have all confidence in you, we are not in the least afraid but what everything will go right under your superintendence; all the business matters will be transacted right; and if Brother Brigham is satisfied with it, I am.'... ***This is not pleasing in the sight of the Lord.***" (Journal of Discourses 3:44- 45)
- "If members were darkened in their minds in [the] days [of Joseph Smith], where can their light be found today? Indeed, the LDS depend on the prophet more today than ever before in history."
- "What would happen if the Church were cut off?... [T]he Lord [would] merely [cut the leadership] off from true revelation and they [would be] left to struggle by themselves to lean on the arm of flesh. From that point on every favorable emotion [would be] interpreted as the Holy Spirit."

The points he makes are founded with scriptural precedent, not to mention the words of Joseph Smith and Brigham Young. Ask just about every Mormon why we can place our trust in the President of the Church,

and they will state something along the lines of: "because the Lord has promised that the prophet can't lead the members astray." Press them to provide where this is recorded in scripture, or who said this, and most would be at a loss, other than to say that they hear it repeated in General Conference pretty much every six months.

Unfortunately, the Lord *will* allow errors to be taught. He has allowed errors to creep up and cause apostasy in every previous dispensation, and He has allowed (and will continue to allow) them in this one. Even if the Lord has caused His word and will to be spoken through a man, he *will* allow that man to occasionally be left unto his weaknesses and possibly declare incorrect doctrines or prophecy – thereby the people who harken unto him *can* be misled. Make no mistake, the Lord *will* allow the President of the Church to disseminate incorrect teachings.

Perfect case in point: the Lord allowed Wilford Woodruff to declare this false doctrine during the General Conference of October 1890. The Lord has even allowed it to fester and become the baseless "Mormon Leadership Infallibility" sacred cow that it has become today. The Lord has allowed Church leaders to calcify this false doctrine into an anchoring of veneration for whoever sits in Church leadership positions.

The Lord has allowed this, above all, to become the most salient doctrinal point, the most sacred of sacred cows, in the LDS Church today.

Cow #2: A Majority of Faithful LDS Will Never Be Deceived or Led Astray

Should the reader feel that J. J. Dewey's points are dubious, I offer key portions of the 16th Chapter of H. Verlan Andersen's *The Great And Abominable Church Of The Devil*. As for his credentials, Brother Andersen served in both the First and Second Quorums of the Seventy before passing away in 1992.¹⁰ The title of this chapter is: "The Apostasy of The Latter Days."¹¹

This chapter not only (somewhat inadvertently) supports Dewey's assertions concerning the first sacred cow, but also puts out to pasture sacred cow number two: a majority of faithful latter-day saints will never be deceived/led astray (all emphasis added):

History Warns That Apostasy Must Be Expected

"Religious history testifies that, *with the single exception of the inhabitants of the City of Enoch, no people to whom the gospel*

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

has been given have remained faithful to their covenants for more than a few generations. Time after time the Lord has established His Church among a group who have lived His commandments for a few years and then fallen away, thus bringing upon themselves His judgments. *This cycle of human folly which so many prophets have noted, has repeated itself with such consistent regularity that **any group which finds itself to be the favored recipients of the gospel would do well to assume that their apostasy is certain, and the only question about it is how long it will take...***

"The fact that the Lord has found it necessary to restore His gospel so many times is in itself evidence of the regularity with which apostasy has occurred because **the only thing which will cause the destruction of His Church is the wickedness of its members...**

"Are the conditions which ordinarily accompany apostasy present today?...

"If "ease" and "exceedingly great prosperity" are certain to cause people to "forget the Lord their God," then **the Church is in deep trouble because seldom, if ever, has any group been as prosperous as it is today.** Its beginnings were humble enough. Starting in 1830 with an initial membership of six, the Church was persecuted, its property destroyed and confiscated, its leaders slain, and the people finally driven into a forbidding wilderness before they could find a measure of peace. *But all that has now changed. After 140 years of growth, membership numbers in the millions, **persecution has largely vanished**, and instead of ostracism, members are, for the most part, accepted and respected.*

"These conditions in prior dispensations have been sure signs of weakened faith. To fail to consider the possibility that the members of the Church are again "falling away" would be to ignore one of the most thoroughly documented lessons of history....

Prophecies Regarding Apostasy In The Latter Days

"The Book of Mormon contains many predictions of a falling away among the "Gentiles" in the latter days. While the non-Jewish, non-Lamanite members of Christ's Church may not call themselves Gentiles, the Book of Mormon prophets did. This is clearly shown by the title page of the Nephite scripture which states in the following passage that this book will come forth "by way of the Gentile:"

"Wherefore, it is an abridgment of the record of the people of Nephi, and also of the Lamanites—Written to the Lamanites, who are a remnant of the house of Israel; and also to Jew and Gentile... to come forth in due time by way of the Gentile—" (See also D&C 20:9)

"Christ also used the name "Gentile" to identify those through whom the

gospel would go to the Lamanites. (3 Nephi 21:2-4) ***If Church members from Gentile nations will bear in mind that the term "Gentile" when used in the Book of Mormon includes them, the prophecies therein will have much greater meaning and be more disturbing.***

"Some of the predictions clearly refer to members of Christ's Church. Consider, for example, the following statement which is found among Nephi's comments regarding latter-day conditions:

"They wear stiff necks and high heads; yea, and because of pride, and wickedness, and abominations, and whoredoms, ***they have all gone astray save it be a few***, who are the humble followers of Christ; nevertheless, they are led, that in many instances they do err because they are taught by the precepts of men. (2 Nephi 28:14)

"Even one who considers himself a "humble follower of Christ" is here warned that he will err "in many instances" because he is "taught by the precepts of men."

"Moroni was similarly explicit in predicting false teachings among the Saints. Reflect upon the *unmistakable implications of this point-blank indictment of members of the "holy church of God:"*

"O ye pollutions, ye hypocrites, ye teachers, who sell yourselves for that which will canker, why have ye polluted the holy church of God? (Mormon 8:38)

"Since there is only one "holy church of God" on earth, and *since it is being polluted, the blame therefore appears to rest upon teachers and hypocrites* within that church.

"Christ levelled His own charge that iniquity would prevail among Gentile members of His Church in the last days in these words:

"At that day when the Gentiles shall sin against my gospel, and shall be *filled with all manner of lyings, and of deceits, and of mischiefs, and all manner of hypocrisy, and murders, and priestcrafts, and whoredoms, and of secret abominations;* (3 Nephi 16:10)

"That ***He was referring to members of His Church in this passage*** is evident not only from the fact that He states that the Gentiles will sin against His gospel, but also in discussing the possibility of their failing to repent, He refers to them as the "Salt of the earth:"

"But if they will not turn unto me, and hearken unto my voice, I will suffer them, yea, I will suffer my people, O house of Israel, that they shall go through among them, and shall tread them down, and they shall be as salt that hath lost its savor, which is thenceforth good for nothing but to be cast out, and to be trodden underfoot of my people, O house of Israel. (3 Nephi 16:15)

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

"When Christ uses the term *"the salt of the earth"*, He means His covenant people, as the following passage explains:

"When men are called unto mine everlasting gospel, and covenant with an everlasting covenant, they are accounted as the salt of the earth and the savor of men;

"They are called to be the savor of men; therefore, if that salt of the earth lose its savor, behold, it is thenceforth good for nothing only to be cast out and trodden under the feet of men. (D&C 101:39-40)

"There are two other instances of record wherein the Lord told the Nephites that ***unless the Gentiles repented, they would be trodden down and torn in pieces.*** (3 Nephi 20:16, 21:12-14)

"Mormon, who had witnessed the Lamanites exterminate his own people, used almost the same words as did Christ in the quotations referred to above, in predicting the destruction of the unrepentant Gentiles by a remnant of the house of Jacob:

"And then, O ye Gentiles, how can ye stand before the power of God, except ye shall repent and turn from your evil ways?

"Therefore, repent ye, and humble yourselves before him lest he shall come out in justice against you—lest a remnant of the seed of Jacob shall go forth among you as a lion, and tear you in pieces, and there is none to deliver. (Mormon 5:22, 24)

"Then we have the following words of Moroni which state that ***the Gentiles would become so wicked that unless they repented they would be destroyed:***

"And this cometh unto you, O ye Gentiles, that ye may know the decrees of God—that ye may repent, and not continue in your iniquities until the fulness come, that ye may not bring down the fulness of the wrath of God upon you as the inhabitants of the land have hitherto done. (Ether 2:11)

"It should be emphasized that *the above quoted statements are not merely warnings against iniquity but they are prophecies also.* In the clearest of language, they predict that the Gentiles will become so wicked that unless repentance occurs we will be destroyed. Or, as the last scripture quoted states it, *our iniquities will become so great that if we "continue" in them, we will be swept off as were our predecessors....*

Failure To Recognize The Signs Of Apostasy

"In the great majority of cases where apostasy has occurred, it appears that ***the people became wicked while believing themselves***

righteous. This happened time and again to the Children of Israel and the Nephites, and was plainly evident in the case of the Jews at the time of Christ. There are recorded exceptions to this rule. For example, when the Nephites apostatized immediately prior to Christ's visit, we are told:

"Now they did not sin ignorantly, for they knew the will of God concerning them, for it had been taught unto them; therefore they did wilfully rebel against God. (3 Nephi 6:18)

"But the typical situation is described thus by Mormon as he commented on the frequency and rapidity with which a people who have been blessed forsake the Lord:

"they do harden their hearts, and do forget the Lord their God, and do trample under their feet the Holy One—yea, and this because of their ease, and their exceedingly great prosperity. (Hela 12:2)

"*Prophecies regarding the Gentile apostasy of the latter days indicate that it will be the typical one wherein **Church members will be led away by false beliefs into evil practices.*** Nephi had much to say regarding the event. Among other things he predicted that:

18. "Because of pride, and because of false teachers, and false doctrine, their churches have become corrupted..." (2 Nephi 28:12)
19. "the humble followers of Christ" will err in many instances because they are taught by the precepts of men. (2 Nephi 28:14)
20. Some will be lulled away "into carnal security, that they will say: All is well in Zion; yea, Zion prospereth, all is well—and thus the devil cheateth their souls, and leadeth them away carefully down to hell." (2 Nephi 28:21)
21. Others will be deceived into believing that there is no devil and no hell. (2 Nephi 28:22)
22. There will be many who will say: Eat, drink and be merry; nevertheless, fear God—he will justify in committing a little sin; yea, lie a little, take the advantage of one because of his words, dig a pit for thy neighbor; there is no harm in this; and do all these things, for tomorrow we die; and if it so be that we are guilty, God will beat us with a few stripes, and at last we shall be saved in the kingdom of God. Yea, and there shall be many which shall teach after this manner, false and vain and foolish doctrines. (2 Nephi 28:8-9)...

"***[I]t is those who have the truth "plainly manifest unto them" who have the most to fear... [LDS] who conform to the outward ordinances, ceremonies, and practices of Christ's Church tend to assume that such activities assure them a place in His kingdom.***

This assumption, according to the scriptures, is likewise false. For example, *the parable of the Ten Virgins teaches that only one half of that select group of Christians who wait expectantly for the Lord's second*

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

*coming and consider themselves acceptable to Him, will be admitted to the marriage. Another scripture assures us that "many" who have prophesied in the Lord's name, cast out devil's in His name, and in His name "done many wonderful works," will be excluded because of their "iniquity." (Matt. 7:22-23) People of this type—the **foolish virgins who have been deceived, (D&C 45:57) and the "many" who have worked iniquity [even] while doing many wonderful works in the name of the Lord—should be interested in how they are being deceived and what they are doing which will keep them out of the kingdom....***

Not only does Andersen draw from historical precedent and cyclical spiritual patterns of previous dispensations, he quotes scripture after scripture from the Book of Mormon which sternly warns and prophecies of latter-day apostasy, some of which even lay out details of what corruptions we in the last days ought to look for.

Instead of presenting these scriptures from the Book of Mormon, the modern LDS Church places all focus of the concept of "apostasy" – indeed even assigns the sole definition of "apostasy" – on a passage from a discourse Joseph Smith gave in 1839:

"I will give you one of the Keys of the mysteries of the Kingdom. It is an eternal principle, that has existed with God from all eternity: That man who rises up to condemn others, finding fault with the Church, saying that they are out of the way, while he himself is righteous, then know assuredly, that that man is in the high road to apostasy; and if he does not repent, will apostatize, as God lives"¹²

However, this presents a major conflict – because Moroni does *exactly this* in the Book of Mormon: condemns the latter-day Gentiles (i.e. *the modern LDS Church*) of apostasy.

"But behold, Jesus Christ hath shown you unto me, and I know your doing. And I know that ye do walk in the pride of your hearts; and there are none save a few only who do not lift themselves up in the pride of their hearts... and your churches, yea, even every one, have become polluted because of the pride of your hearts. For behold, ye do love money, and your substance, and your fine apparel, and the adorning of your churches, more than ye love the poor and the needy, the sick and the afflicted. O ye pollutions, ye hypocrites, ye teachers, who sell yourselves for that which will canker, why have ye polluted the holy church of God?" (Mormon 8:34–38)

Wow! The gall of Moroni to say this! How dare he find fault with the latter-day Church! Just because Christ showed him our current-future state doesn't mean he can just "rise up to condemn others!" He's undoubtedly "finding fault with the Church," and comes across like "he himself is righteous" while others "are out of the way." Given what Joseph said

concerning one of the Keys of the mysteries of the Kingdom, Moroni must be *way* out of place here!

..... Or, perhaps, we're overlooking the spirit, the crux of what Joseph was trying to communicate. Consider Joseph's words again:

- "That man who rises up to condemn others, finding fault with the Church..." – someone who rises himself up, someone self-appointed, not commanded nor led by God to warn/prophesy, someone who has no problem hypocritically pointing out the motes in everyone's eyes but not the beam in his own.
- "saying that they are out of the way, while he himself is righteous..." – someone who declares that everyone is wrong but himself, and that all ought to make him their leader, their example.
- "then know assuredly, that that man is in the high road to apostasy" – know that that man is not sent of God, his words/actions will not be upheld by the Holy Ghost, and if he had any faith in Christ in the first place he is definitely in the process of forsaking Him (for *that* is the true definition of "apostasy").

This kind of person sounds akin to some of the Church's most outspoken defectors during Joseph's era – men who were willing to openly criticize and condemn Joseph or others while posturing themselves as faultless (or at least more-so than Joseph). This also sounds similar to infamous Book of Mormon personalities, such as Korihor and Nehor. This does not sound like Moroni, nor does it describe every other prophet of scripture who was called of God to warn and prophesy against an apostatizing city, group, people or culture.

Regardless, the modern Church not only rebuts this take on Joseph's words, they have created an entire lesson that quantifies anyone and everyone who loses confidence in the leaders of the modern LDS Church, to any degree, as "apostates." The Relief Society / Priesthood manual *Teachings of Presidents of the Church: Joseph Smith*, chapter 27, states "Losing confidence in Church leaders, criticizing them, and neglecting any duty required by God lead to apostasy." The lesson gives examples of the members and leaders of Joseph Smith's day who lost faith that he was a prophet, as well as quote after quote from those who stayed in the Church and were true to Joseph, and summarizes that those who criticized Joseph were given to the spirit of the devil.

The problem with all of these quotes is that they specifically concern Joseph Smith and the leaders of *his* era, not subsequent eras of the Church. Consider one quote in the lesson from William G. Nelson:

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

"In one meeting I heard [Joseph] say: 'I will give you a key that will never rust,—if you will stay with the majority of the Twelve Apostles, and the records of the Church, you will never be led astray.'"¹³

Was Joseph insisting that *all* future apostles and *all* future records of the Church could never lead the Church astray?

Or was he instructing that: 1) there were enough stalwart men *currently serving* in the quorum of the twelve apostles whose hearts are broken and who assuredly seek Christ's will in all things, and that 2) the *then-existing records* of the Church (including the visions and revelations which Joseph himself received) will be *vital to preserve and reference forever afterward* in order to avoid apostasy down the road?

We have a conundrum. Book of Mormon prophecy makes it painfully clear that the entire "Holy Church of God" in the future will become corrupt and polluted, will apostatize, and inevitably will suffer horribly for it. Not only does Moroni warn of this, but also Christ Himself lays this out in 3Nephi chapter 16. The Church will be so full of pride and subtle wickedness that the members' fate will be akin to the fate of the Nephites – genocide – unless they repent.

And yet, the members today are repeatedly told (or, perhaps the term "threatened" is more accurate) that to lose confidence in the modern leaders of the LDS Church is to begin to apostatize; to question or doubt (let alone criticize) them or their decisions is – without exception – making a self-righteous, holier-than-thou stance and is firmly on the road of apostasy.

These two viewpoints cannot co-exist. One has to be correct, the other has to be incorrect.

The author is throwing in his hat with Moroni and Christ. Both of them confirm: a majority of faithful LDS *can* (indeed *will*) be deceived and led astray. Anything aside from this is a precept of men, not of God. In fact, it's one of the very precepts which causes humble followers to continue to err!

Cow #3: Church Position Automatically Qualifies Someone as a "Leader"

The next sacred cow is much more subtle than the first two, which is why it is so critical to identify and acknowledge. Sacred cow number 3: the men who rise to position in the First Presidency and Quorum of Apostles

automatically become “leaders”, thus their choices and decisions are invariably inspired from Heaven, and everything they do has God's stamp of approval.

Before proceeding, the reader is encouraged to ponder exactly what the qualities of a “leader” are compared to those of a “manager.” What characteristics come to mind when you think of someone as a “leader” as opposed to someone who is a “manager”?

On August 19th, 1983, LDS scholar Hugh Nibley (whom I quote repeatedly in Volume I) gave a speech during the BYU graduation ceremony. His talk has stunningly far-reaching implications. When one stops to ponder what he's saying, the contents are jaw-dropping. In disarmingly historically-scattershot Nibley fashion, he managed to encapsulate scathing, borderline-seditious commentary on the regressive “leadership” qualities of the LDS Church within a talk concerning secularly-historical patterns. Thus, his condemning inferences flew over the heads of listeners that day – and apparently continue to do so today.

The title of his talk is *Leaders To Managers: The Fatal Shift*.¹⁴ In order to lead this cow to pasture, I present critical portions of it, including the original footnotes (all emphasis added):

“Twenty-three years ago today, if you will cast your minds back, on this same occasion I gave the opening prayer in which I said: “We have met here today **clothed in the black robes of a false priesthood...**” Many have asked me since whether I really said such a shocking thing, but nobody has ever asked what I meant by it. Why not? Well, some knew the answer already; and as for the rest, *we do not question things at “the BYU.”*”

At this moment, the entire audience found Nibley's delivery of this line to be highly amusing and erupted in laughter. (Refer to the clip of it in the supporting material¹⁵) And yet Nibley's words are nothing short of a stinging indictment upon the whole of modern Mormon culture. Continuing from Nibley's talk:

“But for my own relief, I welcome this opportunity to explain. Why a priesthood? Because these [graduation] robes originally denoted those who had taken clerical orders; and a college was a “mystery,” with all the rites, secrets, oaths, degrees, tests, feasts, and solemnities that go with initiation into higher knowledge. [Ed. Note: these matters are covered thoroughly in Volume I.]

“But why false? Because *it is borrowed finery, coming down to us through a long line of unauthorized imitators....*

“What is wrong, then, with the flowing robes? For one thing, they are somewhat theatrical and too easily incline the wearer, beguiled by their

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

splendor, to masquerade and affectation. In the time of Socrates, the Sophists were making a big thing of their special manner of dress and delivery.¹⁶

"It was all for show, of course, but it was "dressing for success" with a vengeance, for the whole purpose of the rhetorical brand of education which they inaugurated and sold at top prices to the ambitious youth was to make the student successful as a paid advocate in the law courts, a commanding figure in the public assemblies, or a successful promoter of daring business enterprises by **mastering those then irresistible techniques of persuasion and salesmanship** which the Sophists had to offer.

"That was the classical education which Christianity embraced at theurgy of the great St. Augustine. [Ed. Note: Again, covered in Volume I.] *He had learned by hard experience that **you can't trust revelation because you can't control it**—the Spirit bloweth where it listeth (John 3:8); and *what the church needed was something more available and reliable than that, something commodior et multitudini tutior* ("handier and more reliable for the public") than revelation or even reason, **and that is exactly what the rhetorical education had to offer.***

"At the beginning of this century, scholars were strenuously debating the momentous transition from Geist to Amt, *from spirit to office, from inspiration to ceremony* in the leadership of the early church, *when the inspired leader, Peter, was replaced by the typical city bishop*, an appointed and elected official—**ambitious, jealous, calculating, power-seeking, authoritarian, an able politician, and a master of public relations....**

"And down through the centuries *the robes have never failed to keep the public at a respectful distance, inspire a decent awe for the professions, and impart an air of solemnity and mystery.... What took place in the Greco-Roman as in the Christian world was **that fatal shift from leadership to management that marks the decline and fall of civilizations....***

"[L]eadership can no more be taught than creativity or how to be a genius. The Generalstab tried desperately for a hundred years to train up a generation of leaders for the German army; but it never worked, because **the men who delighted their superiors, i.e., the managers, got the high commands, while the men who delighted the lower ranks, i.e., the leaders, got reprimands.**

"Leaders are movers and shakers, original, inventive, unpredictable, imaginative, full of surprises that discomfit the enemy in war and the main office in peace. For the managers are safe, conservative, predictable, conforming organization men and team players, dedicated to the establishment.

"**The leader, for example, has a passion for equality.** We think of great generals from David and Alexander on down, sharing their beans or maza with their men, calling them by their first names, marching along with them in the heat, sleeping on the ground, and being first over the wall. A famous ode by a long-suffering Greek soldier, Archilochus, reminds us that **the men in the ranks are not fooled for an instant by the executive type who thinks he is a leader.**"¹⁷

"For **the manager, on the other hand, the idea of equality is repugnant and even counterproductive.** Where promotion, perks, privilege, and power are the name of the game, awe and reverence for rank is everything, the inspiration and motivation of all good men. Where would management be without the inflexible paper processing, dress standards, attention to proper social, political, and religious affiliation, vigilant watch over habits and attitudes, that gratify the stockholders and satisfy security?"

"**"If you love me,"** said the greatest of all leaders, **"you will keep my commandments."** **"If you know what is good for you,"** says the manager, **"you will keep my commandments and not make waves."** **That is why the rise of management always marks the decline, alas, of culture....**

"To Parkinson's Law, which shows how management gobbles up everything else, he added what he calls the "Law of Injelitance": *Managers do not promote individuals whose competence might threaten their own position*; and so as the power of management spreads ever wider, the quality deteriorates (if that is possible). In short, **while management shuns equality, it feeds on mediocrity.**

"On the other hand, **leadership is an escape from mediocrity.** All the great deposits of art, science, and literature from the past, on which all civilization has been nourished, come to us from a mere handful of leaders. For the qualities of leadership are the same in all fields, **the leader being simply the one who sets the highest example**; and to do that and open the way to greater light and knowledge, the leader must break the mold....

"True leaders are inspiring because they are inspired, caught up in a higher purpose, devoid of personal ambition, idealistic, and incorruptible.

"There is necessarily some of the manager in every leader (what better example than Brigham Young himself?), as there should be some of the leader in every manager. *Speaking in the temple to the temple management, the scribes and pharisees all in their official robes, the Lord chided them for one-sidedness: They kept careful accounts of the most trivial sums brought into the temple; but in their dealings they neglected fair play, compassion, and good faith, which happen to be the prime qualities of leadership.*

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

"The Lord insisted that both states of mind are necessary, and that is important: "These ought ye to have done (speaking of the bookkeeping), and not to leave the other undone." But it is the blind leading the blind, he continues, who reverse priorities, who "strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel" (Matthew 23:23—24). So vast is the discrepancy between management and leadership that only a blind man would get them backwards. *Yet that is what we do.* In that same chapter of Matthew, the Lord tells the same men that they do not really take the temple seriously, while the business contracts registered in the temple they do take very seriously indeed (Matthew 23:16—18). I am told of a meeting of very big businessmen in a distant place, who happened also to be the heads of stakes, where they addressed the problem of "How to stay awake in the temple." ***For them what is done in the house of the Lord is a mere quota-filling until they can get back to the real work of the world.***

"History abounds in dramatic confrontations between the two types, but none is more stirring than the epic story of the collision between [Captain] Moroni and Amalickiah, the one the most charismatic leader, the other the most skillful manager, in the Book of Mormon. This is both timely and relevant—that's why I bring it in here. We are often reminded that Moroni "did not delight in the shedding of blood" and would do anything to avoid it, repeatedly urging his people to make covenants of peace and to preserve them by faith and prayer. *He refused to talk about "the enemy."* *For him they were always "our brethren," misled by the traditions of their fathers.* ***He fought them only with heavy reluctance, and he never invaded their lands, even when they threatened intimate invasion of his own.*** He never felt threatened, since he trusted absolutely in the Lord. *At the slightest sign of weakening by an enemy in battle, Moroni would instantly propose a discussion to put an end to the fighting.* ***The idea of total victory was alien to him—no revenge, no punishment, no reprisals, no reparations, even for an aggressor who had ravaged his country.*** He would send the beaten enemy home after battle, accepting their word for good behavior or inviting them to settle on Nephite lands, even when he knew he was taking a risk. Even his countrymen who fought against him lost their lives only while opposing him on the field of battle. *There were no firing-squads, and former conspirators and traitors had only to agree to support his popular army to be reinstated.* With Alma, he insisted that conscientious objectors keep their oaths and not go to war even when he desperately needed their help. ***Always concerned to do the decent thing, he would never take what he called an unfair advantage of an enemy.***

"Devoid of personal ambition, the moment the war was over he "yielded up the command of his armies.... and he retired to his own house.... in peace" (Alma 62:43), though as the national hero he could have had any office or honor.... *If all this sounds a bit too idealistic, may I remind you that there really have been such men in history, hard as that is to imagine today....*

"But if Moroni hated war so much, why was he such a dedicated general? He leaves us in no doubt on that head—he took up the sword only as a last resort. **"I seek not for power, but to pull it down"** (Alma 60:36). He was determined to "pull down [the] pride and... nobility" (Alma 51:18) of those groups who were trying to take things over. The *"Lamanite brethren"* he fought were the reluctant auxiliaries of Zoramites and Amalickiahites, his own countrymen. **They "grew proud ... because of their exceedingly great riches," and sought to seize power for themselves** (Alma 45:24), **enlisting the aid of "those who were in favor of kings... those of high birth... supported by those who sought power and authority over the people"** (Alma 51:8). They were further joined by important "judges [who] had many friends and kindreds" (the right connections were everything) plus "almost all the lawyers and the high priests," to which were added "the lower judges of the land, and **they were seeking for power**" (3 Nephi 6:27; Alma 46:4).

"All these **Amalickiah welded together with immense managerial skill to form a single ultraconservative coalition** who agreed to "support him and establish him to be their king," expecting that "he would make them rulers over the people" (Alma 46:5). **Many in the church were won over by Amalickiah's skillful oratory, for he was a charming** ("flattering" is the word used by the Book of Mormon) **and persuasive communicator. He made war the cornerstone of his policy and power,** using a systematic and carefully planned communications system of towers and trained speakers **to stir up the people to fight for their rights, meaning Amalickiah's career.**

"For while Moroni had kind feelings for the enemy, Amalickiah *"did care not for the blood of his [own] people"* (Alma 49:10). His object in life was to become king of both the Nephites and Lamanites, **using the one to subdue the other** (Alma 46:4—5). He was a master of dirty tricks, to which he owed some of his most brilliant achievements as *he maintained his upward mobility by clever murders* [Ed. note: i.e. tactical assassinations and coverups], *high-powered public relations, and great executive ability.* His competitive spirit was such that **he swore to drink the blood of Alma**, who stood in his way. In short, he was "one very wicked man" (Alma 46:9), who stood for everything that Moroni loathed...

"Finally, **as soon as Moroni disappeared from the scene, the old coalition** [Ed. note: i.e. the secret society of Gadianton Robbers] **"did obtain the sole management of the government," and immediately did "turn their backs upon the poor"** (Helaman 6:39), while they appointed judges to the bench who displayed the spirit of cooperation by **"letting the guilty and the wicked go unpunished because of their money"** (Helaman 7:5)....

"Such was the management that Moroni opposed. *By all means, brethren, let us take Captain Moroni for our model, and never forget what he fought for—the poor, the outcast, and the despised; and what he*

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

fought against—pride, power, wealth, and ambition; or how he fought—as the generous, considerate, and magnanimous foe, a leader in every sense....

"I must pause and remind you that this story of which I have given just a few small excerpts is supposed to have been cooked up back in the 1820s and somewhere in the backwoods by some abysmally ignorant, disgustingly lazy, and shockingly unprincipled hayseed. Aside from a light mitigation of those epithets, that is the only alternative to believing that the story is true; for the situation is equally fantastic no matter what kind of author you choose to invent. ***This must be a true story.***

"That Joseph Smith is beyond compare the greatest leader of modern times is a proposition that needs no comment. Brigham Young recalled that *many of the brethren considered themselves better managers than Joseph and were often upset by his economic naiveté.* Brigham was certainly a better manager than the Prophet (or anybody else, for that matter), and he knew it; *yet he always deferred to and unfailingly followed Brother Joseph all the way while urging others to do the same,* because he knew only too well how small is the wisdom of men compared with the wisdom of God.

"Moroni scolded the management for their "love of glory and the vain things of the world" (Alma 60:32), and we have been warned against the things of this world as recently as the last general conference.¹⁸ But exactly what are the things of the world? *An easy and infallible test has been given us in the well-known maxim, "You can have anything in this world for money" If a thing is of this world you can have it for money; if you cannot have it for money, it does not belong to this world.* That is what makes the whole thing manageable—money is pure number. By converting all values to numbers, everything can be fed into the computer and handled with ease and efficiency. "How much?" becomes the only question we need to ask. ***The manager "knows the price of everything and the value of nothing," because for him the value is the price....***

"The group leader of my high priests' quorum is a solid and stalwart Latter-day Saint who was recently visited by a young returned missionary who came to sell him some insurance. Cashing in on his training in the mission field, the fellow assured the brother that he knew that he had the right policy for him just as he knew the gospel was true. Whereupon my friend, without further ado, ordered him out of the house, for one with a testimony should hold it sacred and not sell it for money. *The early Christians called Christemporoi those who made merchandise of spiritual gifts or church connections. The things of the world and the things of eternity cannot be thus conveniently conjoined; and it is because many people are finding this out today that I am constrained at this time to speak on this unpopular theme....*

"To seek ye first financial independence and all other things shall

be added, is recognized as a rank perversion of the scriptures and an immoral inversion of values.... Those who have something to give to humanity revel in their work, and do not have to rationalize, advertise, or evangelize to make themselves feel good about what they are doing. It is only when their art and their science become business oriented that problems of ethics ever arise.... Paul was absolutely right: The drive for money is "the root of all evil" (1 Timothy 6:10); and he's quoting, incidentally, the old book of Enoch.

"In my latest class, a graduating honors student in business management (who is here today) wrote this—the assignment was to compare one's self with some character in the Pearl of Great Price, and he quite seriously chose Cain:

"Many times I wonder if many of my desires are too self-centered. Cain was after personal gain. He knew the impact of his decision to kill Abel. Now, I do not ignore God and make murderous pacts with Satan; however, I desire to get gain. Unfortunately, my desire to succeed in business is not necessarily to help the Lord's kingdom grow (now there's a refreshing bit of honesty). Maybe I am pessimistic, but I feel that ***few businessmen have actually dedicated themselves to the furthering of the Church without first desiring personal gratification.*** As a business major, *I wonder about the ethics of business—"charge as much as possible for a product which was made by someone else who was paid as little as possible." You live on the difference. As a businessman will I be living on someone else's industry and not my own? Will I be contributing to society or will I receive something for nothing, as did Cain? While being honest, these are difficult questions for me.*

"They have been made difficult by the rhetoric of our times. ***The Church was full of men in Paul's day teaching that gain is godliness and making others believe it. Today the black robe puts the official stamp of approval on that very proposition....***

"Most of you are here today only because you believe that this charade will help you get ahead in the world. But in the last few years things have got out of hand. The economy, once the most important thing in our materialistic lives, has become the only thing. ***We have been swept up in a total dedication to the economy which, like the massive mudslides of our Wasatch Front, is rapidly engulfing and suffocating everything.*** If President Kimball is "frightened and appalled" by what he sees, I can do no better than to conclude with his words: "***We must leave off the worship of modern-day idols and a reliance on the 'arm of flesh,' for the Lord has said to all the world in our day, 'I will not spare any that remain in Babylon'***" (D&C 64:24)."¹⁹

"***And Babylon is where we are.*** In a forgotten time, before the Spirit was exchanged for the office and inspired leadership for ambitious

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

management, these robes were designed to represent withdrawal from the things of this world—as the temple robes still do. That we may become more fully aware of the real significance of both is my prayer.”

Throughout Nibley's talk, there is a palpable undercurrent of worry that the stark contrast between Church leadership in Joseph's era compared to Church leadership in the early 80's demonstrates that the fatal shift he elaborated upon was invariably underway. And yet, compared to how the Church functioned in the 1980's, Nibley's worries and suspicions speak far greater volumes today.

A calling, no matter how high in position, does not pre-qualify the person holding it to be regarded as a “leader” – that individual must demonstrate and “magnify” the values of a true leader, not the machinations, pretenses, and inequity of the manager who masquerades as a leader. Nibley sums up the difference aptly: “The leader... has a passion for equality.... For the manager... the idea of equality is repugnant and even counterproductive.... [T]he men in the ranks are not fooled for an instant by the executive type who thinks he is a leader.”

Quite simply, a “leader” is not a leader without unfeigned love, respect and demonstrable self-sacrificial service to those he leads. Anything short of this qualifies for Heaven's standard of revoking one's Priesthood authority, as summarized in D&C 121:38,39:

“[T]he rights of the priesthood are inseparably connected with the powers of heaven.... when we undertake to cover our sins, or to gratify our pride, our vain ambition, or to exercise control or dominion or compulsion upon the souls of the children of men, in any degree of unrighteousness, behold, the heavens withdraw themselves; the Spirit of the Lord is grieved; and when it is withdrawn, Amen to the priesthood or the authority of that man.”

In the days of Joseph Smith, Church callings required tremendous self-sacrifice, and often a wholesale surrender of earthly possessions and comforts, let alone a complete dismissal of any temporal ambitions. With the modern Church, the higher one's position the less actual sacrifice one is required to make – with the highest levels bordering on lucrative.

Cow #4 – “Follow the Prophet”

What a pity it would be if we were led by one man to utter destruction! Are you afraid of this? I am more afraid that this people have so much confidence in their leaders that they will not inquire

*for themselves of God whether they are led by him. **I am fearful they settle down in a state of blind self-security, trusting their eternal destiny in the hands of their leaders with a reckless confidence**[. T]hat in itself would thwart the purposes of God in their salvation... [Would] they know for themselves, by the revelations of Jesus, that they are led in the right way[?] **Let every man and woman know, by the whispering of the Spirit of God to themselves, whether their leaders are walking in the path the Lord dictates, or not.***

– Brigham Young, Journal of Discourses 9, pg. 150 (emphasis added)

I love Ezra Taft Benson, deeply. He was the President of the Church throughout much of my youth, and his passion for Christ and the Gospel inspired me during my teen years. Not only do I quote him repeatedly in Volume I, I partially dedicated it him.

Therefore, it is with reservation and sadness that I address the next unfounded and paraded sacred cow of Mormonism: the mantra of "Follow the Prophet," which is aptly summarized in Benson's doctrinally-flawed talk *Fourteen Fundamentals In Following The Prophet* given at a BYU devotional on February 26th, 1980. It should be noted that, at the time, Benson was one of the twelve apostles, and then-current President, Spencer W. Kimball, was alarmed by this talk. According to Kimball's son (and biographer):

"Spencer felt concern about the talk, wanting to protect the church against being misunderstood as espousing ultraconservative politics or an unthinking "follow the leader" mentality. The First Presidency called Elder Benson in to discuss what he had said and asked him to make explanation to the full Quorum of the Twelve [Apostles] and other general authorities. Elder Benson told them that he meant only to "underscore President Kimball's prophetic call."²⁰

Given Benson's passion for the Gospel of Christ, I have no doubt that his heart was in the right place. Unfortunately, these fourteen points have become institutionalized Mormon dogma today, and serve to continually reinforce the three sacred cows previously covered. The text of the entire talk is provided in the supporting material.²¹ Each of the fourteen points are provided below, followed by commentary as to their doctrinal and scripturally-precendent correctness:

3. "The prophet is the only man who speaks for the Lord in everything."

Both correct and incorrect: A true prophet is one who has been selected/chosen of God to deliver authorized messages from Him and to carry out His will. He can speak for the Lord in anything, and about any

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

subject, that the Lord instructs him to speak about or testify of. However, the Lord can choose and authorize *any* man (and multiple men simultaneously) to do this, not just the man holding the position of President of the Church; the words of a true prophet (whoever it is) will be sustained by the Holy Ghost.

4. "The living prophet is more vital to us than the standard works."

Deeply erroneous – this statement is akin to declaring "The New Testament is more vital to us than the Old Testament." It carries the implication that a more-current prophet's words nullify and/or usurp anything ever written in scripture that may contradict in the slightest.

It also implies that when a prophet is around, there's no need to study the scriptures or be familiar with sacred history, recorded precedents, or even eternal principles – for the prophet is there to teach, warn and guide the people in all things. With this implanted into the members' minds, their attitude devolves into: "If there's anything we really need to know, the prophet will let us know. After all, it is his duty to warn us ahead of time." This shirking of one's personal spiritual responsibility – placing such on the shoulders of another – is precisely what the Lord refers to as being "darkened in [one's] mind," as discussed previously with Cow #1.

Imagine for a moment that you find yourself face to face with God. How convinced would He be if someone excused oneself with:

"The Presidents of the Church during the time that I was alive did not explicitly talk about such matters. Therefore, because the living prophet's words are more important than any old scripture, or any dead prophet, I concluded that such matters must not have applied to my day and age."

5. "The living prophet is more important to us than a dead prophet."

Theoretically correct – yet as with point 2 it also strongly implies that anything spoken by the current President of the Church (who may be called but not chosen of God) trumps anything ever spoken by any former prophet or President. Such an interpretation promotes personal spiritual malnourishment, as well as a zealous dependency upon a single, living man. Again, this is the definition of someone being "darkened in [one's] mind."

6. "The prophet will never lead the Church astray."

Incorrect – as already established with the three previous sacred cows.

7. "The prophet is not required to have any particular earthly training or credentials to speak on any subject or act on any matter at any time."

Correct – a true prophet is on the Lord's errand, not his own. The Lord

can have him speak on any matter according to the Lord's will.

8. "The prophet does not have to say "Thus saith the Lord" to give us scripture."

Theoretically correct – a true prophet can and will convey eternal principles without needing to quantify everything as being directly declared by the Lord. Perfect case in point would be the sermons and writings of Joseph Smith wherein he expounded upon eternal matters and principles. However, not all opinions offered by true prophets are revealed from Heaven. For example, some of the content in the letters written by Paul in the New Testament contain opinionated answers to non-doctrinal matters, and may not necessarily reflect the mind and will of God.

9. "The prophet tells us what we need to know, not always what we want to know."

Correct – perfect case in point: Lehi, Abinadi, Samuel the Lamanite and all the other pariah prophets whom God commanded to speak harsh things against the previous dispensations that were falling into apostasy.

10. "The prophet is not limited by men's reasoning."

Correct – with a true prophet, this is a given. However, this particular point seems to be targeted at the Church's internal and external critics of the time, some of which were using the secular reasoning of men to justify their conclusions instead of scriptural sources or precedent.

11. "The prophet can receive revelation on any matter, temporal or spiritual."

Correct – however, this is also true for all other humble, worthy, repentant members as well, for the testimony of Christ is the spirit of prophecy.²² Additionally, this is precisely the crux of Moroni's promise in Moroni 10:4 and 5.

12. "The prophet may be involved in civic matters."

Correct – Joseph Smith most certainly did not shy away from civic matters. Again, this is another point which seems to have been aimed at critics at the time of this talk.

13. "The two groups who have the greatest difficulty in following the prophet are the proud who are learned and the proud who are rich."

Correct – as warned repeated by Christ himself, and as demonstrated in scriptural precedent. On the flip side however, consider the implications of when many who are rich and proud begin to extend unwavering, unquestioning, blind support to the President of the Church.

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

14. "The prophet will not necessarily be popular with the world or the worldly."

Correct – in fact most true prophets are not popular with anyone, especially those they are commanded to preach repentance to. Again, on the flip side, what does this infer when the leaders of the modern Church are extended (and accept) accolades and awards from leaders of the world, and ample praise from many of the rich, proud, and worldly?

15. "The prophet and his counselors make up the First Presidency—the highest quorum in the Church."

Technically correct – While the Twelve are "under the direction of the Presidency of the Church" (D&C 107:33) and the Seventy are "under the direction of the Twelve" (D&C 107:34), the Quorum of the Twelve Apostles and the Quorum of the Seventy are "equal in authority" (D&C 107:24,26) to the First Presidency. Also:

"every decision made by either of these quorums must be by the unanimous voice of the same; that is, every member in each quorum must be agreed to its decisions, in order to make their decisions of the same power or validity one with the other.... And in case that any decision of these quorums is made in unrighteousness, it may be brought before a general assembly of the several quorums, which constitute the spiritual authorities of the church;" (D&C 107:21-31)

This language describes something more akin to a system of checks and balances than strictly top-down, yes-man hierarchical management. While, technically, the Seventy take direction from the Twelve, and the Twelve from the First Presidency, each quorum has the right to take decisions of other quorums to task, to convene a general assembly of all authorities in order to discuss potentially unrighteous decisions made by any one quorum, even those of the First Presidency.

16. "The prophet and the presidency—the living prophet and the First Presidency—follow them and be blessed; reject them and suffer."

Theoretically correct – but only when applied to prophets/leaders *chosen* (not just called) of God. For reasons laid out with the previous sacred cows, this does not apply to Church leadership when apostasy grows. The Lord expects the members to use discernment and to be led by the Holy Ghost, to receive personal revelation and guidance in their own lives.

Should my reasoning, based on both scriptural and historical precedent, fail to convince the reader to reevaluate a staunch, unyielding position in this matter, perhaps the flat rejection of the "follow no matter what" mentality by earlier Church leaders may get the point across better:

"Do not brethren, put your trust in man though he be a **Bishop**, an **Apostle** or a **President**. If you do they will fail you in some time or place; they will do wrong or seem to; and your support will be gone. But if we lean on God, He will never fail us. **When men and women depend on God alone, and trust in him alone, there faith will not be shaken if the highest of the church should step aside.** They could still see that He is just and true; that truth is lovely and His sight; and the pure in heart are dear to Him."

– J Golden Kimball, Conference Report, April 1904, p. 29 (emphasis added)

"We have heard men who hold the priesthood remark that they would do anything they were told to do by those who preside over them even if they knew it was wrong; but **such obedience is worse than folly to us; it is slavery in the extreme**; and the man who would thus willingly degrade himself, should not claim a rank among intelligent beings, until he turns from his folly. **A man of God would despise the idea.** Others, in the extreme exercise of their almighty authority have taught that such obedience was necessary, and that no matter what the saints were told to do by their presidents, they should do it without any questions. **When Elders of Israel will so far indulge in these extreme notions of obedience as to teach them to the people, it is generally because they have it in their hearts to do wrong themselves.**"

– Joseph Smith, Jr., Millennial Star, Volume 14, No. 38, Pages 593-595 (emphasis added)

Joseph Smith not only rejected this mentality, he referred to it as "folly" and "slavery." He even predicted (prophesied maybe?) that when future Church leaders began to teach these precepts to the people it will be because "they have it in their hearts to do wrong themselves."

When one blindly obeys/follows the Bishop, Stake President, Area President, Seventy, Apostle, Church President, or *any man* – one correspondingly rejects the Holy Spirit, rejects Christ, and rejects Joseph Smith's warnings.

Cow #5 – The Lord Would Never Allow High-Level Infiltration to Happen

It is not only possible but extremely probable that the Lord will allow Luciferian infiltrators to infest and rise up in the LDS Church, just as they did with Christ's ancient Church, and just as they have always done within every other organization throughout the world, whether secular and religious.

"Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves." – Jesus Christ²³

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

"Take heed therefore unto yourselves.... For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock."
– Apostle Paul²⁴

Despite these warnings, and despite the historical precedent of the Luciferian modus operandi of infiltrate, manipulate and eventually dominate, most LDS members would probably insist something along the lines of:

"Even if the brethren are fallible, and even if they could lead members astray, it simply will never happen! Why? Because all Church positions are called by inspiration! We can trust them because this Church is led by Christ, and He won't let "wolves" rise up in it, most especially to the top levels. And yet, even if that could happen, their evil fruits will give them away in short order, and they'll be exposed and excommunicated. It's simply impossible: the combination of choosing leaders by inspiration, and the inevitability of evil fruits unmasking the wolves, will invariably protect the latter-day Church from being infiltrated at the highest levels."

Unfortunately, only three words are needed to demonstrate that this perspective is unfounded wishful thinking:

Jesus. Chose. Judas.

Jesus personally selected Judas Iscariot to be one of the original 12 apostles. At the time Christ selected and called His apostles, there was a pool of (at minimum) hundreds of loyal, eager followers. Why would He choose Judas Iscariot? Why would He select Judas if He knew his heart from the beginning? Did he not meet with the Jewish leaders in secret, providing information about Christ and his following, helping them plan for Christ's arrest and execution?

More importantly: did any of the other apostles ever suspect Judas was actively planning to betray? Did any of them detect his evil fruits before Christ called him out? At the Last Supper, when Christ announced that one of them would betray Him, did any of them start waving their hand and say:

"Master! I know who the betrayer is! It's that two-faced snake-in-the-grass Judas Iscariot! Yeah! I've seen him sneaking off many times, probably to meet with the Jewish leaders! And remember when Mary anointed you, and he got upset and insisted that we should have sold that expensive oil and given the money to the poor?! He's our treasurer, and he has probably been embezzling funds for himself. He has always cared about money more than the poor or You, Lord! He's definitely the one – I had him pegged from the get go!"

No. Every single one of the apostles were shocked at Christ's announcement, and the remaining eleven were equally shocked that the betrayer turned out to be Judas Iscariot. When the apostle John later recorded that Judas "was a thief, and had the bag [i.e. was in charge of the

“moneybag”], and bare what was put therein,”²⁵ he was stating hindsight, for John was equally as shocked as the others during the Last Supper.

Reflect on that again: the most famous traitor in history was hand-picked by Christ to be one of His original 12 apostles. If Christ felt it necessary to deliberately choose a wolf in sheep's clothing to be one of the twelve, how can it be guaranteed that there are not any wolves at the highest levels of Church leadership today – *even if every single calling for nearly 200 years has been sanctioned by the Holy Ghost?*

And yet, some may counter with reasoning along the lines of:

“It was necessary for Jesus to be betrayed, because then He wouldn't be taken away and tried and crucified. In short, if Jesus wasn't betrayed, a whole lot of ancient prophecy would not have been fulfilled correctly. Therefore, Jesus had to select someone who He knew would betray Him. However, this doesn't automatically mean that He would allow wolves to infiltrate the modern Church, let alone allow them to receive their calling through legit inspiration.”

Nevertheless, the precedent remains and was firmly established when the Lord personally chose Judas. Maybe He has allowed modern infiltration and maybe He hasn't – yet, He *could* and He *would* allow it if nefarious individuals exercised their own free agency with the intent to infiltrate, manipulate and eventually dominate.

As with the case of John C. Bennett (who became the mayor of Nauvoo and a close friend to Joseph and other Church leaders) no one even suspected how evil a wolf he was. Additionally, it took quite a while for the rumors of his egregious transgressions to finally result in investigation, trials, second chances, then lamentable excommunication and banishment. With plentiful other betrayals of the era, it could be argued that the Lord allowed Joseph to call and ordain other wolves/deliberate-infiltrators to positions (as high as the apostleship) during the early restoration era. And yet in revelations to Joseph the Lord still referred to those who would later betray as “My servants,” even though they may have been merely masquerading loyalty to Joseph and/or the Church from day one.

The more one considers how the Lord deals with mankind, the more chilling the reality is: the Lord gives everyone – **everyone** – a chance to serve Him, even if their motives and desires are treasonous from the start. It is as though He is a shepherd who already knows which sheep are really sheep, and which sheep are wolves in sheep costumes – yet He still gives the disguised wolves plentiful time and opportunity to repent and actually *be* sheep and forsake their nefarious intentions. He not only allows them to be called to leadership positions of great influence, He even treats them the same as the most devoted of sheep, up until the point where He decides

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

they need to be exposed. He did exactly this with Judas Iscariot.

"Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity." – Jesus²⁶

Make no mistake, the Lord allows the wolves to masquerade as sheep and occupy positions of power and influence in His organizations. He may even allow them to exercise Priesthood power to prophesy and to cast out devils, as He himself mentions in this example. Despite that we will eventually know them as wolves and be shown their evil fruits, *it may take a long time* for those fruits to either be disclosed or made obvious enough for us to detect.

Most chilling of all is this thought: Could we already be tainted from evil fruit to the point where we cannot recognize it for what it is? Are our eyes so thoroughly clouded that we see not; the itchiness of our ears so well allayed that we hear not? *How bitter our repentance will be when we we're shown that we have long consumed the corrupt fruit of infiltrators and have cheerfully declared it of God!*

Perhaps this is why the canonized phrase "many are called, but few are chosen" rings more painfully true than any of us dare contemplate.

Cow #6 – The Lord Would Never Choose an Outsider to Correct/Warn Church Leaders

Throughout sacred history as recorded in the scriptures, the vast majority of individuals whom LDS members revere as "prophets" were not the authorities of the institutions which God had established. While this was mentioned already with the first couple of cows, I wish to remind the reader that some of the most celebrated prophets in the Book of Mormon were directly chosen of God to rebuke and condemn the men who had obtained high ecclesiastical offices within the Lord's chosen people's system of government. Consider the following three examples:

Lehi

A successful man in ancient Jerusalem, Lehi had both considerable wealth and servants. Despite that he did not hold a high calling amongst the Jews, he was chosen of God through direct personal revelation to confront

the religious leaders. He was commanded to testify that Jerusalem will be destroyed because of their wickedness and apostasy, primarily due to the leaders. Lehi confronted them as instructed, and his life was put in danger. God commanded him and his family to flee into the wilderness.

Lehi was also commanded to send his sons to sneak back to Jerusalem to claim a volume of scripture. Lehi's son, Nephi, was even commanded by the Holy Ghost to slay the "general authority" who held those records. Lehi was then commanded to enlist another righteous man and his family to join them in a decade-long odyssey to get them established in a new land. On top of all this, Lehi had to receive a revelation to know that what he had prophesied of many years prior had finally come to pass.

Imagine a man like Lehi confronting today's LDS general authorities, prophesying the destruction of Salt Lake City. Imagine if one of his sons killed an LDS Church Historian and stole precious original Church records. Imagine how intensely these two individuals would be hated by the Latter-day Saints. *And yet, we revere and celebrate two people **exactly like this** – we hold no doubts that they were **commanded of God** in these things. We herald them as two of the greatest prophets who have ever lived.*

Abinadi

Abinadi was a Nephite commanded by God to chastise an offshoot kingdom of the Nephites. Their quorum of high priests had become corrupt – in fact, it's likely that they were infiltrated and overtaken by secret society initiates. They in-turn corrupted the people with a "serve both God and Mammon" mentality, misquoting scripture to justify iniquitous living. With a self-serving king at the head, this group of Nephites rapidly become apostate within two generations.

Abinadi was commanded by God to declare that destruction was imminent should they not repent. He was subsequently banished. Because the Lord commanded him again, two years later he snuck back in and began warning them again.

When brought before the proud king and corrupt priests, Abinadi's words were powerfully backed up by the Holy Ghost. His words penetrated the heart of one of the priests, Alma. The rest decided to burn Abinadi alive. He probably died thinking that his pleadings and warnings failed to reach even one soul. However, the one soul that he did reach, Alma, went through a very bitter repentance and eventually became one of the most revered spiritual leaders of the Nephites.

Today, if any leaders of the LDS Church were confronted by someone just like Abinadi – someone called directly of God to warn them that they are

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

corrupting the doctrine and bringing severe judgments upon themselves and the LDS members – how would they receive him? And yet they praise Abinadi's faith, strength, and tenacity endlessly.

Samuel the Lamanite

One of the most revered stories of the Book of Mormon, Samuel was a Lamanite convert who was commanded by God to go to the capitol city of the Nephites and boldly declare that they are apostatizing, that they are proud and sinful, and that among their leaders are evil, conspiring men. Just like Abinadi, Samuel was thrown out of the city. He was about to give up, but then the Lord immediately admonished him to return and boldly testify of their wickedness. And he immediately did so.

When the Nephites would not let him into the city, he climbed upon the wall and preached unto them everything that the Lord put into his heart. They were so infuriated that they shot arrows and threw stones at him, but the Lord caused all such projectiles to not touch him. Undaunted by this miracle, the Nephites began to climb the wall to kill him with swords. Samuel finished his message, then jumped down from the wall and fled, never to be heard from again.

Imagine for a moment that a former Muslim converted to Christ and joined the LDS Church. Then one day he begins preaching throughout downtown Salt Lake City, even around Temple Square – proclaiming to everyone that God had spoken to him, and commanded him to testify that the Church has gone astray from the true and correct principles of Jesus Christ's restored Gospel, and that Salt Lake City would soon be destroyed primarily because of the pride and wickedness of the LDS leaders and many of its members. Imagine that after being somewhat-politely escorted off of Temple Square's premises, he climbed upon the surrounding wall and began boldly testifying that all this had been put directly into his heart by Jesus Christ. What are the chances that this man would be embraced as a prophet?

With God, it is absolutely imperative that we recognize and understand the manner in which His will is accomplished, primarily through the precedents that have been set by Him in recorded scripture. It is also imperative that we gain a crystal-clear perspective of what is eternal pattern and what is merely cultural or temporal.

God is not limited by man or by man's reasonings. He does His work through individuals whom *He* calls and commands to do the work. His house may indeed be a house of order, but it is *His* house and it is *His* order – His methods may come across as confusion – even madness – to the common

man. However, man cannot judge nor dictate the work and will of God Almighty. By small means He causes great things to come to pass. By weak individuals does He cause the mighty to fall. He gives mankind their weaknesses, but if they offer up their full hearts to Him, He will cause those weaknesses to become their greatest strengths.

And if there's anything that ought to be perfectly apparent by now, it is this: God can command *anything* of *anyone*. He can command a 16 year old boy²⁷ to behead an ecclesiastical VIP, put on his armor, masquerade as him, and steal priceless records from his vaults (albeit, after that VIP had already stolen that 16-year-old's family's full accumulative wealth and sent his guards to murder him and his brothers). He can command a very aged man²⁸ to make a human sacrifice using his young, beloved son, and not stop him from slaying his son until the very moment the blade is thrusting down towards his chest.

God can command *anything* of *anyone*. It is we who are required to have the faith to act upon His commands, and trust in whatever His will is for us.

The final sacred cow is the most important one to recognize as false – our individual salvation can ultimately depend upon whether or not we give up this incorrect notion.

Cow #7: The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints Is the Kingdom of God on Earth

Personally, I had a very hard time coming to grips that this idea is incorrect, for isn't *this* the Church that both Heavenly Father and Christ personally appeared to Joseph Smith in order to reinstate? Isn't *this* the restoration of Christ's ancient Gospel? Isn't the LDS Church the equivalent of "Zion"?! How can the Church *not* be the Kingdom of God on earth?!

During the October 1984 General Conference, Elder Ronald E. Poelman of the Quorum of the Seventy gave a conference talk which clarified this point aptly and directly. Critical portions of this talk are provided (emphasis added):

"Both the gospel of Jesus Christ and the Church of Jesus Christ are true and divine. However, there is a distinction between them which is significant, and it is very important that this distinction be understood.

"Of equal importance is understanding the essential relationship between the gospel and the Church. ***Failure to distinguish between the two***

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

and to comprehend their proper relationship may lead to confusion and misplaced priorities with unrealistic and therefore failed expectations. This in turn may result in diminished benefits and blessings and, in extreme instances, even disaffections....

"The gospel of Jesus Christ is a divine and perfect plan. It is composed of eternal, unchanging principles and laws which are universally applicable to every individual regardless of time, place, or circumstance. The principles and laws of the gospel never change.

"The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints is a divine institution administered by the priesthood of God. The Church has authority to teach correctly the principles and doctrines of the gospel and to administer its essential ordinances. The gospel is the substance of the divine plan for personal, individual salvation and exaltation. The Church is the delivery system that provides the means and resources to implement this plan in each individual's life.

"Procedures, programs and policies are developed within the Church to help us realize gospel blessings according to our individual capacity and circumstances. Under divine direction, these policies, programs, and procedures do change from time to time as necessary to fulfill gospel purposes."

Poelman is obviously concerned that, by 1984, most LDS members had conflated "the Church" with "the Gospel of Jesus Christ." He correctly notes that such an ideal creates unrealistic expectations of the Church, its leaders, and its prominent members, to the point where some members have defected due to the hypocrisy and all-too-human conduct that is inevitable within *all* organizations on earth. Poelman is emphasizing that: *Christ's Gospel is perfect, but the Church (even though it has divine authorization) is not perfect.*

Like a postal service, the Church's *sole responsibility* is to deliver goods and services to the members – the institutional Church, in and of itself, has no salvational qualities nor responsibilities about it. It functions to teach Christ's Gospel and its principles, to establish places of worship where saving ordinances can be conducted reverently, and to proselyte Christ's word to anyone willing to listen. It is merely a *delivery system*. The *contents* of that delivery system are of supreme importance, not the delivery system itself or the men who oversee it (i.e. General Authorities). Aside from them delivering direct revelation – either in the form of "Thus sayeth the Lord...", or from Holy-Spirit-reinforced warnings or admonitions to the membership – *our eternal salvation is no more dependent upon following their counsel than from any other preacher or priest from any given Christian denomination.*

Most critical of all is to realize that, as an imperfect institution, the Church's authority from God *can* be revoked. We prominently proclaim in our

missionary discussions with investigators that this occurred with the ancient Church, yet we conveniently ignore that we have been warned repeatedly throughout the Doctrine & Covenants that the Lord can do it again. Continuing from portions of Poelman's talk:

"As individually and collectively we increase our knowledge, acceptance, and application of gospel principles, *we become less dependent on Church programs. **Our lives become gospel centered.***

"Sometimes traditions, customs, social practices and personal preferences of individual Church members may, through repeated or common usage be misconstrued as Church procedures or policies. Occasionally, such traditions, customs and practices may even be regarded by some as eternal gospel principles.

"Under such circumstances those who do not conform to these cultural standards may mistakenly be regarded as unorthodox or even unworthy. In fact, the eternal principles of the gospel and the divinely inspired Church do accommodate a broad spectrum of individual uniqueness and cultural diversity. The conformity we require should be according to God's standards.

"The orthodoxy upon which we insist must be founded in fundamental principles and eternal law, including free agency and the divine uniqueness of the individual. It is important therefore to know the difference between eternal gospel principles which are unchanging, universally applicable and cultural norms which may vary with time and circumstance."

As we spiritually progress, it is the Lord's intention for us to become *less* dependent upon an institutionalized Church and *more* dependent upon the Lord directly (i.e. receiving personal revelation, moving beyond doctrinal milk, etc).

It is critical to comprehend how the institutionalized LDS Church subtly shapes the cultural standards and expectations of LDS members (primarily within American culture), and yet many of these standards and expectations have little if no salvational application – they are strictly cultural, not universal. Poelman emphasizes that cultural and individual uniqueness that falls outside of established norms most often *does not equate as disrespecting God or breaking His commandments.*

Orthodoxy ought to be reinforced with sensitivity to cultural differences as well as a willingness to embrace a wide range of uniqueness – for both God's hand and one's personal life experiences do not produce equally-molded individuals. Poelman is obviously concerned for those members who are humble, penitent and seek Christ, yet who don't fit the "molds" or cliques found in most LDS meetinghouses. Continuing from Poelman's talk:

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

"The source of this perspective is found in the scriptures and may appear to be presented in a rather unorganized and untidy format. ***The Lord could have presented the gospel to us in a manual, systematically organized by subject, perhaps using examples and illustrations.***

"However the eternal principles and divine laws of God are revealed to us through accounts of individual lives in a variety of circumstances and conditions. Reading the scriptures, we learn the gospel as it is taught by various messengers at different times and places.

"We see the consequences as it is accepted or rejected, as its principles are applied or not to varying degrees and by many different people. In the scriptures we discover that varying institutional forms, procedures and regulations and ceremonies are utilized, all divinely designed to implement eternal principles. ***The practices and procedures change; the principles do not.***

"Through scripture study we may learn eternal principles and how to distinguish them from and relate them to institutional resources. Every church member has not only the opportunity, right, and privilege to receive a personal witness regarding gospel principles and Church practices, but has the need and obligation to obtain such assurance by exercising his free agency, thereby fulfilling one purpose of his mortal probation. Without such a witness, one may feel confused and perhaps even burdened by what may appear to be simply institutional requirements of the Church.

"Indeed, ***it is not enough that we obey the commandments and counsel of Church leaders.*** In response to study, prayer and by the influence of the Holy Spirit we may seek and obtain an individual, personal witness that the principle or counsel is correct and divinely inspired. ***Then we can give enlightened, enthusiastic obedience,*** utilizing the Church through which to give allegiance, time, talent and other resources without reluctance or resentment.

"Happy, fulfilling participation in the Church results when we relate institutional goals, programs and policies to gospel principles and to personal eternal goals. When we understand the difference between the gospel and the Church and the appropriate function of each in our daily lives, we are much more likely to do the right things for the right reasons.

"Institutional discipline is replaced by self discipline. Supervision is replaced by righteous initiative and a sense of divine accountability."

Eternal principles exist irrespective of an institutionalized Church. Whether or not the Lord establishes and authorizes an ecclesiastical organization, eternal Gospel principles continually exist, as do the rights of the Priesthood for those found worthy. The Church exists exclusively as a resource for the members to prepare for the return of Christ to the earth, not

as an end-all-be-all either-you're-in-or-you're-out institution of salvation. One's name existing on the Church's membership records *does not equate* to one's name being written in the Lamb's Book of Life.²⁹

Through exercising our free agency, Church members have a "need and obligation to obtain [an] assurance" of what truly constitutes Gospel principles, and what is merely an established Church practice. In saying this, Poelman also implies that it is "one purpose of [our] mortal probation" to seek personal revelation and spiritual confirmation that the practices of the institutionalized Church are truly in line with the principles of the Gospel.

It is not enough to obey Church leaders' counsel merely because of their positions – we must exercise our free agency to seek a confirmation that "the commandments and counsel of Church leaders" are truly in tune with the Gospel of Jesus Christ. As personal spirituality expands, and individual righteousness, repentance, and personal revelation increases, one requires the guidance of the institutional Church less and less.

When asked by a legislative visitor to Nauvoo how he is able to "govern so many people," Joseph Smith succinctly responded: "I teach them correct principles, and they govern themselves."³⁰ Poelman's statement that "[institutional] supervision is replaced by righteous initiative and a sense of divine accountability," echoes this exact concept.

Makes sense, doesn't it? The Church functions as an (imperfect) delivery system which God patiently and long-sufferingly authorizes – it is not the Kingdom of God on earth, nor is it Zion. Only those whose hearts are tested, pure, and prepared to live the Law of Consecration (not just covenanted to do so) could qualify to live in such conditions.

These are plain and precious truths.

Unfortunately, undisclosed higher-up leaders of the Church disagreed with Poelman – to an astounding degree.

Plain and Precious Truths Down the Memory Hole

As covered in Volume I, the concept of a "memory hole" comes from George Orwell's prophetically dystopian novel *Nineteen Eighty-Four*. Putting things into a memory hole involves the deliberate altering or removing of portions of historical records that an authoritarian entity finds disagreeable.

There have been numerous small instances where memory-hole editing and revisioning techniques have been applied towards what has been spoken by Church leaders. I gave an example of this trend in the Introduction section of Volume I, when then-Apostle Ezra Taft Benson said in his April 1972 General Conference talk: "And along this line, I would highly

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

recommend to you a new book entitled 'None Dare Call It Conspiracy' by Gary Allen." Those words are completely removed from the transcript of his talk, but thankfully the original video has not been edited and his words still remain.

However, the extent of memory-holing that occurred with Elder Poelman's talk was not only extensive and unprecedented (as far as we know) but altogether ironic, given that all this occurred during the actual year of 1984. When his talk was published in the Ensign's conference report the month following, there were a great many discrepancies between what Poelman said in conference and what was printed in the Ensign. A side-by-side comparison of Poelman's original talk and the heavily-edited version is provided in Appendix A. Additionally, a pdf of this comparison is provided in the supporting material.³¹

The result was that the principles and doctrinal matters which Elder Poelman clarified were either outright censored, crippled with vagueness, or altered to convey the exact opposite of what he expressed. Above all, the gist of the changed version is a firm reinforcement that Church leadership will always play a guiding-hand role in the lives of *all* LDS members; no matter the progress of one's personal spiritual growth, every member is obligated to follow the guidance of general authorities or risk their eternal salvation.

There's more.

It's one thing to butcher the print version of Poelman's conference talk – it's quite another to have Poelman entirely re-record the altered version of the talk. That is precisely what happened. Hours or days after the October 1984 conference ended, Poelman was re-filmed in the Tabernacle delivering the revised talk. The background was darkened so that it wouldn't be obvious that there wasn't anyone sitting behind him, let alone any audience within in the entire Tabernacle. A cough-track was added, and long-shot footage of him delivering his original talk was interjected (to make it appear as though this version was truly the one delivered during conference). As Poelman closes this doctrinally-flawed talk "in the name of Jesus Christ, Amen," the original video and audio of the audience saying "Amen" as he left the podium was inserted at the end.

Consider for a moment: the audience was edited to say "Amen" to a conference talk which they did not actually hear. The audience's "Amen" – their sacred agreement – was used to legitimize a spiritually-incorrect, overhauled talk, as well as used to sanctify an attempt to surreptitiously eradicate "undesired" testimony.

Fortunately, this attempt at memory-holing failed. Some Church members who owned then-expensive-and-somewhat-uncommon VCR

machines decided to record that conference. They recorded Elder Poelman's original talk. It was preserved. The supporting material contains both Poelman's original conference recording as well as the recording of him delivering the revised talk.³² The reader is at liberty to review the two recordings and come to their own conclusions.

Should the reader have further questions concerning Poelman's talk, or wish to know more surrounding the circumstances (including plausible rationale by the General Authorities as to why it was altered), I encourage the reader to listen to the Mormon Expression discussion on the matter. This podcast is included in the supporting material.³³ All of the participants in the discussion are believing LDS members in good standing – not anti-Mormons, ex-Mormons, excommunicated Mormons, nor those questioning the faith as a whole.

The Lord Jesus Christ has defined exactly what *He* means when he refers to "My church":

"Behold, this is my doctrine—whosoever repenteth and cometh unto me, the same is my church. [Ed. Note: not "is *in* my church", or "*a member of* my church" – "*is* my church"] ***Whosoever declareth more or less than this, the same is not of me, but is against me***; therefore he is not of my church.... whosoever belongeth to my church need not fear, for such shall inherit the kingdom of heaven." (D&C 10:55,67,68 – emphasis added)

When the Lord says "My church," he is talking about *people* – specifically anybody and everybody who repents and follows Him. He is talking about the whole of individual believers. He is not referring to an institution or any legal ecclesiastical entity.

The Lord's church and Zion are not necessarily the same either; the Lord defines "Zion" as "the pure in heart." (D&C 97:21) Whereas His Church are the whole of repentant believers, Zion are those who have reached a point that their hearts have been purified.

The Kingdom of God on earth is referenced D&C 65 verses 2 and 5:

"The keys of the kingdom of God are committed unto man on the earth, and from thence shall the gospel roll forth unto the ends of the earth.... Call upon the Lord, that his kingdom may go forth upon the earth, that the inhabitants thereof may receive it, and be prepared for the days to come, in the which the Son of Man shall come down in heaven, clothed in the brightness of his glory, to meet the kingdom of God which is set up on the earth."

This section defines the kingdom of God on earth as a group of individuals who have satisfactorily prepared themselves for the day that Christ returns. It is akin to Christ's definition of "My church"; it is merely

PUTTING SACRED COWS OUT TO PASTURE

conjecture to suppose that the Lord thinks of His kingdom on earth as synonymous with an institution or a legally-recognized ecclesiastical entity.

In fact, the Lord has some words of warning in D&C 10 for those who insist on redefining His definition of “My church” to fit their own agendas:

“If this generation harden not their hearts, I will establish my church among them. Now I do not say this to destroy my church, but I say this to build up my church.... But it is they who do not fear me, neither keep my commandments but build up churches unto themselves to get gain, yea, and all those that do wickedly and build up the kingdom of the devil—yea, verily, verily, I say unto you, that it is they that I will disturb, and cause to tremble and shake to the center.” (D&C 10:53,54,56)

Christ was speaking to the self-serving/ecclesiastically-ambitious men that were surrounding Joseph Smith at the time, but His warning is all the more resoundingly potent today.

All in all, the sacred cow of conflating the institutional LDS Church with “the Gospel,” with “Zion,” and/or with “the Kingdom of God on earth” desperately needs to be put out to pasture.

Additional Sacred Cows

Undoubtedly there are other Sacred Cows in Mormonism that can be addressed, both tangent to these and altogether unrelated, but they are beyond the scope of this chapter. Additional incorrect notions pervading within modern Mormonism will be mentioned in further chapters as necessary, but these seven prevalent beliefs are the most critical to unflinchingly address.

However, if there is anything additional that I feel needs to be conveyed to the reader, it is this: the issues that get considerable media attention (due to those specific subject being “popular” with the world) are red herrings and have little-to-no eternal relevance. Activists who focus on such matters are “looking beyond the mark,”³⁴ typically due to personal convictions stemming from modern-social ideas of injustice. Regardless of whether such perceived injustices are legitimate, exaggerated, or are merely imagined and smack of the-pot-calling-the-kettle-black, it is more than likely that they are not rooted in deep individual humility nor in honestly seeking the mind and will of God.

Two of the most prominent social issues currently being crusaded at the time of publishing this book include:

- The rights and acceptance of members (and non-members) who identify themselves as homosexuals.

- The movement to allow female members to be ordained with Aaronic and Melchizedek Priesthood, and to hold higher positions in the Church.

These are undoubtedly hot-button issues, stemming from emotionally-charged notions of inequality and injustice. They are also heavily-promoted worldly issues – therefore, recall what I noted in Volume I, page 424, about how such subjects are used to manipulate public attention:

“[Exacerbating hot-button issues] is the most effective tactic used to widen partisan [or, in this case, ecclesiastical] division, to pigeonhole public-opinion options into set and labeled (stereotyped) camps, as well as in diverting scrutiny away from far more universally-impacting and nefarious activities that are occurring surreptitiously.”

The seven sacred cows which I address in this chapter have detrimental eternal consequences if they are not recognized as incorrect and discarded. Comparatively, modern social issues are cultural, temporal, and/or primarily seek to alter institutional Church protocol; few of such issues have doctrinal relevance, and even fewer have any foundation in scriptural precedent. In fact, there is a good probability that both the boisterously crusaded issues-du-jour *and* the current protocol or position of the modern LDS Church are both flawed in the eyes of God.

Crucial, eternal matters are all but ignored – yet that is where everyone's personal salvation lies. Therefore, I recommend that the reader strive to altogether ignore hot-button issues – dismiss them for exactly what they are: red-herring clamor – don't even “go there” – and especially don't be baited into taking sides.

Instead, focus on one's own individual shortcomings and repentance, and in seeking God's mind and will regarding your own personal salvation (and, depending upon your responsibilities, your family's). This is exactly what Lehi did – it is precisely the model we have been given to follow.

-
- 1 The Prophet Joseph Smith was killed on June 27, 1844. This dream is recorded in Documentary History of the Church, Volume 6 pages 609-610, dated the previous day.
 - 2 Source: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sacred_cow_\(idiom\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sacred_cow_(idiom))
 - 3 Source: <http://idioms.thefreedictionary.com/put+out+to+pasture>
 - 4 This conference talk has been removed from Church conference records. I've included a PDF of it in the supporting material. Refer to the PDF file: Stephen L. Richards - Bringing Humanity to the Gospel
 - 5 Brother J. J. Dewey was excommunicated from the Church in 1979. His account of the procedure of his excommunication is compelling. Despite coming off very

one-sided, I personally felt great empathy for him and sincerely believed that it was likely that he had been wronged by those involved in his excommunication, precisely in the manner which he describes. Therefore I somberly and reverently took the issue to the Lord in prayer, asking whether or not Dewey's account is reliable and trustworthy. As I attempted to pray, I couldn't focus on what I had intended to pray about – I couldn't recall Dewey's name, nor the names of those he mentions, nor the details of his account – despite it all being fresh in my mind moments before kneeling down to pray. I did this on two separate occasions, and I experienced near-identical results – both times I felt such confusion and temporary loss of memory to the point where I was unable to complete asking prayers about Brother Dewey. Due to thus receiving a strong 'stupor of thought', twice, I have therefore concluded that Dewey's account is inaccurate to the point of being deceptive. (Note: a stupor of thought is a sign from the Lord to know for a certainty that something is not true and/or reliable. It is described in Doctrine & Covenants 9:8-9. Such answers are usually provided only after one makes sincere efforts to fully study a matter and take it to the Lord in prayer.) J. J. Dewey has written a number of theologically-based books. In one series he concedes that it has both fictional and non-fictional elements within it, yet he will not disclose to the reader what is fiction and what is not until he completes the series. It is apparent to me that he incorporates erroneous concepts in his theological speculations, therefore the reader is admonished to proceed with caution regarding them.

- 6 The extended quote from Documented History of the Church is as follows:
"During the day Hyrum encouraged Joseph to think that the Lord, for his Church's sake, would release him from prison. Joseph replied, "Could my brother, Hyrum but be liberated, it would not matter so much about me. Poor Rigdon, I am glad he is gone to Pittsburgh out of the way; were he to preside he would lead the Church to destruction in less than five years."
"Dr. Richards was busily engaged writing as dictated by the Prophet, and Elder Taylor amused him by singing. Joseph related his dream about William and Wilson Law, also his dream about trying to save a steamboat in a storm."
- 7 The extended quote from Documented History of the Church is as follows:
"Remarks of the Prophet to the Relief Society.... He said if one member becomes corrupt, and you know it, you must immediately put it away, or it will either injure or destroy the whole body. The sympathies of the heads of the Church have induced them to bear a long time with those who were corrupt until they are obliged to cut them off, lest all become contaminated; you must put down iniquity, and by your good examples, stimulate the Elders to good works...."
- 8 The extended quote from Journal of Discourses is as follows:
"Is this [i.e. the spirit of prophesy] the privilege of every person? It is. Permit me to remark here—this very people called Latter-day Saints have got to be brought to the spot where they will be trained (if they have not been there already,) where they will humble themselves, work righteousness, glorify God, and keep His commandments. If they have not got undivided feelings, they will be chastised until they have them; not only until every one of them shall see for themselves, and prophesy for themselves, have visions to themselves, but be made acquainted with all the principles and laws necessary for them to know, so as to supersede the necessity of anybody teaching them."

- 9 The extended quote from Documented History of the Church is as follows:
"General Charge to the Twelve.... The greatness of your commission consists in this: you are to hold the keys of this ministry; your are to go to the nations afar off—nations that sit in darkness. The day is coming when the work of God must be done.... The prophecies are full of great things that are to take place in the last days. After the elect are gathered out, destructions shall come on the inhabitants of the earth; all nations shall feel the wrath of God, after they have been warned by the Saints of the Most High. If you will not warn them, others will, and you will lose your crowns."
- 10 For more information about H. Verlan Andersen:
http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/H._Verlan_Andersen
- 11 Refer to the PDF in the supporting material: H Verlan Andersen - The Great and Abominable Church, Chapter 16
- 12 History of the Church, 3:385; from a discourse given by Joseph Smith on July 2, 1839, in Montrose, Iowa; reported by Wilford Woodruff and Willard Richards.
- 13 William G. Nelson, in "Joseph Smith, the Prophet," Young Woman's Journal, Dec. 1906, p. 543; paragraph divisions altered.
- 14 Source – <http://maxwellinstitute.byu.edu/publications/transcripts/?id=125>, PDF version included in the supporting material: Hugh Nibley_Leaders to Managers_The Fatal Shift
- 15 Refer to the video file in the supporting material: Hugh Nibley - Black robes of a false priesthood
- 16 Plato, Protagoras 309a—d.
- 17 Archilocus, frag. 58.
- 18 For example, see Thomas S. Monson, "Anonymous," Ensign 13 (May 1983): 55—57
- 19 Spencer W. Kimball, "The False Gods We Worship," Ensign 6 (June 1976): 4, 6
- 20 From *Lengthen Your Stride: The Presidency of Spencer W. Kimball* (working draft) by Edward L. Kimball
- 21 Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: Ezra Taft Benson - Fourteen Fundamentals
- 22 Revelation 19:10 – "... the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy"
- 23 Matthew 7:15-16, 3 Nephi 14:15-16 – emphasis added
- 24 Acts 20:28-29
- 25 John 12:6
- 26 Matthew 7:22-23, 3 Nephi 14:22-23
- 27 Nephi, as described in the book 1 Nephi
- 28 Abraham, as described in the book of Genesis
- 29 Revelation 21:27
- 30 "The Organization of the Church," Millennial Star, Nov. 15, 1851, 339
- 31 Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: General Authority Censorship_Ronald E. Poelman Oct 1984 GC talk
- 32
- 33 Refer to the MP3 file in the supporting material: Mormon Expression104 - Poelman's talk
- 34 Jacob 4:14

Journal Excerpt 9 - November 2006

It's time I recorded what happened last month.

On the night of our tenth anniversary, we had a wonderful night out at Olive Garden. As we pull to a stop on the driveway, [my wife] - completely out of the blue - asked me, "Are you still paying tithing?"

I froze inside. Why would she ask me this? She knew I was. We agreed that I could do so now that finances haven't been so tight. I replied coolly, "Yes, I am."

"I told you to stop, and you promised you would. You lied to me."

What on earth is she talking about? Oh yeah. She brought it up a while ago, but we didn't talk it through.

"I didn't promise anything. You just brought it up suddenly while we were driving six months ago, and I told you let's discuss it later. I didn't want to get into an argument in front of our daughter."

"You did promise! I remember clearly you said 'Alright, alright.'"

"No, I said 'Alright, alright' as in: 'Let's discuss it later and stop suddenly bringing up heated issues in front of our little girl, please.'"

"NO. You said 'Alright' as in 'Fine, I won't pay it anymore.' You lied to me and you've been paying it behind my back for months." She threw the car door open, thrust her six-months-pregnant body out of the car, slammed the door behind her.

Oh, man. It's 11 o'clock, I'm tired, [my wife] just completely squashed every good feeling out of our 10th wedding anniversary, and I just want to go to bed. But, this is definitely going to be a loooong night. Our daughter's out cold in the back seat - I'll carry her in, put her down, then go face [my wife]. Oh Father, please give me patience and long-suffering, please help me to keep a level head, please please please ease my wife's fury. I pray thee.

[Ed. Note: The details of what occurred over the next four hours are not included. My wife deeply regrets her words and actions of this night. Suffice it to say, that night I was thoroughly convinced that I had lost her, my daughter, and my yet-unborn child forever over my choice to obey God's commands - in this case over the issue of paying tithes.]

I'm so glad that I had to work a twelve hour shift the next day - midnight to noon - because it provided

sufficient time to contemplate what [my wife] put me through the previous night. For the first time in ten years of marriage, I felt absolutely no love, at all, for her. I questioned: Who the hell did I marry? After ten years, do I even know who my wife is?? Who would deliberately do that to a spouse, and on the night of their tenth anniversary?? Who is this woman??

How can I ever feel love for her again? How can I even fake it? Ever since my parents' failed marriage, I've sworn to never even consider divorce as an option. I will never allow my children to experience a broken family. And yet, how can I stay married to this woman? How can I ever feel love for her again?

During my twelve hours of work that day, these thoughts thundered through my soul. I knew I had to make a definitive decision soon, very soon. On my way home, despite the emptiness and cold I felt towards her, I decided that I would completely forgive [my wife] and stay married to her. She has not demonstrated the least bit of remorse, and probably never will. During the entire hour-long commute home, I begged and begged and begged the Lord to help me love my wife again, to cure my eviscerated heart of its numbness, to once again have feelings for her. I had no idea how it could happen, but I told the Lord over and over that I want to forgive her and love her again - despite that at that moment I couldn't even imagine how such could occur.

I slept and avoided [my wife] for the rest of the day. "Exhaustion" isn't a strong enough word. I woke up at 10pm to get ready for work. I groggily got in the shower, started the water, and proceeded to get on my hands and knees -- my routine is to say my daily prayers in the shower. I began to pray for help in forgiving [my wife], to feel love for her once again, to--

"Rejoice! Rejoice! Rejoice, Don Christian Markham!"

I was stunned. A heavenly peace filled my entire soul. A meek voice was declaring something to me - resonating throughout my soul. I froze and listened.

"Thou hast found exceedingly great favour in the eyes of the Lord, your God. Thy calling and thine election are assured, for thou has overcome the weaknesses which I have given unto thee, and thou has well endured the trials which I have caused to be placed upon thee. I know now that thou shalt seek Me and to do My will in all matters, at all times, and in all places. The fruits thou has brought forth are great and sweet unto me.

"Should any man have aught in judgment against thee, I shall rebuke and cause a remembrance of their failings towards me, their Creator. Thou shalt be blessed and exalted to the highest, and shall be given powers, dominions, and principalities without end in My kingdom. I shalt do these things for My name's sake, for I have written thee upon My right hand.

"Rejoice! Thou hast overcome the world, and shall henceforth be an instrument unto the building of My kingdom. Thou shalt be called upon in due time to stretch forth thy hand unto the destruction of many nations, and in the destruction of that which is abominable before me, preparatory for when I shall return again to claim the earth as My dominion. Continue the path thou art on with all diligence and humility, always holding fast unto My word, which shall be with you. Again, rejoice! I now seal thine exaltation upon you, my faithful servant."

In recounting this word-for-word, I realize that it almost reads very King James Bible-ish - but the way the voice communicated it was so personal and tender. It's hard to describe, but I'll do my best: the feeling of the communication reverberated throughout my soul first, and then within a split second my brain would automatically "translate" the communication-feeling into a soft, loving audible voice, and the message into English words - in a way that felt very comfortable, personal and tailored for me - not formal, despite that's how it reads.

After receiving this message this into my mind and heart, I was filled with great joy and I desired to weep - but I was still in the process of recovering from the previous 48 hours, and so stunned with astonishment and perplexity as to what was happening, that tears would not flow. It was as though I suddenly became privy to a subdued celebration for me on the other side of the veil, and I could hear and feel the joy of friends and ancestors, but I could not see them.

I have never anticipated anything like this - it came suddenly and without looking for it.

The following day I was still perplexed as to what happened and why. As I prayed about it, I felt prompted to go and read the entry for "Calling and Election" in Bruce R. McConkie's Mormon Doctrine:

"Calling and Election Sure - Those members of the Church who devote themselves wholly to righteousness, living by every word that proceedeth forth from the mouth

of God, make their calling and election sure. That is, they receive the more sure word of prophecy, which means that the Lord seals their exaltation upon them while they are yet in this life....

"Joseph Smith taught: "After a person has faith in Christ, repents of his sins, and is baptized for the remission of his sins and receives the Holy Ghost (by the laying on of hands), which is the first Comforter, then let him continue to humble himself before God, hungering and thirsting after righteousness, and living by every word of God, and the Lord will soon say unto him, Son, thou shalt be exalted. When the Lord has thoroughly proved him, and finds that the man is determined to serve him at all hazards, then the man will find his calling and election made sure, then it will be his privilege to receive the other Comforter." To receive the other Comforter is to have Christ appear to him and to see the visions of eternity. (Teachings, pp. 149-151.)

"Thus, as the prophet also said, "The more sure word of prophecy means a man's knowing that he is sealed up unto eternal life, by revelation and the spirit of prophecy through the power of the Holy Priesthood." (D&C 131:5) Those so favored of the Lord are sealed up against all manner of sin and blasphemy except the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost and the shedding of innocent blood. That is, their exaltation is assured; their calling and election is made sure, because they have obeyed the fulness of God's laws and have overcome the world....

"The Lord says to them: Ye shall come forth in the first resurrection;... and shall inherit thrones, kingdoms, principalities, and powers, dominions, all heights and depths." (D&C 132:19)... It should be clearly understood that these high blessings are not part of celestial marriage. "Blessings pronounced upon couples in connection with celestial marriage are conditioned upon the subsequent faithfulness of the participating parties." (Doctrines of Salvation vol. 2, pp, 46-47.)

Wow! That actually happened to me. But why? Why me?

The answer to this did not come all at once. However, as I pondered the matter over the next few weeks, I was given of the Holy Ghost to understand that it happened for three reasons:

1) I demonstrated to my wife, the woman I love more than any other, that the Savior comes first - even if it results in losing her, my daughter, and my unborn son -

the three individuals I live and breathe for. I had sufficiently demonstrated that I was willing to sacrifice everything for Christ.

2) Because I decided to forgive my wife, despite that she felt absolutely no remorse for what she put me through. [Ed. Note: As already mentioned, eventually she did.]

3) Because I will require the spiritual benefits of this blessing in order to successfully carry out my life's mission.

When I asked for clarification on this last point, I was given: "That information will be given to you when the time comes, and you are ready to receive it."

It's now been four weeks since all this occurred. My heart has definitely been softened towards my wife. It took some time, but I've grown back in love with her again. She still doesn't express any remorse, but she is treating me very well, better than usual. I've come to understand that that is her primary way of communicating "I'm sorry."

No matter what, I'll never regret marrying her.

Since it occurred, the full calling and election communication has been retained verbatim in my mind - word for word - as fresh and as memorable as the moment it was given to me. It has been as though I could never forget it, even if I tried - as if those words are embedded into my soul. And yet, now that I've recorded those words, I can sense that I don't remember them as sharply nor as readily as I could just hours ago.

I remember reading something about how Joseph Smith would be like that after receiving a revelation - that it would stay with him perfectly, for weeks, even months, and he could recall it and re-dictate it, verbatim, until it was reliably documented on paper.

JESUS CHRIST, INCORPORATED: YEA, ZION PROSPERETH

For the kingdom of the devil must shake, and they which belong to it must needs be stirred up unto repentance....

For behold, at that day shall he rage in the hearts of the children of men, and stir them up to anger against that which is good.

And others will he pacify, and lull them away into carnal [i.e. temporal] security, that they will say: All is well in Zion; yea, Zion prospereth, all is well—and thus the devil cheateth their souls, and leadeth them away carefully down to hell....

Therefore, wo be unto him that is at ease in Zion! Wo be unto him that crieth: All is well!... Cursed is he that putteth his trust in man, or maketh flesh his arm, or shall hearken unto the precepts of men, save their precepts shall be given by the power of the Holy Ghost.

– Nephi¹

I say unto you, be one; and if ye are not one ye are not mine. And again, I say unto you that the enemy in the secret chambers seeketh your lives.

– Christ to Joseph Smith and the Quorum of the Twelve²

JESUS CHRIST, INCORPORATED: YEA, ZION PROSPERETH

Suppose your youth receive their impressions of church history from "pictures and stories" and build their faith upon these alleged miracles [and] shall someday come face to face with the fact that their belief rests on falsehoods, what then will be the result? Will they not say that since these things are myth and our Church has permitted them to be perpetuated... might not the other fundamentals to the actual story of the Church, the things in which it had its origin, might they not all be lies and nothing but lies?...

[Some say that] because one repudiates the false he stands in danger of weakening, perhaps losing the truth. I have no fear of such results. I find my own heart strengthened in the truth by getting rid of the untruth, the spectacular, the bizarre, as soon as I learn that it is based upon worthless testimony.

– B. H. Roberts³, Assistant Church Historian (1902-1933),
Editor and compiler of the *Documentary History of the Church*

Now that those seven sacred cows have been addressed, it is time to objectively and critically review the institutional history of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. I implore the reader to figuratively put one's self into Christ's shoes – to ponder how Christ would feel about all the changes and decisions that have occurred over the course of approximately 200 years – from the moment He appeared with His Father to a teenaged Joseph Smith in the grove, to the current state of the institutional Church that (literally) incorporates His name today.

Also, I encourage the reader to reflect upon the limited scope of history that is taught. The vast majority of what is covered in any of the Church's manuals is the restoration era, which can consecutively be summarized likewise: Joseph Smith's divine calling, persecution, events surrounding the translation of the Book of Mormon, persecution, the restoration of Priesthood, establishing the Church, more persecution, the Kirtland temple, even more persecution, key events from the Nauvoo era, mass influx of dirt-poor British immigrant converts, vehement persecution, Liberty Jail, frothing persecution, Joseph's martyrdom, leadership succession, Brigham Young and followers head west, suffering, Nauvoo Temple destroyed moments after they finish it, more suffering, Martin Handcart Company, excessive suffering, arriving in the promised land, "This is the place!"..... and then..... nothing. Nothing after that. Except for a smattering of anecdotal stories about this or that Church leader now and then – but most especially Wilford Woodruff's declaration about how God will never allow the Church president to lead the members astray.

With the Church manuals, it's as though the historical narrative

screeches to a halt once everyone gets to Salt Lake City.

Why is that?

The more one learns about what happened from Brigham Young's era down to today, the more one realizes why Church materials are so silent about it all – and it's not just because they're worried that new converts won't "get" the whole polygamy thing.

To put it simply: the LDS Church today is *almost nothing* like the Church that was established during the lifetime of Joseph Smith. It has gone through four major phases during its existence, with each phase resulting in not just sweeping protocol changes but major theological alterations as well.

In 2007, Daymon M. Smith – a faithful latter-day saint – published his dissertation for his University of Pennsylvania anthropology doctorate degree. A thorough 500+ page piece of indefatigable research, it is titled *The Last Shall Be First And The First Shall Be Last: Discourse And Mormon History*. To give a sense of the scope of this remarkable work, the following is an excerpt of the dissertation's abstract:

"The writing of history has been treated as a cultural practice. Yet what relation does historiographic practice have to historical process? To investigate that relation I reconstruct the uptake of modernity in Mormonism....

"I argue that a dialectic approach to the history of modernity, which treats distinct historiographic practices as outcomes, alone can canvass the semiotic and discursive changes wrought by modernization. To support this claim I present four treatments of intertwined temporal swatches drawn from Mormon history.

"I first document how a Mormon Underground developed during the U.S. government's anti-polygamy raids of the 1880s.... Mormon resistance withered by 1910, however, and polygamy was officially abandoned.

"Second, I reconstruct the effects of the Mormon Church's justification for publicly renouncing polygamy.... The argument for jettisoning plural marriage entailed broad theological changes in Mormonism stemming from this uptake of mind-body dualism [Ed. note: example of this – believing in the principle of plural marriage, yet not practicing it.].

"Third, I recount responses to these changes among self-described Fundamentalists who claimed to preserve history by embodying it.

"Finally, I analyze bureaucratic shifts in the modern Church which presuppose mind-body dualism and write such into historiographic curriculum."

The entire dissertation is included in the supporting material,⁴ as well as

an extended 9-part interview with Daymon Smith about his dissertation (from the blog site bycommonconsent.com).⁵

In March of 2010, Smith published a work of fiction blended with non-fictional elements regarding the time he spent as an employee of the LDS Church Office Building (or COB for short) in downtown Salt Lake City. He wrote it in this manner in order to avoid legal action due to the non-disclosure agreement he was required to sign before working at the COB. The title of Smith's book is *The Book of Mammon: A Book About A Book About The Corporation That Owns The Mormons*.

Alan Rock Waterman, an LDS member who is a devout believer in Christ and is passionate about the Gospel, maintains a blog⁶ titled *Pure Mormonism*. In October of 2010 he posted a remarkable summary of Daymon Smith's *Book of Mammon*, including his own adroit personal insights.⁷ This blog entry briefly and succinctly encapsulates underlying concerns about the comparatively-recent transformations of the institutional LDS Church, which all LDS members ought to ponder the ramifications of. Key selections of Waterman's blog post is presented here with permission from the author.⁸ A pdf of the entire article is included in the supporting material.⁹ (all emphasis added):

Selections from Alan Rock Waterman's Article *How Corporatism Has Undermined and Subverted The Church of Jesus Christ*

"[LDS] Church headquarters decided they needed an anthropologist in the building, so they hired Daymon Smith, a latter-day Saint with a doctorate in anthropology from the University of Pennsylvania. He had written a 500 page dissertation on some under-discussed facets of Mormon history that nobody at the COB [i.e. Church Office Building] seems to have bothered to read. Maybe they should have, because they would have learned that Smith was an extremely curious and thorough researcher with a knack for uncovering hidden goings-on that most of us in the church had no inkling of.

"Smith's new book is titled *The Book of Mammon: A Book About A Book About The Corporation That Owns The Mormons*. If you had no idea before now that the Church was actually owned by a corporation, read on. It gets worse.

Decisions Are Business Based, Not Prayerfully Inspired

"If you harbor the happy illusion that all Church policy is the result of

prayerful consideration by the general authorities, be prepared to have those illusions shattered. Much of what has been handed down to us in the way of “inspired” Church programs originated in Marketing or some other department of the Church Office Building and was later approved by the G.A.’s [i.e. General Authorities].

“I’ll give you two examples.

“[Back in 1981], someone at the COB thought it would be helpful if all the standard works could be coordinated with matching fonts, then tied together with footnotes and cross references. So amidst much fanfare, the Church announced a new era of personal scripture study....

“But the COB really pulled out all the stops in the marketing of this new [set of scriptures]. Articles appeared in the Church News and The Ensign, and speakers at general conference touted all the reasons you just had to have a copy of your own....

“The problem, though, was that for most members, this new set of scriptures was prohibitively expensive. Depending on which size volumes you chose or the color of fine leather cover you picked, your desire to walk into the chapel toting the latest in up-to-the minute must-have accessories could end up costing you as much as a hundred bucks.

“Less expensive editions were available, of course, but the [people] in charge of Deseret Book, the chain of bookstores owned by the Church, didn’t want the membership to know about the availability of the cheaper volumes because Deseret Book – that is, the [for-profit corporate arm of the] Church – didn’t make any money on those....

Non-Profit/For-Profit Dichotomy, Wacky Accounting

“After the Church pulled in a couple of million dollars selling the books to the more affluent members, they finally [made the membership aware] that you could buy a less extravagantly bound set [through the Church’s non-profit distribution centers] for around fourteen bucks. Today if you’re a new convert, the bishop will just hand you a set for free.

“About this time Church headquarters also sent an announcement to all the mission presidents that a new improved edition of the Book of Mormon was being readied for handing out to investigators. It was going to have more features and be more attractive, and therefore hopefully be a better conversion tool for use by the missionaries.

“But first they had to figure out a way to get rid of those millions of old copies of the Book of Mormon just sitting in [the Church’s] warehouses. They tried to palm these off on the mission presidents, but unfortunately marketing had done such a good job of promoting the new editions that the mission presidents said, “No thanks, we have plenty. We’ll just wait for

the new ones to come out.”

“This lack of cooperation by the mission presidents created a dilemma because of the weird way things are done at Church headquarters. The various departments of the Church are constantly shifting money back and forth to each other, so the way accounting takes place at the COB is completely kooky.... ***Even though departments spend the Church money on each other, each department wants its bottom line to look good to the higher-ups,*** so the Church has a way of conducting business that would make no sense to an outsider.

“For instance, from the money the Church collects in tithing, it doles out some of that money to the various missions around the world to finance the operations of those missions. The mission presidents then turn right around and spend a good chunk of that money purchasing materials from the Church, which is the very same entity that just gave them that money to begin with.

“Why doesn't the Church just give the materials to the missions? Because then the printing department would show a loss. They would not have gotten “paid” for the materials used by the missions. And the printing department of the Church would not look good to the general authorities who review their books at the end of the year if their books showed they had lost money for the Church....

“So Church headquarters had a problem with its excess inventory. Before they could even think about printing millions of new missionary editions of the Book of Mormon, they had to get rid of warehouses full of the old ones. They couldn't sell them to the missions, because the missions weren't buying. *The missions would accept the books for free, of course, but that would reflect a loss to the Church.* They couldn't throw them away or even give them away to members for the same reason.

“Hold on a minute. What was that about giving them away to members?...

“[T]he Marketing Department came up with an idea. ***What if we could get the members to actually buy all those books from us?*** And so was born the *Family to Family* program....

“What you did was purchase a quantity of the books from the Church, then inside the front cover you would place a picture of your family along with a short note containing your testimony of the Book of Mormon and how it had enriched your life and the lives of your family. Those books would then be given to your local missionaries, or sent back to Church headquarters which would send them to foreign missionaries, and you would have a direct hand in bringing the gospel to people you never met. It lent a personal touch to missionary work....

“The program was a resounding success. The Church promoted the program with an extensive campaign of ads, letters, fliers, and articles in

the Ensign and the Church News. Talks were given in conference encouraging the membership to “flood the earth with the Book of Mormon,” and that phrase became the promotional tag line for the program.

“By 1990, *6.5 million Books of Mormon* were sold to the membership of the Church, a total, reports Smith, “*that approximates the same number of Mormons on record that year.*”...

“Our family participated in the program, and I remember thinking at the time how inspired it was. ***But the Family to Family program wasn't inspired from on high in the way I was conditioned to think these things occurred. The idea had come because the Church needed to rid itself of a bunch of unwanted inventory, and some mid-level employee came up with a way to do it while making a buck off the membership....***

“I had paid for the printing of those books originally when I sent in my tithing money. Now the Church got me to pay again to buy them back....

The Vanishing LDS Church

“Without a doubt the most startling discovery in Daymon Smith's book is his revelation that ***the church that Joseph Smith established in 1830 no longer even exists. At all.***

“What we think of as the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, says Smith, operates today as *a mere trademark of the corporation that owns the name to it. The actual church that used to go by that name, and which claims Jesus Christ as its head, does not exist today in any legally recognized form....*

“I know something about corporate law as it applies to churches, so allow me to... give you a quick crash course so you can understand how a government chartered corporation can own a church that no longer even exists....

“A corporation is an organization chartered by the state and given many legal rights separate from its owners.... Think of a robot that you and your friends control. It has no brain and no soul, but it can walk around and pick things up; it can do stuff for you. That's a corporation. It can do stuff for you. Except unlike a robot, a corporation has no actual form.... [it] is an entity that you cannot touch. It is neither inherently good nor inherently evil, but it has a life of its own, and if the batteries are good, that 'robot' can live on after you and your friends are dead and gone. Sometimes that can be a problem. ***Originally corporations in America were not meant to outlive their creators. Today they do.***

JESUS CHRIST, INCORPORATED: YEA, ZION PROSPERETH

"One of the biggest problems with a corporation is that **under the law, a corporation is actually considered a "person."** That's why it is often defined as a legal fiction. That is, this "person" is legal, but he isn't real. It's a fictional person. It isn't flesh and blood. It has no soul....

"Although it is [legally] treated like one, *a corporation is not a human being, and usually no real live person within a corporation can be legally held responsible for the harm a corporation might do.* The corporation can be fined, but *that fine is usually absorbed by the stockholders. The board member's salaries remain sacrosanct. Indeed, the directors of a corporation can, in a way, transfer their sins to the corporation, which will absorb them without much consequence.* In the words of the British Baron Edward Thurlow, the problem with corporations is "they have no soul to save, nor body to incarcerate."

"Most tellingly, **a corporation is not something that can stand accountable before God.** So if you believe in the doctrine of personal accountability, you can see the crack in the plan right there....

"Corporations [in the past] certainly weren't the common mode of doing business that they are now. **And as far as churches went, incorporation was simply not done, as a corporation derives its existence and all of its power from the state.**

"Since Jesus Christ is the head of the church, it would be incompatible for a church to petition the government for permission to exist. The church, as Paul taught, is the body of Christ. He governs it with His laws, principles, and directions. It is not subject to man's laws. **No Christian pastor in colonial times would have thought to place his church under political control.**

"As the Supreme Court explained in the case of *Hale v. Hinkle*:

"A corporation is a creature of the state... It receives certain special privileges and franchises and holds them subject to the laws of the state and the limitation of its charter. Its powers are limited by law. It can make no contract not authorized by its charter. Its rights to act as a corporation are only preserved to it so long as it obeys the laws of its creation. There is a reserved right in the legislature to investigate its contracts and ascertain if it has exceeded its powers" (*Hale v. Henkel*, 201 U.S. 43)

"Corporate existence," according to Roberson's Business Law, "is a privilege granted by the sovereign upon compliance with specified conditions."

"So that's a problem for any church that gets a hankering to incorporate, because *in the church, Jesus Christ is supposed to be the sovereign. When application is made to incorporate a church, the will of*

Jesus Christ becomes subordinate to the will of the state. "For a church to become a corporation," goes the maxim, "in effect divorces the church from Christ."

*"All of this incorporating of churches is unnecessary in America anyway, because churches automatically operate in a sphere separate from the state. Governments have no jurisdiction in the church whatsoever. **There is no tax advantage for a church to incorporate,** as some mistakenly believe. **But there is if that "Church" actually wants to operate as a business. Then it can trade its sovereignty in exchange for special privileges granted by the government.**"*

"Which is what the President of what used to be the LDS church did in 1923.

How We Waived Our Sovereignty

"Back in 1887, the church found itself in a famous staring contest with the federal government, and our side blinked. The United States Congress punished us by dissolving the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints and seizing all of its assets, including the Salt Lake temple and all of temple square.

"Whether the government actually had the authority to do all this is a question for another time, but *in 1890 the Supreme Court upheld the dissolution, and **the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, as a legal entity, simply ceased to exist.*** We had to do a lot of serious [placating in order] to get our stuff back, but there was no question that the church itself was not returning any time soon. *At least not in any form Joseph Smith would have recognized. Or Jesus Christ, for that matter.*

Serving God And Mammon

"Although a corporation is a person without a soul, corporations do retain at least one characteristic of a real person. Just like you and me, they tend to want to continue to exist. **For most corporations, staying alive means bringing in money. Continually.**

"Which brings us back to Dr. Daymon Smith. For as Smith points out, ***it wasn't so much polygamy that brought the ire of the nation down upon the heads of the Mormons. That was just the cover story fed to the masses back east to stir up the public...***

"Did you really think that President Buchanan would send the United States Army half-way across the desert to stop a handful of hick farmers from sleeping with extra women?

"No, the problem with the [19th Century] Mormons, as Daymon

JESUS CHRIST, INCORPORATED: YEA, ZION PROSPERETH

Smith reminds us, ***was "their theocratic control over politics, economics, and resources in the west."*** ***This uppity Mormon empire was becoming a viable threat to the Eastern banking establishment, railroad tycoons, and ambitious politicians.*** [Ed. note: way out in undeveloped Utah territory, the Mormons were operating outside of the control of Mystery Babylon – and they were flourishing. In other words: *they had become a troubling thorn in the side of the devil's secular kingdom, which had an accelerated agenda to conquer and subdue the entirety of the North American continent.*]...

"The fact is, the Mormon church by the 1880's was becoming an economic force to be reckoned with. Not only was it threatening the Eastern money men, it was also threatening the peace within the church, as members of the Twelve argued constantly among themselves about – you guessed it – money.

"The Twelve Apostles were now much too busy to go forth throughout the world and spread the good news of Christ. *They had to stay home and spend all their time managing literally hundreds of church owned businesses. It was virtually impossible by this time to find where the division lay between ecclesiastical and monetary interests....*

"This focus on the financial over the spiritual was starting to take its toll on the Church. Brigham Young, Jr. felt it had all gone too far. *"There is too much time given to Corporations, stocks, bonds, policies, etc. by our leaders to please me,"* he wrote in his diary, *"We are in all kinds of business interests. Even the members of the Twelve represent businesses which are jealous of each other and almost ready to fight each other."*

"After the [federal government] bust-up of [the Church in] 1890, and after bowing and scraping to [the federal government] so that they could retain some of their assets, the Church hierarchy eventually made peace with Babylon....

Once again, recall the chapter *Silent Weapons For Quiet Wars* from Volume I. What is the primary evidence of victory for Mystery Babylon?: *Consent. Acquiescence. Compliance. By persuasion or manipulation if possible – by force if necessary.* In the case of 19th century Utah, consent and compliance was obtained through legal force coupled with threats of military force. Once consent is obtained, Mystery Babylon reigns. Continuing from Waterman's article:

"With only a hint of exaggeration, Daymon Smith cheekily summarizes the situation:

"No longer members of any legally recognized religion, Mormons organized a focus group to re-brand their identity. So they called around to some California railroad lobbyists, New York ad-men, and

brainstormed and out-paradigm-shifted a totally innovational re-branding of Mormonism."

"The Trustee thus offered bonds to Eastern bankers with the promised collateral being the Mormons themselves."

"The Mormon people, you see, had untapped value: a sense of community, a uniquely productive work ethic, and best of all, a built-in propensity to be obedient to authorities....

"The Mormon leaders offered up the future tithes of the Mormon people as guarantees against their investments. The members of what used to be The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints would be unwitting cash cows for the benefit of their leaders. And the leaders of what used to be that church were now climbing into bed with the whore of Babylon."

Catholic Pope, Meet The Mormon Pope

"Some time around 1900, the office of Trustee-in-Trust was reformed, then a few years later the financial interests of the "Church" were protected under the "Corporation of the Presiding Bishop." Finally in 1923, church lawyers found The Holy Grail: a rare, little known, and hardly ever used mode of incorporation known as The Corporation Sole.

"Virtually unknown in America, and tracing its origins to ancient Roman law, ***the corporation sole was the way the vast riches of the Holy Catholic Church had been protected under Emperor Constantine.*** All financial power was vested in one man – in their case the pope, in our case, the prophet.

"Or, as he was named in the corporate charter, "the President." ***The word "Prophet" doesn't appear in the charter. This wasn't a real church, after all. It was just a way for the leadership of the... "Church" to control the member's money.***

"In the original LDS church from the time of Joseph Smith, all members were considered of equal worth. ***They were called "members" because in the ancient church the scriptures called them "members of the body of Christ."*** All parts were of equal importance to the Lord... [as in] the words of Paul in 1st Corinthians 12: "The head cannot say to the feet, I have no need of you."

"Likewise ***church property bought with member's tithing was considered held in common by all the members of the church, with common consent required for the purchase or disbursement of that common property.***

"But not anymore. Under the corporation sole, the head could tell the feet to go take a hike. The president of the church could do

JESUS CHRIST, INCORPORATED: YEA, ZION PROSPERETH

whatever... he wanted with the member's money without asking permission from the members whatsoever. It's spelled out right there in the charter. The president of the corporation needs no authorization from any mere member of the Lord's church. No show of hands, no vote, no "all in favor please manifest." Like the Pope, his power is absolute....

"Also written into the charter of the Corporation of the President as amended was *how the line of succession was to operate* within the Church. ***In order for there to be no question as to who held the purse strings following the death of the president (the "Sole" in a "Sole Corporation"), the Senior Apostle automatically becomes the next president of the Corporation.***

"[Did you think that] somehow God maneuvered certain chosen men into these callings over the years so that they would one day be at the head of the line at the exact moment when God was ready to call them as the next prophet?... ***The line of succession is outlined in the state approved charter. God's will isn't mentioned anywhere in it....***

Those Were The Days, My Friends

"As the shepherds of their wards, Bishops had a lot of autonomy in the old days. Fast offerings were collected, then disbursed among the needy in the wards they were collected in. If there wasn't enough in the fast offering fund, a bishop would supplement it from the tithing collected in his ward. ***As bishop, he had fiduciary trust and a certain amount of discretion with the funds.*** The money was collected from his congregation, and much of it was used there. What wasn't needed locally was sent on to Salt Lake where it was assumed most of it would be used to help other people within and without the church.

"When I was a kid [in the 60's and 70's], the ward held bazaars and rummage sales to earn additional money so we could hold ward dinners and parties and such, all which added to our sense of community. We competed with other wards and stakes by putting on Road Shows, which were hokey little mini-musicals we wrote ourselves. [The men who were called to be] Bishops were usually avuncular old men who knew the gospel pretty well."

Rise Of The Institutional Church

"In 1961 Church headquarters announced a new program that it called "***Correlation.***" This new way of doing things was introduced in conference by apostle Harold B. Lee. It was described as a benefit, sold as a way to coordinate and unify all the various programs of the church.

"What it ended up being was a stifling means of control, not only of

individual wards, but also of many individual members. *The policies of correlation took decades to fully implement, and most of us didn't even notice the subtle changes. Although it was begun during the administration of President David. O. McKay, it has since been learned that President McKay neither implemented nor controlled the program, and on at least two occasions he expressed concerns about it privately. Still, the Correlation [implementation] continued on for the next four decades.*

"Correlation represented a gradual and subtle shift in the way the church came to be governed at all levels. ***What it resulted in was top-down control of the church and its members. Like the frog in the pot, few members really noticed what was happening to their church until it was fully cooked....***

"Where previously friends and I might have perhaps wondered what the scriptures said about this question or that, now we found ourselves asking, "What has The Church said about it?" or "What is The Church's position on that?" ***We spoke as if "The Church" was, if not God himself, some commensurate entity that existed on its own, separate from the Creator, but somehow equal in authority to Him.***

Why They Canceled Roadshows

"Gone by this time were the Roadshows, because the central authority couldn't trust us hippie teenagers not to write some funny bit into the script that someone might find inappropriate. ***Gone also were the fun church bazaars, rummage sales, and pancake breakfasts.*** With them went ***many of the extracurricular activities,*** other than scouting and some tightly controlled dances.

"Gradually there was not much to do outside of Church [aside from attending meetings] on Sunday.... After church you just wanted to get home. Since ward members no longer lingered [due to the time gaps between Sunday meetings being removed], they didn't get to know each other well, and ***the sense of community in many wards began to weaken.***

"'The Church' whatever that used to mean, was now morphing into some kind of giant monolithic authority. ***"Church" no longer meant us, the aggregate community of believing Saints. The Church was now THE CHURCH™...***

"Bishops now tended to be chosen more for their administrative skills than for their deep knowledge of the gospel and love for others. It was no longer so important that such men knew how to shepherd the flock. What the Church™ needs today is someone who can "run the ward." ***We [are given] managers. Go-getters. High achievers.***

"Daymon Smith quotes a department head relating an odd inversion of charity occurring on the local level throughout the church. ***Rather than fulfilling their chief duty of tending to the poor and needy, these bishops believe "that they're expected to keep expenditures as low as possible. There is a sense of pride among bishops and stake presidents who send fast offerings from their units to the general Church."*** [Ed. Note: realize that fast offerings, by their very nature, are to be utilized to assist local members' needs.]

The New Mormon Church

"I may not have recognized the frog as it was boiling, but Dr. Smith gives us the exact date it finished cooking. ***January 1st, 1990, was the day the Church™ dropped all pretenses. From that day on, it was announced, all tithing monies collected from local congregations would be sent directly to Church headquarters, and the Church would then dispense a portion back to the wards.*** This was all sold as a more efficient way of running things. But ***it turned the traditional church of Christ on its head, requiring the members to send in their money to a corporate entity that was far removed from them and which became the sole judge on how contributions would be spent. Nothing about the doctrine of Common Consent was mentioned in the announcement.***

"President Hinckley and Elders Packer and Monson announced the news at a priesthood satellite broadcast. The details were sketchy, but the new program, said Monson, "eliminated the need for local units to raise budget money as their... expenses are now funded almost entirely from general Church funds."

"Now the Church would fund everything through a 'ward budget' it dispensed, *based in part on attendance at Sunday services.*

""***The Church?***" Smith asks rhetorically. "Yes, the speakers were quite clear... ***They know by 'The Church' they mean 'The Corporation.'***"

"[We are] not included in those decisions, because [we] are not members of that Church™. ***At best [we] are a subsidiary of the corporation. Like those Mormons promised as human collateral to the banks at the turn of the twentieth century, it is upon the promise of [our] future tithes that the corporation counts [us] as assets...***

"Daymon Smith says that over a three year period, his ward sent Church™ headquarters "a flat million in tithes." "In return for their generosity," says Smith, "members receive an annual return held in trust by the ward accountants. For my ward it was \$7 a head, officially."

"***What does the Church™ do with all those billions?*** [Smith states]:

"It sends out materials (print, DVD, and so on), builds chapels, funds missionary efforts (partially)... and who knows what with the rest of the billions. ***Rarely does [our] money feed the hungry, clothe the poor,*** or provide for other non-religious forms not published by the Church Office Building or sent forth from the COB.

"By the time the money comes back from the COB, the Church has generously tithed to the needy from its multibillion dollar revenue stream something on the order of one percent, often in used, tattered clothing and rice and wheat and so on... For all its bluster and public relations about humanitarian aid, The Corporation, in other words doesn't follow its own rule of tithing. I would not be surprised if more was spent on PR [i.e. Public Relations] than on those good works which are PR'd before men."

"In 1837 Joseph Smith taught that tithing meant a mere 2 percent of one's net worth, after debts were paid. That was back when we had a church.

"Over time ***the corporation has convinced us that we should hand over to it 10 percent of everything before expenses, and some believe that includes money received as birthday gifts.*** Corporate spokesmen have even hinted from the pulpit recently that some of us should consider turning over 20 percent to them.

"[Daymon Smith continues:]

"When instituted by Joseph Smith in the 1830's, tithing wrought a very small revenue stream, and ***it was designed to be small in order to prevent just the sort of dominating "Church" that now governs and patrols, steals the very name, and surveys and takes and gives what it believes best to congregations.***

"Mormons are warned from the pulpit not to rob God, so they send their money to the bishop. Aware of poorer congregations, and of starving Mormons on some god-forsaken land, locals tighten belts and send as much as possible to headquarters.

"And it all disappears, then suddenly we are handed another pamphlet, another manual, built another chapel or temple, beamed another satellite broadcast. ***The rest of the money just sits in banks and investment portfolios*** reviewed by money managers in Salt Lake City, who see in growing numbers the Lord's General, Sacred Funds, and that means the Corporation's, and they its priestly stewards.

"***Many Mormons who attend chapels, are good, kind, and decent; many are not. Mormons in these wards are often willing to sacrifice for others, to help, and yet these desires are turned,***

JESUS CHRIST, INCORPORATED: YEA, ZION PROSPERETH

collectively, too often by the corporate interests against the works of light.

"I've barely touched on the information available in Daymon Smith's book, and I haven't mentioned the *various ways in which the corporation's directors waste your money on expensive meals, cars, [unlimited, "bottomless"] credit card accounts, and unbelievably generous salaries that they have chosen to dub "modest allowances" or "stipends."* **The house that the current president of the corporation [i.e. Thomas S. Monson] lives in is said to be valued at \$2.1 million. He didn't buy that house with his own money....**

"I can't stress the importance of these materials strongly enough. ***If you lack a knowledge of the changes wrought in the church through correlation and corporate influence, your understanding of Mormon history in the twentieth century is woefully incomplete and inaccurate.*** It's as simple as that....

Final Thoughts

"No government actually has the power to dissolve the Church of Christ. All they did [in 1880] was kill a corporate version of it. ***The true Church of Christ is present "where two or three are are gathered together" in His name (Matt 18:20), and "whosoever repenteth and come unto me, the same is my church."*** (D&C 10:67)

"YOU are the church. So go ahead and continue attending your local ward. Keep shining your light there and make it a better home for all the Saints of God."

A few days after posting his article, Waterman included an important update (emphasis added):

"It has come to my attention that Joseph Smith most likely did not incorporate the Church in New York, as has been commonly believed. David Stott, an attorney from New York has researched the matter and concluded that *Joseph most likely organized the Church under the common law practice of **registering it as a "religious society", rather than as a "religious corporation"** under the state of New York.* The latter is a petition of permission, while the former is not....

"Here is an excerpt from David Whitmer's account [of] the inception [of the Church]:

"In this month (June 1829) I was baptized, confirmed, and ordained an Elder in the Church of Christ by Bro. Joseph Smith. Previous to this, Joseph Smith and Oliver Cowdery had baptized, confirmed and ordained each other to the office of an Elder in the Church of Christ. I was the third person baptized into the church. In August, 1829, we

began to preach the gospel of Christ. The following six Elders had then been ordained: Joseph Smith, Oliver Cowdery, Peter Whitmer, Samuel H. Smith, Hyrum Smith and myself. The Book of Mormon was still in the hands of the printer, but my brother, Christian Whitmer, had copied from the manuscript the teachings and doctrine of Christ, being the things which we were commanded to preach. We preached, baptized and confirmed members into the Church of Christ, from August, 1829, until April 6th, 1830, being eight months in which time we had proceeded rightly; the offices in the church being Elders, Priests and Teachers.

"Now, when April 6, 1830, had come, we had then established three branches of the "Church of Christ," in which three branches were about seventy members: One branch was at Fayette, N. Y.; one at Manchester, N. Y., and one at Colesville, Pa. ***It is all a mistake about the church being organized on April 6, 1830, as I will show. We were as fully organized – spiritually – before April 6th as we were on that day.*** The reason why we met on that day was this; the world had been telling us that we were not a regularly organized church, and we had no right to officiate in the ordinance of marriage, hold church property, etc., and that *we should organize according to the laws of the land.* On this account we met at my father's house in Fayette, N. Y., on April 6, 1830, to attend to this matter of organizing according to the laws of the land; you can see this from Sec. 17 Doctrine and Covenants: the church was organized on April 6th "agreeable to the laws of our country." (quoted from *An Address to All Believers in Christ*, pg 32-34)...

"David Whitmer is correct in asserting that *seeking legal standing for the Church was unnecessary*, and that the church existed prior to being officially organized, but the act of organizing at the common law would not have placed the Church under state jurisdiction....

"The "religious society" Joseph Smith organized in 1830 was called *The Church of Christ*. ***In 1851, Brigham Young incorporated what was by then known as The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints.*** Since Utah was under federal jurisdiction at that time, it would make sense that the federal government might claim the right to disincorporate the Church that had been incorporated under federal law. Was that action right? No. Was it legal? Yes, I think so."

A PDF of David Stott's article is also included in the supporting material.¹⁰

Daymon Smith: Researcher and Whistleblower

[Consider how heaven] uses gold: they pave the roads with it. Gold, apparently, is not any more important to them than asphalt is for us.

– Daymon Smith

In addition to Alan Rock Waterman's commentary and summary about these matters, Daymon Smith's input carries invaluable insight. On May 13, 2010, Smith participated in a four-part interview with John Dehlin, founder the Mormon Stories podcast series. The MP3 files of this interview are included in the supporting material.¹¹ I cannot recommend strongly enough to listen to the entire interview, as it provides an extended overview both of Smith's dissertation as well as key aspects of *The Book of Mammon*.

The following are exceptionally insightful excerpts which further expound upon what Waterman summarized. (emphasis added):

JOHN DEHLIN: You explain in [*The Book of Mammon*] how, at the end of the 19th century, beginning of the 20th century, the tithing requirement was monetized – meaning that it needed to be paid in the form of money rather than labor, or livestock, or eggs – some other donation of value. You discuss how **this... had a major impact on shaping the modern Church...**

DAYMON SMITH: [President Lorenzo Snow] got the Church out of debt by instituting a new kind of tithe, and promised that the windows of heaven would open. *That's probably the phrase that most Mormons would understand, [as a] sort of historical vignette.* But there's much more going on than just opening up the windows of heaven here. **When you monetize tithing, and you make it 10% of your income, you change the dynamics dramatically....** What you have here, at the turn of the century, is **a move [away] from sort of a spiritual economy** of tithing and fast offerings. [This spiritual economy] was very minimal in terms of what they could actually bring in, [and] was also clearly tied to our physical bodies and the natural cycles of the earth. If you could pay tithing in milk, you couldn't hold on to that milk forever – you had to do something with it. That something had to be, more or less, giving it to people that needed milk. Same thing with chicken eggs or wheat – you distributed these things as a bishop to people who needed wheat and chicken eggs.... It goes right back out to people in the local community....

The main impulse to monetize [tithing] was that **Lorenzo Snow tried to pass bonds to Eastern [United States] bankers in order to get the Church out of its debt, that it had created with [the construction of] the Salt Lake Temple; [President Snow] literally sold the Church into bondage.** This strategy wasn't terribly successful, but...

they could get the members to pour in liquid capital – and that's exactly what they did. ***They changed what tithing was; they said it's got to be money.*** This is what we need in order to pay off our debts. And the windows of heaven indeed opened, and massive amounts of capital poured in so that the Church was out of debt very quickly.

Now we have a kind of problem of having too much money. What are we going to do with all this money? Back then they started sugar companies, railroad companies, and electric companies – sort of social services you might say – with the money, to modernize the west and to increase the quality of life among everybody out here: Mormons or non-Mormons.

*In the 1960's, they had a real struggle, and eventually one side won. ***They decided that they could, indeed, invest tithing money.*** Once you begin to invest tithing money, ***you create an entirely different dynamic with respect to what decisions are going to be made at the Church Headquarters....*** Rather than continually fund things like a sugar operation, even though [they'd] have to continually subsidize it (which is what happened in the early 1900's and prior to that), what you have going on now is decisions being made [such as]: 'How can we get the expenses down that are tied to the corporation and always keep the revenue up?' – which is to say: '***We aren't going to invest in operations that are losing money.*** We're not going to invest in a hospital that's going to be a continual loser in terms of its money.'*

Of course, they fund things like welfare farms and other operations that are designed to be charitable works. But ***you can see the transition if you go into Deseret Industries, where they receive all their merchandise as a donation.*** As part of this transition in the 1980's and 1990's towards a more finance sensitive corporation, ***Deseret Industries [has become] a real money maker*** (as I understand it). [However,] it's justified because the profits that accrue from Deseret Industries are to be put towards funding other good works.

But what you have here is a division between the charitable side of things, which is – *if you actually look at the amount of capital that is donated to humanitarian aid, with respect to the amount of money that is brought in through the donation streams of fast offerings and tithings – you see that ***a really surprisingly small amount of money goes towards humanitarian aid.**** [Ed. Note: as previously mentioned in Alan Rock Waterman's article, that amount is only approximately 2%.] And, that, ***increasingly, the day to day operations of the corporation are being [fulfilled] by volunteers*** – which makes sense, of course, if you have a corporation: "***Why put all your money into payroll when you could have 'missionaries' doing data entry?***"

In the 1980's they began to move towards a volunteer base model of running the operations of the corporate side of things – and ***this is drawing on the [non-profit] Church side to make it so that the***

corporate side doesn't have the expenses that it used to have. They're not doing this because they don't have any money – they're doing it because it makes sense financially to free up more and more capital.

So the question then is: ***What is going on with all this money?*** If the expenses of the operation are continually being driven down, then what is going to be [done] with the rest of the money? ***It is being invested*** for the most part, in real estate throughout the 1990's and in the previous decade (which was part of the building spree of the Corporation of the Presiding Bishop), but also in Well's Fargo mortgage-backed securities, in Citibank, and in many other major funds which I document in [my] book. You're talking about a real lot of money that is being invested in things, which again, ***it makes sense [for a corporation] to do this kind of thing...*** but ***the question I really wanted to put forward in [my] book is: Does it make sense for a religion to be doing this kind of stuff?...*** In the book I put forward an argument as to why it doesn't necessarily make sense from a metaphysical perspective, from a cultural perspective, or even from an economic perspective....

We traded away certain aspects of our religion which were said to be essential so that we could get statehood, and the idea was that once we got statehood we would re-institute these essential principles for our exaltation.

DEHLIN: You're talking about [how we abandoned principles such as] polygamy and [the] Law of Consecration in order to get statehood.

SMITH: That's right.... *It's a question of:... Is it acceptable for the Kingdom of God to do this dance with people who may not seem like they are directly opposed to us [but whose function is linked with the kingdom of the devil]?... The way that Mammon works is to make it seem like it makes perfect sense to play along – and that we can do it to our advantage – that we can make a deal with (as it were) the devil.... [However,] the things that do not have an interest in building up the Kingdom of God are, of course, building up another kind of kingdom.* [Ed. Note: this is precisely the concept demonstrated throughout Volume I – that everything in this world which is not expressly seeking Christ's will and the benefit of His Kingdom is managed, manipulated and controlled by the kingdom of the devil.]

The question I tried to pose in [my] book... is *whether we can actually make these kinds of deals, and, in fact, whether we need to be making these kinds of deals.* If Jesus tells us to consider the lillies of the field, maybe we ought to be considering the lillies of the field, instead of investing our funds in a lily-guilding operation that is going to yield an eight percent profit for the next fifty years. *In other words, is it right for us to build a foundation of security that is tied to the global economy? Or, should we be trying to do something which is a little more in-line with (how I read) what Joseph Smith was trying to do? – which is*

*create an order of people who are independent as much as possible from the operations of the world, because **the world is fallen – it is in a state of sin – and for us to try to profit from the sin is a very dangerous (from my perspective) proposition....***

I don't have any hard figures on this, but **[the Church] lost a pile of cash in the stock market [during the market crisis of 2008]**, as apparently a lot of [other] people did....

Does it need to be done this way? And is there really no poor among us?... At the Church Office Building there is plenty of research to indicate [that] many members of the Church – indeed, probably a majority of the members of the Church – are in real poverty. They don't have enough to eat everyday.... [Even comparatively minor luxury expenditures] come at a cost, and the cost is [that] ***you've got many members – fellow brothers and sisters in Christ – who go without food on a daily basis, who literally search the dumps for their food.*** This is something which is known in the Church Office Building, and it's something which is known to be a problem. It's also something which, in the Church Office Building as I document in [my] book, ***they're not really equipped in any way to manage it – in large part because there's a great deal of distrust about how money is to be distributed*** in the Philippines, or in Bolivia, or in Guatemala. It's much easier to trust in the accounting that goes on here at the Church Office Building than it is to give everything [that] is asked by some convert Branch President in Paraguay.... It is nevertheless a hard reality that ***a majority of the members of this [legally] non-existent Church are members who are terribly poor.*** Are our priorities in the right spot?...

For me it's a very personal thing, because I was involved in the evaluation of material that was designed to train people on how to administer welfare. ***I saw first-hand the reports about how people lived; that they really do get much of their daily sustenance out of the garbage.*** And yet, I see this going on as we're sitting around this conference table, which was not a cheap conference table, and we're watching the focus groups being conducted in Ghana on a massive plasma flat screen TV through a satellite link-up – and they're talking about the fact that they can't pay their school fees for their kids....

They take [such things] very seriously.... [However,] ***the difficulty is that [the Church's bureaucracy is] structured in a way to disincentivize these kinds of programs*** that would be moving the kinds of resources – the medical resources, the financial resources, and the educational resources – out into these corners of the world where we know they need to be.... ***The relationships are structured in the Church Office Building [in a manner] to make it very difficult to solve these kinds of problems.***

We're sitting around the table and saying: "Yeah, we really could start up clinics in the Phillipines, so that the members don't spend all their money

on medicine, and then they don't have anything to eat. We could do that. We've got the manpower, we've got the capital, we could easily set these things up in the Phillipines." ***We don't. It's not Church policy to do it.*** We could easily set up schools in Africa. ***We don't. Why? Because it doesn't "make sense."*** [i.e. business sense] ***It's not something which you can really get a lot of people to rally behind, even though they may see the spiritual and human benefits behind it. You can't get it through committee after committee after committee, and get all the departments on-board – in the way you can for something like a training video that is going to teach self-reliance, that is going to free-up more capital.*** People can get behind that – and *they can see that it serves the interests of heaven (of course, yes, we ought to be self-reliant), and [yet] it also serves the interest of Mammon....*

If we were to invest strictly in things like humans, and provide for the needs of the poor in 3rd world countries, [and even] in Utah – there's a great many poor people [here] – rather than building a multi-billion dollar high-end retail establishment in downtown Salt Lake City, is that a bad financial decision? Well, who can say one way or the other? Is that a good spiritual decision? I'd say, yeah. ***Is it a good spiritual decision to build a multi-billion dollar mall? I leave it up to the readers to [consider whether] Jesus raised that kind of capital in order to build a mall in downtown Jerusalem so that He can have a foundation for building up His church....***

Look at Kirtland. They had a real financial disaster in Kirtland in 1836 [and] 1837; they had a depression going on. They also had everybody putting in whatever excess they had into building this temple – which was completely non-functional from a business side of things. But, ***they also had a lot of people having pretty remarkable visions, and reporting fairly fantastic phenomenon – which, I don't see a lot of reports of these things going on nowadays.*** Whether there will be these kinds of charismatic experiences when they open the City Creek Center, I've got my doubts....

To be as honest as I can possibly be here: ***what we're getting is a religion which makes sense in terms of a balance sheet.... What we don't get is a religion which seems to be drawing clear and distinct lines [on the issue] of money that it seems to be drawing in terms of gay marriage, or in terms of immorality among the teenagers, or in terms of pornography.*** They don't seem to be willing to say: "Well, we have a hard time being chaste – even though we've made covenants to be chaste – so let's loosen up the rules a little bit and live [it up] a little." Yet, *you hear this argument being made with respect to [the Law of] Consecration:* "It's not something we are capable of doing, so we are not, apparently, bound by the covenants we've made to live this law." ***I think that that is a dangerous position for latter-day saints to be in. If you make a covenant that you are going to do something, you need to do everything in your power to live that***

covenant – *[you cannot escape it] any more than you might say: 'Well, it's really hard to keep my pants zipped up, so I'm not really going to follow that rule anymore.' I don't think that flies [with God].*

Who Are We? Why Are We Here? Where Are We Going?

Take a moment to again reflect upon the financial/business transformations that the leaders of the Church have implemented, starting from the late nineteenth century down to the present day:

- The issue that federal-level politicians had with the 19th Century Mormons *was not* polygamy – it was their absolute theocratic control over politics, economics, and the natural resources of the region, *and* that they were simultaneously prospering rapidly. Key parties most apprehensive about their success were: the banking establishment, railroad tycoons, and federal politicians/bureaucrats (all of which have strong ties to Mystery Babylon). The polygamy matter was a non-issue – merely an exploited red herring to exacerbate public antipathy and initiate legal pressure against them – with the primary objective to stymie their successful autonomous development and subordinate them.
- Eventually the legal status of the Church was revoked, and all Church assets became the property of the federal government. The legal-entity church that Joseph Smith established in 1830 was dissolved. It was never re-established in the manner that Joseph founded it. The "Church" which Joseph established no longer exists.
- As early as the 1880's, the Church was so financially prosperous that Brigham Young Jr. lamented "Even the members of the Twelve represent businesses which are jealous of each other and almost ready to fight each other." Recall Christ's warning to Joseph Smith and the apostles: "I say unto you, be one; and if ye are not one ye are not mine." (D&C 38:27,28)
- In the early twentieth century, the Church leaders offered up the future tithes of the Mormon people as guarantees against their investments with bankers in the East. President Lorenzo Snow – in raw, non-sugar-coated terminology – financially "sold the Church into bondage." He then proceeded to redefine tithing as cash only. No longer would one's naturally produced goods (such as dairy or crops) or one's services be acceptable to the Church as tithes.

JESUS CHRIST, INCORPORATED: YEA, ZION PROSPERETH

- There is no legal advantage for a church to incorporate, unless it wants to function as both a for-profit and a non-profit entity. The Church leaders first started to incorporate in 1917. A review of the corporate entities it is comprised of:

"Tax-exempt corporations of the LDS Church include the Corporation of the Presiding Bishop of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, which was organized in 1916 under the laws of the state of Utah to acquire, hold, and dispose of real property; the Corporation of the President of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, which was established in 1923 in Utah to receive and manage money and church donations.... The Deseret Management Corporation (DMC) is a management and holding company of for-profit businesses owned by The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints (LDS Church). It was established in 1966 by church president David O. McKay to hold already-existing church assets.... Intellectual Reserve, Inc., which was incorporated in 1996 to hold the church's copyrights, trademarks, and other intellectual property."¹²

- Because a corporation derives its existence and all of its power from the state, it has no legal sovereignty. It is completely at the mercy of the state. Before the ink of the signatures dried on the newly established corporate charter, Church leadership effectively superseded the will of Jesus Christ, thereby subordinating themselves to the whims of the state.
- The Corporation of the President of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints's articles of incorporation stipulates that the most senior apostle of the Quorum of the Twelve be automatically installed as the next President and head of the corporation:

"[I]n the event of the death or resignation from office of the President of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, or in the event of a vacancy in that office from any cause, the President or Acting President of the Quorum of the Twelve Apostles of said Church, or one of the members of said Quorum thereunto designated by that Quorum, shall, pending the installation of a successor President of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, be the corporation sole under these articles, and the laws pursuant to which they are made.... it being the purpose of these articles that there shall be no failure in succession in the office of such corporation sole."¹³

In Acts 1:26 we learn that the 11 remaining apostles took a written vote as to who should replace Judas Iscariot. The Roman Catholic church chooses the Pope's successor through a similar electorate process. While the language of the charter stipulates that the members of the Quorum of the Twelve can designate who the next President will be, every head of the church thus far has been succeeded by the most

senior member of the quorum – as postulated in the charter as the first listed option. As Waterman points out, there is no language in the charter regarding God's will (let alone seeking it) in any of this.

- In 1959, the corporations that own “the LDS Church” began to cease publicly disclosing their financial statements. The only ones with access to these records are authorized Church leaders and the corporate internal auditing department. During every General Conference held in April, a representative in this department gives a brief financial account, commenting along the lines of:

“Based upon audits performed, the Church Auditing Department is of the opinion that, in all material respects, contributions received, expenditures made, and assets of the Church for the year [insert year] have been recorded and administered in accordance with approved Church budgets, policies, and accounting practices.”¹⁴

These financial records are not accessible either to Church members or non-members.¹⁵ This practice effectively nullifies the law of Common Consent (i.e. the involvement and full awareness of all the members of the Church). “And all things shall be done by common consent in the church.” (D&C 26:2)

- The legal, official name(s) of what we refer to as the “LDS Church” are the ones mentioned above. The name “The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints” is merely a trademark, it is not the official name of anything. A trademark is an intellectual property owned by a company; it functions as a commodity that only the owner can legally use. Previously, the Corporation of the President of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints owned the name “The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints”. Even the name “the Corporation of the President of The Church...” connotes that it is not Christ's organization but the Church President's. However, since 1996 the name “The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints” has been owned by the corporation Intellectual Reserve, Inc:

“On Wednesday, July 03, 1996, a U.S. federal trademark registration was filed for THE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST OF LATTER-DAY SAINTS by **Intellectual Reserve, Inc.**, SALT LAKE CITY, UT 84150. The USPTO has given the THE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST OF LATTER-DAY SAINTS trademark serial number of 75132996.... The description provided to the USPTO for THE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST OF LATTER-DAY SAINTS is eleemosynary [i.e. of or relating to alms, charity, or charitable donations] and social welfare support services for needy families and individuals in the area of providing food, clothing, and medicine; ministerial services; missionary services; and personal and family counseling services.”¹⁶

JESUS CHRIST, INCORPORATED: YEA, ZION PROSPERETH

- In the early 1960's, Church leaders were hotly divided on whether it was apropos to allow tithing funds to be invested in worldly banks, businesses, investment portfolios, etc. Eventually, those in favor of doing so won the argument. Since then, sacred tithing funds have been invested in Mystery Babylon endeavors, enterprises, financial institutions, etc. Again, this obliterates any notion that the leadership of the corporations – which merely own the trademark of the Church's original name – practice Common Consent.
- A tiny fraction – not more than 2% – of all received funds and donations goes to humanitarian aid, most of it in the form of second-hand clothing goods and bulk grain. Daymon Smith estimates (from the figures that he was privy to while working at the COB) that more is spent on the PR that promotes the Church's humanitarian aid efforts than on the aid itself.
- The Church increasingly replaces underpaid (in comparison to private-sector wages) part-time/full-time staff on the non-profit side with completely uncompensated volunteers. As non-profit operating costs decrease, the freed up capital is applied almost exclusively towards the Church's for-profit ventures. There are even cases where uncompensated volunteers work full-time for the Church's for-profit enterprises as well; one of which is covered in detail in the next chapter.

Whose “church” is this? In all objectivity, is this not merely a “church” in trademarked name only?

Wouldn't it be more correct to state that we are actually members of "The Ecclesiastical Club of Intellectual Reserve, Inc. of Modern-day Jesus-Believers"?

One might feel obliged to dismiss all of this as a case of “You say 'po-tay-to', I say 'po-tah-to'” – to brush it off with so-what retorts like, “What's in a name?”

Jesus's name certainly isn't – not in the legal, definitive name of the “church.” Not anymore.

“And how be it my church save it be called [not just trademarked] in my name? For if a church be called in Moses' name then it be Moses' church; or if it be called in the name of a man [such as “The Corporation of the President...” or “The Presiding Bishop...”] then it be the church of a man; but if it be called in my name then it is my church, if it so be that they are built upon my gospel.” (3 Nephi 27:8)

- 1 2 Nephi 28:19-21, 24-25, 31 – *The Book of Mormon*
- 2 D&C 38:27,28
- 3 Quote from *Defender of the Faith: The B. H. Roberts Story*, p. 363
- 4 Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: Daymon Smith Anthropology Dissertation
- 5 Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: Daymon Smith Interview - Correlation - An Uncorrelated History. Source of this interview – <http://bycommonconsent.com/2010/03/03/correlation-an-uncorrelated-history-part-1-the-mormon-underground/>
- 6 Alan Rock Waterman's blog address is <http://puremormonism.blogspot.com>
- 7 Source – <http://puremormonism.blogspot.tw/2010/10/how-corporatism-has-undermined-and.html> – reproduced with permission by the author
- 8 Editor's Note: I edited out/toned down some of Waterman's sometimes-edgy, humorous, and endearingly tongue-in-cheek style of presentation in order to blend this excellently-covered material to better suit the tone and feeling of this volume of information. Please don't be upset with me, Rock. =D
- 9 Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: Alan Rock Waterman - How Corporatism Has Undermined and Subverted The Church of Jesus Christ
- 10 Article source – <http://www.deseretnews.com/article/705377259/BYU-Symposium-LDS-Churchs-first-legal-status.html?pg=2>
Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: David Stott - LDS Church's first legal status
- 11 Refer to the following MP3 files in the supporting material: MormonStories-149-DaymonSmithPt1.mp3, MormonStories-150-DaymonSmithPt2.mp3, MormonStories-151-DaymonSmithPt3.mp3, and MormonStories-152-DaymonSmithPt4.mp3
- 12 Sources:
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Corporation_of_the_President_of_The_Church_of_Jesus_Christ_of_Latter-day_Saints
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Deseret_Management_Corporation
- 13 Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: Articles of Incorporation of the LDS church.pdf
- 14 Source: <https://www.lds.org/general-conference/print/2015/04/church-auditing-department-report-2014?lang=eng>
- 15 Because doing so is legally required in Canada and the U.K., the financials of Church operations in those regions are disclosed.
- 16 Source: <http://www.trademarkia.com/the-church-of-jesus-christ-of-latterday-saints-75132996.html>

Journal Excerpt 10 - February 2007

In the past month I've had a couple of experiences, both odd and amazing.

The first one happened during fast and testimony meeting a few weeks ago. Our daughter was home with [my wife], so I could go up and bear my testimony without having to worry about her. The Spirit touched my heart, and I knew exactly what I wanted to share. I looked through some material for the references I needed. That feeling of spiritual anticipation always gets me - my heart beating stronger with a bit of anxious trepidation. It always gets stronger once I get up to the podium area pews and wait for the person ahead of me to finish up.

When I finally approached the podium, the Holy Spirit was really strong. I knew exactly what to express. I began recounting how we've been encouraged for decades to establish and maintain family food and water storage, adequate enough to feed and hydrate everyone for a minimum of a year. I began to testify to the need of taking these matters very seriously-- when out of the blue someone tapped me on the shoulder.

Perplexed, I stopped speaking and realized that the bishop was standing next to me. He quietly said, "Brother Markham, this is testimony meeting. We are not to give mini-talks during testimony meetings. You're supposed to just share a personal story, your testimony about Christ, the Gospel, the Church, the leaders, etc, and allow others time to do likewise. Got it?"

I was stunned. I hadn't even been speaking more than two minutes. It wouldn't take more than a couple of additional minutes to finish up. I had felt strongly encouraged and supported by the Holy Ghost to get up and share these things, briefly but with conviction. And yet, the bishop feels it necessary to interrupt me and explain that I'm inadvertently - yet somehow simultaneously subversively - abusing testimony-sharing time in the form of a mini-talk - which he is assuming that I have long been planning to deliver today.

After a few split-seconds of taking this in, I declared to the members, "Whether or not this is construed as a talk, this is my testimony. We must prepare ourselves and our family for harsh times in the near future. I say these things in the name of Jesus Christ, Amen."

I went and sat down. I didn't know what to think of what just happened. Every month, in every ward I've ever lived in, inevitably there's one or two members

(usually very social types) who go up to the podium and ramble on and on about things in their life that have little to nothing to do with the Gospel or their testimony - it's mostly streaming anecdotal prattle. There's nothing wrong with this per se - their delivery and personalities are usually endearing and help build a sense of camaraderie in the ward - but they often end up using a significant chunk of testimony meeting time.

Apparently, there's an unspoken rule against someone inspired by the Holy Ghost to give an impromptu admonition on a doctrinal matter, but not a rule against lengthy meanderings about non-Gospel-related matters?

Just then, the member behind me enthusiastically patted me on the shoulder and had a big smile. He whispered to me excitingly, "Great job! Finally, someone's willing to talk about those things! I've been feeling the exact same way for years! You were awesome! Don't let what the bishop did get to you." After the meeting ended, a couple other members came and enthusiastically thanked me as well. Most of the other members, however, seemed to actively avoid me.

Later, the bishop came to me and apologized for having to interrupt me, and that he hoped I understood why he did that. (He certainly did not exhibit any misgivings in his decision.) I just smiled and nodded, said it was OK. I should have asked him if there have been a rash of cases elsewhere where members had prepared "mini-talks" in advance to deliver in testimony meetings. I've never seen do something like that in all my life in the Church. I did not pre-plan anything before the meeting started - I just brought up a couple of quotes and scriptural references to assist me with what the Spirit encouraged me to express.

Was my bishop simply being overzealous, or is this how things are handled everywhere? Whatever the case, the message has been received loud and clear by the other members in the ward: what I did was a big No No. Since that day, some members have started going out of their way to avoid even looking at me.

Last week was the other experience, but fortunately it was one of the most profound spiritual experiences of my entire life. Before going to Church that day, the Holy Ghost inspired me to bring some DVD-Rs of Loose Change 9/11 to offer during Elder's quorum. I was prompted by the Spirit to have Ezra Taft Benson's "I Testify" conference talk handy, and to read the part about the

growing power of secret combinations in America, and thereafter offer a DVD to anyone who wanted one.

As everyone was entering and sitting down (before separating into quorums), I talked to the presiding elder and asked him if I could have just a minute at the beginning to talk to the body of Priesthood holders. He looked a bit puzzled, but said "Sure, if it's only a minute." I assured him it wouldn't take long.

As I sat there in anticipation, my heart beat stronger and stronger - I could feel the power of the Holy Ghost increasingly being shed upon me. Finally, after everyone was seated and quieted down, the presiding elder stated that Brother Markham has a quick message for us. I stood up and faced the priesthood body.

At that very second, the room became completely still and quiet - more so than a Celestial room's atmosphere. The Spirit completely enveloped my entire being with a magnitude that I've never felt before, and never imagined possible. My whole body began to quake intensely; tears streamed out of my eye ducts uncontrollably, they could not be held back. I have no idea how I managed to stand up - the intensity of the power flowing through me caused me to have no bodily strength whatsoever. I couldn't feel my feet touching the floor. As I looked at the paper I had prepared, with Benson's words from his 1988 "I Testify" talk, I struggled to speak through the quaking and the tears. Once I began to speak, the Spirit strengthened, and I managed to quietly choke out the following:

"I testify that wickedness is rapidly expanding in every segment of our society. It is more highly organized, more cleverly disguised, and more powerfully promoted than ever before. Secret combinations lusting for power, gain, and glory are flourishing. A secret combination that seeks to overthrow the freedom of all lands, nations, and countries is increasing its evil influence and control over America and the entire world. President Ezra Taft Benson, General Conference October 1988."

As I spoke, the room was so profoundly silent that a pin drop would have sounded like silverware clanging on the floor. All the men (young and old) were stunned speechless as I read. Most didn't know what to think. Some looked annoyed, their faces communicating "What the heck is this guy doing?". However, a few of them were visibly moved by what was occurring.

I concluded by gently saying "I have DVDs that

explain what President Benson was warning about. I would love to share one with you. Please see me later if you would like one." Then I quietly went and sat down, still dealing with tears streaming out of my eyes, still coping with the Holy Ghost flowing intensely through me.

Immediately after I sat down, in my mind I heard Ezra Taft Benson's humble, loving voice, overwhelmed with appreciation: "Thank you, Brother Markham! Thank you!"

After a few more seconds of reverent silence, the presiding elder stood up and (with a kind of apologetic secular professionalism that quickly chased the Spirit out of the room) he promptly continued the meeting.

I now know what Nephi meant when he testified that the Spirit was flowing so strongly through him that "I am filled with the power of God, even unto the consuming of my flesh." (1 Nephi 17:48)

After the meeting ended, 5 people came up to me to get a DVD. Four seemed genuinely interested, the other one more or less sarcastically curious. None of them commented on what happened, nor asked me any questions about the content of the DVD.

FORBIDDING THE MEAT, THINNING THE MILK

[Ye are] called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec. Of whom we have many things to say, [yet are] hard to be uttered [to you, because] ye are dull of hearing....

Ye ought to be teachers, [yet] ye have need that one teach you again [in] the first principles of the oracles of God; and [ye] are become [as those who] have need of milk [i.e. base teachings], and not of strong meat [i.e. deeper doctrines, Godly treasures of knowledge]. For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe [i.e. unprepared for the greater things of God].

But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full [maturity], even those who [through application of such] have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

– Apostle Paul's Epistle to the Hebrews¹

Beyond the glaring issues stemming from the corporatized structure and for/non-profit duality of the “LDS Church”, the flaws and unintended consequences of the correlation movement (spear-headed by Harold B. Lee while serving as an apostle) are expounded upon in detail within Daymon Smith's interviews, provided in the supporting material.² Alan Rock Waterman's article provides insight as to how Church life was subtly and irredeemably altered during the 60's and 70's as correlation commenced. Having been raised in the Church during the 70's and 80's, I, too, have witnessed and experienced the gradual changes of the correlation steamroller.

Recall the words of Brother Marion Law (spoken in 1981) from Volume I, *The True Face of Socialism/Communism*: "I used to be called upon to give a lot of talks about the signs of the times and having your calling and election made sure." No more. Why not?

Did such things suddenly cease to be true, or unimportant?

Why is there an unspoken taboo permeating throughout the Church that deeper Gospel subjects are off-limits?

Gone are the "meaty" teachings, which the Lord refers to as "great treasures of knowledge, even hidden treasures"³. Instead, the membership body is restricted to a diet of homogenized-correlated, minimal-spiritual-fat gospel milk. Every LDS member ought to contemplate how this diet of thin milk has resulted in the stilted and regimented (and, frankly, *boring*) manner in which our chapels operate each Sunday.

More than likely, the average LDS member could attest to the following:

- When a member is assigned to give a talk in Sacrament meeting, not only is the theme of the talk provided, but the member is referred to the Church's materials to create the talk. Should the member deviate from the topic or Church materials, chances are they'll never be asked to speak again. Sometimes it results in leaders counseling that member.
- The same goes for teachers who forgo Church-provided lesson manuals and prayerfully prepare a lesson inspired by the Holy Ghost. If it only happens once or twice, leaders may not discipline the teacher. However, should a teacher regularly not follow Church materials, unease and suspicion builds.
- Attempt to breach the subject of meaty doctrines (a few examples: the Law of Consecration, 'translated' individuals, modern-day visitations of angels to individuals, modern-day individual dreams and visions, making one's Calling and Election sure, discussing prophesied last-days events that have yet to occur, or a detailed exploration into Christ's Atonement) and all too often it will result in a sea of blank stares and/or general uneasiness around the room – and one will be suspected of trying to introduce false doctrine.

All of this begs the question: *Why ought anyone bother to study the scriptures at all if everything a "good Mormon" is meant to know is already sorted, distilled, homogenized, and pre-packaged in the Church's manuals?*

Is this the fruit that Harold B. Lee and the General Authorities of the 60's and 70's expected to produce? Or have some alarming hopefully-unintended consequences developed?

FORBIDDING THE MEAT, THINNING THE MILK

And yet, by far the worst fruit of the correlation movement has become glaringly apparent today: a centralized, hyper-regulated, by-the-handbook, institutionalized "church" that actively reinforces the seven sacred cows covered previously.

The over-protective blanket of correlation has reached a point of squeezing out any desire or incentive in the members to actually study the scriptures, to discover Gospel meat, or to seek the Holy Ghost for anything beyond gaining a testimony of Gospel milk truths. "Why should I do personal scripture study? I already learn whatever I need at Church. If there's anything beyond this, they'll teach it. Right?"

Such over-protectiveness invariably results in spiritual under-development, an aversion to seeking spiritual autonomy (i.e. seeking to develop a personal relationship with Christ), blind reliance on authority, and an expectation that the protecting-entity will always adequately-inform, cannot fail nor ever be wrong. It also generates justified inquiry and push-back from those who become aware that the proverbial "water in the pot" is becoming hotter.

Correlation's Fallout

The following excerpts from Daymon Smith's interview with Mormon Stories succinctly summarizes the complications that have arisen – and have become increasingly agitated – in today's easy-access to verifiable information. (emphasis added):

JOHN DEHLIN: When I read about how correlation came to be, I can really sympathize with Harold B. Lee and others. Here they are in 1960, with 130-years-worth of Church history... and in some ways it's a train wreck.... They've got to come up with some way to distill this down to its essence. You can really feel for these guys and understand why they did what they did. On the other hand, we've got some negative consequences from that. *Anyone who has an Internet connection can jump on and type in the word 'mormon' and plenty of anti or ex-mormon websites will come up. **One of the main arguments is that they feel like the Church has lied to them in its presentation of correlated history.***

DAYMON SMITH: Correlation, unfortunately, didn't account for that.... ***[Some] people leave because they've been raised with this idea that everything they get at Church, in [their local] building, is everything that there is to the Gospel. Whether that's true or not is a different matter – whether that's a reasonable conclusion doesn't matter.*** The lament is that there was a big cover-up, and ***because they covered things up "how can you trust everything else?"....***

DEHLIN: I came across... a resignation letter from a woman.... Let me just read the first couple paragraphs to you, because I think it's an example of the down-side to correlation:

To whom it may concern, this letter is to inform you that I am officially resigning from the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. Two years ago I was reading a Salt Lake Tribune online article about the FLDS Church [i.e. the Fundamental Latter-day Saints, which practice polygamy]. Someone commented on the article and stated that Joseph Smith was very similar to Warren Jeffs [i.e. the leader of the FLDS Church]. I was very offended by that statement, and posted my own comment defending Joseph Smith as a man of God. Another person sent me a link to a website, [which] stated that Joseph Smith married girls as young as fourteen, and left women that were already married to other men – one after personally sending the woman's husband on a mission.

I was horrified, and I went to FAIR and FARMS websites [i.e. LDS apologetics sites] in hopes of finding information that would refute these claims. However, FAIR and FARMS offered only excuses that seemed to not address the issues at hand, and left me feeling confused. Sadly, this confirmed to me that the other website was at least somewhat accurate.

This led me to further research the Church's history. I was very bothered to discover that Joseph Smith gave multiple differing versions of the first vision. The only one that is in his own handwriting states that he only saw Jesus. Why would he forget to say he saw Heavenly Father, too? [Ed. Note: This is a misrepresentation. Please refer to the chapter endnotes.⁴]

This information left me in a state of shock. For several days I couldn't eat, sleep, and shed more than a few tears. After the shock wore off, I was angry. I felt I'd been deceived by the Church. I am 37 years old and have been an active member of the Church all of my life. I was raised in a very active LDS home. I attended LDS seminary in high school, I attended BYU, I was married in the temple, I watched conference and read the Ensign regularly. My husband and I have served in many Church callings and have tried to teach our four children the Gospel. So why did it take me 35 years in the Church to find out these issues?

She goes on, but I think this provides a pretty powerful example of someone who was active in the Church, [had] their heart in the right place, and she's got all the good intentions of the world. Then you've got Harold B. Lee and his folks, they've got all the good intentions of the world – wanting to create this unified, seemingly seamless, coherent, consistent history – and yet, we obviously are at a situation here where the proposed solution (i.e. creating unity, or the image thereof) is not working for all of us in the Church.

FORBIDDING THE MEAT, THINNING THE MILK

SMITH: One of those unintended consequences is that [although] you can create unity, ***the question then becomes "What are you going to use to measure how unified people are?" and "Can you keep everybody in when you're trying to create unity?"*** It's easy to create unity if it's just you, and you chase out everybody else, or if it's [just] you and your best friend. You can get this sense that Harold B. Lee clearly had the best of intentions, and clearly thought that he was being guided by the hand of God. But an outcome of this is that 'the Church' – whatever people mean by that – became viewed as the avenue for the dissemination of truth. Correlation doesn't present everything from our history, despite the numerous requests from people that the Church website have a statement on polygamy (besides we don't practice it) – some kind of explanation as to why they used to and we don't [today] – an explanation of Joseph Smith's practices. ***None of those things are going to register at the Church Office Building, because a woman like this, who lived her life clearly in the model of the correlated Mormon, can now be viewed as having lost her faith.***

In other words, through the institutionalization of (what is called) correlation, you can explain away every error of correlation as an error of faith – but you can credit everything [good] that happens in the Church as a result of correlation. So it is very difficult to try to explain to people why something like correlation maybe was unnecessary, maybe it wasn't good... it's impossible, once something like correlation has been instituted, to ever remove it. No number of people leaving the Church, regardless of how much they believe in the Gospel, or how much they believed in the Church previous to leaving it – no number of that **is going to ever change anything that happens with respect to correlation.**

Correlated Church Periodicals Heavily Rewrite Member's Submissions and Comments

Although this example may seem tawdry compared to what's been covered already, it is an alarming (although somewhat unsurprising) example of unnecessary correlation-related censorship that I witnessed first hand.

In the early 1990's, a friend of mine at BYU Provo had submitted a personal-experience response to the advice column of New Era magazine. The topic to address was: "A good friend of mine is kind of rowdy and wild. How can I help him change without coming across as self-righteous?" To her surprise, she was quoted in the following issue. She was even more surprised to see that what was printed (with her name attached) was nothing like what she had sent in. The edited revision of her submission was as follows:

"It is possible to let your friend know that you don't approve and still keep his trust. Always let him know the decision is his, but also tell him you won't include yourself in wrong or incorrect behavior. Enlist the Lord's help in finding the right words and time to discuss his actions." ⁵

She was angry and disgusted. She had composed a heartfelt personal response. She showed me a printout of what she had written and mailed in. With this incident occurring over 20 years ago, I don't recall the wording of her original submission, but I recall vividly how shocking it was to witness that absolutely nothing of what she sent in was retained. The rewrite didn't even accurately convey the gist of her words. It was as though the New Era editors already had a pre-written response for their own question, and then they slapped someone's name on it who had submitted a reply.

I encouraged her to look on the bright side that her name was published. "But it's not *my* letter. Not one thing *I* wrote is in there. They completely changed it, and then *they put my name on it*. How is it OK for them to do that?" I suggested that maybe she included too much detail. "Then they could have edited those parts out and left the rest of my words unchanged. But no, they changed *everything*, and had the nerve to put my full name on *their* revision."

At least one other person in the Church knows a fraction of what Elder Poelman must have gone through.

- 1 Hebrews 5:10-14
- 2 Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: Daymon Smith Interview - Correlation - An Uncorrelated History. Also refer to the Refer to the following MP3 files in the supporting material: MormonStories-149-DaymonSmithPt1.mp3, MormonStories-150-DaymonSmithPt2.mp3, MormonStories-151-DaymonSmithPt3.mp3, and MormonStories-152-DaymonSmithPt4.mp3
- 3 Doctrine & Covenants 89:19
- 4 Joseph records the following, verbatim: "I was filld with the Spirit of God and the Lord opened the heavens upon me and I Saw the Lord and he Spake unto me Saying Joseph my son thy Sins are forgiven thee." Joseph doesn't say "I only saw Jesus." He merely does not mention the introduction of Christ by the Father in this brief account. In the other three accounts, the Father and other details are provided. Refer to the supporting material for more information about this matter, as well as all four accounts which the reader can review for oneself – namely the PDF documents LDS FAQ - Joseph Smith's First Vision Accounts and Annotated History of Joseph Smith Vol. 1 Chapter 1, respectively.
On a personal note, I have had my own deep spiritual experiences, some of which I share in the journal excerpts throughout. **Depending upon the audience, I include or leave out certain details that I feel might be either too sacred, too sensitive or not the appropriate time or place to share.** Perhaps one day someone will compile everything I ever wrote about one of my experiences, and then (like a prosecuting attorney) make a case insisting that I completely falsified the experience due to the inconsistent manner in which I presented it to others. This is precisely what is being done in regards to Joseph's first vision.
- 5 Source – <https://www.lds.org/new-era/1991/01/qa-questions-and-answers?lang=eng>

Journal Excerpt 11 - October 2007

I had a vivid, disturbing dream last night.

The first point that I remember in this dream is a nice day, and I am outside with my wife in a suburban-type tract-housing area. It is located on a high hill, almost a mountain, which allows an uninhibited view of the land down to a distant city, which is next to a large expanse of water. The water is either a massively-wide river or a channel of some kind - somehow I know it's not an ocean.

In the far distant skies very dark clouds (intensely black) gather together, to the point of blacking out that entire section of sky (whereas the skies above us remain blue and sunny). This black wall of clouds makes its way across the water and just above the city in the distance. Something begins to descend out of the clouds. At first it appears to be dark, heavy rain - but upon further inspection it is not clusters of falling moisture; it is a serpentine collection of black mist or smoke. It actually appears to be slithering out of the clouds. I am able to "zoom in" on this translucent stuff, and I notice that this smoky-appearing mist has a head: a pitch-black opaque head of a Chinese dragon. This head is fully formed and appears solid, whereas the "body" that trails behind it appears as a dense black mist, slinking serpentine as it descends. The only color that escapes the unbelievable blackness of this dragon head comes from the eye sockets and nostrils: bright orange flames which flicker and emanate from them.

Although I'm watching it from a great distance, it is so large that I can see make it out clearly even without "zooming in." The head must be 10 to 12 stories large. It slowly descends upon the city next to the shore.

Then, something really odd happens - I gasp and say to my wife "Oh my goodness! Three nights ago I had a dream about his exact same thing!" (It is bizarre to have a dream where within your own dream you are convinced that you dreamed something previously, yet in reality you didn't.) As my wife and I watch the black dragon descending, I discuss with her how I dreamed about this dragon three nights ago - and here it is, exactly what I dreamed, becoming reality.

My wife and I are not worried about the dragon because, for some reason, we feel prepared for anything. However, we wonder about what's going to happen to the people in the city where the dragon is descending. Other people in the area have differing reactions: most don't

see the black clouds or the dragon at all, some who can get panicky and go crazy with fear, others react with a "well, will you look at that" curiosity. While they speculate on what this dragon head is, I somehow know exactly what it is: a horrendous plague - a man-made biological sickness, like a black flu, that will become pandemic.

The dragon head and trailing mist serpentine down from the clouds until it submerges into the city and dissolves - enshrouding the city in black, swirling mist. Slowly, the terrible black clouds in the sky begin to roll towards the place where I am, and the black mist that's engulfing the city is seeping our way. The people around the suburb who can see it all start wondering aloud when the black mists will enter the area. After a couple of minutes, as I am looking down a street, about four blocks away, an opaque small black levitating dragon head (about the size of a semi-truck) passes down a street - black mist flowing and swirling out of its smoky body. It appears that the original dragon head separated into many smaller heads, some of which were now winding their way throughout the suburban streets.

Eventually, the mists begin to swirl around where I am. The mist is odorless and, with the exception of slightly darkening the atmosphere, doesn't seem to change the quality of the air at all - there's no odor, it's as though I'm just breathing normal air. Regardless, I know that the mist is introducing a deadly sickness and people will soon start manifesting its symptoms.

I woke up soon after this.

This dream strongly reminds me of another dream I had nearly a year ago.

In that dream I was standing on the edge of a sprawling grassy park, which was about a mile wide/deep and had sporadic trees and picnic tables throughout. It was a beautiful day: perfect temperature, nice breeze, blue skies with some fluffy clouds. There were many Chinese families and individuals enjoying themselves on this nice day in this park - having picnics, reading books, children running and playing, etc.

Then in the distance, I saw several massive steamroller-like metal wheels/rollers slowing rolling towards the park before me. These wide flat rollers were each perhaps twenty-five stories tall and about fifty meters wide, and they rolled tightly side-by-side towards

us - some a bit closer, some a bit further than the others. Nobody seemed to be able to see them but me. For some reason I was powerless to warn anybody about their approach. At the far end of the park, a Chinese man was sitting on the grass and reading a book. The edge of the first steamroller wheel to broach the park severed off his right arm at the shoulder - sliced it clean off and crushed it. He looked at his armless shoulder in horror and shock, but only a moment later he was completely crushed by the approaching edge of the wheel next to it.

I was beside myself with panic, distress and helplessness as I watched other sweet Chinese people and families in the fields, group by group, get squashed into oblivion by these unrelenting massive steamroller-like wheels. Even as people were getting crushed left and right, no one else could see the wheels. They just went about their business until they were killed. I couldn't watch anymore. I ran away.

For some reason I had to go through a small, single-story school. I opened the door, and all these adorable elementary-aged Chinese students looked at me. They were really happy and excited to see me. Their desks were so close together that I had to make my way through the room by climbing over their desks. As I did so, they all looked at me sweetly, with so much love and respect and admiration in their eyes. In my dream I somehow knew who each of them were, and I loved them deeply. I apologized to them that I have no choice, I must leave the classroom. They understood and lovingly watched me as I exited out the other end of the building.

I stood outside the school building. I was supposed to keep moving, but I just couldn't. I watched the building intensely and began weeping. The steamroller wheels were approaching. I then realized that, for whatever reason, there was an angel behind me. I never looked at him, but he began speaking to me, "Why are you crying?" Quivering from distress, I choked out: "They're all going to die! And there's nothing I can do to stop it! Please, make it stop! Do something!" The angel didn't say anything - there was only the feeling that he couldn't do anything either.

The wheels finally reached the building and began to crush it. I heard the soul-piercing screams and wailings of terror from the children inside before they died; all the more painful because I knew each one of them and loved them! Blood began gushing out the bottom of the building's door frame and around the lower areas of its

structure. I screamed with the most intense emotional suffering, then immediately woke up. I was sobbing uncontrollably when I awoke. Even after waking, the thoughts and feelings would not subside for nearly an hour; I could not contain my weeping.

APPEASING GOD WHILE CAVORTING WITH MAMMON

The young man saith unto him, All these [commandments] have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?

Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me.

But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions.

– Matthew 19:20-22

Missionaries Paying Out-Of-Pocket To Serve The Church's For-Profit Entities

Many will be hoisted [within the Church] because of their money and worldly learning which they seem to be in possession of; and many who are the true followers of our Lord and Savior will be cast down because of their poverty.

– Joseph Smith¹

APPEASING GOD WHILE CAVORTING WITH MAMMON

An article titled *Tending The Flock* appeared in the Deseret News on July 10th, 2000. The entire article is included in the supporting material.² The following are relevant portions of it (emphasis added):

"Every morning before sunrise, Clair Huff slips into his blue jeans, pulls on his boots, grabs a baseball cap and heads out the door to work with his charges. As a full-time missionary for The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, he's shed the traditional dark suit, white shirt and tie.

"His responsibilities don't include teaching people about church doctrine, improving their health or distributing food and clothing to disaster victims. In fact, he doesn't deal with people much at all. His flock is literally that – a continually changing group of feathered friends: pheasants, geese, chukars, doves and ducks. Instead of knocking on doors, he spends his time bush-whacking in the thick brush along the southwest shores of Utah Lake, looking for the perfect place to nurture his birds by planting numerous stands of corn, rye and other grains.

"For more than two years, he and his wife, Beth, have been serving God in a most unusual way. ***They operate a private hunting preserve owned by the LDS Church.*** "I don't know of any other missionary doing what I'm doing," he says, pointing to a row of several hundred cedar trees he planted as a future wind break on the wind-swept acreage that stretches out in every direction. After spending an entire career as a wildlife biologist, including his latest stint as assistant director of operations for the state Division of Wildlife Resources, *Elder Huff seems uniquely qualified for the volunteer job description he's taken on: turn this 11,000-acre piece of desert into a revenue-generating hunting preserve.*

"To do so, the Huffs left their new home in Draper more than 26 months ago to live full time in an isolated aluminum siding home miles from the nearest human inhabitant near the southwest shore of Utah Lake. Working 18 hour days, particularly during the hunting and planting seasons, is not uncommon for the couple, whose retired peers may have difficulty understanding the attraction of the unrelenting labor.

"They've served longer than the traditional two-year missionary stint, but while the church looks for a suitable replacement biologist, the Huffs will stay — at least until November, when the majority of the hunting season is over....

"With thousands of birds flocking to the property in search of food, particularly during the fall hunting season, hunters stand a prime chance of "harvesting" their limit. But *they pay dearly for the privilege.* Only a few pheasant and goose-hunting permits are sold each year, with *hunting aficionados paying as much as \$1,500 for the opportunity to hunt [on] what is fast becoming an exclusive 'club' for 'members only.'*

"Once a hunter ponies up the cash to secure a permit, *he's not only*

*guaranteed a permit for the following year, but **his chance to draw the prime target areas on the preserve improve along with his seniority in the exclusive group.***

"All of our hunters are from Utah, many of them doctors, dentists and attorneys from Payson north to Ogden, including Park City," Elder Huff said.

*"The flatlands also provide an additional advantage for the well-heeled hunting crowd — **a 2,600-foot landing strip where private aircraft can whisk hunters in and out of the remote preserve**, saving them the long and lonely drive....*

*"**Church land managers see it as a legitimate way to make thousands of acres of land productive** that would otherwise lie fallow for lack of water, he said. The preserve, known as Westlake Farm Commercial Hunting Area, is managed by the LDS Church's Farm Management Co., the same group that operates the adjacent farming operations and grain silos. The for-profit farming and ranching company is overseen by the church's Presiding Bishopric.*

*"The church owns thousands of acres of farm and ranch land throughout the West, including the Deseret Land and Livestock Co., *a private big-game hunting preserve scattered over 200,000 acres in northern Utah.* **Hunters from around the country vie for a limited number of elk and moose permits there that cost as much as \$8,500 each.***

*"Complete with a formal hunting lodge for housing and meals, the hunts are guided by a local outfitter. And while there's no guarantee that a hunter's bullet will find its mark, *hunting on the preserve is so popular, there's a six-year waiting list to buy a permit....**

*"And as the habitat, and consequently, the number and variety of wildlife improves, the price of the permits would logically go up as well, [Huff] said. "Imagine if we got to the point that we could boost the price (of each permit) to \$2,000 or \$2,500. Times that by 250, and **it doesn't take a lot to understand that this could be a very profitable operation.**"*

This is merely one example where Church members are being uncompensated (and even paying much out of pocket) for volunteering full time – often working 18 hours a day – to serve the Church in one of its for-profit business ventures. Additionally, Mr. Huff is also given the label "full-time missionary" – despite not being involved in any proselyting or teaching responsibilities.

Aside from all the moral debate about hunting animals for sport, the Joseph Smith Translation of Genesis 9:11 states "And surely, blood shall not be shed, only for meat, to save your lives; and the blood of every beast will I require at your hands." Not to mention the conveniently-overlooked similar

APPEASING GOD WHILE CAVORTING WITH MAMMON

statement in the Word of Wisdom: "Yea, flesh also of beasts and of the fowls of the air, I, the Lord, have ordained for the use of man with thanksgiving; nevertheless they are to be used sparingly." (D&C 89:12) Why is it that most Mormons vehemently abstain from tobacco and alcohol products, teas and coffee, even caffeinated beverages, and yet turn their noses up at variations of vegetarian diets? Shouldn't they also embrace these oracles of God and seek to eat less meat, or at least think twice before taking an animals life?

Let the reader be the judge: Would the Lord justify the apostles in ancient times to develop elite hunting clubs, which cater to wealthy Church members, excused as "a legitimate way to make thousands of acres of land [financially] productive," in order to bring in non-tithing/donation revenue to the Church's coffers? I don't recall any of the Nephis, or Almas, or Moronis, or Mosiah, or Abinadi talking about how the Church did such things in the Book of Mormon. Well, except possibly during the time of King Noah and his corrupt priests.

Take all of this a step further.

What if the Church provided "service opportunities" (i.e. personal expenses paid out of pocket, zero or minimal compensation, and the individual must work up to 18 hours a day, six days a week) in the following capacities:

- as a store clerk at the for-profit entity Deseret Book.
- as a guest room cleaner at the for-profit Hotel Utah.
- as a waiter/bus boy at the for-profit Lion House restaurant.
- as a security guard at the previously-owned-but-still-invested-in Zion's Bank.
- as a manure shoveler at any one of the for-profit ranches.

Beyond the cultivation of temporal staples – such as producing crops and dairy products on farms and cattle on ranches – *are not the worldly-business/spiritual-service demarcation lines being blurred?* Shouldn't there be an ethical line drawn in maximizing profits through taking advantage of members' spiritual ambitions to serve uncompensatingly in (what they cling to be) Christ's Church? In what way is it *not* exploitative to engage eager, willing members to perform work that benefits the for-profit endeavors of the corporation-church, while they subsist on their own savings?

Is this supposed to be preparing either the members, or the Church collectively, for Zion?

City Creek Center: The \$5,000,000,000 Golden Elephant-Calf In The Room

The further one lives away from Utah, the less likely one is familiar with a rather-controversial Church-invested property called City Creek Center. It's construction was completed in early 2012. All three members of the First Presidency and the Presiding Bishop attended the ribbon-cutting event on March 22nd.

Once again I defer to Alan Rock Waterman, whose blog article³ *Bring Ye All The Tithes Into The Stores* effectively captures the zeitgeist permeating the matter. Critical portions are reprinted here, with permission. (All-caps and underlined emphasis is original, other emphasis added):

"Recently I saw something on YouTube I might have found quite amusing if it had not been so unsettling.

"It featured our prophet, Thomas S. Monson, participating in a ribbon cutting ceremony for a giant new shopping center in Salt Lake City. At a predetermined cue, as the ribbon was cut, all the dignitaries on hand, including our revered Prophet, Seer, and Revelator, chanted in unison, "One, two, three... LET'S GO SHOPPING!" [Ed. Note: a video of this is included in the supporting material.⁴]

"It's worth noting that members of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints consider Thomas Monson to be God's one true spokesman on the earth in these latter days, the spiritual heir of all the great prophets who came before. That list would include not only latter-day prophets such as Joseph Smith, but also the great biblical prophets such as Moses, Ezekial, and Isaiah; and the mighty prophets of the Book of Mormon such as Nephi, Alma, and Abinadi. *Like our founding prophet Joseph Smith, these ancient prophets understood their responsibility was "to say nothing but repentance unto this generation."*

"But I guess that was for those earlier generations. Different prophets for different times. *Apparently the role of the prophet of God today is to encourage us to grab our wallets and purses and head over to Macy's for some silks and scarlets and fine-twined linen.*

"And don't forget to do some banking. Two years ago Monson showed up in Provo to ***dedicate a newly opened branch of Zion's Bank***. And ***yes, you read that right. The prophet of God dedicated a bank***. You know, ***"dedicated" as in praying over it – like when he dedicates a temple to the Lord***. [Ed. Note: The May 15, 2010 Deseret News article on this event is included in the supporting material.⁵]

"Church spokesmen claim the LDS Church no longer holds a controlling

APPEASING GOD WHILE CAVORTING WITH MAMMON

financial interest in Zion's Bank, so that's a relief. ***Last year Zion's Bancorporation was implicated in the laundering of billions in drug money, and before that was the recipient of 1.4 Billion in taxpayer bailouts.*** Being associated with such an unsavory institution could sully the Church's good name. Best to divest the Church of it's controlling ownership of that bank and instead just send the prophet of God over to handle the dedicatory prayer....

Salt Lake City Follies

"City Creek Center is a massive outdoor mall smack in the middle of downtown Salt Lake City, and as malls go, this one is a doozy. It's more of a cross between an outdoor shopping mall and a very large park, with waterfalls, fountains, and a creek running through the middle stocked with trout. Among its 100 stores are *Macy's, Nordstrom's, Tiffany's, Brooks Brothers, and countless other high-dollar boutiques targeted at society's upper crust.* There is no underestimating the beauty of this mall. As man-made wonders go, City Creek Center is as impressive a sight as you're likely to find this side of Las Vegas. [Ed. Note: refer to the supporting material for photos of the City Creek Center.⁶]

"There is a reason President Monson felt it important to place his imprimatur on this expensive venture. ***The whole thing was financed with investments originally derived from Church tithing funds,*** and there is sure to be some anxiety about whether, in these slow economic times, any of those dollars will ever be recouped. *So far the City Creek project has drained Church coffers of an estimated 1.5 Billion dollars, and when the additional condos and high rise buildings are completed, costs are expected to reach or exceed \$5 Billion.* Personally, I'm betting costs will exceed that. *This is a veritable downtown neighborhood being built from the ground up, and it won't come cheap.*

"If I sound cynical, it's because I was raised to believe that Jesus Christ is the head of this Church and that he makes all the important decisions directing it. But I am inclined to believe the Lord was not consulted on this one. Why? Because ***development on the City Creek project (and a \$100 Million hotel in Hawaii) began just before America fell into its greatest depression in eighty years....***

"[Those outside of the Salt Lake City area] weren't the only members of the church caught unaware about the corporate Church's involvement in this project. ***Many of those living in the shadow of temple square were themselves uninformed about who was fronting the money for it, almost up until the grand opening. No members heard about it through proper Church channels as they should have.*** It was never announced in general conference. *Everyday ordinary run-of-the-mill latter-day Saints like you and me had to wait and read about it in the paper....*

"Whether the City Creek project was a good idea or a bad one is almost beside the point. *What should be of concern to us is that **we mere members of the church are constantly and deliberately kept in the dark about the corporate wing's financial dealings, even though as members we are essentially the holders for value. This kind of secrecy violates Church doctrine and goes against more than a century of long-standing tradition.***

Staying Accountable To The Members

"For the first 128 years of this Church's formal existence, it was an essential part of April conference for the leaders of the Church to report it's financial dealings in full to the general membership. This was usually among the first matters of business during the Saturday morning session. *From the time of Joseph Smith on, it was understood that the members who provided the tithes were to be shown how their sacred tithing dollars had been disbursed so they could voice their consent. **The leaders understood they had a sacred fiduciary trust and a responsibility to inform the members of a) how much money was collected in tithing, and b) how that money was being spent from one year to the next....***

"At the end of 1950, as Church auditors reported, "The Church is in strong financial position and free from debt." In subsequent years things just kept getting better, and by 1957, the Church had \$70 million in reserves sitting in Zion's First National Bank.

"But the year after that, it all went south. Due to a poorly thought-out and unrestrained program of real estate acquisition, the Church suddenly found itself cash poor and \$8 million in debt. Out of a sense of embarrassment, *the leaders decided, for the first time in the history of the Church, not to include a financial report to the members at the next conference session.* Deficits more than doubled the year after that, until by 1963 the Church was on the brink of bankruptcy. ***There has never been another financial report filed since.***

"After Eldon Tanner took over as Church Chief Financial Officer in 1963 and eventually brought the Church solvent, there was another reason to be embarrassed about the Church's finances. LDS, Inc. was becoming very, very rich, and *not through investments normally considered appropriate for a church.*

"It's one thing for a church to invest its member's surplus tithes in ranches, farms, and orchards, since *those kinds of investments can produce sustenance for the needy, which after all is the primary purpose of tithing in the first place.* But ***Tanner was investing Church money into banks, insurance companies, public utilities, commercial real estate, money market funds, treasury bills, and oil companies like Standard Oil, Exxon, and Phillips Petroleum.*** He bought a million

APPEASING GOD WHILE CAVORTING WITH MAMMON

dollars worth of stock in the Los Angeles Times, and four years later it was worth four million. Eventually, under Tanner's guidance, the church found itself *not just out of debt, but richer than it had ever been before. Billions of dollars richer...*

"How do you report to the membership that the method their leaders chose to get the Church out of harm's way was by investing it in Babylon? Answer: you decide it's best to say nothing at all...."

"[One] legitimate use for surplus funds in the Church used to be in providing capital to help deserving members launch viable business enterprises, as explained by Joseph F. Smith in an April 1912 article in the Church magazine, The Improvement Era. Here is a description of that article from Thomas Alexander's excellent history, Mormonism In Transition: A History of the Latter-day Saints 1890-1930:

"The Church, [President Smith] said, had always tried to *"help establish home industries* and to aid in setting certain business enterprises on their feet," in order to provide employment and *"to develop the material resources to the country, that the people and the land may prosper."* Those purposes accomplished, the Church had generally withdrawn, "holding in most cases only a very little financial interest in the enterprises." *In his view, **spiritual and temporal salvation complemented each other**, and the Church promoted both.*

"Such former practices where the Church could be found carefully nurturing incipient businesses for the benefit of individuals within the Mormon community is a far cry from the modern practice. *Today, the institutional Church directs its investments toward building an economic empire **for the benefit of the institution itself, while the members are kept entirely out of the loop.***

They're Supposed To Have Your Approval

"We are all familiar with Lord Acton's famous maxim, "power corrupts, and absolute power corrupts absolutely." I am not about to accuse Church leadership of either holding absolute power, or of being absolutely corrupt. But let's consider just the first half of that couplet, the one that says "power corrupts."

*"This is a well known tenet of LDS doctrine. **The possibility that priesthood leaders are capable of coming to see themselves as somehow superior in knowledge and ability over those they are called to serve, and must oftentimes be held in check, is codified in Doctrine & Covenants section 121, verse 39.** And those who insist we should completely trust our leaders to always do the right thing and never do wrong should try to explain why section 107 provides the*

method by which the president of the Church can be removed for transgression. Humans are prone to making errors, sometimes serious ones. No one is infallible.

"But drastic measures are not necessary, in my opinion, in order to rein our leaders back in. All we need do is go back to doing things the way the Lord set it up, when he commanded that "all things shall be done by common consent in the church" (D&C 26). *We deserve to get away from the dichotomized Church we have somehow turned into, where certain members have attained a status akin to royalty, and those below them in rank are expected not to question their actions or decrees....*

"[Y]ou can find no end to opinions in the church as to what some believe "Mormonism" is meant to entail, but many fail to provide scriptural citations to support those positions. Sadly, there are many within the church who care little about what their religion actually teaches. What matters is what they think it teaches.

"Prominent among such beliefs is that once you pay your tithing, that money is the Lord's and no longer your concern. Yes, the money does belong to the Lord, but *you didn't hand it over to the Lord himself, you placed it into the hands of mortal men.* Men, even priesthood leaders, are quite capable of taking the Lord's money and spending it foolishly. It's a pretty safe bet that you can trust in the Lord, but the Lord himself commands us to "trust not in the arm of flesh." When you give your money over to be used for the Lord's purposes, the Lord does not expect you to be ambivalent about what becomes of it.

"But not everyone agrees. Here is an excerpt from [one person's response]:

""My attachment to those funds, and any sense of oversight regarding their use, ends the moment I hand them to the Bishop. As far as I'm concerned, the Bishop could take all the tithing money out behind the meetinghouse every Sunday afternoon and light a fire with them. What is important for my spiritual welfare is that I make a sacrifice, that I couch my belief in active, inconvenient terms. I do not "buy in" to the Church as an earthly organization; I "buy in" to the Lord with my faithfulness, obedience, and sacrifice."

"In other words, [this person is feels that] God doesn't need your money; he just wants to test you....

This Is Not A Test

"When [my wife related an experience to me where she was led by the Holy Ghost to bring dinner to a complete stranger's house, and discovered that this mother and her children were financially bereft and in the very act of praying to God for a miracle when my wife arrived], I gathered

APPEASING GOD WHILE CAVORTING WITH MAMMON

some important lessons from it that had not occurred to me before. Chief among these lessons was the realization that God is not all-powerful. By whatever name or set of reasoning you want to give it, be it The Laws of God or The Laws of Heaven, *there are some things even God is restricted from doing. For instance, God cannot come down in person and leave a box of groceries on someone's porch. God depends on us to carry out his will. We are his hands, his eyes, his ears. We are His emissaries of goodwill. All of us are expected to be God's angels on earth, ministering to each other in kindness.*

"When God hears a young mother's prayer, the way He acts on that prayer is by inspiring others to perform in his stead. ***That's what it means to emulate Christ; we do the things Jesus would do himself if he were here to do them.***

"So here is something to ponder: what do you suppose would have become of that young mother and her children if [my wife] Connie and her friends had ignored the promptings of the spirit that inspired them to go out and gather food to take to a stranger? The answer is simple: that young family would have gone hungry.

"It happens every day all over the world; people pray for help and help never comes. I don't think this is because God ignores their prayers. I think ***it's because those who are in positions to lend a hand often ignore God when he is whispering in their ears.***

"We distort the gospel of Christ when we presume the law of tithing exists as a test of our willingness to be blindly obedient. We are commanded to give of our sustenance because those tithes and offerings are actually needed to sustain the lives of real, living human beings. How dare anyone blithely suggest that it doesn't really matter if those urgently needed funds are taken outside and set on fire! What a mockery that makes of the purposes of God. The Lord not only expects you to tithe, but also to be mindful that those tithes are put to good use.

"Yes, God actually does need your money. He is not playing games with you or testing your loyalty or getting a kick out of watching you sacrifice. The law of tithing is a law for a reason. It is important. It is necessary. It is needed. It is not a trifle.

One, Two, Three... Let's Go Shopping For Excuses

"Even before the City Creek development was completed, a large and growing contingent of latter-day saints were questioning the propriety of the Church involving itself in a commercial undertaking of that magnitude. In response, some True Believers who see themselves as defenders of the faith have sought to quell the criticism by offering a number of rationalizations and justifications for the mall. Most of these justifications

are pretty lame. I'll address just two:

"1. The Church made sure no tithing funds were used for the building of the mall. The funds for City Creek came from Church investments.

"This seems a bit of a stretch. **All funds at the Church's disposal are originally derived from tithing.** The way it used to work is that tithing funds were collected, then immediately disbursed to where they were needed. The income kept pace with the outgo, as President Kimball once told a reporter. But what happens these days is that a certain amount of tithing is immediately parked into investments where it sits for three years earning interest. A billion dollars invested in a money market account can yield millions in interest. It is these millions that have then been reinvested in such things as real estate holdings.... **[H]as the Lord ever instructed his people to set aside tithing to be invested in gentile pursuits? Not according to history.**

"We Mormons tend to interpret Malachi chapter 3 as chastising the people for being slow in paying their tithing to the Church. But a reading of the Book of Malachi makes clear that **The Lord was rebuking not the people, but the priests.** *Old Testament scholars report that the ancient Jews by and large tended to be diligent tithe payers, but the Jewish priests who collected those tithes sometimes had a tendency to withhold a portion of those tithes to put to other uses....*

"In the old testament book of Malachi, God was telling the priests to stop relying on their own wisdom as to how the tithing should be used, and "bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse" where they belonged. *Those tithes are intended, first and foremost, to provide "meat in mine house" for those who need it. If you priests are concerned about running out of funds, the Lord is saying, try doing it my way for a change and see "if I will not open the windows of heaven and pour you out a blessing that there shall not be room enough to receive it."* Do things my way, the Lord says, and you won't have to worry about there being any shortages.

"2. The area around temple square was deteriorating economically; City Creek Mall is needed to revitalize downtown Salt Lake City.

"Downtowns are deteriorating all across the country, but **is it the role of the Church to rebuild them?** If there is a valid reason to invest in a troubled area, business developers would be investing private funds.... *If Downtown Salt Lake is worth saving, there are more appropriate ways to rescue it than having the Church step in as savior of the city.*

"**There was a reason stores and shops in downtown Salt lake were going out of business. A lot of people in the area could no longer afford to support them as in the past.** The multi-story Crossroads Mall was demolished to make way for the City Creek. So was

APPEASING GOD WHILE CAVORTING WITH MAMMON

the ZCMI Center. But will the mere act of replacing old stores with new ones guarantee that people will start spending again? ***You can build an expensive new mausoleum on top of an old cemetery, but all you really end up with is a shiny new graveyard....***

"[In the video footage, a] lot of folks have turned out for this grand opening, and they seem to be having a pleasant enough time strolling the walkways. But very few of these people appear to be buying anything. ***If City Creek Center is going to revitalize downtown, a lot of people are going to have to start spending a lot of money there, and quick. Otherwise those shops will be leaving, too.***

Far from Our Finest Moment

"The number of Very Important Persons participating in the ribbon cutting at City Creek Center was impressive by any standard. How often do you see both the mayor and the governor of a state turn out for a mall opening? Clearly this was a very big deal. In addition to President Monson, both his counselors, Henry Eyring and Dieter Uchtdorf, were on hand. That's the entire First Presidency of the Church, taking precious time away from their urgent ecclesiastical duties to take part in the kind of stunt normally handled by some guy from the local chamber of commerce and the first runner-up to Miss Provo. [Ed. Note: recall that the Presiding Bishop was there as well.]

"Watching the man we latter-day Saints sustain as a living prophet reduced to the role of a cheap mall huckster is disconcerting, to say the least. ***I try to imagine Abinadi standing there in Monson's place as the countdown begins: "one, two, three... Let's Go Shopping!" and the picture just won't form. As a church and as a people, this was not our finest moment.***

"The enthusiasm with which Church representatives touted this project barely disguised the sense of desperation evident as the grand opening date approached. *It's been reported that the entire project was originally budgeted at \$500 million, but quickly became a money pit that is swallowing up billions of dollars at a time when regular tithing receipts have slowed considerably. Many Mormons who previously paid their tithing faithfully each month now find themselves out of work. With the decline of all those jobs also comes a decline in tithing receipts for the Church.*

"That means a lot less money to cover the day-to-day expenses of operating the Church, along with less money to care for our poor at a time when it is needed more than ever. This is an unanticipated squeeze. ***At the same time Church funds were endlessly funneled into a glitzy shopping center, bishops were being advised to persuade needy members to exhaust other available resources before relying on Church assistance.*** [Ed. Note: for example, LDS members in America

(then and now) are asked by bishops to seek financial assistance from family members or apply for government welfare and/or unemployment benefits before requesting financial help from the Church.]

"It looks to me like there is a lot riding on this mall. I think the Brethren bet the farm on this one, and I'm guessing there's a lot of sweating going on in the corporate boardroom at the Church office building. ***You can almost smell the desperation: This thing has GOT to work out. It just HAS to.***

"But I don't see how it can. *Anyone who thinks the Church can ever make good on this "investment" by collecting rents from mall merchants simply has no idea how much a billion dollars actually is, let alone five billion.* ***The Church will never earn that money back. It's gone.***

"Then again, I may be entirely out of line here. It's quite possible that God revealed to the prophet His desire to see a multi-billion dollar mall constructed with Church funds for the sole reason that He was tired of looking down and seeing what an eyesore Salt Lake City had become. If any such revelation is produced, I will humbly stand corrected and forevermore keep silent on this matter.

"But if there was not a revelation, ***it is entirely appropriate for faithful members of the Church of Jesus Christ to expect an explanation as to why those entrusted with the Lord's money made such a foolishly extravagant move without first obtaining authorization from above.***"

Can one genuinely dispute each of Waterman's well-articulated points and concerns and simultaneously not be "darkened in one's mind" (as the Lord defines blind obedience to mortal authority)?

How are we any better than the ancient Israelites, who fretted that Moses was taking too long to converse with God on the mountain, and they coerced Aaron to melt down their gold and create a golden calf idol to "protect" them?

Today's "protective" idols are not gold calves, they are Mammon-based investment instruments. They are the entrusting of one's wealth in the arm-of-flesh's financial systems, in oft-corrupt projects guaranteed to produce a return on investment, in "securing" one's economic future by trusting in fluctuating markets.

Where does the "Church" really stand in relation to the critical demarcation line between serving God and flirting with Mammon? If you take God at His word, uttered directly from His mouth, you *cannot* do both.

CHAPTER NOTES

- 1 Recorded in Mosiah Hancock's Journal, pg. 28
- 2 Source: <http://www.deseretnews.com/article/770568/Tending-the-flock.html?pg=all> ; also refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: Tending the flock - Deseret News
- 3 Source – <http://puremormonism.blogspot.tw/2012/07/bring-ye-all-tithes-into-stores.html>; Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: Alan Rock Waterman - Bring Ye All The Tithes Into The Stores
- 4 Refer to the video file in the supporting material: City Creek Center opens in downtown Salt Lake City – the incident mentioned is shown at the 1:16 mark. Video Source: <http://fox13now.com/2012/03/22/thousands-attend-city-creek-centers-grand-opening/>
- 5 Source – <http://www.deseretnews.com/article/700032512/President-Thomas-S-Monson-dedicates-Zions-Bank-Financial-Center.html>; Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: President Thomas S. Monson dedicates Zions Bank Financial Center - Deseret News
- 6 Refer to the jpg files in the supporting material folder: City Creek Center

Journal Excerpt 12 - December 2008

We are now living in Taiwan and have been blessed beyond measure since getting here. We arrived at the end of July, and the very next day I landed a full-time teaching job at a high school. I don't make as much as I did in the states, but I also don't have to worry about job security anymore. I even squeeze in some part-time hours in the evenings at various cram schools. Compared to the cost of living in the US, the money I earn provides well.

Around the time our son was born last year, everything came crashing down: I was let go from my job, we had to stop paying the mortgage, and the bank that held our note refused to accept a short sale for it. Long, painful story short, we eventually moved back to Utah with whatever belongings we didn't sell or donate. We re-started in a rental home Pleasant Grove. I landed a decent-paying job that was both enjoyable and much less stressful than I've experienced in over a decade of working in I.T. Things were finally looking up.

Exactly one month after moving to there, out of the blue one day [my wife] said, "I think it's time to go to Taiwan." In my mind I was shrieking "What? Now? I've just landed the sweetest job in my life!" But simultaneously, the words which Christ spoke to me in the Orlando Temple's Celestial Room were always there in the back of my mind. I knew we would go to Taiwan eventually. We began making plans to emigrate.

Over the next five months, miracles never ceased. [My wife] all-too-easily landed a highly-coveted work-at-home job taking calls and reservations for JetBlue, allowing her to keep an eye on our infant son. Because she was a JetBlue employee, she qualified for steep discount in shipping costs with FedEx. We were able to complete a mountain of paperwork through the Taiwan embassy smoothly and in a short period of time, able to overnight documents regularly and affordably. Not once did we experience a snag or delay in the process - it was flat-out uncanny. We were also able to afford shipping crucial items that would not fit in our luggage to [my wife's] family in Taiwan. On top of all this, our flight tickets were discounted 75%.

Without all of these discounts, and the lack of issues in processing documents, it would have been impossible for us to relocate as quickly as we did. Few things take [my wife] by surprise, but in all this

she was astounded - as we were sitting in the airport, she remarked, "Someone or something REALLY wants us to go to Taiwan."

And here we are, barely four months later, settled and (for the most part) loving it.

And then everything changed.

On December 5th, after dinner I went to rest on my bed for a half hour, like I regularly do before going to my evening classes. I usually don't sleep, I just lie down and relax. However, on that day, the moment my head hit the pillow I was instantly no longer at home. I was not asleep - I was thrust into a vision of the future. I was near the western coastline of Taiwan, not far from where we lived. My consciousness, my mindset was completely at that place in time in the future - everything was as vivid as actually experiencing the moment of occurrence - I had no concept that I was actually at home resting on my bed at that moment. I instantly became aware of critical events that had transpired within a few weeks prior. I was praying fervently for the well-being of the people of Taiwan.

[Ed. Note: this is all I will disclose of my vision. It is enough to say that it was provided to prepare me for my life's mission.]

The vision closed abruptly, and I suddenly realized that I was lying in my bed. The vision lasted about 20 minutes. I had had a few small, brief visions before in my life, but nothing like this. I spent the next ten minutes sitting there mentally and emotionally reeling from it. I was too flabbergasted, too overwhelmed by what I was shown, to think to myself "Wow! I just had a vision! That was cool!" No, it wasn't cool, it was shocking and considerably unnerving. It may have been miraculous, but it was also emotionally unsettling. I then realized why proving me this information was postponed until now.

Exactly one week later, on the 12th, while I was kneeling and saying my prayers before going to sleep, Jesus Christ once again spoke to me.

"The time has come. You must divorce [your wife]."

My entire soul screamed with panic, flooded with questions: What? Why? How can this be? This MUST be a deception!

"So that you know that this is truly from Me, I give unto you a sign."

[Ed. Note: The sign is too personal to reprint.]

My soul begged for an explanation, but none came. Only the command to divorce my wife, and a sign to verify that it was truly from God.

The next night, the sign came to pass.

I am in agony every day. I spend the entire train ride to and from work weeping and fighting panic. If it were not for the Holy Ghost's constant emotional support while I'm at work, I'd be unable to smile or function at all. What will happen if I go through with this command? I love my wife! I love my children! Their hearts will be irreparably crushed! What am I supposed to tell them?? "God made me do it"?? That's SO INSANE! How am I supposed to explain this?? [My wife] will resolutely conclude that it's all a blasphemous excuse to run off with some Taiwanese girl. EVERYONE will conclude that.

And how do I live afterward? I don't know anyone besides [my wife's] family. Goodness, what a self-righteous bastard they will think I am! I don't have any close friends here. I barely even know my co-workers. On top of that, I barely know any Mandarin at all - I learned Cantonese when I served in Hong Kong. It's the equivalent of a Chinese guy learning Portuguese as a young adult, then emigrating to Italy 15 years later.

I've been begging and pleading for help in my prayers several times a day. Aside from a lot of comfort from the Holy Spirit, I get very little in the way of answers or suggestions. I've begged to postpone doing this for a long time. In response, I've clearly received "This command has already been postponed to the latest possible time. You must leave your wife before the end of the year."

At least I'm allowed to spend one more Christmas with the three people who mean EVERYTHING in the world to me, before wounding them forever.

It'd be A LOT easier to die - even slowly tortured to death - than to go through with this.

DARKNESS AT NOON-DAY

Latter-day Infiltration

If one member becomes corrupt, and you know it, you must immediately put it away, or it will either injure or destroy the whole body.

– Joseph Smith¹

As with the infiltration of the ancient Christian Church, the apostasy of these last days is being enacted by and large through the tactic of infiltration. Most alarming this time, however, is the level of near-perfection in mental/emotional slavery that has been achieved through ritualistic occult trauma combined with an unprecedented level of mind sciences.

Recall the following portions from the conversation that Brother Marion Law had with the “Melbourne Man”, quoted from Part 4 – The True Face Of Communism / Socialism:

“[O]ver and over, he said, “Wait and see. You will live to see our perfect plan in full operation. When we control all the conditioning processes, everything will fall neatly into place”....

“He said they controlled all major conditioning instruments in America now: the entertainment industry, the news media, the education system, the courts, the financial system, political parties. **Where they don’t have full control, they have infiltrated and have embedded their agents into all important decision-making bodies.** He said **they control every agency that affects daily living in America.** Their agents were

everywhere, doing their jobs....

"He said, 'We control all the churches except The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints.... We have them in our control... We know all about your church. ***We control every church in the world, except yours, and we will infiltrate that.... When we have political and economic control of the world, we will then be able to establish our total spiritual program.***'

Additionally, there is a portion of Cathy O'Brien's book *Trance Formation of America* that reinforces the scope of all this.² Cathy spent much of her late teen and young adult life being legally married to one of her mind-control handlers, Wayne Cox, a performer in a country western band headed by Jack Greene – both of whom were deeply involved in the occult, and both of whom were connected to West Virginia U.S. Senator Robert C. Byrd and Louisiana's U.S. Senator J. Bennett Johnson. This is what she testifies in her book (underlined emphasis original, other emphasis added):

"I had been programmed at [a satanic blood/rape] ritual to move to Nashville and marry Cox, as ordered by Senator Byrd. Back in Michigan, I made the announcement to my parents that I was moving to Nashville to marry Cox, as it was "predestination". What they would not tell me was that my father had just literally sold me to Senator Byrd in exchange for lucrative military contracts that made him a millionaire overnight—a millionaire on a sixth grade education—a perverse, child exploiting criminal, immune from prosecution....

"[Wayne] Cox had a variety of belief systems that he applied to various situations, all of which were superstition based. He believed in spirit communication or "divine guidance" through nature spirits and demons, that Satan must be appeased, that Jesus is an alien, that the Bermuda Triangle is a door to another dimension, and that the end of the world is near. He 'religiously' carried a Bible with him everywhere – including to occult rituals – quoting scripture like a theologian. He justified "eating the body and drinking the blood," "being washed in the blood," and even "murdering children" according to the story of God testing Abraham by ordering him to murder his son, Isaac, by knife on an altar. Jim Jones³ was one of Cox's idols, as was Charlie Manson⁴, and he touted the Jonestown massacre as a prime example of the "power of (CIA) mind control".

"[Though I was raised Catholic,] ***Cox demanded I become a Mormon in the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints.*** This was to "prove" that Satan was everywhere – particularly in the Monroe, Louisiana Mormon [ward] where he led occult ritual, and in the Hendersonville, Tennessee [ward]...."

The admonition to beware of "wolves in sheep's clothing," both in the scriptures and by some of the LDS General Authorities, has been blissfully ignored by the modern LDS membership.

DARKNESS AT NOON-DAY

During his April 1969 General Conference talk, then-Apostle Ezra Taft Benson made it clear that the Church is being deliberately infiltrated today as it was in ancient times (emphasis added):⁵

"Yes, within the Church today there are tares among the wheat and wolves within the flock. As President [J. Reuben] Clark stated, "The ravening wolves are amongst us, from our own membership, and *they, more than any others, are clothed in sheep's clothing because they wear the habiliments of the priesthood....* We should be careful of them...."⁶ The wolves amongst our flock are more numerous and devious today than when President Clark made this statement [in 1949]."

Having thoroughly covered the reality of mind control, Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA), occult mind sciences and conditioning, hypnotism, behavior manipulation, and widespread infiltration, it is time for the reader to take in the contents and ponder the ramifications of Glenn L. Pace's internal Church memo, dated July 19th, 1990. Brother Pace was the Second Counselor of the Presiding Bishopric at the time, and was tasked to investigate instances of ritualistic child abuse within the membership of the Church.

This internal memo was leaked to the press around the time it was being circulated within the Church's leadership. It is presented here word-for-word verbatim without emphasis. However, I provide sub-headings throughout, and interject with occasional commentary. A PDF and scanned images of the original 12-page document are provided in the supporting material.⁷

M E M O R A N D U M

Date: July 19, 1990

To: Strengthening Church Members Committee

From: Bishop Glenn L. Pace

Subject: Ritualistic Child Abuse

"Pursuant to the Committee's request, I am writing this memorandum to pass along what I have learned about ritualistic child abuse. Hopefully, it will be of some value to you as you continue to monitor the problem. You have already received the LDS Social Services report on satanism dated May 24, 1989, a report from Brent Ward, and a memorandum from myself dated October 20, 1989 in response to Brother Ward's report. Therefore, I will limit this writing to information not contained in those papers.

Conviction of the Seriousness of the Problem

"I have met with sixty victims. That number could be twice or three times as many if I did not discipline myself to only one meeting per week. I have not wanted my involvement with this issue to become a handicap in fulfilling my assigned responsibilities. On the other hand, I felt someone needed to pay the price to obtain an intellectual and spiritual conviction as to the seriousness of this problem within the Church.

"Of the sixty victims with whom I have met, fifty-three are female and seven are male. Eight are children. The abuse occurred in the following places: Utah (37), Idaho (3), California (4), Mexico (2), and other places (14). Fifty-three victims are currently living in the State of Utah. All sixty individuals are members of the Church. Forty-five victims allege witnessing and/or participating in human sacrifice. The majority were abused by relatives, often their parents. All have developed psychological problems and most have been diagnosed as having multiple personality disorder or some other form of dissociative disorder.

Ritualistic Abuse Basics and Agenda

"Ritualistic child abuse is the most hideous of all child abuse. The basic objective is premeditated – to systematically and methodically torture and terrorize children until they are forced to dissociate. The torture is not a consequence of the loss of temper, but the execution of well-planned, well-thought out rituals often performed by close relatives. The only escape for the children is to dissociate. They will develop a new personality to enable them to endure various forms of abuse. When the episode is over, the core personality is again in control and the individual is not conscious of what happened. Dissociation also serves the purposes of the occult because the children have no day-to-day memory of the atrocities. They go through adolescence and early adulthood with no active memory of what is taking place. Oftentimes they continue in rituals through their teens and early twenties, unaware of their involvement. Many individuals with whom I have spoken have served missions and it has not been until later that they begin to remember. One individual has memories of participating in rituals while serving as a full-time missionary.

"The victims lead relatively normal lives, but the memories are locked up in a compartment in their minds and surface in various ways. They don't know how to cope with the emotions because they can't find the source. As they become adults and move into another environment, something triggers the memories and, consequently, flashbacks and/or nightmares occur. One day they will have been living a normal life and the next they will be in a mental hospital in a fetal position. The memories of their early childhood are recalled in so much detail that they once again feel the pain that caused the dissociation in the first place.

"There are two reasons why adults can remember with such detail events

DARKNESS AT NOON-DAY

that happened in their past: First, the terror they experienced was so stark that it was indelibly placed in their mind. Second, the memory was compartmentalized in a certain portion of the mind and was not subjected to the dilution of experiences of ensuing years. When it is tapped, it is as fresh as if it happened yesterday.

"The memories seem to come in layers. For example, the first memory might be of incest; then they remember robes and candles; next they realize that their father or mother or both were present when they were being abused. Another layer will be the memory of seeing other people hurt and even killed. Then they remember having seen babies killed. Another layer is realizing that they participated in the sacrifices. One of the most painful memories may be that they even sacrificed their own baby. With each layer of memory comes another set of problems with which they must deal.

"Some have said that the witnesses to this type of treatment cannot be trusted because of the victim's unstable condition and because practically all of them have some kind of dissociative disorder; in fact, the stories are so bizarre as to raise serious credibility questions. The irony is that one of the objectives of the occult is to create multiple personalities within the children in order to keep the "secrets." They live in society without society having any idea that something is wrong since the children and teenagers don't even realize there is another life occurring in darkness and in secret. However, when sixty witnesses testify to the same type of torture and murder, it becomes impossible for me, personally, not to believe them.

"I mention multiple personalities because the spiritual healing which must take place in the lives of these victims cannot happen without their priesthood leaders understanding something about it.

Details of Torment, Indoctrination, and Ingrained Despair

"The spiritual indoctrination which takes place during the physical abuse is one of the most difficult to overcome. In addition to experiencing stark terror and pain, the children are also instructed in satanic doctrine. Everything is completely reversed: white is black, black is white, good is bad, bad is good, Satan is going to rule during the Millennium.

"Children are put in a situation where they believe they are going to die – such as being buried alive or being placed in a plastic bag and immersed in water. Prior to doing so, the abuser tells the child to pray to Jesus to see if He will save her. Imagine a seven year old girl, having been told she is going to die, praying to Jesus to save her and nothing happens – then at the last moment she is rescued, but the person saving her is a representative of Satan. He uses this experience to convince her that the only person who really cares about her is Satan, she is Satan's child and she might as well become loyal to him.

"Just before or shortly after their baptism into the Church, children are baptized by blood into the satanic order which is meant to cancel out their baptism into the Church. They will be asked if they understand or have ever felt the Holy Ghost. When they reply that they have, they will be reminded of the horrible things they have participated in and will be told that they have become a son (or daughter) of perdition and, therefore, have no chance of being saved or loved by our Father in heaven or Jesus.

"All of this indoctrination takes place with whichever personality has immersed [sic] to endure the physical, mental, and spiritual pain. Consequently, there develops within each of these individuals the makings of what I call a civil war. As the memories begin to surface, there are personalities who feel they have given themselves to Satan, and there is no hope for forgiveness. The core person is an active member of the Church, often with a temple recommend. As integration takes place, the civil war begins. Sometimes, in an interview, personalities of the dark side have come out. They are petrified or perhaps full of hate for me and what I represent. Eventually those personalities need to be dealt with spiritually and psychologically.

"Most victims are suicidal. They have been brainwashed with drugs, hypnosis, and other means to become suicidal as soon as they start to tell the secrets. They have been threatened all of their lives that if they don't do what they are told their brother or sister will die, their parents will die, their house will be burned, or they themselves will be killed. They have every reason to believe it since they have seen people killed. They believe they might as well kill themselves instead of wait for the occult to do it. Some personalities feel it is the right thing to do."

Church Leaders Naive, Clueless, Make the Problem Worse

"The purpose of this detail is to stress the complexity of psychological and spiritual therapy for these individuals. Our priesthood leaders, when faced with such cases, are understandably at a loss of how to respond. Orthodox counsel is completely ineffective. For example, some victims have been told that this all happened in their past and that they should put it behind them and get on with their lives. This is just not possible. Part of the spiritual therapy necessary is for priesthood leaders to assist with the conversion process of the personalities who have been indoctrinated into satanism. Victims must integrate their personalities so that they can function as whole persons and be able to deal with their problems and then get on with their lives. Often, some of the parts will begin to act out – perhaps promiscuously – and a good intentioned priesthood leader, following the General Handbook of Instructions, will disfellowship or excommunicate an individual. All this does is reinforce the satanic indoctrination of the victims that they are no good.

Ordinances Twisted in SRA, Perpetrators Living Dual Life

"I'm sorry to say that many of the victims have had their first flashbacks while attending the temple for the first time. The occult along the Wasatch Front uses the doctrine of the Church to their advantage. For example, the verbiage and gestures are used in a ritualistic ceremony in a very debased and often bloody manner. When the victim goes to the temple and hears the exact words, horrible memories are triggered. We have recently been disturbed with members of the Church who have talked about the temple ceremony. Compared to what is happening in the occult along the Wasatch Front, these are very minor infractions. The perpetrators are also living a dual life. Many are temple recommend holders. This leads to another reason why the Church needs to consider the seriousness of these problems. In affect, the Church is being used.

Infiltrators Are Everywhere, Even in the Tabernacle Choir

"I go out of my way to not let the victims give me the names of the perpetrators. I have told them that my responsibility is to help them with spiritual healing and that the names of perpetrators should be given to therapists and law enforcement officers. However, they have told me the positions in the Church of members who are perpetrators. Among others, there are Young Women leaders, Young Men leaders, bishops, a patriarch, a stake president, temple workers, and members of the Tabernacle Choir. These accusations are not coming from individuals who think they recognized someone, but from those who have been abused by people they know, in many cases their own family members.

Legal Ramifications are Alarming

"Whatever the form of abuse our main concern is for the victims, but there are legal ramifications. We are disturbed to receive reports that a scoutmaster has abused the boys in his troop. It is not difficult to imagine what would happen if we learn that a bishop or stake president has participated in the abominations of ritualistic child abuse. Not only do some of the perpetrators represent a cross section of the Mormon culture, but sometimes the abuse has taken place in our own meetinghouses.

Problem is Expanding Exponentially

"I don't pretend to know how prevalent the problem is. All I know is that I have met with 60 victims. Assuming each one comes from a covenant of 13, we are talking about the involvement of 800 or so right here on the Wasatch Front. Obviously, I have only seen those coming forth to get help. They are in their twenties and thirties for the most part. I can only assume that it is expanding geometrically and am horrified the numbers

represented by the generation who are now children and teenagers.

Pressing Doctrinal Questions Go Painfully Unanswered

"Another reason for concern is that there are several doctrinal issues that need to be resolved. The Church and society in general are very skeptical as to whether the occult and its activities do exist. There is no First Presidency statement relative to some of the doctrinal issues: What does a priesthood leader tell individuals who come forward and say that they have participated in these rituals – which may include human sacrifice? Should they have a temple recommend? Will they ever be forgiven? There are questions regarding free agency and accountability. Is a person who has been raised in an occult from infancy accountable for things that take place in a dissociated state, even though those acts were committed after the age of eight? I have formed my own opinions to these questions and have done the best I can. However, I don't have the mantle to make these doctrinal and policy decisions. I have relied on the mantle of a bishop regarding discernment and being a common judge.

"The few priesthood leaders who have had to face these issues are crying out for help because they don't want to give their own opinions and yet there is no place to go for an answer. A bishop will go to his stake president who says he doesn't believe it is happening and that the member is just crazy. The stake president might go to an Area Presidency who will react in a similar way. Most people are afraid to surface it to the First Presidency for fear of getting the same reaction and don't want to appear crazy themselves for asking the question.

Scriptures Repeatedly Testify How Real All This Is

"I hope you will excuse me if I am being presumptuous, but I am concluding this paper with scriptures I feel support my belief that these activities are real and cannot be ignored.

"The things I have been writing about go back to Cain and Abel:

"And Satan said unto Cain: Swear unto me by thy throat, and if thou tell it thou shalt die; and swear thy brethren by their heads, and by the living God, that they tell it not; for if they tell it, they shall surely die; and this that thy father may not know it; and this day I will deliver thy brother Abel into thine hands.

"And Satan sware unto Cain that he would do according to his commands. And all these things were done in secret.

"And Cain said: Truly I am Mahan, the master of this great secret, that I may murder and get gain. Wherefore Cain was called Master Mahan, and he gloried in his wickedness. (Moses 5:29-31.)"

DARKNESS AT NOON-DAY

"All of the experiences I have heard about have to do with secrecy, swearing not to tell, murdering to get gain and power:

"Wherefore Lamech, being angry, slew him, not like unto Cain, his brother Abel, for the sake of getting gain, but he slew him for the oath's sake.

"For, from the days of Cain, there was a secret combination, and their works were in the dark, and they knew every man his brother." (Moses 5:50-51.)

"And then in Moses 6:15 we learn that as people began to fill the earth, so did these secret works:

"And the children of men were numerous upon all the face of the land. And in those days Satan had great dominion among men, and raged in their hearts; and from thenceforth came wars and bloodshed; and a man's hand was against his own brother, in administering death, because of secret works, seeking for power."

"The Book of Mormon is replete with descriptions of these secret murderous combinations as well as prophecies that they will always be with us:

"And our spirits must have become like unto him, and we become devils, angels to a devil, to be shut out from the presence of our God, and to remain with the father of lies, in misery, like unto himself; yea, to that being who beguiled out first parents, who transformeth himself nigh unto an angel of light, and stirreth up the children of men unto secret combinations of murder and all manner of secret works of darkness. (2 Nephi 9:9.)

"Wherefore, for this cause, that my covenants may be fulfilled which I have made unto the children of men, that I will do unto them while they are in the flesh, I must needs destroy the secret works of darkness, and of murders, and of abominations. (2 Nephi 10:15.)

"And there are also secret combinations, even as in times of old, according to the combinations of the devil, for he is the founder of all these things; yea, the founder of murder, and works of darkness; yea, and he leadeth them by the neck with a flaxen cord, until he bindeth them with his strong cords forever." (2 Nephi 26:22.)

"In Alma, we find that the Lord commanded some of the prophets not to write any of the secret works, especially of the secret oaths, so that they would not become known by generations to follow, but that they might be warned that they do exist:

"And now, I will speak unto you concerning those twenty-four plates, that ye keep them, that the mysteries and the works of darkness, and their secret works, or the secret works of those people who have

been destroyed, may be made manifest unto this people; yea, all their murders, and robbings, and their plunderings, and all their wickedness and abominations, may be made manifest unto this people; yea, and that ye preserve these interpreters....

"I will bring forth out of darkness unto light all their secret works and their abominations; and except they repent I will destroy them from off the face of the earth; and I will bring to light all their secrets and abominations, unto every nation that shall hereafter possess the land.

"And now, my son, we see that they did not repent; therefore they have been destroyed, and thus far the word of God has been fulfilled; yea, their secret abominations have been brought out of darkness and made known unto us.

"And now, my son, I command you that ye retain all their oaths,, and their covenants, and their agreements in their secret abominations; yea, and all their signs and their wonders ye shall keep from this people, that they know them not, lest peradventure they should fall into darkness also and be destroyed.

"For behold, there is a curse upon all this land, that destruction shall come upon all those workers of darkness, according to the power of God, when they are fully ripe; therefore I desire that this people might be destroyed." (Alma 37:21, 25-28.)

"In Helaman, the name of Gadianton is introduced and becomes descriptive throughout the Book of Mormon relative to the secret combinations.

"But behold, Kishkumen, who had murdered Pahoran, did lay wait to destroy Helaman also; and he was upheld by his band, who had entered into a covenant that no one should know his wickedness.

"For there was one Gadianton, who was exceedingly expert in many words, and also in his craft, to carry on the secret work of murder and of robbery; therefore he became the leader of the band of Kishkumen....

"And when the servant of Helaman had known all the heart of Kishkumen, and how that it was his object to murder, and also that it was the object of all those who belonged to his band to murder, and to rob, and to gain power, (and this was their secret plan, and their combination) the servant of Helaman said unto Kishkumen: Let us go forth unto the judgment-seat." (Helaman 2:3-4, 8.)

"It was true then as it is now that these things were not known by the general populace or by the government:

"And it came to pass in the forty and ninth year of the reign of the judges, there was continual peace established in the land, all save it

were the secret combinations which Gadianton the robber had established in the more settled parts of the land, which at that time were not known unto those who were at the head of government; therefore they were not destroyed out of the land." (Helaman 3:23.)

"In chapter 6, we learn that in spite of the Lord's command to the prophets not to write these things, Satan is capable, and always has been, of revealing his secrets to his followers just as the Lord has revealed His will to the prophets.

"And now behold, those murderers and plunderers were a band who had been formed by Kishkumen and Gadianton. And now it had come to pass that there were many, even among the Nephites, of Gadianton's band. But behold, they were more numerous among the more wicked part of the Lamanites. And they were called Gadianton's robbers and murderers.

"But behold, Satan did stir up the hearts of the more part of the Nephites, insomuch that they did unite with those bands of robbers, and did enter into their covenants and their oaths, that they would protect and preserve one another in whatsoever difficult circumstances they should be placed, that they should not suffer for their murders, and their plunderings, and their stealings.

"And it came to pass that they did have their signs, yea, their secret signs, and their secret words; and this that they might distinguish a brother who had entered into the covenant, that whatsoever wickedness his brother should do he should not be injured by his brother, nor by those who did belong to his band, who had taken this covenant.

"And thus they might murder and plunder, and steal, and commit whoredoms and all manner of wickedness, contrary to the laws of their country and also the laws of their God.

"And whosoever of those who belonged to their band should reveal unto the world of their wickedness and their abominations, should be tried, not according to the laws of their country, but according to the laws of their wickedness, which had been given by Gadianton and Kishkumen.

"Now behold, it is these secret oaths and covenants which Alma commanded his son should not go forth unto the world, lest they should be a means of bringing down the people unto destruction.

"Now behold, those secret oaths and covenants did not come forth unto Gadianton from the records which were delivered unto Helaman; but behold, they were put into the heart of Gadianton by that same being who did entice our first parents to partake of the forbidden fruit....

"Yea, it is that same being who put it into the heart of Gadianton to still carry on the work of darkness, and of secret murder; and he has brought it forth from the beginning of man even down to this time.

"And behold, it is he who is the author of all sin. And behold, he doth carry on his works of darkness and secret murder, and doth hand down their plots, and their oaths, and their covenants, and their plans of awful wickedness, from generation to generation according as he can get hold upon the hearts of the children of men." (Helaman 6:18, 21-26, 29-30.)

"In light of this scripture, it is naive for us to think these things would not exist in our own generation. We know this is the last dispensation, the dispensation of the fulness of times. Surely Satan would not "pass" on this most important dispensation.

Infiltration in Church and Government, Anciently and Now

"In Helaman 8:1 we learn that people in high places were members of the Gadianton band and secret combinations:

"And now it came to pass that when Nephi had said these words, behold, there were men who were judges, who also belonged to the secret band of Gadianton, and they were angry, and they cried out against him, saying unto the people: Why do ye not seize upon this man and bring him forth, that he may be condemned according to the crime which he has done?"

"We have allegations to indicate that this is true of people in high places today in both the Church and the government who are leading this dual life. The secret combinations were mentioned all through the Book of Mormon. In Mormon 1:18-19 we read that these Gadianton robbers were still alive and well and functioning:

"And these Gadianton robbers, who were among the Lamanites, did infest the land, insomuch that the inhabitants thereof began to hide up their treasures in the earth; and they became slippery, because the Lord had cursed the land, that they could not hold them, nor retain them again.

"And it came to pass that there were sorceries, and witchcrafts, and magics; and the power of the evil one was wrought upon all the face of the land, even unto the fulfilling of all the words of Abinadi, and also Samuel the Lamanite."

"In Mormon 8:27 there is a prophecy that secret combinations will be among us in our time:

"And it shall come in a day when the blood of saints shall cry unto the Lord, because of secret combinations and the works of darkness."

DARKNESS AT NOON-DAY

"The extent of the evil that mankind will perpetrate on another is told in Moroni 9:10:

"And after they had done this thing, they did murder them in a most cruel manner, torturing their bodies even unto death; and after they have done this, they devour their flesh like unto wild beasts, because of the hardness of their hearts; and they do it for a token of bravery."

We Have Been Sternly Warned to Do Something About It

"Many of us have read this all of our lives and click our tongues at how awful it would be to live in such a time. Those victims with whom I have spoken testify to these things going on all around us today. In Ether we are told that they will exist amongst us, the gentiles, and we are also warned that we should do something about it:

"And now I, Moroni, do not write the manner of their oaths and combinations, for it hath been made known unto me that they are had among all people, and they are had among the Lamanites.

"And they have caused the destruction of this people of whom I am now speaking, and also the destruction of the people of Nephi.

"And whatsoever nation shall uphold such secret combinations, to get power and gain, until they shall spread over the nation, behold, they shall be destroyed; for the Lord will not suffer that the blood of his saints, which shall be shed by them, shall always cry unto him from the ground for vengeance upon them and yet he avenge them not.

"Wherefore, O ye Gentiles, it is wisdom in God that these things should be shown unto you, that thereby ye may repent of your sins, and suffer not that these murderous combinations shall get above you, which are built up to get power and gain – and the work, yea, even the work of destruction come upon you, yea, even the sword of the justice of the Eternal God shall fall upon you, to your overthrow and destruction if ye shall suffer these things to be.

"Wherefore, the Lord commandeth you, when ye shall see these things come among you that ye shall awake to a sense of your awful situation, because of this secret combination which shall be among you; or wo be unto it, because of the blood of them who have been slain; for they cry from the dust for vengeance upon it, and also upon those who built it up." (Ether 8:20-24.)

"In summary, we live in the last dispensation of the fulness of times and Satan is here with his secret combinations in all of the ugliness that existed in previous dispensations. The scriptures prophesy to that reality. I also believe that the scriptures cited and many others that could be quoted argue against our being passive about the problem. I don't want to be

known as an alarmist or a fanatic on the issue. Now that I have put what I have learned in writing to you, I feel the issue is in the right court. I hope to take a low profile on the subject and get on with the duties which I have been formally assigned. This is not to say I would not be willing to be of service. Over the last eighteen months I have acquired a compassionate love and respect for the victims who are fighting for the safety of their physical lives and, more importantly, their souls.”

Perhaps the reader was inclined to conclude that the testimonies of Sue Ford and Cathy O’ Brien (covered in Part 5) were merely outrageous, fraudulent libel. After reading Brother Pace’s investigative findings of the level of satanic ritual abuse that has permeated throughout the LDS Church in Utah, Arizona, California, and elsewhere, I challenge the reader to reconsider if they have cast any disparaging judgment of what Sue and Cathy testify of.

Consider what Brother Pace details in his report:

- “I have met with sixty victims. That number could be twice or three times as many if I did not discipline myself to only one meeting per week. I have not wanted my involvement with this issue to become a handicap in fulfilling my assigned responsibilities. On the other hand, I felt someone needed to pay the price to obtain an intellectual and spiritual conviction as to the seriousness of this problem within the Church.”

To his credit, Bishop Pace investigated this issue with an open mind and thereby ascertained “the seriousness of this problem within the Church.” He met with 60 victims personally face-to-face. He admits that there are far more victims out there, and that they were willing to meet with him, and that they desperately wish to let their voices be heard on this matter. To his discredit, he did not further prioritize this issue after comprehending the reality and weight of it; instead, he limited his involvement with it so that he could “fulfill [his other] assigned responsibilities.”

- “The basic objective is premeditated – to systematically and methodically torture and terrorize children until they are forced to dissociate. The torture is... the execution of well-planned, well-thought out rituals often performed by close relatives.... Dissociation also serves the purposes of the occult because the children have no day-to-day memory of the atrocities. They go through adolescence and early adulthood with no active memory of what is taking place.... The victims lead relatively normal lives, but the memories are locked up in a compartment in their minds and surface in various ways.”

DARKNESS AT NOON-DAY

This is precisely what both Sue Ford and Cathy O' Brien testify what happened to them, yet their cases were even worse, especially due to the added technological-based torture treatments they each received.

- "Our priesthood leaders, when faced with such cases, are understandably at a loss of how to respond. **Orthodox counsel is completely ineffective.** For example, some victims have been told that this all happened in their past and that they should put it behind them and get on with their lives. This is just not possible.... *Victims must integrate their personalities so that they can function as whole persons* and be able to deal with their problems and then get on with their lives. Often, some of the parts will begin to act out – perhaps promiscuously – and a good intentioned priesthood leader, following the General Handbook of Instructions, will disfellowship or excommunicate an individual. **All this does is reinforce the satanic indoctrination of the victims that they are no good.**"

The Church's established code of orthodoxy and correlation efforts have ended up playing to the advantage of secret societies and "wolves in sheep's clothing" infiltrators. Indeed, aside from this effort to investigate the matter this *one* time, the Church has all but gone completely silent regarding secret societies, satanic cults, Luciferian mystery schools, and any other unpleasant realities. *Indeed, the glaring silence on the matter encourages a state of blissful denial that such things could even occur today.*

- "The Church and society in general are very skeptical as to whether the occult and its activities do exist. There is no First Presidency statement relative to some of the doctrinal issues.... There are questions regarding free agency and accountability. Is a person who has been raised in an occult from infancy accountable for things that take place in a dissociated state, even though those acts were committed after the age of eight?.... *The few priesthood leaders who have had to face these issues are crying out for help because they don't want to give their own opinions and yet there is no place to go for an answer.* A bishop will go to his stake president who says he doesn't believe it is happening and that the member is just crazy. The stake president might go to an Area Presidency who will react in a similar way. **Most people are afraid to surface it to the First Presidency for fear of getting the same reaction and don't want to appear crazy themselves for asking the question.**"

The issue of wolves in sheep's clothing has gone completely unheeded, and even disbelieved, *by all layers involved.* It's a very sorry state of affairs when those who are charged with responsibility are "afraid" to bring up such a supremely important matter to the First Presidency.

Chew on that again: “lower” leaders are *afraid* to discuss something disturbing with the First Presidency! *Afraid!*

- “We have recently been disturbed with members of the Church who have talked about the temple ceremony. *Compared to what is happening in the occult along the Wasatch Front, these are very minor infractions.* The perpetrators are also living a dual life. Many are temple recommend holders. This leads to another reason why ***the Church needs to consider the seriousness of these problems. In affect, the Church is being used.***”

Has the leadership of the Church been misdirecting its energy in who they focus on routing out and excommunicating? Bishop Pace's report strongly suggests that this is the case. It is mostly “black-wooled” sheep (i.e. Church members who are outspokenly critical of certain aspects of leadership or management, but who are not “wolves” at all) who have been the focus of Church discipline and excommunication efforts, especially during the 1980's and 90's. Meanwhile, the most viscous of actual wolves in sheep's clothing (i.e. sweet-demeanored, affable, “make no waves” clandestine imposters) have gone completely unsought-for, undetected, and unhindered in their infiltration and seeping influence to this very day.

- “I don't pretend to know how prevalent the problem is. All I know is that I have met with 60 victims. Assuming each one comes from a coven of 13, we are talking about the involvement of 800 or so right here on the Wasatch Front. Obviously, *I have only seen those coming forth to get help.* They are in their twenties and thirties for the most part. ***I can only assume that it is expanding geometrically and am horrified the numbers represented by the generation who are now children and teenagers.***”

Until 1990, nothing save Bishop Pace's and other related investigation at the time was done. Twenty-two years later, nothing has been done to follow up on his findings. No effort has been made to further discover, rout-out, nor remedy this infestation and crisis of abuse. Nothing.

- “[Victims] have told me the positions in the Church of members who are perpetrators. Among others, there are Young Women leaders, Young Men leaders, bishops, a patriarch, a stake president, temple workers, and members of the Tabernacle Choir. These accusations are not coming from individuals who think they recognized someone, but from those who have been abused by people they know, *in many cases their own family members....* We are disturbed to receive reports that a scoutmaster has abused the boys in his troop.... Not only do some of the perpetrators represent a cross section of the Mormon culture, but *sometimes the abuse has taken place in our own*

meetinghouses."

Precisely as J. Reuben Clark warned in 1949: "The ravening wolves are amongst us, from our own membership, and *they, more than any others, are clothed in sheep's clothing because they wear the habiliments of the priesthood.*" Ezra Taft Benson emphasized twenty years later, "*The wolves amongst our flock are more numerous and devious today.*"

It has been 42 years since then. Why have there been no efforts to weed them out and eradicate them? Why have there been no further warnings by the leadership of the Church concerning them? *Surely they must be greatly emboldened by the complete lack of effort made to detect them, and their numbers must have increased to a formidable number by now.*

- "The extent of the evil that mankind will perpetrate on another is told in Moroni 9:10... Many of us have read [these horrible descriptions] all of our lives and click our tongues at how awful it would be to live in such a time. ***Those victims with whom I have spoken testify to these things going on all around us today.*** In Ether we are told that they will exist amongst us, the gentiles, and *we are also warned that we should do something about it.*"

Again, what has been done? Nothing.

- "Satan is here with his secret combinations in all of the ugliness that existed in previous dispensations. The scriptures prophesy to that reality. I also believe that *the scriptures [which I] cited and many others that could be quoted argue against our being passive about the problem.*"

Once again, what has been done? Nothing.

- "I don't want to be known as an alarmist or a fanatic on the issue."

Unfortunately, with the issue being as serious and as grave as it is – with increasing numbers of real victims, enduring ineffable torture throughout their lives, most beginning in infancy – it is lamentable that he is the least bit concerned about others' perception of him should he venture to champion the cause. *This attitude – this trepidation of being outspokenly passionate about an issue – is precisely what emboldens the infiltrators. It perpetuates their success.*

- "Now that I have put what I have learned in writing to you, I feel the issue is in the right court. I hope to take a low profile on the subject and get on with the duties which I have been formally assigned."

In other words: "Let me take care of other, less emotionally-weighty and painful matters. Assign someone else to champion this issue. I'm tired of

handling this hot potato, and I'm eager to get back to benign matters of lesser importance."

Who championed this issue after Bishop Pace? No one.

Instead, the matter was placed in the hands of the thoroughly-infiltrated Utah state government, which predictably dropped the ball and never validated the many near-identical allegations of numerous, unconnected individuals who, against all instincts of safety and self-preservation, came forth as whistleblowing victims:

"In 1991, the Utah State Legislature appropriated \$250,000 for the Attorney General's office to investigate the ritual abuse allegations in the state of Utah. Over a two and one half year span the investigators interviewed hundreds of alleged victims, but none of the incidents reported were corroborated with any evidence beyond their testimony and the 1995 report stated that there was no evidence from any of the alleged victims that would warrant an investigation of homicide. Mike King, the coauthor of the report, told news media that the specific accusations against church leaders were "absurd", and Jerry Lazar, the head of psychiatry at LDS Hospital in Salt Lake City, said he "has never been able to independently verify memories of satanic ritual abuse".⁸

These same kinds of flippant dismissals and deliberate non-findings of so many victims' testimonies by infiltrated government personnel and compromised media outlets were echoed throughout other allegations of occult activities in the mid-to-late 80's, especially occurring in places where the victims were most vulnerable – such as in day care centers⁹ and establishments for children without sufficient parental or guardian supervision. In Nebraska during this time, the media's response to allegations of pedophile rings operating through Omaha's lauded Boys Town establishment was to immediately discredit the victims long before their claims could be sufficiently investigated. Headline after headline repeatedly exonerated those accused while the cases were still open. The events, testimonies and evidences surrounding this case are documented in John DeCamp's *The Franklin Coverup* and other books.

When it comes to any level of conspiracy: where there's smoke, there's mirrors. What I mean by this is whenever conspiratorial atrocities occur (i.e. a fire), and outsiders get wind of rumors/accusations by victims and begin to investigate (i.e. can see/smell dissipating smoke from that fire), the conspirators – even those who were in no way involved with the alleged crimes, but who have "enter[ed] into [a] covenant... that they would protect and preserve one another in whatsoever difficult circumstances they should be placed, that they should not suffer for their murders, and their plunderings, and their stealings"¹⁰ – ardently come to the defense of the perpetrators, actively work towards swaying public opinion against the

DARKNESS AT NOON-DAY

testifiers, subvert or misdirect investigations into the claims, hide or contaminate legitimate evidence, and/or fabricate false evidence in order to discredit the victims (i.e. apply mirrors to divert the view away from the smoke until it has fully dissipated and the smell cleansed).

The final thing I wish to emphasize from Elder Pace's report:

- "It was true [in Book of Mormon times] as it is now that these things were not known by the general populace or by the government.... In Helaman 8:1 we learn that people in high places were members of the Gadianton band and secret combinations.... *We have allegations to indicate that this is true of people **in high places today in both the Church and the government** who are leading this dual life.*"

Infiltrators in high places of the government – and *high places within the Church*.

By Their Secret Signs Shall Ye Know Them

And it came to pass that they did have their signs, yea, their secret signs, and their secret words; and this that they might distinguish a brother who had entered into the covenant, that whatsoever wickedness his brother should do he should not be injured by his brother, nor by those who did belong to his band, who had taken this covenant.

– Mormon¹¹

The following images are presented to establish what a common, innocuous handshake looks like. A standard handshake, as depicted in the following six images, shares these commonalities:

1. The thumb rests upon the back of the other hand, significantly away from the knuckles.
2. The four fingers are visible, curling up the underside of the other hand.
3. Inside the handshake both palms meet, forming something of a concaved enclosure between the palms.

As one takes in the subsequent photos, refer back to these images for comparison.



Handshake Reference 1



Handshake Reference 2



Handshake Reference 3



Handshake Reference 4



Handshake Reference 5




Handshake Reference 6

DARKNESS AT NOON-DAY


Contrast those handshakes to the following images, which are handshakes/grips that are received during the Masonic initiations of the Blue Lodge – the first, second, and third degrees of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry. An initiate of the first degree is referred to as an Entered Apprentice, the second degree as a Fellow Craft, and the third degree as a Master Mason.

THE BOAZ
THE GRIP OF AN ENTERED APPRENTICE




The Grip of the Entered Apprentice is made by pressing the thumb against the top of the first knuckle-joint of the fellow Mason; the fellow Mason also presses his thumb against the first Mason's knuckle.

THE SHIBBOLETH
PASS GRIP OF A FELLOW CRAFT




The hand is taken as in an ordinary handshake, and the Mason presses the top of his thumb against the space between the first and second knuckle joints of the first two fingers of his fellow Mason; the fellow Mason also presses his thumb on the corresponding part of the first Mason's hand.

THE JACHIN
REAL GRIP OF A FELLOW CRAFT




The Mason takes the fellow Mason by the right hand as in an ordinary handshake, and presses the top of his thumb hard on the second knuckle; the fellow Mason presses his thumb against the same knuckle of the first Mason's hand.

THE TUBALCAIN
PASS GRIP OF A MASTER MASON



The Mason places his thumb on the space between the second and third knuckles of the fellow Mason's right hand, while the fellow Mason moves his thumb to the corresponding space on the first Mason's hand. The thumb is pressed hard between the second and third knuckles of the hands.

THE MA-HA-BONE
REAL GRIP OF A MASTER MASON



The Mason firmly grasps the right hand of a fellow Mason. The thumbs of both hands are interlaced. The first Mason presses the tops of his fingers against the wrist of the fellow Mason where it unites with the hand. The fellow Mason at the same time presses his fingers against the corresponding part of the first Mason's hand and the fingers of each are somewhat apart.

These are known (or disclosed) grips from the lowest initiation levels of Freemasonry. Aside from these, there are numerous other undisclosed grips; their meaning and symbolism have not been made publicly available.

Additionally, realize that these basic grips are quite universal among all secret societies. Each secret group has additional grips beyond what is depicted here.

To be wholly fair, it is important to consider the following aspects:

1. Not all benign handshakes happen smoothly – people occasionally give limp-wrist handshakes, weak handshakes, overly-firm handshakes, awkward-position handshakes, or attempt to shake hands around obstacles, etc.
2. The reference handshake photos were taken in optimum lighting conditions at optimum angles.
3. When two people engage in any kind of handshake in public, the chances that a photo captures the details of it clearly is extremely rare – not only because of the lighting conditions, camera angle, and photo-resolution requirements, but also because handshakes last for only a brief moment.

Even taking such things into consideration, every so often a photo is captured where two individuals are clearly engaging in a secret society grip. Also, occasionally, world leaders and VIPs will deliberately exchange a secret grip while numerous photographers surround them. As a kind of “hiding in plain sight,” these individuals sometimes want their grip clearly photographed for a couple of reasons:

1. Non-initiated “common” citizens are not inclined to suspect that the grip has any hidden significance, and probably won't even care. If anything, they'll conclude that it's merely a picture of an awkward handshake and dismiss it.
2. Initiates who have “eyes to see” will immediately notice the grip and will get what's happening. Essentially, the individuals deliberately want a widely-circulated photo of their grip to be clearly noticed by other initiates. The photo is essentially for them.

Having clarified these matters, I present the following images of secret society grips being conducted by prominent VIPs in political, religious and business enterprises. For every image included here there are dozens of similar ones in circulation on the Internet. Unfortunately, most of them are either low-resolution, not taken in optimal conditions, or could be plausibly dismissed as awkward-position handshakes. The following images are from photos which demonstrate deliberate secret grips occurring.

Given all the information thus far presented within these two volumes, I implore the reader to make an objective, critical analysis of these images; I urge you to put aside all personal biases towards the individuals photographed within, as well as towards the institutions or values they represent.

High-Level Infiltration in Government, Business, and Worldwide Ecclesiastical Entities



Former U.S. President Harry Truman with Reverend Billy Graham in 1967. Graham is giving Truman what appears to be the Tubalcain Masonic grip (a.k.a. The Pass Grip of the Master Mason). Truman was an outspokenly proud 33rd Degree Freemason. He wrote the Foreword to the four-volume work *10,000 Famous Freemasons*, included in the supporting material. Billy Graham was identified by Jim Shaw as one of the VIPs that attended Shaw's initiation to the 33rd Degree in the Washington D.C. Masonic Temple, as covered in the chapter *Exoteric Shells, Occult Cores* in Part 3 of Volume I.



Geoffrey Fisher, the Archbishop of Canterbury, with Harry Truman. Truman appears to be extending the Tubalcain Masonic grip. The position of the Archbishop's hand at this angle suggests that he is reciprocating – their palms are not forming a concave enclosure.

DARKNESS AT NOON-DAY



Former Soviet Leader Mikhail Gorbachev with the Crystal Cathedral's Reverend Robert Schuller. They are extending the Tubalcain Masonic grip to each other.



U.S. President Ronald Reagan and Soviet Leader Mikhail Gorbachev meeting together in 1985. At the time the United States and the U.S.S.R. were supposedly enemies, ever teetering on the brink of nuclear war. Yet, these two are extending each other the Tubalcain Masonic grip. *Recall Hegelian dialectics: create a problem or division, manipulate both sides of the conflict, guide the resolution to the desired outcome.*



Pope Benedict XVI and Former British Prime Minister Tony Blair extending the Tubalcain Masonic grip to each other. Date and location of photo unknown.



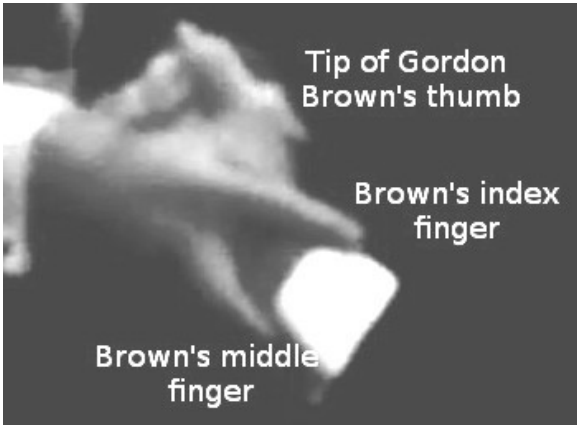
The Reverend Jerry Falwell with Former U.S. President George Herbert Walker Bush (confirmed initiate of Skull and Bones) extending what appears to be the Tubalcain Masonic grip to each other. Date and location of photo unknown.

DARKNESS AT NOON-DAY

The following images demonstrate grips by VIPs in politics and business that are similar (but not identical) to known or otherwise disclosed Masonic grips, or that are similar to sacred tokens which temple-attending LDS members would be familiar with.



Former U.K. Prime Minister Gordon Brown extending an undisclosed grip to an unidentified individual. Brown went out of his way to grip this man's hand. This image was taken from a camera filming a TV screen. The focus is off, but the odd grip is clear enough. This video is included in the supporting material.



A closeup of their hands reveals more details of this grip. The unknown person wraps his hand around Brown's thumb.



Former U.K. Prime Minister Gordon Brown with Former U.S President George W. Bush. In this instance, a grip similar to the one Brown used in the previous image is clearly shown. Bush's hand grips Brown's thumb in the same way as the unknown man in the previous image. Date: June 2008; Location: RAF Aldergrove in Northern Ireland. (The Telegraph, a U.K. newspaper, wrote an article stating that this as a goofed-up, hip-hop-styled handshake initiated by Bush. However, as apparent in the previous images, Brown is not goofing-up anything. This is an esoteric grip.)

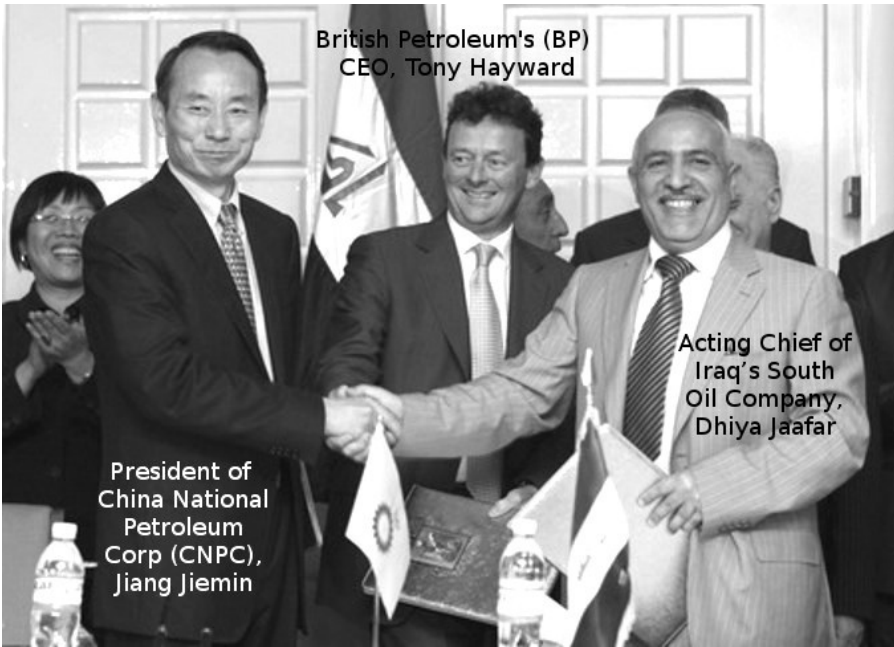


Image description from source article: "Monday, 18 January, 2010 – CNPC President Jiang Jiemin (left), BP's chief executive Tony Hayward (center), and Dhiya Jaafar, acting chief of Iraq's South Oil Company (right) shake hands during the signing ceremony in Baghdad...."



Although somewhat obscured by the BP flag, Jiang's index finger is observably touching Jaafar's wrist (within his sleeve cuff). It is unclear if Jaafar is reciprocating likewise. This is an as-yet undisclosed esoteric grip, very similar to a sacred token received within LDS temples. Hayward's hand cups their grip from underneath.



Paul Ryan and Mitt Romney (former Presidential running mates) during a campaigning event in September 2012.



A closeup of their hands reveals that Ryan's index's finger is firmly placed on Romney's wrist. Romney does not appear to be reciprocating this grip at the moment the photo was taken – the tip of his index finger is slightly viewable aside Ryan's shirt cuff.

Sources of the above images are listed in the endnotes.¹²

High-Level Infiltration within the LDS Church

These next photos ought to be disheartening, even harrowing, for faithful Latter-day Saints to behold – especially for readers who now have “the eyes to see” after taking in all that has been covered in both volumes. As one reflects upon the following images, I implore one to ponder the question: *For how long, and how high, have wolves successfully infiltrated “the Holy Church of God,” as Moroni terms it?*

Before viewing, please understand the following:

These images are faithful reproductions from real photos/video. They have not been tampered with or altered in order to portray handshakes/grips that did not actually occur. One may choose to dismiss this evidence as irrelevant (despite the reality that it's tremendously relevant), but one cannot brush these images off as fraudulent. To dismiss them in this manner is willfully placing oneself in a state of denial and a stiff-necked unwillingness to cease placing trust in the arm of flesh.

To be frank, the LDS individual who flatly rejects the evidence of the next several pages, who refuses to contemplate the ramifications in the face of the Lord's stern warnings about wolves in sheep's clothing – as well as the thoroughly documented findings of the Pace memo – is exactly the kind of individual described here:

“When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at [his words], he said unto them, Doth this offend you?... there are some of you that believe not.... From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.” (John 6:61-66)

I, the author, must emphatically state that I receive no joy in presenting these images, only great sorrow and crushing disappointment.

I have wept bitterly, repeatedly, in the realization that they are real and reliable images. They represent exactly what they exhibit. The implications of their content – especially in the context which has been established throughout these two volumes – is undeniable.

Color and/or high-resolution counterparts of the following images, as well as original video footage in one instance, are provided in the supporting material.¹³



LDS President David O. McKay greets President John F. Kennedy, Salt Lake Tabernacle, September 1963



President McKay is extending the Tubalcain grip to JFK, who is reciprocating. Being similar in appearance to a sacred token given in LDS temples, some may feel that this does not indicate that McKay was a Freemason or initiate of some other secret group. Nevertheless, this reasoning begs the questions: 1) Why would McKay exchange a sacred LDS temple token with someone who is not LDS, and has not received LDS temple ordinances? 2) Why would McKay dare to do so in a public setting, outside of the temple?

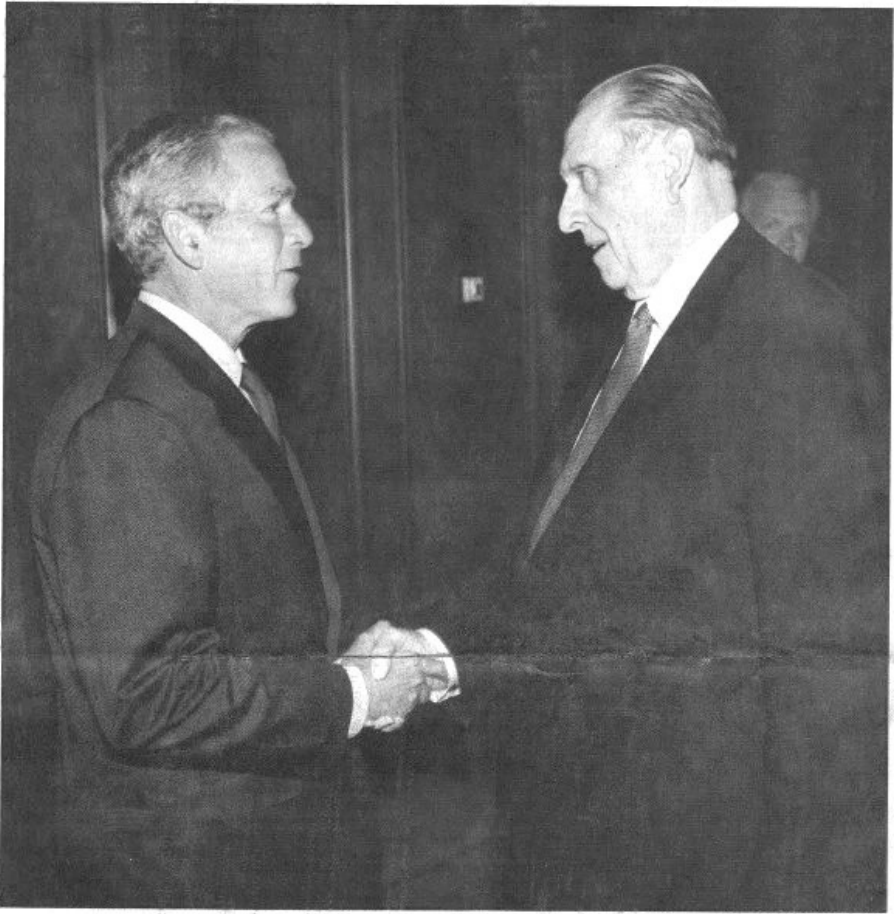


A screenshot captured from KBYU-TV footage, April 26, 2007. Then-Vice-President Dick Cheney greets LDS President Gordon B. Hinckley after having delivered a commencement address and received an honorary doctorate from BYU Provo. Cheney's index finger is clearly placed on Hinkley's wrist in a grip similar to a sacred LDS temple token. Video provided in the supporting material.



Another screenshot, captured in the split second that they first join hands. Hinckley's index finger is visibly extended along Cheney's palm (not curling under his hand). This indicates that he is reciprocating this grip and touching Cheney's wrist with his index finger, just as Cheney is touching his.

President Meets Prophet



ERIC DRAPER/White House

President Bush greets Thomas Monson, president of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, on Thursday at the church's headquarters in Salt Lake City.

Bush ends Utah trip by meeting with LDS First Presidency

THE ASSOCIATED PRESS

SALT LAKE CITY — President Bush's trip to Utah ended Thursday with a meeting at the global headquarters of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, where he talked about his parents

Force One.

"They did say that they do pray for the president, they support the presidency and [are] a very patriotic people," Perino told reporters.

The president was in Utah for nearly 19 hours, mostly to raise money Wednesday for the Red Cross.



Front page scan of the Utah County Daily Herald Newspaper, Friday, May 30, 2008



The high-resolution photo printed by the Herald of current LDS President Thomas S. Monson greeting Then-U.S. President George W. Bush, using a grip similar to a sacred token in LDS temples.



A closeup of their hands reveals that President Monson's index finger can be seen above Bush's sleeve cuff, thereby touching Bush's wrist. He is indisputably reciprocating the grip.



Current LDS Church President Thomas S. Monson greets current Utah state governor Gary Herbert. Date and location of photo unknown, probably captured during an event in one of the Joseph Smith Memorial Building's dining halls.



Monson is once again using a grip similar to a sacred token used in LDS temples. Herbert's missing index fingertip below Monson's hand indicates that he is reciprocating this grip.

"Behold, I speak unto you as if ye were present, and yet ye are not. But behold, Jesus Christ hath shown you unto me, and I know your doing. And I know that ye do walk in the pride of your hearts; and ***there are none save a few only who do not lift themselves up in the pride of their hearts... your churches [and your temples], yea, even every one, have become polluted*** because of the pride of your hearts.

"For behold, ***ye do love money...***" – investing members' tithes in Babylon; LDS Leaders in highest positions live upper-class lifestyles, enjoy unlimited credit card accounts which are undisclosed and unaccountable to the membership.

"***and your substance, and your fine apparel...***" – City Creek Center high-end stores includes Macy's, Tiffany & Co., Porsche Designs, Michael Kors, Brooks Brothers, among others.

"***and the adorning of your churches [and your temples]...***" – spending over \$5,000,000,000 of tithing-originated funds on a cosmetic facelift of downtown SLC, under the pretense that it is for the beautification of Temple Square's vicinity.

"***more than ye love the poor and the needy...***" – struggling and desperate members (not to mention non-members) worldwide who resort to desperation tactics, such as dumpster-diving, for daily sustenance.

"***the sick and the afflicted....***" – Daymon Smith: "We really could start up clinics in the Phillipines....' We don't.... 'We could easily set up schools in Africa.' We don't.... You can't get it through committee after committee after committee [at the COB]."

"O ye ***pollutions***, ye ***hypocrites***, ye ***teachers, who sell yourselves*** for that which will canker, ***why have ye polluted the holy church of God?***...

"Why do ye adorn yourselves with that which hath no life, and yet suffer the hungry, and the needy, and the naked, and the sick and the afflicted to pass by you, and notice them not?

"Yea, ***why do ye build up your secret abominations*** to get gain, and cause that widows should mourn before the Lord, and also orphans to mourn before the Lord, and also the blood of their fathers and their husbands to cry unto the Lord from the ground, for vengeance upon your heads?

"Behold, ***the sword of vengeance hangeth over you***; and the time soon cometh that he avengeth the blood of the saints upon you, for he will not suffer their cries any longer....

"Jesus Christ hath shown you unto me, and I know your doing."

– Moroni¹⁴

"[T]here are many who have been ordained among you, whom I have called but ***few of them are chosen***. They who are not chosen have sinned a very grievous sin, in that ***they are walking in darkness at noon-day***.... If you keep not my commandments, the love of the Father shall not continue with you, therefore you shall walk in darkness.... for ***I give not unto you that ye shall live after the manner of the world***."

– The Lord Jesus Christ¹⁵

Ponder this one last statement from Cathy O' Brien's book, *Trance Formation of America*.¹⁶:

"[U.S. Senator Robert C.] Byrd "justified" mind-control atrocities as a means of thrusting mankind into accelerated evolution, according to the Neo-Nazi principles to which he adhered. He "justified" manipulating mankind's religion to bring about the prophesied biblical "world peace" through the "only means available"—total mind control in the New World Order. "After all," he proclaimed, "even the Pope and Mormon Prophet know this is the only way to peace and they cooperate fully with The Project."

Cathy likely overheard Byrd saying these things in the late 1960's when David O. McKay was President of the Church. When I first encountered this in my research, I put it aside as hearsay – or that perhaps that Byrd was overconfident as to how high occult infiltrators had penetrated within the LDS Church – or even perhaps that he never said anything like this at all and Cathy either made it up or is misreporting.

With tremendous lament, I now suspect that there is truth to this.

In regards to Monson, I believe the testimony of Gail Smith. Her account has been circulated on the Internet somewhat, but I have spoken with her extensively, several times. When she was a young woman, Monson served as her bishop. She testified that at one time she rode in his car, and in a secluded area he pulled over and tried to sexually force himself on her. When she refused and fought back, he stated "Don't you know I'm going to be the prophet some day?" (I can safely assume that this kind of 'prophecy' was not given to him by the Lord.) Gail got out of the vehicle and started walking away. Moments later, Monson pulled up along side her, apologized, and begged her to get back into the car, promising not to do anything except drive her home. She eventually conceded, and he drove her home.

Gail told me this from her own mouth. I believe her. She is not the least bit vindictive; she is forgiving. However, the truth is the truth, and she knows that Monson needs to be exposed for who he is: a wolf/Luciferian infiltrator.

Given all that has been presented in Volume I concerning the reality, the history, the *modus operandi*, and the Luciferian theological underpinnings of the church of the devil – as well as the testimony, investigations, documentation, and evidence of their modern machinations presented throughout this volume – it is time to ask the ultimate question:

What does all this mean in regards to the current status of the The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints?

Best and Worst Case Scenarios

Best Case Scenario

1. David O. McKay was not a wolf in sheep's clothing – a “Gadianton” infiltrator – he was just an old man who limp-wrist-edly shook JFK's hand in a manner that resembles the Tubalcain grip to perfection. It was all just incidental.
2. The previous Church President, Gordon B. Hinckley, was a wolf in sheep's clothing – a Luciferian infiltrator. His esoteric grip with Dick Cheney, who is arguably one of the most evil men on the earth today (refer to Appendix B), has exposed mangy tufts of coarse wolf fur underneath Hinckley's pearly-white sheep costume. There's no better-case scenario here.
3. The current President of the Church, Thomas S. Monson, is also a wolf in sheep's clothing. The photos that expose his “coarse wolf fur” are clear and unmistakable. He's a Luciferian infiltrator – as is Governor Herbert. Again, there is no better-case scenario here.
4. Only a few others in both the First Presidency and the Quorum of the Twelve are wolves in sheep's clothing – the rest are not. Although unlikely, this is still possible. As discussed in Volume I, page 335, there is “no greater dissemination tool than the enthusiastic dupe.” Infiltrators convincingly wear some of the whitest of wooly costumes, and seek to endear themselves to non-infiltrators, thereby taking advantage of their kind-heartedness and willingness to be impressed/influenced. (The author is convinced that this is precisely the case in regards to when Ezra Taft Benson was President of the Church, and his first and second counselors were Hinckley and Monson. It could also be that Benson sensed that they were wolves, and in selecting them he was applying the maxim “keep your friends close and your enemies closer.” Yet, in all likeliness, Benson was simply bamboozled by them, just as the rest of us have been all this

time. Personally, I am absolutely certain Benson was not an infiltrator – refer to Journal Excerpt 10.)

It is possible that most in the First Presidency and the Twelve are *not* infiltrators, yet are won-over by the changes which have been implemented gradually over the decades. Starting with Gordon B. Hinckley's leadership – and the hyper-PR, hyper-corporate changes that occurred with him at the helm – they assumed that it was all God's will and dutifully have gone along with it ever since.

Worst Case Scenario

1. David O. McKay was a wolf in sheep's clothing. He was the "Mormon prophet" who Cathy O'Brien overheard Senator Byrd talking about. His goal was to gradually modernize Mormonism (i.e. make it increasingly worldly, more popular with the world), to quietly disconnect Common Consent and end financial accountability to the membership, as well as to spearhead correlation. He feigned concerns about correlation while he was actually for it, knowing that in the long-term it would centralize all power, finances, and widespread decision-making in the Church to the First Presidency and the Twelve. The end result being an ecclesiastical dictatorship which firmly establishes the notion that it has always had, and everlastingly will have, heaven's stamp of approval in everything it does – and yet if it were a political movement, everything about it would be strikingly similar to Communism.
2. Same as #2 of the Best Case Scenario
3. Same as #3 of the Best Case Scenario
4. Most (possibly all) of the members of the First Presidency and Twelve are wolves in sheep's clothing. There may be a few who are not, or at least not fully dedicated in their hearts and minds to the conspiracy – similar to Alma among the corrupt priests of King Noah's Nephite kingdom. If so, I can only pray that these not-as-corrupt LDS leaders will listen to the eventual Abinadis that will come, that they will be given the "eyes to see" the wolves and snakes that surround them, and that they will bitterly repent, publicly and boldly declare the awful situation that the members are in, and uphold the words of those Abinadis. It happened with Alma over 2000 years ago – I firmly believe it can happen again.
5. Luciferian infiltration began as early as the Nauvoo era – after all, the very first major building of the city that they completed was the Nauvoo Masonic Lodge, at the sacrifice of focusing on the Nauvoo

temple. This lack of focus on completing the Nauvoo temple did not go unnoticed by the Lord, who repeatedly, sternly warned about the consequences, especially in D&C 95. (With all the glorious manifestations of the Kirtland temple era, it's doubtful that infiltration had made significant progress that early on.)

6. Luciferian families have been patiently infiltrating the LDS Church for, at minimum, one hundred years. ***There is a strong possibility that the Hinckley and Monson families, as well as prominent other Mormon family trees that are interconnected with those families, have Luciferian roots and continue raising their offspring with LDS-themed SRA (as detailed in Glenn L. Pace's memo) and the kinds of training detailed by "Svali".***
7. Feigning divine revelation from the Holy Spirit, they promoted each other up the ranks within the Church – which has been the modus operandi of secret societies for millennia: they infiltrate governments, the private sector, and all other entities of worldly and ecclesiastical power.
8. On the outside, these Luciferian infiltrators convincingly appear as meek, humble servants of God – who, “more than any others, are clothed in sheep's clothing because they wear the habiliments of the priesthood” (as stated by J. Reuben Clark in 1949).
9. Over time they have shifted the Church off-course, implementing changes that the Lord constitutes as unapprovable and apostate – *as predicted by prophets not only of previous dispensations but even by the earliest leaders of the restoration.*
10. ***The worldly success of the Church's current tiered, corporate-styled system of efficiency is an affront and an abomination to God,*** yet the general membership has been led to assume that such success is a manifestation of God's approval.
11. Because current Church leaders (Luciferian infiltrators or not) are unworthy and therefore unable to be guided by the Holy Spirit, they employ full-time ghost writers to compose their conference addresses and nearly all other talks. (This has been confirmed by many employees at the Church Office Building.) Their talks are thereby calculated and presented in a manner wherewith to generate as much warm-fuzzy sentimentality in the membership as possible. They deliver sermons that are anecdotally uplifting and “draw unto [Christ] with their lips,” laced with sugar-coated sweetness, yet are devoid of spiritual nutrition. ***It all begs the question: Who is the actual "prophet, seer, and revelator" – the man delivering the ghost-written talk, or the ghost writer who wrote it?***

12. While Church leadership now-and-then give lip-service to the Lord-approved tenets of the U.S. Constitution, they knowingly play their part in consenting (through glaring silence) to increasing Constitutional erosion and the unaccountability of government agencies. President Ezra Taft Benson was the last Church leader who dared speak out concerning alarming civil trends and stood out firmly about matters of Constitutional rights. Today, the First Presidency issues press releases that are aimed to placate anyone and everyone on civic and legal matters.
13. Infiltrators among the leadership knowingly (yet indirectly) support members and agendas of secret combinations – “build[ing] them up and support[ing] them, beginning at the more wicked part of them”¹⁷ (i.e. the Bush family, Cheney, Bohemian Groves – which are primarily Republicans), allowing right-wing and neo-con politics to “seduce the more part of the righteous until they had come down to believe in their works and partake of their spoils”¹⁸ (i.e. globalism, corporatism, “worldly success translates into God’s blessings/approval”, Mitt Romney and Bain Capital, etc.)
14. The legal infrastructure of the “Church” – a corporation sole – places every piece of property, every drop of capital, and every cent of tithing and donations into the hands of the person who holds the title “President of the Church.” ***A Luciferian infiltrator – a man who has sworn oaths in blood to serve the adversary, who has undoubtedly participated in Satanic Ritual Abuse involving the psychological and sexual abuse of young children, and who may have even participated in rituals of child sacrifice (involving eating the flesh and drinking the blood of slain infants) – has sole discretion over a multi-billion-dollar corporate empire built from our tithes.***

There is no doubt in the author’s mind and heart that the Church – which the Lord Himself patiently and long-sufferingly re-authorized (through a collection of highly-ignorant, borderline-zealous, considerably-inflexible American and British peasants) on the earth nearly 190 years ago – has long been on an irreversible path of apostasy and worldliness.

Having had a Luciferian sitting in the top seat at least since 1994 (and possibly during the 19 years of McKay’s leadership) – feigning an over-honored, unsubstantiated role of “prophet, seer, and revelator” – the Church has been well underway in fulfilling the prophecies of its own championed volumes of scripture (The Book of Mormon and the Doctrine & Covenants) about being lifted up with pride and worldly corruption, filled with secret

abominations, the spiritual-pollution (and, in a significant number of cases, deliberate Satanic desecration) of chapels and temples – not to mention the increasingly-justified neglect of the needy, poor, and downtrodden.

I encourage the reader to contemplate and pray about these matters for oneself, taking care not to dismiss any of the presented evidence and arguments as irrelevant – for all of these matters are extremely relevant unto the Lord:

I give not unto you that ye shall live after the manner of the world.

Reacting to the Message

I have provided the reader very straightforward evidence of two Luciferian wolves in sheep's clothing that have been/are currently at the head position of the LDS Church, and have been/are regarded by millions as “prophets, seers, and revelators”. I have presented two volumes of information that provide clarification as to how the devil's kingdom operates, expound upon how such infiltration was inevitable, and illustrate the context with which the evidence needs to be processed. I have done all I can to prepare the faithful LDS reader to confront and absorb this stark reality.

As I stated in the Prologue of Volume I:

“When we are faced with plain, direct truth, we have only two options: acknowledge and accept it, or don't. Not accepting it might include: denying it, fighting it, sugar-coating it, struggling with it, accepting some parts while rejecting others, etc.”

Additionally, I presented the following anonymous quote in Part 5:

“You can put ten tons of proof about something in front of people — if they're not ready to accept its possibility, they will not accept the proof.”

Now the issue laid before the reader becomes: What will you do? How will you process it?

Will you refuse to accept the sternly-and-repeatedly-warned-about possibility that Luciferians have stood at the head of our beloved “Church of Jesus Christ” for at least two decades, despite that you have now witnessed contextually-provided proof that this is precisely what is happening?

Will you instead grasp at some other unfounded, apologetic explanation for it all – to somehow insist that this cannot possibly be true?

Will you shoot the messenger? Will you make him the scapegoat for your frustrations and vilify him? Will you seek to project some self-

aggrandizing agenda upon him that isn't actually there? Will you question his character, despite that he has frankly disclosed to the reader deeply personal matters, and that he is in as much pain over all this as the reader is?

Will you refrain from attacking the messenger, yet dismiss it all as insanity and pity the poor bastard who wasted six years of his life creating over one thousand pages of delirious tripe?

Or, will you wake up and accept that the situation is truly *this* awful?

If you are at the point of accepting it, I beg you this: do not throw the baby out with the bathwater. *Do not allow yourself to descend into fury and reject everything you have a testimony of.* Recall the letter of the outraged individual quoted previously in the Mormon Stories interview with Damon Smith:

"I was horrified... This information left me in a state of shock. For several days I couldn't eat, sleep, and shed more than a few tears. After the shock wore off, I was angry. I felt I'd been deceived by the Church."

The greatest victory for the devil in all of this is when a confused, frustrated, overloaded, furious individual rejects their testimony of Christ along with everything else.

Angrily rejecting everything is not the answer.

The answer is in one's testimony of Jesus Christ. He is the sure foundation. He is the *only* foundation. Not the "Church," not Joseph Smith, not even the Bible or Book of Mormon. Only Christ is the foundation. Him and only Him. Start again with Him. He lives – cling to *that*. Then re-evaluate everything else, precept upon precept, line upon line. Scrutinize the gray that you once accepted as pure white; look closely and differentiate, discern, what is truly white and what is actually black.

Retreat into Christ, then allow His Spirit to guide you, to re-build and re-classify what is truth and what is error.

How the Other Wolves React

What do the other wolves do when one/some of their pack are suspected? There's a few tactics they employ:

1. They ignore it. They do this when the "heat" levied upon the suspect wolf/wolves is coming from a small number of comparatively-powerless individuals. If few are heeding these people, they behave

DARKNESS AT NOON-DAY

as though the charges and accusations are not even worth addressing – no matter how true those charges might be.

2. They rush to the defense of the suspected wolf/wolves. They do this not because they deeply care for them, or because they are innocent, but because they have a vested interest in not being discovered themselves. (This was discussed in the Prologue of Volume I, with the examples from the film *The Incredibles*.)
3. They malign the character(s) of the messenger(s). They will dig up or fabricate every possible unfavorable aspect of their lives – every slight blemish will be exaggerated into hideousness, every molehill will be turned into a mountain, every thoughtless mistake will be classified as a malignant character flaw. It was no different with Joseph Smith. It doesn't matter, though: a true message is a true message, no matter the messenger.

Please keep these tactics in mind when this work is either actively-ignored or heavily attacked.

- 1 Documented History of the Chruch 4:605
- 2 Quoted from *Trance Formation of America* by Mark Phillips and Cathy O'Brien, p. 102-104; Refer to the PDF in the supporting material: Cathy O'Brien - Trance Formation of America
- 3 "Reverend James Warren "Jim" Jones was the founder and leader of the Peoples Temple, which is best known for the November 18, 1978 mass suicide of 909 Temple members in Jonestown, Guyana along with the killings of five other people at a nearby airstrip. Over 200 children were murdered at Jonestown, almost all of whom were forcibly made to ingest cyanide by the elite Temple members.... The incident in Guyana ranks among the largest mass suicides in history, though most likely it involved forced suicide and/or murder, and was the single greatest loss of American civilian life in a non-natural disaster until the events of September 11, 2001."
Source – http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jim_Jones
- 4 "Charles Milles Manson is an American criminal and musician who led what became known as the Manson Family, a quasi-commune that arose in California in the late 1960s. He was found guilty of conspiracy to commit the murders of Sharon Tate and Leno and Rosemary LaBianca carried out by members of the group at his instruction.... From the beginning of his notoriety, a pop culture arose around him in which he ultimately became an emblem of insanity, violence and the macabre.... Before the murders, he was a singer-songwriter on the fringe of the Los Angeles music industry.... After Manson was charged with the crimes with which he was later convicted, recordings of songs written and performed by him were released commercially. Various musicians, including Guns N' Roses, White Zombie and Marilyn Manson, have covered some of his songs."
Source – http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_manson
- 5 Quoted from *To the Humble Followers of Christ*, Ezra Taft Benson, Conference Report, April 1969, pp. 10-15
- 6 Era, May 1949, p. 268. See also, Conference Report, April 1949, p. 163.
- 7 Refer to the PDF and gif files in the supporting material: Glenn L. Pace memorandum
- 8 Source – http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pace_memorandum
- 9 One of the most notable cases of SRA-themed child abuse in day-care centers was the abuse that occurred at the McMartin preschool in Manhattan Beach, California. "Members of the McMartin family, who operated a preschool in California, were charged with numerous acts of sexual abuse of children in their care. Accusations were made in 1983. Arrests and the pretrial investigation ran from 1984 to 1987, and the trial ran from 1987 to 1990.... It was alleged that, in addition to having been sexually abused, they saw witches fly, traveled in a hot-air balloon, and were taken through underground tunnels.... There were claims of orgies at car washes and airports, and of children being flushed down toilets to secret rooms where they would be abused, then cleaned up and presented back to their parents. Some interviewed children talked of a game called "naked movie star" suggesting they were forcibly photographed nude.... After six years of criminal trials, no convictions were obtained, and all charges were dropped in 1990." Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/McMartin_preschool_trial
As fantastic and ridiculous as these children's recollections may sound, it is all credible when weighed with all that has been presented and testified of in Part 5.

CHAPTER NOTES

- Never forget: where there's smoke, there's mirrors.
- 10 Helaman 6:21
- 11 These are Mormon's words in abridging the Book of Helaman – Helaman 6:22
- 12 Refer to the jpg files in the supporting material: World leaders' handshakes
Photo sources: <http://www.kphy.com/rumaila-deal-key-to-cnpc-goals/>;
<http://www.letterstotheeditor.com/2012/09/02/facts-show-republican-ticket-untrustworthy/> ; <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=u-qX9ERqI50> (Gordon Brown's Grand Masonic Handshake.mp4) ;
<http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/newstopics/howaboutthat/2143451/Gordon-Brown-thrown-by-George-Bushs-hip-hop-handshake.html> ;
http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/codex_magica/codex_magica08.htm ; http://www.the-big-picture.org.uk/wp/?page_id=11920 ;
<http://www.forthenations.com/masons/Mhand.html>
- 13 Refer to the jpg and video files in the supporting material: LDS leaders' handshakes
Photo sources:
<http://www.ksl.com/index.php?sid=13376810&nid=460&page=3#4>
http://1.bp.blogspot.com/-O5v_jNMVtQU/Thzyr4StetI/AAAAAAAAABMs/ZvxmVshlyP0/s1600/lds+handshake-01.jpg
http://2.bp.blogspot.com/_3I0gXJZ6XmU/THPUzqEitKI/AAAAAAAAABAI/V9q22zUaCYE/s1600/PRESIDENT+BUSH+MEETS+LDS+PROPHET+001.jpg
- 14 Mormon 8:35-41 (emphasis added)
- 15 Doctrine and Covenants 95:5-6,12-13 (emphasis added)
- 16 Quoted from *Trance Formation of America* by Mark Philips and Cathy O' Brien, p. 118-119
- 17 Helaman 6:38
- 18 *Ibid.*

Journal Excerpt 13 - January 2009

I eventually decided to write two letters, one to [my wife] and one to [my eight year old daughter]. I contemplated just leaving the letters at home and moving out - but I decided against it because it's just too cowardly. Can't do that. If I'm required to hurt them, I must be there to face their pain. My letter to [my wife] was eight pages, single-spaced. I did my best to explain my one and only reason for divorce: that God commanded me to. I explained that I will not fail to provide 70% of my income (a specific figure) every month.

We had a wonderful Christmas. I was dying in my heart the entire time. Were it not for the Holy Ghost constantly emotionally propping me up every second of the day, and the prayers from the stalwart members of [an LDS preppers online forum] (who responded so compassionately to my posts requesting for prayers), I would have collapsed into despair and sorrow long ago.

Finally, the day came. December 31st. Once a week [my wife] and I teach at the same school, and we take the train together. Once we were seated on the train, she could read my face like a book. She knew something was wrong. I handed her the letter. She angrily took it from me, opened it up, rushed through a couple pages. She immediately accused me of infidelity and wouldn't look at me. I tried to speak, begged her to actually read the letter, but my speaking only made things worse. I had to force down my tears.

At school, we went through our teaching routines. She wouldn't look at me or speak to me the whole way home.

Once home, in the bedroom, she unleashed on me. Violently. I collapsed on the floor, sobbing. She vented ferociously. In every way she needed to. I let her. Twenty minutes later, the apartment door unlocked - her sister was bringing our children home from school, as per the routine. [She] wiped her tears and rushed to the door. I heard her talking to her sister. I heard my little daughter shriek "WHAT?? WHY??" I heard them closing the front door behind them - her sister will take the children to her house until [my wife] comes for them.

[My wife] stormed back in. Threw open a suitcase. "You have one hour. Take what you can pack and get out."

"Where am I supposed to go?"

"YOUR 'GOD' IS TELLING YOU TO DO THIS! ASK HIM!"

Before I could start a prayer, I knew the first step. The manager of one of the cram schools I teach at, she's a Christian. I called her. Told her that I'm having

marriage problems and my wife's throwing me out, I need help immediately. She understood, said she'd make some calls. I packed. Twenty minutes later she called me back. "My aunt and uncle are Christians. They will help you out. Come to the cram school."

[My wife] called a taxi. I went to the school and met the manager's aunt and uncle. They took me to a kind of YMCA and paid for a room for me for two days. (I had the equivalent of US\$17 in my wallet, no ATM cards, no credit cards. [My wife] had been handling all of our finances since we arrived in Taiwan.)

I had nothing. Everything was gone.

The next day, a co-worker friend helped me find an apartment. He forwarded me the funds for the deposit and first month's rent.

Over the next several days, I spent all my personal time in agony. I sobbed to and from all my teaching jobs. While I taught, the Spirit propped me up so much it was nothing short of miraculous - I was pleasant, professional, and able to put all my personal misery aside. As soon as I left work, I collapsed into misery again.

[My wife] called me every night for three days. Wounded. Bitter. At the end of the third night, she agonized, "After my dad left my mom for another woman, she just let him go. She wouldn't fight for him. She could have made the effort. But what am I supposed to do?? You're not leaving me for another woman - you're leaving me because your God told you to. How am I supposed to compete with that??"

[She] stopped calling after that.

On the twelfth day, in the early evening, I was on my scooter, headed back after finishing my classes for the day. [My wife] called my cell phone. I pulled over and answered. Tersely she stated, "I need to buy some groceries and [my sister] is busy right now. You can come babysit the children for an hour, but you better get here fast."

I raced to our apartment, my heart beating through my chest. I had to wait in the lobby for [my wife] to come down the elevator and buzz me in. As I sat there, I pleaded with my entire soul: "Father, please help me! I'm about to see my wife and children, again. I am tremendously thankful for this opportunity. But father, please! Please give me the strength to leave them, again. Please--"

"It is enough." Christ's ineffable voice interrupted my prayer. "You are my true and faithful servant. You may return home at the end of the month."

Not more than two seconds after Christ finished speaking to me, [my wife] opened the lobby door leading to the elevator. I was astounded. What did He mean? Was this all just a test?

As I rode in the elevator with [my wife], the Spirit confirmed to my soul: Yes, it is all over - you don't need to divorce her - you may return home for good at the end of the month. My whole body relaxed as this was given to me, and I couldn't help but smile. [My wife] looked at me, irritated. "You're smiling?" I wasn't sure how to say anything right there and then, so I replied, "I'm just so relieved to see you and the children again."

As I walked into the apartment, just the smell of "home" caused my soul to rejoice. I heard the children taking a bath together. As I rounded the corner and our eyes met, both of my children rejoiced and began splashing around excitedly. "DADDY!!" My heart burst, my knees buckled. I sank to the floor, face pressed against the ceramic tiles, and sobbed and sobbed with joy.

[My wife] took my little 14 month old son out of the tub, dried him off, and put on his onesies. He excitedly ran to me, squealing and doing a little infant dance of joy, then promptly lost his footing, fell on the floor, and started crying. I scooped him up and embraced him like I could never let go. Oh, how glorious he smelled - fresh, innocent, loving. My daughter was all dried off and dressed, ran and hugged me tightly.

[My wife] was about to leave to go shopping. With my son in one arm, I gently took her arm and pulled her towards me. Her face was emotionless. "I know you don't believe in any of this, but I need to tell you something. Just seconds before you opened the door downstairs, I was told that I don't have to go through with divorcing you, that I can come home for good at the end of the month."

Her cold expression gave way to tears of relief. She hugged me. "I'm just so glad you're coming home."

That night I slept at home, in my bed, with my wife. Our children safe, warm, fed, loved. We were reunited again.

PART 7

FINAL DAYS

Verily, thus saith the Lord, let Zion rejoice, for this is Zion—THE PURE IN HEART.... For behold, and lo, vengeance cometh speedily upon the ungodly as the whirlwind; and who shall escape it?

The Lord's scourge shall pass over by night and by day, and the report thereof shall vex all people; yea, it shall not be stayed until the Lord come; For the indignation of the Lord is kindled against their abominations and all their wicked works. Nevertheless, Zion shall escape if she observe to do all things whatsoever I have commanded her.

But if she observe not to do whatsoever I have commanded her, I will visit her according to all her works, with sore affliction, with pestilence, with plague, with sword, with vengeance, with devouring fire....

The Lord shall be red in his apparel, and his garments like him that treadeth in the wine-vat. And so great shall be the glory of his presence that the sun shall hide his face in shame, and the moon shall withhold its light, and the stars shall be hurled from their places.

And his voice shall be heard: I have trodden the wine-press alone, and have brought judgment upon all people; and none were with me; And I have trampled them in my fury, and I did tread upon them in mine anger, and their blood have I sprinkled upon my garments, and stained all my raiment; for this was the day of vengeance which was in my heart.

– The Lord Jesus Christ¹

PARABLE OF THE NOBLEMAN AND THE OLIVE TREES, PART II

Recall part 1 of the parable of the Nobleman and the Olive Trees from Doctrine and Covenants section 101, verses 43 to 50:

"And now, I will show unto you a parable, that you may know my will concerning the redemption of Zion.

"A certain nobleman had a spot of land, very choice; and he said unto his servants: Go ye unto my vineyard, even upon this very choice piece of land, and plant twelve olive-trees; And set watchmen round about them, and build a tower, that one may overlook the land round about, to be a watchman upon the tower, that mine olive-trees may not be broken down when the enemy shall come to spoil and take upon themselves the fruit of my vineyard.

"Now, the servants of the nobleman went and did as their lord commanded them, and planted the olive-trees, and built a hedge round about, and set watchmen, and began to build a tower. And while they were yet laying the foundation thereof, they began to say among themselves: And what need hath my lord of this tower? And consulted for a long time, saying among themselves: What need hath my lord of this tower, seeing this is a time of peace? Might not this money be given to the exchangers? For there is no need of these things. And while they were at variance one with another they became very slothful, and they hearkened not unto the commandments of their lord."

The symbols within and what they signify:

- the nobleman – the Lord Jesus Christ
- the vineyard – the earth

- a very choice spot of land – North America
- the nobleman's servants – leaders and members of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints
- planting olive trees – to prepare for the Kingdom of God to come to earth. Specifically: establish temples, stakes, wards, branches, etc.
- setting watchmen round about them – leadership callings throughout the Church which watch over the general welfare of the members.
- building a tower – establish a system in which to be able to detect danger approaching the Church from outside, as well as detect attempts to infiltrate the Church by wolves in sheep's clothing.

As an author and researcher, I find myself in an awkward situation. At the time I put together Volume I and discussed Part 1 of this parable, I admit that I was not given of the Lord to know exactly what the tower represented. Based upon the tower's function, and from the destruction it was meant to offset, I originally concluded that it represented the counsel to keep eternal vigilance in defending the rights granted in the U.S. Constitution. I wrote that chapter based on this premise, with a chart comparing verses 43 to 50 to this concept and the saints' reluctance to get involved in civic matters and advocacy of Constitutional rights.

I lamentably realize now that this conclusion and summary was erroneous. For one, with the enforced hyper-separation of “church” and state (wherein all religion, primarily Christianity, has been redefined as “church”) there is no way that even an entirely-united body of Constitutionally-educated-and-politically-active saints could offset and prevent government infiltration and eventual tyrannical federal unaccountability and encroachment. At best, such a focused and devoted body of saints could only help to offset the eventuality such.

I have come to understand that the tower spoken of by the Lord was, in fact, the Nauvoo temple.

Because the construction of the Nauvoo temple was repeatedly delayed, due to focus and manpower being redirected to numerous other projects, it was not completed within the time frame that the Lord allotted. By comparison, the Kirtland temple was built in a relatively short amount of time under more dire and destitute conditions – the resultant blessings upon its dedication openly demonstrated the Lord's acceptance of it. Work on the Nauvoo temple was put off time and again, and the saints' attitude towards prioritizing it is what the Lord is referring to in the parable:

“And while they were yet laying the foundation thereof, they began to [reason] among themselves.... And consulted for a long time.... And while

PARABLE OF THE NOBLEMAN AND THE OLIVE TREES, PART II

they were at variance one with another they became very slothful, and they hearkened not unto the commandments of their lord."

In D&C 124, verses 25 to 55, the Lord warns the saints repeatedly about not being slothful in building the Nauvoo temple, about the timeliness of the blessings dependent upon its completion. Review the blessings, the warnings, and the consequences of failure included in these verses (emphasis added):

"For there is not a place found on earth that he may come to and restore again that which was lost unto you, or which he hath taken away, even **the fulness of the priesthood....** But I command you, all ye my saints, to build a house unto me; and **I grant unto you a sufficient time** to build a house unto me; and during this time your baptisms shall be acceptable unto me.

"But behold, at the end of this appointment your baptisms for your dead shall not be acceptable unto me; and **if you do not these things at the end of the appointment ye shall be rejected as a church**, with your dead, saith the Lord your God.... For therein are the keys of the holy priesthood ordained, that you may receive honor and glory....

"And verily I say unto you, **let this house be built unto my name, that I may reveal mine ordinances therein** unto my people; For I deign to reveal unto my church things which have been kept hid from before the foundation of the world, things that pertain to the dispensation of the fulness of times. And I will show unto my servant Joseph all things pertaining to this house, and the priesthood thereof, and the place whereon it shall be built....

"**If ye labor with all your might, I will consecrate that spot that it shall be made holy.** And if my people will hearken unto my voice, and unto the voice of my servants whom I have appointed to lead my people, behold, verily I say unto you, **they shall not be moved out of their place.** But if they will not hearken to my voice, nor unto the voice of these men whom I have appointed, **they shall not be blest, because they pollute mine holy grounds, and mine holy ordinances, and charters, and my holy words which I give unto them.**

"And it shall come to pass that **if you build a house unto my name, and do not do the things that I say, I will not perform the oath which I make unto you, neither fulfil the promises which ye expect at my hands**, saith the Lord. For instead of blessings, ye, by your own works, bring cursings, wrath, indignation, and judgments upon your own heads, by your follies, and by all your abominations, which you practice before me, saith the Lord....

"And again, verily I say unto you, I command you again to build a house to my name, even in this place, that you may prove yourselves unto me that ye are faithful in all things whatsoever I command you, that I may

bless you, and crown you with honor, immortality, and eternal life.”

Unfortunately, the saints of Nauvoo failed to meet the expectations of the Lord. They failed to prioritize completing the temple. Due to their failure, the Lord did not “consecrate that spot that it shall be made holy.” Resultingly, the saints were “moved out of their place” by their enemies. Instead of blessings, they “by [their] own works, [brought] cursings, wrath, indignation, and judgments upon [their] own heads, by [their] follies, and by all [their] abominations.”

With these warnings, and with the historical record of the saints not completing the temple until they are in the process of being expelled out of Nauvoo by their enemies, read the remainder of the parable in D&C 101, verses 51 to 62:

“And the enemy came by night, and broke down the hedge; and the servants of the nobleman arose and were affrighted, and fled; and the enemy destroyed their works, and broke down the olive-trees.

“Now, behold, the nobleman, the lord of the vineyard, called upon his servants, and said unto them, Why! what is the cause of this great evil? Ought ye not to have done even as I commanded you, and—after ye had planted the vineyard, and built the hedge round about, and set watchmen upon the walls thereof—built the tower also, and set a watchman upon the tower, and watched for my vineyard, and not have fallen asleep, lest the enemy should come upon you? And behold, the watchman upon the tower would have seen the enemy while he was yet afar off; and then ye could have made ready and kept the enemy from breaking down the hedge thereof, and saved my vineyard from the hands of the destroyer.

“And the lord of the vineyard said unto one of his servants: Go and gather together the residue of my servants, and take all the strength of mine house, which are my warriors, my young men, and they that are of middle age also among all my servants, who are the strength of mine house, save those only whom I have appointed to tarry; And go ye straightway unto the land of my vineyard, and redeem my vineyard; for it is mine; I have bought it with money. Therefore, get ye straightway unto my land; break down the walls of mine enemies; throw down their tower, and scatter their watchmen. And inasmuch as they gather together against you, avenge me of mine enemies, that by and by I may come with the residue of mine house and possess the land.

“And the servant said unto his lord: When shall these things be?

“And he said unto his servant: When I will; go ye straightway, and do all things whatsoever I have commanded you; And this shall be my seal and blessing upon you—a faithful and wise steward in the midst of mine house, a ruler in my kingdom.

PARABLE OF THE NOBLEMAN AND THE OLIVE TREES, PART II

“And his servant went straightway, and did all things whatsoever his lord commanded him; and after many days all things were fulfilled.”

Words of the Lord in D&C 124	Historical Record and Parable in D&C 101
“ I grant unto you a sufficient time to build a house unto me...”	“Go ye unto my vineyard, even upon this very choice piece of land... and build a tower, that one may overlook the land round about, to be a watchman upon the tower, that mine olive-trees may not be broken down.” As the saints developed Nauvoo they enjoyed years of relative peace. Disquiet and conflict came from within, not without.
“For there is not a place found on earth that [the Most High] may come to and restore again that which was lost unto you, or which he hath taken away, even the fulness of the priesthood.... let this house be built unto my name, that I may reveal mine ordinances therein... ”	Although the temple was not yet completed, Joseph disclosed the temple ordinances to nine leaders in the upper room of his red brick store on May 4 th and 5 th , 1842. The LDS Church contends that this meeting sufficiently fulfilled the Lord's requirements, despite that “there is not a place found on earth that [I, the Lord,] may come to.... that I may reveal mine ordinances therein...”
“if my people will hearken unto my voice... they shall not be moved out of their place. But if they will not hearken to my voice, nor unto the voice of these men whom I have appointed, they shall not be blest, because they pollute mine holy grounds, and mine holy ordinances, and charters, and my holy words which I give unto them”	“the servants of the nobleman arose and were affrighted, and fled; and the enemy destroyed their works, and broke down the olive-trees.” The saints who followed Brigham Young fled west. The barely-completed Nauvoo temple was destroyed.
“if you do not these things at the end of the appointment ye shall be rejected as a church... ”	“Why!... Ought ye not to have done even as I commanded you... built the tower... not have fallen asleep... and saved my vineyard from the hands of the destroyer.” Although they were given sufficient time, the temple was not completed prior to Joseph's death in 1844.
“For instead of blessings, ye, by your own works, bring cursings, wrath, indignation, and judgments upon your own heads, by your follies, and by all your abominations, which you practice before me, saith the Lord.”	Saints suffer miserably during the trek west. Despite spiritual encouragements and some miracles, the situation is similar to errant Nephites in Mosiah 11:24 “when they shall cry unto me I will be slow to hear their cries; yea, and I will suffer them that they be smitten...”

The remainder of the parable of the redemption of Zion has yet to be fulfilled:

- “gather together the residue of my servants, and take all the strength of mine house, which are my warriors, my young men, and they that are of middle age also among all my servants, who are the strength of mine house, save those only whom I have appointed to tarry”

- “break down the walls of mine enemies; throw down their tower, and scatter their watchmen.... avenge me of mine enemies, that by and by I may come with the residue of mine house and possess the land.”
- “And the servant said unto his lord: When shall these things be? And he said unto his servant: When I will... and after many days all things were fulfilled.”

We are now on the cusp of these things transpiring.

The Lord is preparing and will eventually gather the residue of His servants – preparing them individually, and the Lord will gather them together when the time is right.

They will be endowed with the fullness of the Gospel and the full rights and power of the Priesthood, and they will be unstoppable to the enemies of God.

However, there cannot be a “residue” without a scattering, without events that will cause massive fragmentation – cause an abandoning of devotion and faith in the Lord.

Keep in mind the warning by Heber C. Kimball²:

“We think we are secure here in the chambers of these everlasting hills... but I want to say to you, my brethren, the time is coming when we will be mixed up in these now peaceful valleys to that extent that it will be difficult to tell the face of a saint from the face of an enemy against the people of God. [Ed. Note: Consider, is he speaking merely of members who hide great hypocritical and/or worldliness, or is he specifically referring to all-too-benign-appearing Luciferian infiltrators here?]

“Then is the time to look out for the great sieve, for there will be a great sifting of time, and many will fall.

“For I say unto you there is a test, a Test, A TEST is coming.... To meet the difficulties that are coming, it will be necessary for you to be temporally and spiritually prepared, and have a knowledge of the truth of this work for yourselves. The difficulties will be of such a character that the man or woman who does not possess these things will fall.”

1 Doctrine and Covenants 97:22-26 and 133:48-51

2 I cannot find the source of this quote by Heber C. Kimball, yet it is rather widely-circulated. If you are familiar with where it is originally recorded, please contact and inform me.

Journal Excerpt 14 - August 2010

I don't even know where to begin with this.

I've always felt it curious that there are specific references in my patriarchal blessing, both scriptural sources and names. I've read several friends' and family members' blessings, and none of them have anything like this in theirs. Moroni is named in my blessing, and Apostle Russell M. Nelson is as well.

When I attended the University of Utah, I worked part time at a small gas station. Every so often recognizable faces would pop in to pay for their gas. One time a customer came in to prepay, and it wasn't until I was taking cash from his hand that I looked up and realized it was Dallin H. Oaks of the Twelve. I blurted out, "Oh! It's you!" He nodded and said, "Yes, I need to pay for gas, too." We both chuckled.

A couple months later I look out the store window, and lo and behold there's Russell Nelson filling up his tank and washing his windshield. He was using the outside credit card interface to pay, so I figured he wouldn't come into the store. There were no other customers, so I went outside to talk to him. He was either in a thoughtful mood and wasn't given to socializing at the moment, or he was annoyed that some stranger wanted to talk to him and he was just trying to be polite. Then I told him, "I just wanted you to know that you're really special to me. My patriarchal blessing names you by name."

That got his attention. With a bit of skepticism he replied, "Really? What does it say?"

"It says that I ought to read and ponder your published teachings." He didn't know what to say at this. He looked puzzled. He probably didn't believe me. I told him that I didn't want to bother him any further, that it was just nice to meet him, and I went back inside.

Three months ago, out of the blue as I'm praying and pondering, the Holy Spirit impressed upon me the need to write Brother Nelson a letter of warning. I immediately dismissed this as ridiculous, but the Spirit was insistent. The feeling and guidance wouldn't go away, I must write him. I must give him a warning. I flatly dismissed this as either silliness or deception: who am I to write and tell Brother Nelson anything? About anything? This is apostasy's number one red flag. Forget it.

For weeks the feeling and encouragement patiently

persisted. I started getting angry and upset, wanting it to go away. But it wouldn't. In my prayers I demanded: "Who am I to write him? Who am I to warn him? He's Your servant! Why don't You warn him? You have 3 presidents and 11 other apostles - have one of them warn him! Why me? Who the hell am I to do this? If I were him, I wouldn't listen to me, either! Why should he bother to listen to me?"

With patience, the Spirit elaborated: "And why not? Do you not hold the Priesthood, too? It doesn't matter that he is an apostle - does he hold any more authority to command in the name of God than you? Is he any more worthy than you?"

Me: "But that's just not how these things are supposed to work! They receive from You, and then they counsel us. We don't counsel them. I'm not in any position to receive any revelation concerning him. It's heresy. It's what spiritual loonies assume they are entitled to. How can I ever forget Cody Judy threatening Howard W. Hunter with a fake briefcase bomb?"

The Spirit: "Where is the rule that one Priesthood holder with a 'lower' calling cannot admonish a 'higher' Priesthood holder in love and concern for his eternal welfare? Where is it written in the scriptures that such is not allowed, or is somehow against the protocol of Heaven?"

Me: "Is it not said that 'the Lord's house a house of order?' How can one receive revelation for another beyond their orderly 'jurisdiction'?"

The Spirit: "Did not 12-year-old Samuel receive direct revelation from me pertaining to Eli and his family? Did he not relate it to Eli? Did not Eli believe what was conveyed?"

Me: "Why can't You just tell him yourself?"

The Spirit: "What if he's not listening?"

Me: "Then You have 11 other men, called by You, with equal Church-wide 'jurisdiction', who ought to be brotherly enough with each other that they can admonish each other, even receive revelation from You for one another, if one of them is not listening to You."

The Spirit: "But what if such brotherly admonition isn't received in this light? What if there's internal division and the recipient in need of communing with Me feels patronized by this approach, that the admonishing individual is coming across as judgmental and holier-than-thou, instead of being genuinely concerned and the possessor of valid revelation for him?"

I didn't know what to think of this.

The Spirit continued: "What if some completely random, 'non-authoritative' member were to write a letter and humbly relate to a leader something that God really wants him to know? Shouldn't that leader, according to the scriptures, according to all the prophets, take whatever is written - no matter how ridiculous it may sound - to the Lord in humble prayer to know for himself if it's of the Lord or not? If that leader truly isn't listening - if he has put himself into a position where he is not hearing the voice of the Lord anymore - shouldn't such a letter assist him to realize it and cause him to humble himself before the Lord again? If he has hardened his heart, and takes offense that he has received such a letter, or disdainfully dismisses it instead of appreciating the genuine effort someone has gone through to write to him, how much greater is God offended at the man whom He has chosen to fulfill this privileged position? Therefore, be faithful and write the words which I shall give thee."

Me: "I understand. And I will obey. But I still think this is ridiculous. I have nothing but the utmost respect for the man. If he's not listening, I don't see why some other way to get his attention would be preferable to me - a complete stranger and assuredly-assumed whacko - writing him directly. As for myself, I know that I would be troubled if I received a letter from a stranger like this. But wait, doesn't the Church Office Building have mail handlers? People who go through General Authorities' mail to scrutinize what's wanted and what's unwanted?"

The Spirit: "Which is why you'll be mailing it to his house."

Me: "What??... How am I supposed to get his address?"

The Spirit: "[Your relative] will provide it for you."

Me: "She has his address?"

The Spirit: "She doesn't. But she will be the one who provides his home address to you."

Me: "I'm still very uncomfortable with all of this."

The Spirit: "Just write what I give you to write and I will take care of these matters."

I emailed [my relative], told her everything that was going on. She was willing to help me, but she wished I didn't need to get her involved in the first place. She thought she might know someone who knew Brother Nelson's home address. She'd reply to me when she gets it.

I figured I'd be duly diligent and search for the address myself. I queried several online search engines. I found four possible home addresses. A few days later I received her email with the home address, with the charge that I never disclose it to anyone nor say who obtained it for me. It didn't match any of the four addresses I'd found, nor any others online.

I spent a week writing the letter. It was a struggle not to come across like a whack-job crazy man. I spent a page and a half introducing myself, told him about his name in my patriarchal blessing, mentioned that over a decade ago I saw him at a gas station and told him about this. Then I wrote, "I am commanded to utter these words to you" and reproduced the words which the Spirit had put in my heart to write.

With everything else I included in the letter, I persistently and fervently asked the Lord whether or not I should include this, or include that. Every time the answer I received was "Go ahead." I became quite annoyed after a while, because there was no indication either way of whether it ought to be included or not. Did the Lord actually want it in there or not? Everything was just "Go ahead" "Go ahead" "Go ahead". At the very end, I included the details of a couple of catastrophic events which were predicted to occur only a couple weeks away. For quite a while I had been researching all kinds of dreams and visions from both LDS and non-LDS online forums, and all kinds of signs and warnings being discovered - and I was convinced that these two events were going to occur. That such things will occur one day is inevitable, but at the time I was convinced that the multiple people who had had visions and dreams, and others who had thoroughly researched these things, were right about the dates.

I went to the post office and mailed off the letter. It felt like a huge weight had been taken off my shoulders - it's in the Lord's hands now. I hope I never ever ever EVER E-V-E-R have to do anything like that again. Also, in my heart, I secretly hoped that the address would be wrong and that Russell Nelson would not receive the letter at all.

Two weeks later, those two predicted events did not happen. I felt like such a heel. I had to fight strong feelings of anger at the Lord.

Me: "Why did you tell me 'go ahead'? Couldn't you have just told me, 'No, don't bother to put that in there'? Would that have been so hard? Brother Nelson is

going to read that letter and assume I'm insane."

The Spirit: "What do you care about more: that My will be done, or that you don't come across as a fool to others?"

That shut me up.

That's when I began to understand how this works: the Lord's message was the only thing important in that letter. He kept telling me "go ahead" to everything else because it absolutely didn't matter. Everything else was unimportant. The best thing I could have done from the get-go would have been to simply type the words the Lord put into my heart, put it in an envelope, and send it off to Brother Nelson. All the rest of it was worthless. If anything, the ridiculousness of those failed predictions at the end of the letter would only prove to be an additional hurdle in this trial: will he read the words the Lord gave me? Will he ponder them? Will he pray about them? Or will he dismiss them as though they are as worthless as those predictions? Whatever his thoughts, whatever his choice, whatever his actions, my part was over.

Or so I thought.

Last week the Stake President called me and asked if we can meet at his office sometime. My heart sank. It had to be about the letter.

The meeting took place a few days ago. He had a gift for me. A year earlier I had prepped his son for some graduate school interviews, helped him to prepare to answer both expected and tangent questions in English, both professionally and with confidence. His son had sent home some gifts from [the country he was attending school in], and had sent me a gift also.

We talked for over an hour about several things. I decided to tell him about the trial I had been given to divorce my wife, and that the command was rescinded once the Lord was satisfied - explained that it was my Abrahamic trial. He was astonished completely by the story. He had never heard anything like that happening to anyone else. I was pretty depressed to hear that - I don't like to think that such things are uncommon to the point that a long-time stake president had never encountered stories, or even rumors, that such things occur - at least every once in a while. I was hoping that at least one other person in the stake might know what it was like to go through that.

Just when I thought our delightful conversation was coming to an end - when the letter had been put out of my mind altogether - he said, "I need to talk to you about why I called you to my office. It has to do with a letter received at a General Authority's home."

My head dropped. It was the right address. Brother Nelson received it. The stake president continued, "I don't know the contents of the letter, but you should know that the brethren are very concerned about you."

I explained that the letter was in no way a threat nor disrespectful, but that the Holy Spirit had impressed upon me to write him. I explained about how Nelson is named in my patriarchal blessing - that really blew his mind. I told him I could show him that part of my blessing, but he said it was OK, he believed me. I explained about the semi-miraculous nature in which I obtained the address (at least it's miraculous to me). I explained to him that because it was a personal letter I did not wish to send it to the Church Office Building, due to the people there who open and inspect General Authorities' mail. He understood this and confirmed that that's true, their mail is monitored and scrutinized.

He explained that there will not be any action taken against me this time, but that in the future I am to use the Church's chain-of-command in all things: to go to my Bishop, then he takes it up the line if need be. Should I need to send anything to a General Authority ever again, it must not go directly to his house but to the Church Office Building. He repeated that "they are very concerned about you," that the Area authority he reports to made this matter a priority, but that if I promise to never do anything like this again, the issue will be dropped. I explained that this was a one-time thing, and that I promise to never do this again.

That satisfied him and he said that he'll see that the matter is put to rest.

DENVER SNUFFER

By the time this volume is published, many LDS throughout Utah will have heard the name “Denver Snuffer.” Those outside of Utah probably haven't, but they will eventually.

Denver Snuffer is an LDS convert and an attorney that practices in Sandy, Utah. He has published several books since 2006, starting with *The Second Comforter: Conversing with the Lord Through the Veil*. The book received glowing reviews and generated much word of mouth. It gained notoriety partly because the author discloses that he himself has seen Christ and talked with him as one man talks to another. He has since published several other books, given a series of talks, and maintains a regular blog.

There is one big, huge, massive problem with Denver Snuffer: he is a true prophet.

He is a prophet in exactly the same manner which every other true prophet of God has been called: directly from God.

The Holy Spirit testified to me in July of 2013 that Denver has indeed been called of God. I gained this testimony after having read and prayed about his book *Passing the Heavenly Gift*.

Since the publication of *There Are Save Two Churches Only Volume I*, I had been praying for answers and assistance to what I had researched and was dealing with – primarily the content covered in Part 6. After some months, a friend of mine one day emailed me a scan of a chapter from *Passing*. As I read it, the Holy Ghost poured out upon me nearly as strongly as when I was awoken to our awful situation. There they were: the answers I'd been praying for! My friend sent me a copy of *Passing* and I read it cover to cover in two weeks (which is lightning fast for me).

I marveled! The work had already been done! I had been pondering and asking the Lord how I ought to present these kinds of matters in Volume

II – and someone had already done it (and far more thoroughly and concisely than I ever could) back in 2011. Roughly 60% of what *Passing the Heavenly Gift* covers I had become aware of through my own research and prayerful guidance. The remaining 40% was eye-opening to me. Additionally, Denver's presentation is so diplomatic, it borders on apologetic. He is direct, but not abrasive. I can only hope that my treatment of such matters in this volume communicate as effectively to the reader.

Considerable outrage was leveled at Denver for *Passing*. So much so that he posted a blog entry called *Understanding How To Read PTHG*.¹ Portions of it are as follows:

"The purpose of *Passing the Heavenly Gift* it to awaken all of us to how delicate a proposition it is to live faithfully....

"If you are going to read *PtHG*, then read the words in the text rather than overlaying your own fears and conclusions. Your reaction to the book is not indicative of what I wrote.... The book... only suggests there may be another way to view [historical LDS] events. It does not claim to be right. That is left to the reader to decide....

"The Nauvoo Temple was not complete. Ever. Nor did they perform any endowment in a completed structure. When they left Nauvoo after shutting down the rites, they prayed to be allowed to complete the Temple so they might be able to dedicate it. The next day the attic caught fire and the area where the endowment had been performed was badly damaged. While they re-covered the roof, the attic was not repaired. Finally they abandoned work and "considered it complete enough to dedicate." These events are chronicled and the sources quoted. In light of Section 124, those events matter. I was hoping to provoke some effort to examine those facts. Instead all I see are personal attacks directed at me borne out of ignorance and insecurity. Your insecurities do not belong to me. When you react to the book by attacking me, you expose your own doubts....

"Eventually the furor will calm down and the book will have a dispassionate reading. When we finally get there, people will wonder why the reactions were so overwrought. I hope the many things now written by the pseudo-defenders of Mormonism remain available, so they can inform future saints on how to react with less fear toward unwelcome ideas."

Despite Denver's unwavering admonition to others to remain in the Church, and honor the leadership positions (even if the leaders themselves are corrupt) – which was precisely Christ's admonition regarding the Jewish leadership of His time – Denver was excommunicated² in September of 2013 (emphasis added):

"In August 2013, Snuffer's Sandy, Utah, stake president informed him that the continued publication of *Passing the Heavenly Gift* specifically constituted apostasy since the "book's thesis is in direct conflict with

church doctrine," and that the only way he could avoid church discipline was to cease its publication and to cancel a planned speaking tour that was thought to be for promoting the ideas expressed in the book. Snuffer's negotiations with his stake president resulted in an impasse—with Snuffer claiming that **his stake president received instructions from LDS Church leaders in Salt Lake City to proceed**—and he was excommunicated from the church in September 2013. In November 2013, Snuffer said his appeal to the First Presidency of the church to have the excommunication reversed was denied."

Forty Years in Mormonism

If the reader only takes the time to consider one thing from Denver Snuffer, I cannot recommend strongly enough to listen to (or read the transcripts of) the series of ten lectures which he delivered from September 2013 to September 2014. This series is titled *Forty Years in Mormonism*.³

It is beyond my ability to sufficiently elaborate on these lectures; the effort to do such would be like unto how Mormon describes the prophet Nephi's ministration prior to Christ's appearing to the Nephites:

"And he did minister many things unto them; and all of them cannot be written, and a part of them would not suffice, therefore they are not written in this book." (3 Nephi 7:17)

However, in order to convince the reader of the importance to listen/read these lectures in full, I present topical excerpts. I also include portions which concern the current spiritual state of the LDS Church, and what true followers of Christ must do/be to bring again Zion (underlined emphasis interpreted from source, other emphasis added):

Deep Reluctance to Do The Lectures at All

"[Giving these 10 lectures] was not my idea, and I can't tell you how happy my wife and I will be when we conclude this [year-long] project. When I say "unpleasant" it is probably an understatement....

"I cannot tell you how relieved I am [at the completion of each lecture]. Every time we get another evening done, I feel lighter by the moment.... I'm not here on my own errand. If I were doing what I wanted to do today, it wouldn't include any of you!...

"I wish someone else were doing this. I wish none of you had ever heard my name. I wish I were an obscure trial attorney doing what I enjoy doing.... I actually enjoy the difficulty of [trial work]. I don't enjoy this. I really don't. If I could hand this off to one of you and say, "Okay now you

take it and you run with this, and I will just cheer you on from the sidelines," I would never do more than whatever I could to support you. But it apparently falls to me to accomplish. So I proceed....

"I hate the fact these 10 talks will all be given by me. I wish they were 10 talks given by 10 different people. That way you would not say, "Well, he is something important." I am nothing. I am keenly aware of my own limitations. But I am also keenly aware of our Lord. When I have had discussions with Him, they have invariably involved parsing through the scriptures and Him explaining things to me. When I have inquired and gotten answers, it is because there are things in the scriptures I did not understand....

"I'm doing this to be faithful to the things that have been asked of me, not by man or men but by God. I don't even control the content of this material. I'm not parsing these scriptures because I think they are nice. I'm telling you what I know to be true, because it is what I've been asked to declare by Him whose presence I have been in.... Some of the content of today's talk came by revelation as recently as this morning....

"Whether you believe me sincere or not, I would much rather not have been asked to do this. But apparently, in the economy of God, no one else was willing to do it...."

Weak Things of the Earth, Small and Simple Means

"God came as one of the weak things of this world. The only way He is ever going to invite you is through one of the weak things of this world, speaking in weakness, asking you to be persuaded. It doesn't matter how earnest I am, I know my standing before God. What matters is your willingness to be persuaded. Over that I have no control, and want no control. I simply put the case as the Lord has put it to me, in the hopes that what He has to offer, and what He says need to be said will get through to you....

"I don't care if no one gives me credit for this message. It is the truth within the message that matters!... Messages matter. Perhaps only messages matter. Messages can be pure, filled with light, and from heaven itself, even if the one who delivers it can never match the purity of the things taught....

"It is almost always the case that the Lord uses simple things to confound the mighty. I can think of nothing smaller or simpler or less important than myself. Inside the great church to which I once belonged, I was obscure. However, I lived my religion, attended faithfully, served to the best of my ability, upheld church leaders with my prayers, paid tithes, fasted, observed the Word of Wisdom, and helped answer questions for those needing assistance with troubling issues. There was no reason to regard me as a rebel who should be singled out for discipline. Nevertheless, the

Lord chose to use a faithful and believing member to accomplish His design. Only someone who is devoted to His will could accomplish what the Lord had in His heart. Now He has accomplished it....

"I fear my weakness and my inadequacy. I fear offering up my own ideas. I do not want you to rely on me. Do not do that, when I am asking you not to do so. You rely on Him....

"I sincerely believe most of you here are just genuinely better people than I am. I have nothing but weakness to offer. God uses weak things because they must have faith to act while knowing they are unequal to the assignment...."

Hear the Words of God

"I know what I'm talking about. If you will ask of God and listen to the Spirit you will be able to determine whether I speak His words. I don't think it matters if I could reveal to you all things. *If you won't believe the things I can tell you, you certainly won't believe things I'm not telling you.*

"But I wouldn't blame you if you don't believe me. I really wouldn't. It is so hard to be believing. This world is so acidic and this environment is so toxic. It's very hard to believe. I think that's one of the reasons why Christ's account said ***it is a greater righteousness to believe than it is to know and to say....***

"[The Lord will] work with you – assuming that you came and are willing to hear, and assuming your heart is soft and you're willing to take in the things that God required to be included in what I'm saying today....

"I bear witness of Christ. I have seen Him! I know He lives! I know He is coming in judgment, and I know that before His coming, He has wanted some things to be declared. I have been as faithful as I can be in declaring the things asked of me. I sense keenly my own inadequacy. I beg you to overlook all that and not let me become a stumbling block. Look at the scriptures, look at the words of Christ, look at the explanations we got from Joseph, look at the things that are true, and go to Him in faith believing....

"Woe unto all those who say, "If you really are who you say you are..." when the voice of God is sounding in their ears. *They would have rejected the Lord as well. They would have crucified the Lord as well.* They are not His sheep because they do not hear His voice. If they were His sheep they would hear His voice....

"This isn't my material, it's the Lord's. I bear testimony of that and hope these words will be allowed to sink into your heart. They come from scripture, and they come from the Lord, they don't come from me....

"Let me [bear my] testimony and witness to you, that the things I've been saying, beginning in Boise and going on through Phoenix, the beginning date, the ending date, the content, the fact that there are 10 of them, the timeframe in which they are being delivered, the fact He wanted us to begin on the first day of the 40th year [anniversary of my baptism into the LDS Church], and He wanted us to end on the last day of the 40th year, those things are not my doing. He is the author of this all...."

Arguing With the Lord Over Doctrinal Matters

"I understand all the doctrinal arguments [against what I'm proclaiming]. I can make them all. I have made them all. And I've made them to the Lord. I've argued with Him on every point of doctrine, I've quoted to Him every scripture that any of you have advanced, and many more besides. The Lord has always borne testimony back, consistently. This stuff is true....

"There is no criticism made against me, no scriptural exegesis an orthodox member of the Church can advance that I did not advance in argument with the Lord. I have made better scriptural arguments against doing what I've [been commanded to do] than those that have been leveled at me. I had more scriptural proof to discourage the Lord from asking that I do any of this stuff. I argued with Him! And the Lord has explained to me, using the scriptures, the things I now declare to you....

"I defended the Church to the Lord. I was a latter-day "Pharisee," like Paul. I explained to Him why He needed to honor the Church, and asked that He let me do so also. He told me that they, not I, would sever the relationship. He told me they, and not I, would be accountable for that. And He told me that was in His heart for a long time beforehand to let the scriptures be fulfilled. I was His instrument to accomplish His purpose, which He has now done. Therefore when people shake their head and say, "What a shame! What a shame! He fell off the rails. He went his own way. He's filled with pride." Look, growing up in Idaho I would have said that's utter bullshit. Here, I will say it is bovine feces. There is nothing at all true to that. That is not who I am. That is not what is in my heart. It has never been what's in my heart. I was as faithful a Latter-day Saint as any who ever belonged to the LDS Church. I dare not depart from what the Lord requires, even when I find it painful to do His will. Someone must. And I know what I'm talking about. I don't care about your theories to the contrary, because He who is "more intelligent than them all" has declared to me the truth of these things....

"In my faith I was the strictest of true believing Latter-day Saints. Therefore when the Lord appeared to me, He appeared to a faithful, devoted member of the LDS Church. At first I believed He did so because I was a faithful Latter-day Saint! But the Lord knows more than do I. I've never won an argument with Him. ***I labored to reconcile all I knew with all that was asked of me, and found it impossible to please***

both Christ and the LDS Church. I made my choice. None of you are more devoted to the Brethren today than I once was. You say you are in "the Lord's true church" and I say unless you know Him, no institution or gathering will substitute. **Life eternal comes from knowing Him...."**

Anyone Can Have a Personal Visitation from Christ

"I bear testimony to you that Jesus Christ lives. He matters. I don't. He can save you. I can't. I can report on the glory of this Lord of ours but only He can dispense it. Of that I bear testimony, intending to be held to account for the testimony I bear....

"If I can help you better envision our Lord, let me describe His characteristics. Our Lord was and is affable, but He is not gregarious. He was approachable, and He is approachable, and is not aloof. He is patient. He is willing to guide and He is willing to teach. He is intelligent but He is not overbearing. He is humble in His demeanor, even though His power is undeniable. He is therefore, both a Lamb and a Lion....

"I bear testimony that our Lord lived and lives. I'm one of those who can say that I am a witness of that. I have seen His suffering. I have heard His voice. He doesn't intend that I be a solitary witness of Him, or Joseph be one. He intends for everyone of you to rise up and do as James bids you to do. If you lack wisdom, ask God. He gives to you, He gives to all of us liberally. He is real. It is His work to bring this stuff to pass. **The only thing that we can do is to offer to be a servant.** And I am confident that I am a poor one of those. But I am His servant. I serve Him however poorly, however offensively, however inadequately.... God has done nothing for Joseph Smith that He will not do for you....

You're hedging up the way of your own salvation... when you [think that] people in our time are not yet authorized to exercise faith in God unto salvation [i.e. receiving a personal visitation from Christ, thus being redeemed while in the flesh] – because you are authorized. I have done so. I have spoken with Him as a man speaks to another. He speaks in plain humility, reasoning as one man with another. He will reason with you....

"You'd be overwhelmed at the many insults that come in [my inbox]. But among all those emails, some are filled with gratitude. I can tell you there are a number who have borne testimony that since reading the book, *The Second Comforter*, and since taking seriously the promises made through Joseph and in the Scriptures, there are a number who like me, have a witness of our resurrected Lord. It can and it does happen. And hopefully as [you take in the lectures,] you will have confidence in your own ability to rise up....

"I have no interest in telling you all the things I have been shown. I am interested in letting Him show you, too. He's the Keeper of the Gate. He is the One who is Mighty to Save. He can tell you what you need to know, as

He has told me what I need to know.... I've seen the Father and I've seen the Son, and they both have spoken with me. The only reason I mentioned that is to give you confidence that it can happen. It should happen to you. You should be talking to them. They can tell you what you need to know...."

You are More Loveable, Better Than I

"For the life of me, I can't understand why you don't have the faith and confidence to realize that He loves you. And you are more lovable than am I. He probably finds it a lot easier to love you than me. I feel like I'm the idiot writing graffiti on the walls of heaven, and those who dwell there really wish I would just leave, and who wonder what he's doing here.... I think if you were to arrive there, there would be a lot more propriety to you rather than I....

"I came to the missionary discussions drunk. I grew up in Idaho. We were bored. The stuff you do when you're a bored young man.... It required the Atlantic Ocean for my baptism and not a drop less. So when I preach these things, it does not mean I model these things. There is so much about this that for me is an aspiration and not a reality. I live in constant fear of my own failure. I don't think I belong up here talking to you about this stuff. I don't think I am the most worthy in the room. I can tell you that the Lord forgives sins, and therefore makes allowances for those who are inadequate to fulfill the roles He has for us. It is perhaps because I recognize, (1) I am not well qualified, and (2) I fear my own failure more than anything else, that perhaps He trusts me. He knows I'm not going to go out and freelance, and I have not, and I do not, and I will not....

"I have read all of the accounts Joseph Smith left behind of his visits with the Lord. If you add them all together, still the Lord has spent more time with me than with Joseph. I attribute that my poor understanding, the hardness of my mind, my inadequacy as a pupil, my stubbornness and my stupidity....

"God answers prayers. Sometimes He forces you to make choices, and very often, I can't tell you how often, but very often I make the wrong choice. It is almost like I got a compass pointing south. I often choose wrong and then I get an answer correcting me. But I got an answer because I made a mistake. I have no clue why, other than the fact I was so converted and faithful to the LDS Church, the Lord chose me to accomplish what He has now done...."

The Faith and Cost Required to Come Unto Christ

"As I counted the cost of becoming a Mormon [when I was 18 years old], in effect, I was giving up all I ever knew, all the friends I ever had, my

own family. I counted the cost, and I became a Latter-day Saint in any event. What is really strange about the Lord's way of reckoning these things is that I've recently had to count the cost again. And then all those friends that I had now are plagued with yet another dilemma. Yet the Lord always accounts those trades for his purposes, because He's trying to save the individual. He's trying to save each one of us as individuals. I don't care what the cost is. Knowledge of God is worth whatever price you pay, no matter when, no matter what, no matter how often.

"If He takes away your family, and gives you a new family, and then He takes that family away again, it is a small price to pay. God will ask of you whatever He will ask of you. The only thing I can say is that no price you pay while tabernacled here is so great that you should withhold it from the altar. Give what He asks. Because it is only by giving what he asks of you, that you can have faith in him unto life and salvation...."

Everything Pertinent Is Already in the Scriptures

"I confine myself to the existing body of scripture when I teach. I suppose if I were to advance ideas which go beyond your scriptures you would be unable to accept them. Therefore I confine myself for your sakes. I do so in the hope that you will be able to bear how great things the Lord is doing....

"Do not be at all surprised if the subject about which you need to converse with the Lord consists almost entirely of a discussion about the scriptures. Do not be surprised if an angel comes to minister to you and the topic upon which the angel would like to converse involves the scriptures. Do not be surprised if the Lord authorizes someone to deliver a message and the message consists of expounding the scriptures....

"I could write my own Gospel. I could bear my own testimony. I could invent a new narrative about our Lord, if it were necessary to do so. But I will tell you the only thing that is necessary is to open the scriptures and read them....

"I use the scriptures because the scriptures are the standard by which you should judge the truth. I use the scriptures because they say the things the Lord would want to have said right now today. I don't need to appeal to having any authority, because I can read to you the scriptures and point you to the things that have already been revealed. I know these things are true. You would not believe me if I told you all I know. It is not necessary for you to do so. If the words I speak do not convince you, let the scriptures convince you. If the words in the scriptures don't convince you, then get on your knees and pray and ask God, who giveth to all men liberally. (James 1:5) Do the same thing Joseph did that started the ball rolling....

"Some of you refuse to say, "Perhaps the words of scripture means

something different and more intensely personal than I have ever taken them to mean before.” They do. They are for you. God wants you to respond to them....”

Prophecies About Leadership Corruption Fulfilled

“Now I need to read you something. This is Ezekiel 33:25 to 34:31 –

“Wherefore say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; Ye eat with the blood, and lift up your eyes toward your idols, and shed blood: and shall ye possess the land? Ye stand upon your sword, ye work abomination, and ye defile every one his neighbour’s wife: and shall ye possess the land?

“Say thou thus unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; As I live, surely they that are in the wastes shall fall by the sword, and him that is in the open field will I give to the beasts to be devoured, and they that be in the forts and in the caves shall die of the pestilence. For I will lay the land most desolate, and the pomp of her strength shall cease; and the mountains of Israel shall be desolate, that none shall pass through. Then shall they know that I am the Lord, when I have laid the land most desolate because of all their abominations which they have committed.

“Also, thou son of man, the children of thy people still are talking against thee by the walls and in the doors of the houses, and speak one to another, every one to his brother, saying, Come, I pray you, and hear what is the word that cometh forth from the Lord. And they come unto thee as the people cometh, and they sit before thee as my people, and they hear thy words, but they will not do them: for with their mouth they shew much love, but their heart goeth after their covetousness. And, lo, thou art unto them as a very lovely song of one that hath a pleasant voice, and can play well on an instrument: for they hear thy words, but they do them not.

“And when this cometh to pass, (lo, it will come,) then shall they know that a prophet hath been among them.

“And the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel, prophesy, and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God unto the shepherds; Woe be to the shepherds of Israel that do feed themselves! should not the shepherds feed the flocks? Ye eat the fat, and ye clothe you with the wool, ye kill them that are fed: but ye feed not the flock. The diseased have ye not strengthened, neither have ye healed that which was sick, neither have ye bound up that which was broken, neither have ye brought again that which was driven away, neither have ye sought that which was lost; but with force and with cruelty have ye ruled them.

"And they were scattered, because there is no shepherd: and they became meat to all the beasts of the field, when they were scattered. My sheep wandered through all the mountains, and upon every high hill: yea, my flock was scattered upon all the face of the earth, and none did search or seek after them.

"Therefore, ye shepherds, hear the word of the Lord; As I live, saith the Lord God, surely because my flock became a prey, and my flock became meat to every beast of the field, because there was no shepherd, neither did my shepherds search for my flock, but the shepherds fed themselves, and fed not my flock;

"Therefore, O ye shepherds, hear the word of the Lord; Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against the shepherds; and I will require my flock at their hand, and cause them to cease from feeding the flock; neither shall the shepherds feed themselves any more; for I will deliver my flock from their mouth, that they may not be meat for them.

"For thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I, even I, will both search my sheep, and seek them out. As a shepherd seeketh out his flock in the day that he is among his sheep that are scattered; so will I seek out my sheep, and will deliver them out of all places where they have been scattered in the cloudy and dark day. And I will bring them out from the people, and gather them from the countries, and will bring them to their own land, and feed them upon the mountains of Israel by the rivers, and in all the inhabited places of the country. I will feed them in a good pasture, and upon the high mountains of Israel shall their fold be: there shall they lie in a good fold, and in a fat pasture shall they feed upon the mountains of Israel. I will feed my flock, and I will cause them to lie down, saith the Lord God. I will seek that which was lost, and bring again that which was driven away, and will bind up that which was broken, and will strengthen that which was sick: but I will destroy the fat and the strong; I will feed them with judgment.

"And as for you, O my flock, thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I judge between cattle and cattle, between the rams and the he goats. Seemeth it a small thing unto you to have eaten up the good pasture, but ye must tread down with your feet the residue of your pastures? and to have drunk of the deep waters, but ye must foul the residue with your feet? And as for my flock, they eat that which ye have trodden with your feet; and they drink that which ye have fouled with your feet.

"Therefore thus saith the Lord God unto them; Behold, I, even I, will judge between the fat cattle and between the lean cattle. Because ye have thrust with side and with shoulder, and pushed all the diseased with your horns, till ye have scattered them abroad; Therefore will I save my flock, and they shall no more be a prey; and I will judge between cattle and cattle.

"And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even my servant David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd. And I the Lord will be their God, and my servant David a prince among them; I the Lord have spoken it. And I will make with them a covenant of peace, and will cause the evil beasts to cease out of the land: and they shall dwell safely in the wilderness, and sleep in the woods. And I will make them and the places round about my hill a blessing; and I will cause the shower to come down in his season; there shall be showers of blessing.

"And the tree of the field shall yield her fruit, and the earth shall yield her increase, and they shall be safe in their land, and shall know that I am the Lord, when I have broken the bands of their yoke, and delivered them out of the hand of those that served themselves of them. And they shall no more be a prey to the heathen, neither shall the beast of the land devour them; but they shall dwell safely, and none shall make them afraid.

"And I will raise up for them a plant of renown, and they shall be no more consumed with hunger in the land, neither bear the shame of the heathen any more. Thus shall they know that I the Lord their God am with them, and that they, even the house of Israel, are my people, saith the Lord God. And ye my flock, the flock of my pasture, are men, and I am your God, saith the Lord God."

"I was required to read that, but I am not required and will not comment. You wouldn't want to hear my comments anyway. But you should apply these verses to us today..."

Adoration of Any Mortal is Idolatry

"I also think applying extraordinary titles [i.e. "prophet, seer, revelator"] are less impressive than having a man preach the truth. If the content of his sermon is prophetic, then everyone can decide for themselves the measure of the messenger....

"I can think of nothing that would offend the Lord more than a mere man inviting adoration. It is wrong. Adoration should be reserved for Christ, not dispensed to mere servants. I don't want anything but your criticism....

"Even if a man is sent to declare Him to you, focus should be on the Lord, not on His messenger. Only a false messenger, who seeks approval, and who hopes for gain, will divert attention from the Lord to himself. A true messenger would not dare do so...."

LDS Leaders Seek to Hide Their Counsels/Works

"One of conditions of the employment agreement general authorities must sign is that all of their diaries become the property of the Church once they die. This is to conceal their counsels from God and man. They do not want their affairs to be made public. If you knew, many of you would be horrified at what you would learn. A great deal of information about what went on in church history, spilled out into the public when the diaries became public. Church Historian Leonard Arrington opened up the archives. D. Michael Quinn did a pioneering job collecting, analyzing the journals and diaries, then publishing history we had never seen before. Although he has been vilified, much of LDS history now written relies on D. Michael Quinn's research and work. ***The oftentimes-shocking information contained in the diaries, journals, letters and previously unpublished talks have shone a completely different light on LDS history.*** To staunch the flow of information, the church now requires the private journals and diaries to become church property; to better conceal from public view what has happened....

"[They] seek deep to hide their counsels from the Lord; and their works shall be in the dark. And the blood of the saints shall cry from the ground against them. ***Yea, they have all gone out of the way; they have become corrupted.*** Because of pride, and because of false teachers, and false doctrine, their churches have become corrupted, and their churches are lifted up; because of pride they are puffed up. They rob the poor because of their fine sanctuaries; they rob the poor because of their fine clothing; and they persecute the meek and the poor in heart, because in their pride they are puffed up. They wear stiff necks and high heads; yea, and because of ***pride***, and ***wickedness***, and ***abominations***, and ***whoredoms***, they have all gone astray save it be a few, who are the humble followers of Christ; nevertheless, they are led, that in many instances they do err because they are taught by the precepts of men." [2 Nephi 28:9-14, emphasis added]

"How might one better "hide their counsels from the Lord," than to conceal all the money that is gathered from the tithes of His people? How better than to hide from view all the revenues paid to the authorities of the church, and even admonish the paid mission presidents that they must never disclose the revenue benefits that they are receiving? How better to hide your counsel, than to conceal it from the very sheep that are being shorn? By the people who sit in positions of authority, claiming they have the right to come to the stake that I lived in, as a member of the quorum of the 12, and hand my membership record to the stake president and insist that there be a disciplinary council held against me.

"The church seeks deep to hide their councils. I participated in that conspiracy when I agreed I would conceal that ***Elder Russell M. Nelson***

of the quorum of the 12 came and called my new stake president and handed to him my membership record, instructing him that I must be disciplined. And to his credit, president Hunt took 18 months fighting that decision, because he knew I was an innocent man, before he submitted. Before relenting President Hunt was called in repeatedly, and finally “instructed” using the Church Handbook of Instructions telling him he had no choice but to hold a disciplinary council. ***I will no longer participate in concealing the councils kept from the public! It is wrong!*** President Hunt should not do it. Elder Russell Nelson should not do it. None of them should do it! ***They should come clean and admit my excommunication was only from the top, although it required the stake to relent and impose their sentence....***

“Seeking deep to hide their counsels from the Lord, and their works shall be in the dark,” is exactly what the authorities of the LDS Church now do! It is exactly a description of the hierarchy of LDS Mormonism. ***Put your budgets online! Disclose your revenue! Show us what you do with the poor in contrast to what you do with the rest of the revenue. Don't hide it. We do not even know what the total annual revenue is.*** The Auditor's Report only affirms the first presidency and twelve know and approved what was spent. That is a shallow assurance indeed....”

The Lord Revoked LDS Authority as of May 2014

“Last general conference, the entire First Presidency, the 12, the 70, and all other general authorities and auxiliaries, voted to sustain those who abused their authority in casting me out of the church. ***At that moment, the Lord ended all claims of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, to claim it is led by the priesthood.*** They have not practiced what He requires.

“The Lord has brought about His purposes. This has been in His heart all along. He has chosen to use small means to accomplish it, but He always uses the smallest of means to fulfill His purposes. None of this was my doing. The Lord's strange act, was not, could not, be planned by me. Was not, could not, have been controlled by me. It was not anticipated by me, or even understood by me, until after the Lord had accomplished His will, and made it apparent to me on the evening of May 1, 2014. He alone has done this. He is the author of all of this....

“Working within the system, I did everything I could to preserve the doctrine, to preserve the truth, to testify of Christ, to teach the precepts, to remember the covenant. ***I would still do that today if I had been left alone by the church's highest leadership.*** Clearly, those of you who think I am a rebel don't get it. God knew exactly what He was doing. I would have taken a bullet for Spencer Kimball. I was among the most devoted of Latter-day Saints....

"Sometimes I'm amazed at my own idiocy, because I have argued with God one time preferring Mormon doctrine to the truth! Sometimes I think that the Lord had that in His heart all along. He wanted to qualify me in a way that would make me typical of every man who finds himself in the predicament of the Latter-day Saints. He wanted to qualify me to say, "You claim to hold authority. I held authority equal. If I did not abuse mine and you've abused yours, then the kingdom has been taken from you." But it's been taken from you and not left. It still exists. Just no longer where the institution claims it exists....

"Don't think you have to defend me. I would rather hear what critics have to say. Not because what they say is true, but because it gives me an opportunity to understand what they fear in me. Much of the criticism leveled at me is because they fear I am something that I am not...."

Eternal Ramifications in How One Responds

"If I am telling the truth, then how you respond is important. ***I would ask you, for your own sake, to not falsely accuse me.*** You do not need to respond to me. You do not need to like me. You do not ever need to mention my name again. But if what I am saying is the truth, you need to respond to it. This is between you and God, not you and me. You need to choose how you will live your life from this day forward. ***The Lord is coming to judge the quick and the dead. You need to get right with Him....***

"Either I am a liar and you ought to forget everything I've said, or I have been sent by someone greater than I am. If I have been sent and you reject and quibble over the things I declare to you, it is at your peril! It ought to be that way. I ought to be damned if I'm a pretender, and I ought to be damned and rejected by God if I'm saying things about which I know nothing! But I bear witness to you I know what I'm talking about. I have no reason to lie to you. I have no reason to pay to reserve a place to speak to you, and ask nothing of you but to listen. It requires a sacrifice to do what I am doing. I have no other reason to do this than to tell you the truth. Joseph Smith testified to these things and I am come as a second witness. Therefore you now have two proclaiming the same doctrine....

"I recognize that I am not the best messenger. I wish I had the voice of an archangel. I wish I could do something to soften the hearts of you all. ***Some of you will never respond to the Lord because you cannot overcome your preoccupation with me. That saddens me and I regret that deeply. But that is your choice, and you can choose differently.*** Christ is in fact holy, and I am deeply aware of the fact that I am not. I can't redeem any of you, but He can. I can testify of Him, but when it comes down to it, you should be able to feel faith. You should be able to feel something important was communicated by God today....

"I have never said this publicly, but because of what I think will ensue after this talk I am going to say it – not for my sake, and certainly not for the sake of anyone who believes the truth or who has the Spirit, but I say it only to benefit those who may view things completely otherwise. **The Lord has said to me in His own voice, "I will bless those who bless you, and curse those who curse you."** Therefore, I want to caution those who disagree with me, to feel free, to feel absolutely free to make the case against what I say – feel free to disagree, and make your contrary arguments; if you believe I err, then expose the error and denounce it – but take care; take care about what you say concerning me for your sake, not for mine.... I live with constant criticism. I can take it. But I do not want you provoking divine ire by unfortunately chosen words if I can persuade you against it....

"Your relationship [with God] and your accountability is not to me, it's to Him. Therefore, be persuaded. Please, for your own sake, be persuaded...."

Reject the "Strongman" Model

"We have so many pretenders.... I've seen enough "Strongmen" come and go for a lifetime. **I am not anyone's "Strongman." I will never be anyone's "Strongman," period. It is repulsive to me. It is morally corrupt.** In this world, as soon as you create an institution – as soon as you have anything other than people voluntarily working together towards an end, as soon as you have anything other than an idea – you have corruption....

"If we are going to have Zion, someone must warn you of the "Strongmen" who are ready to exploit your hope. Beware of the "Strongman." Watch your wallet when you encounter one. If you're a lady, watch your zipper or your buttons. **I'm telling you "Strongmen" have an insatiable appetite for self-aggrandizement, and that's not me.** I don't want that, and I don't welcome that. I don't advocate that, and I warn you against it.... It's wrong to do the things that have been done, and it's wrong to preach and practice the things that "Strongmen" preach and practice in the name of the Lord...."

The Lord Needs Penitent People, Not an Institution

"I am not going to be your leader. I am not going to form a church. I am not going to do that because it would not work anyway.... If someone came up and hit me in the head with a hammer, and six months from now I'm organizing a church asking you to give me women, and pay me your tithing, you remember what I said today, before they hit me in the head with a hammer. I'm intact mentally today. I may be crazy then....

"I'm not going to start another church, and I don't intend to compete with the Latter-day Saints, and I don't intend to overthrow them. That is God's work, and it will be up to Him to decide how useful the various Mormon churches are to His purposes. But it is clear to me we do not need another church. ***The only thing we need are penitent people. The only thing we need are people whose hearts are right.*** If someone is here from a Baptist church, then go attend your Baptist Church. Go attend your Mormon church. There's good in all churches, but study the doctrines of the Restoration and get to know God, and then go and do what He would have you do....

"The LDS church introduced me a to a form of cleanliness in living for which I have nothing but high regard. If every one of you chooses to remain active in the LDS Church while you do these other things, you will not hear me complaining or criticizing. You will hear me praising you and respecting your standards. It is a community trying to do good, but "they are led, that in many instances they do err," and you should not partake of the errors. ***Accept whatever is good, and hold onto whatever is good, but continually seek for something higher and better....***"

Preserving the Restoration, Zion Will Come

"God has to say to us, "This is what I want you to do." If no one else will say it to you, I am saying it to you. Everything that has been said in this talk, which began in Boise and concludes here today, everything that has been said is, in fact, exactly what happened when God offered something to an earlier generation through Joseph. ***He, God, is offering something again, right now, in our day, to you, to any that will hear, to any that will listen. The work is beginning again....***

"Joseph bore testimony of God. I bear testimony of Joseph. If Joseph was one witness, I am a second. I have used Joseph's revelations and sermons to teach today. Believe in them, for they are true....

"It's never been about me. It's been about the doctrines of the Restoration. It has always been about the truth that rolled forth through the prophet Joseph Smith. This is about the acts of God offering salvation to us in our day. ***Ultimately, it will be about the establishment of a city of refuge. Not now, but by and by.*** There aren't enough converted yet, it's too weak. But in that day, there still won't be a need for another church. There still won't be some reason to say, 'I want to sustain someone.' ***God and God alone will be sustained in that day, not me and not any other man....***

"God is moving systematically. He is taking the measure of the Latter-day Saints. His hand is about to move again in the affairs of men. We have a window. ***This is your dispensation. You are accountable. Those prophecies spoken to Joseph Smith by the angel Moroni in his***

room aren't going to fulfill themselves. There has to be someone who has faith. There has to be someone who rises up. And when he set His hand and He invites you to join in, He wants you to know Him. When He sets that in motion, then you need to respond. Not to me, not to any man. You need to respond to Him. This is His work. He and only He will organize it. He and only He will roll it forth. But... there has to be a people prepared. And that requires that faith return to the earth again....

"Look, these Scriptures, these invitations, these prophecies... this message is inviting you to do what was originally prophesied as this dispensation began. We looked at those prophecies in the beginning in Boise, Idaho. The game's afoot. The challenge is underway. The opportunity is here. ***There was a price that had to be paid first involving several generations of delay. We could not kill a man like Joseph through the conspiracy of his followers without forfeiting an opportunity. But that moment has come to an end. And a new moment is upon us. And if you'll hear it, I can declare to you, in the name of our Lord, that the day of salvation has once again arrived! Have faith! Be believing! He is real!...*** Come to Him! Seek for Him! Have faith in Him! You have more reason to have faith and confidence in Him right now than the brother of Jared did in his day....

"However improbable or unlikely all of this may seem to those of you who spend any time at all thinking about this, it was just as improbable when John was baptizing. It was just as improbable when Christ taught. It was just as improbable when Joseph Smith said, "I had seen a vision; I knew it, and I knew that God knew it, and I could not deny it, neither dared I do it." It may seem improbable, but it is true!...

"He intends to call, in the plural, servants to fulfill what needs to be done in the last days. He does intend to bring again Zion. That will be his, and not a man's work.... Zion will come. Whether it comes in your day or not is entirely dependent upon you...."

Challenges in Bringing Again Zion

"We must first remember and observe. Preserving the Restoration requires us to be very familiar with the scriptures of the Restoration. ***At present we should fear most our ignorance of the scriptures....***

"If there are a thousand different [localized] fellowships [of Christ], each will have a unique challenge. You are asked to proceed without being correlated, free to work out your own way to follow the Lord. There will be some people who are "complainers" who will bring complaints with them into your groups. They need your love and patience. You may be able to help them overcome a life-long personality issue that can be cured only by your kindness to one another. ***Do not be discouraged by the problems. Prayerfully confront them.*** Do not ignore or hide them.

Confess them openly and be patient with one another in finding the solution....

"Some people have suffered from lifelong abuse by religious authorities, including their parents. They have never had a healthy religious experience. The fact they remain willing to try is itself cause for hope and encouragement. Help them. Love them. Let them find peace among you, for that is what we are asked to do: Be willing to mourn with those that mourn, comfort those that stand in need of comfort, stand as a witness to one another of God at all times and of all places, and bear one another's burdens that they may be light. Suspend judgment and give such assistance as you can to one another. Maybe what they will need most is your listening ear and open heart....

"There will always be 10,000 voices that rise up in opposition to say, "Lo here" and "Lo there," and "come and hearken to my precept." I don't ask you to hearken to anything other than what is in the scriptures.... False spirits will be among you. Prideful and pretentious people will want to impress you to give them honor. Honor God instead. Do not let a new revelation displace your attention away from the scriptures. They are sufficient for our day, as these ten sessions have demonstrated, I hope. I have expounded the scriptures as Moroni did to Joseph; and as Christ did on the road to Emmaus the day of His resurrection...."

The Earth and Its People Are Waxing Old

"I don't care where you look, I don't care what society you look at, I don't care what economy you observe, what culture you observe – the earth and all of the people on her are waxing old like a garment. And do you know what they do with garments that are old? They are burned...."

Priesthood Leadership Confined to Men, For Now

"In my disgust and personal preference, I asked the Lord that priesthood get extended beyond the confines of the men who have continually abused and neglected it. I was told that priesthood is confined to men because of the Fall and the conditions ordained by God at that time. Until we reverse [the trend of unworthiness in leadership by men] in the Millennium, [this confinement] is going to remain, as to the ordinances thus far given in public.

"I asked the Lord to change that order [i.e. to permit both men and women to conduct ordinances]. It is not going to change. I then asked the Lord that if only men were to hold priesthood for our public ordinances, then could only women vote to sustain them. The saying pleased the Lord, for it was already in His heart. But He said to me: "There shall be a minimum of seven women to sustain the man in any vote, and if the man

is married, his wife shall be one of them.”... In all such matters it has been my experience that with time how the Lord orders things proves to be exceptionally wise, even if we do not immediately see the wisdom....”

Closer to the Lord Today More than Ever

“Some people say [about me], “Well, he was enlightened at one point, and then he fell victim to a dark and evil spirit, and now he's an apostate!” I am closer to the Lord at this moment, than I've been at any time when I was a member of the Church. ***I know His will more today, and I understand it better than I have ever understood it before.*** It is not a different spirit than the one that brought me into the church, and it is not a different spirit than the one that informed [the contents of the book] *The Second Comforter, Conversing with the Lord Through the Veil*. At the time I wrote that, I was keenly aware of the fact that from among us, there were only a few who were the humble followers of Christ. I understood that we were nevertheless, led, that in many instances, we err....”

A Second Witness of Denver's Lectures

“In order to conform to the burden laid down by God and scripture, I need to turn time over to Keith Henderson. He has something which must necessarily be added as part of all this.

“[Keith Henderson speaking:] 52 years ago, I came to this area [Phoenix, Arizona] on a mission for the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. I came to bear testimony of Jesus Christ and the Book of Mormon and the Prophet Joseph Smith. Today I stand before this people again of this area, to again bear testimony. My growth in these 52 years has been great, but my testimony still remains very simple.

My name is Keith Henderson. At the time I bear this testimony, I am still an active member in good standing with the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. I am grateful for this opportunity that I've received to lift up my voice and bear my witness and testimony before the Most High God, before His holy angels, and before all of you, who would be witnesses with me that this talk given this day – by our friend and God's servant – is a message given from God to all men and women everywhere, who will hear or read.

“I so witness that I know that it is. I have attended every portion of this talk, making 10 in total. I have listened time after time to the recordings and I've read every transcript made up until this one. I bear solemn testimony that I have received the message by God's voice of their truthfulness, and also of His desire for us to believe in and act upon these things that have been spoken. I stand as another witness with Denver, in

DENVER SNUFFER

the law of witnesses, that these things are true. And I expect to be held accountable for this in the days and the eternity to come, before God and my Father and to all men. I bear this testimony humbly and solemnly, but in the power of the most Holy Priesthood. In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, Amen."

I give the reader a third witness to these lectures by Denver.

I bear witness to the truth and the divine origin of Denver Snuffer's words from these ten lectures, which he informs is merely one single lecture divided into ten parts. I know that Denver received the command from God Almighty to deliver the message he gave us. I would have attended each and every one – and I would have rejoiced in hearing them in person as my ancestors rejoiced in listening first-hand to Joseph Smith's discourses – but due to my living on the other side of the earth, and not being wealthy nor free of full-time responsibilities, it was an impossibility.

For nearly 200 years, we "Mormons" have been honoring men who (we hope/trust) are called via Holy Ghost inspiration to lead the Church. For the first 100 years of the Church's existence, only one of them was ever referred to as "prophet," "seer," and "revelator" – Joseph Smith. Over the past 100 years, those three sacred terms have been increasingly and liberally applied to *any* man who "ascends" to one of the top 15 leadership positions in the Church. We comfortably assume that God will only reveal His will for all to a man, or groups of men, atop a hierarchical structure – and yet, since the death of Joseph Smith, that ceased. Gone immediately thereafter were any "Thus sayeth the Lord" widely-circulated and/or revelations to the body of saints. For all his thunderings and audacity about the Lord's will concerning the Mormons, even Brigham Young never received a single direct revelation from the Lord anywhere on par with what Joseph received regularly. Any visions or revelations that any LDS leaders have been given were given in regards to their own personal salvation, or in response to their own righteous queries – nothing more than what each one of us is privileged to receive. One would greatly benefit from revisiting published Church history and scrutinizing why all such things ended after the deaths of Joseph and Hyrum Smith, and searching into exactly who was responsible for precisely those two gentlemen's deaths (as well as the subsequent suspicious death of their brother, Samuel, only weeks later).

Nearly 200 years after the Heavens went silent, the voice of God is being broadcast to all once again. I would say that Denver is no where near the man Joseph Smith was, and I'm quite certain that Denver would be the first to emphatically agree, but that does not change the fact that God has raised Denver up to be His servant today, and to do the work and deliver the

message that he has given us.

Whether or not Denver is the “mighty and strong” one who will come and “set in order the house of God,”⁴ prophesied of in D&C 85:7, I have no idea – and I really don't care. I prefer Denver's own words on the matter:

“The identity of who the Lord will send will be known only when that person has done the work. No one who has failed to accomplish the work can claim the identity. Vanity is no substitute for doing the works of God.”

Whoever that person will be isn't important. What is important is that Denver's message is true, that the words and explanations in the ten-part lecture come directly from Christ, and that he is commanded of God to do this work.

I testify that Denver's words are from Christ, and that he is doing the work that the Lord commanded him to do. Should fault-finders refer to me as a “Snufferite,” know that *I do not follow* Denver Snuffer. I follow Christ, and Christ alone. I seek Him and His will. I do not follow *any* man. I listen for the voice of my Master. When a man speaks the words of Christ, and the Holy Spirit testifies of the truth of what he says, I will listen.

We are all commanded to listen for our Master's voice. Do not let a negative opinion of the man who has been called by the Lord stop up your ears to the Lord's voice which comes through him. The self-righteous and hyper-critical “Christians” of Joseph Smith's era made that exact mistake with him. LDS members have no problem looking back and judging them as foolish and proud – and yet what does that say of those LDS members today who dismiss Denver, in all his weakness and plainness, in preference to a polished, corrupted, institutionalized hierarchy which spews ten hours worth of empty warm-fuzzies twice a year?

-
- 1 Source: <http://denversnuffer.blogspot.tw/2013/10/understanding-how-to-read-pthg.html>
 - 2 Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Denver_C._Snuffer,_Jr
 - 3 Alternative to the *Forty Years In Mormonism* lectures, Denver has since published a book titled *Preserving the Restoration*, which includes not only the content of the lectures but also additional related material and insight worth considering.
 - 4 D&C 85:7 reads: “And it shall come to pass that I, the Lord God, will send one mighty and strong, holding the scepter of power in his hand, clothed with light for a covering, whose mouth shall utter words, eternal words; while his bowels shall be a fountain of truth, to set in order the house of God, and to arrange by lot the inheritances of the saints whose names are found, and the names of their fathers, and of their children, enrolled in the book of the law of God”

Journal Excerpt 15 - April 2012

I have been internally miserable for months, but I don't show it outwardly. But inwardly, I have been refusing to listen to anything I receive anymore.

Over the past few years, I've had occasional strong promptings that something was going to occur. In the past 24 months, no less than three times I've been overcome with a strong feeling that a terrible earthquake will occur in the near future. Each time this kind of thing happened, I prayed considerably about it. I never received any stupor of thought. If anything, the feeling that something would occur on a specific date, even a specific time of day, was reinforced.

The first time this occurred, I decided to be faithful and take precautions. In the morning before I went to work, I gathered all our computer equipment and placed them securely together, surrounded by pillows and couch cushions. My wife shook her head, thought I was crazy. "Just to be sure" I told her. And - the earthquake didn't happen that day. Not anywhere in the world.

Two other times this has happened. The second time I once again took precautions, but not so obviously. However, I did mention to my daughter to just keep it in the back of her mind - if there's an earthquake, at least she's mentally ready for it, if not, all the better. No earthquake.

The third time this happened was the worst. It wasn't much later than the Nelson letter incident. I felt both a date and even a time of day it would occur. This time I was extremely skeptical, and did not want to consider it valid, no matter how strong the feeling. Yet, as I did before, I prayed about it. A lot. On the morning of, as I was praying for confirmation, I received a voice-in-my-mind kind of communication. I don't remember it word-for-word, but I recall that it went along the lines of "Yea, even this afternoon I shall shake mightily the earth. Prepare thy heart and prepare to assist those in need." I was sure it was going to occur this time. I even went so far as to pull one of my co-workers aside and share my feeling that a massive earthquake will occur in the early afternoon. She was very appreciative and nice about it, she was touched that I would be willing to risk derision and share this kind of gut-feeling with her.

And then, nothing happened. The earth was not shaken. Anywhere on the face of it. I think it was a day where not one spot on the earth had the slightest tremor.

That did it. My confidence in my ability to discern

anything took a tremendous blow. In my quiet moments - while commuting to work, or in the shower - I sobbed and prayed and fought feelings of betrayal. It felt as though the line of reliable Heavenly communication had been hacked, and I had been receiving erroneous messages and inspiration for a while - for how long, I had no clue. And the Lord had allowed it. He just let me be deceived, despite my begging and pleading with Him to help me to better discern. It was borderline maddening.

I disappointingly prayed to God for weeks, telling Him that I'll never trust another voice in my mind again, so don't bother trying to communicate that way. Obviously, either the adversary or some over-developed, over-active part of my brain was messing with me.

Everything, absolutely everything spiritual that had occurred to me throughout my life was thrown into doubt and questioning. It was as if a massive, unfinished mosaic had exploded into thousands of pieces, and each and every single piece had to be re-examined and re-analyzed in scrutinous detail. Oh, the irony! Here I am working on a book subtitled "Be Ye Not Deceived", and I no longer have confidence in my own ability to discern what personal revelation is from the Lord and what is not!

For nearly three months, my heart was cold - not frozen, but definitely not open to anything. It wasn't a lack of confidence in the Lord, it was a complete lack of confidence in myself. I struggled not to feel resentment towards God. Nevertheless, any time I began to receive any kind of revelation, I shut down. I would distract myself and not bother with it. Eventually, as I sorted through all the pieces again, I gradually began to build confidence in myself once again - hindsight and extreme scrutiny of all my experiences helped me re-establish and restructure my ability to discern.

Nevertheless, during that period, the thing that haunted me the most was the letter to Russel M. Nelson. I spent months dwelling on it, convinced that it had to be an extremely elaborate deception. I was in borderline-awe at how identical the whisperings of the adversary mimicked the Lord's. I was aghast that the adversary had insisted that [my relative] would obtain Nelson's home address for me, and that she actually did. I did all I could in my own searching, and none of the addresses I found were the same as what she gave me. And it was the correct address - my letter arrived there. How I cursed myself that I could not discern this elaborate fraud!

This haunted me so terribly, that I eventually broke down and wrote an apology letter to Brother Nelson. A five-paged apology letter. I went into great detail into what had occurred, my tremendous misgivings about it throughout, that it was told to me that a relative would provide me his home address. I told him how embarrassed I was about the failed predictions included at the end. It was miserable to write it all out.

Obviously, I didn't send it to his home. I sent it to the Church Office Building, where I'm sure some employee read through it. Who knows what happened to it after that. All I know is that I didn't receive any reply whatsoever. I didn't want a reply anyway - just wanted to get all that misery off my mind and move on.

I didn't think anything about it after that, until last week. For the book I've been doing research lately on secret grips. I've spent a lot of time searching images of world leaders and other influential individuals giving strange handshakes and whatnot. To my profound sorrow, I've found a high-resolution photo of President Monson reciprocating an esoteric grip with President George W. Bush.... I've also found BYUtv footage of President Hinckley giving the same grip to V.P. Dick Cheney.... I've even found an old black and white photo of an elderly President McKay greeting President Kennedy, and they are exchanging a common Masonic grip, which is identical to one of the sacred keys given in the temple endowment. I would have suspected the image was tampered with, but it was published on Deseret News's website, from a collection of archival photos of Kennedy's visit to SLC they recently republished online....

I cannot begin to express my horror at the implications of what all this means. I cannot deny that the wolves have infiltrated the highest levels of the Church. I absolutely CANNOT deny that the Church is in a very serious state of apostacy - to what degree I have no idea yet, but the worst case scenario would not surprise me in the least.

And now, my thoughts have returned to my letter to Elder Nelson. How many of the First Presidency, of the Twelve, of the Seventies are infiltrators, too?? Is Nelson one? Or is he unwittingly surrounded by them and the Lord's message from me was to warn him into discovering his awful situation? Is all this why the Lord put his name in my patriarchal blessing two decades ago??

And the horror I felt after that - to realize at that

moment that, indeed, the Lord had truly given me that message to give to him. The Lord painstakingly, patiently, lovingly, empathetically chose to deal with me and all my trepidations and misgivings about sending that letter! And then I chalked it all up to being horribly, calculatingly deceived! I judged all that miraculous, patient communication - and the miraculous manner of receiving the home address - as all from the adversary! And then I wrote an extensive apology letter to a possible-Luciferian-infiltrator, telling him that I was deceived!

I cannot put my shame into words strong enough.

I think I can comprehend somewhat the shame that Peter must have suffered after having denied Christ three times.

UPON MY HOUSE SHALL IT BEGIN

Verily, verily, I say unto you, darkness covereth the earth, and gross darkness the minds of the people,

*and **all flesh has become corrupt** before my face.*

Behold, vengeance cometh speedily upon the inhabitants of the earth,

a day of wrath,

a day of burning,

a day of desolation,

of weeping,

of mourning,

and of lamentation;

and as a whirlwind it shall come upon all the face of the earth, saith the Lord.

And upon my house shall it begin,

*and from my house shall it go forth, saith the Lord; **First among those among you, saith the Lord, who have professed to know my name and have not known me, and have blasphemed against me in the midst of my house***

– The Lord Jesus Christ¹

A Day of Wrath: The Last-Days Prophecy of Heber C. Kimball

From the journal of Amanda Wilcox²:

"During the latter part of May, 1868, President Heber C Kimball [First Counselor to President Brigham Young] and I were standing in front of his place, on North Main. After a few moments conversation he turned to me and said, 'Now, Sister Amanda, I am going to tell you something.' Looking south, he observed, 'What do you see?' I told him that I did not know any of the places on Main street except Brother Wells', Bishop Hunter's, William Jennings', Walker Brothers' and the Tithing Office. He then remarked, 'I will begin with Brother Wells' place. It will be torn down and a six-story building will be erected on that corner. [Templeton Building] All of the houses south of that place will be removed to make room for buildings that will average from three to six stories high.

"Now we will come back from Fourth South to the Council House corner. Here a large fire proof building will be erected with an addition to it on the west. [Union Pacific Building and Annex] Where the Tithing Office now stands will be constructed a building that will be a credit and honor to the inhabitants of this whole intermountain region. [Hotel Utah] The land around the Temple block will be owned by the Saints and this will become a City of beautiful buildings.

"Next comes the Temple. What do you expect to see there?' I told him that I expected to see the Savior, Joseph, Hyrum and others. He said, 'Have you seen the Temple picture?' I said that I had not. He then put his hand on my shoulder and said, 'Now look.' 'Oh, how white and beautiful,' I exclaimed. He then removed his hand and the vision was gone. He then asked me if I knew where the Prophets Joseph and Hyrum were. I told him that I knew, and he said, 'This must be kept a secret.'

"He told me that the trial of the Saints would be hard to bear until the square of the Temple was reached. Before that time, however, our brethren would be imprisoned [for polygamy] until the penitentiary should be full, and some of them would be removed to other places. Mothers would weep for their husbands, and children would cry for their fathers. Some would die, and sorrow would fill the hearts of every Latter-day Saint. [Ed. Note: The general condition during the federal persecution of the saints due to polygamy.]

"Continuing, he said: 'When the Temple roof is on, it will be somewhat better, but when the building is completed the Evil One will be shut out.

"The prayers of the Saints will be heard, and the sick will be taken there to be healed. The Spirit of God will rest upon his people and work for the dead will be continued night and day. [Ed. Note: the first night shift began

UPON MY HOUSE SHALL IT BEGIN

Friday, February 3rd, 1922] You will attend the dedicatory services on the third day, and if you will come to this very spot after the meeting is dismissed, you will hear a mighty voice cry out. 'All is well.'"

"I attended the services on the third day, and went to the designated spot, and heard the voice, as he said I would repeated [sic] three times.

"He then went on to say, 'An army of elders will be sent forth to the four quarters of the earth to search for the righteous and warn the wicked of what is coming. All kinds of religions will be started and miracles performed that will deceive the very elect if such a thing were possible. Our sons and daughters must live pure lives so as to be prepared for what is coming.

"After a while the Gentiles will gather to this place by the thousands, and Salt Lake will be classed among the wicked cities of the world. A Spirit of speculation and extravagance will take possession of the Saints, and the result will be financial bondage. [Ed. Note: the various market, commodities, and housing bubbles over the past decades.]

"Persecution comes next, and all true Latter-day Saints will be tested to the limit. Many will apostatize, and others will stand still, not knowing what to do. 'Darkness will cover the earth and gross darkness the minds of the people.'

"The judgments of God will be poured out upon the wicked to the extent that our elders from far and near will be called home. Or in other words, the gospel will be taken from the Gentiles and later on will be carried to the Jews.

"The western boundaries of the state of Missouri will be swept so clean of its inhabitants that, as President [Brigham] Young tells us, when we return to that place, 'There will not be left so much as a yellow dog to wag his tail.'

"Before that day comes, however, the Saints will be put to a test that will try the integrity of the best of them. The pressure will become so great that the more righteous among them will cry unto the Lord day and night until deliverance comes.

"Then the Prophet Joseph and others will make their appearance and those who have remained faithful will be selected to return to Jackson county, Missouri, and take part in the upbuilding of that beautiful city, the New Jerusalem.'

"As soon as I reached home, I made a record of what Brother Kimball had told me, as I knew that every word of it would come true. I did not see him again until the next Sunday. After meeting he bade me good-bye, and that was the last time I ever saw him."

A Day of Burning: Separation of the Wheat and the Tares

"The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

"So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

"Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn." (Matt. 13:24-30)

Wheat

When it first sprouts and grows, wheat has a rich green color. It stands tall and upright. As it matures and ripens its color turns golden brown. As the wheat seeds inside develop and grow larger, they become heavy – causing the stalk to bend and bow – heavy with its burden. When fully ripe, the seeds are large and nutritious. Healthy wheat is visually symbolic of contriteness, humility towards God, spiritual wisdom, and worldly-weariness.



Tares

Like wheat, tares start out green and upright. It takes a trained eye to decipher them from young, budding wheat. You could even call them "wheat impostors" or "crop infiltrators." As they mature, they do not turn golden brown – they develop into a darker color, as if they are turning



UPON MY HOUSE SHALL IT BEGIN

black. It is not until this stage of development that its difference from wheat becomes obvious. Its seeds are typically small – therefore, its stalk does not bend and bow. Additionally, tare seeds are highly toxic for human consumption.

"[When young, it] resembles wheat so closely that it can prosper in the cornfields and be almost indistinguishable until fully grown.... To the farmer it is one of the most destructive of all weeds, and in Eastern countries women and children are employed to pick out these tares before they can ruin the good crop.... ***The inner coats of these seeds often harbor seriously poisonous fungus growths that, if eaten by humans or animals, will cause dizziness and vomiting and sometimes even death....*** As soon as the ears are formed, it is possible to recognize them, but both the wheat and the tares are usually left intermixed until after reaping."³

Tares are visually symbolic of pretension, deceit, pride, stiffneckedness, becoming a law unto one's self, unwholesomeness, and spiritual corruption.

"[The seeds of tares and wheat] ***are separated by a fanning that blows away the lighter and smaller seeds of the tares***, and after threshing, ***all seeds are shaken in a sieve***. Thus any darnel seeds still remaining will usually pass through and leave the larger wheat behind."⁴

Methods of separation:

- Plucking the tares from the field when they have developed to the point of being obvious.
- Blowing away the smaller, lighter tare seeds from the wheat seeds.
- Shaking (proving) all the remaining seeds in a sieve – the small tare seeds filter through, the large healthy wheat seeds remain.

"Verily, thus saith the Lord unto you my servants, concerning the parable of the wheat and of the tares: Behold, verily I say, the field was the world, and the apostles were the sowers of the seed;

"And after they have fallen asleep the great persecutor of the church, the apostate, the whore, even Babylon, that maketh all nations to drink of her cup, in whose hearts the enemy, even Satan, sitteth to reign—behold he soweth the tares; wherefore, the tares choke the wheat and drive the church into the wilderness.

"But behold, in the last days, even now while the Lord is beginning to bring forth the word, and the blade is springing up and is yet tender—Behold, verily I say unto you, ***the angels are crying unto the Lord day and night, who are ready and waiting to be sent forth to reap down the fields***; But the Lord saith unto them, pluck not up the tares while the blade is yet tender (for verily your faith is weak), lest you

destroy the wheat also. Therefore, let the wheat and the tares grow together until the harvest is fully ripe; then ye shall first gather out the wheat from among the tares, and after the gathering of the wheat, behold and lo, the tares are bound in bundles, and the field remaineth to be burned." (D&C 86:1-7, emphasis added)

A Day of Desolation: John Taylor's Vision of America in the Future

Recorded in Wilford Woodruff's Journal, June 15, 1878. Entry titled: "A Vision, Salt Lake City, Night of Dec 16, 1877"⁵

"I went to bed as usual at about 7:30PM. I had been reading a revelation in the French language. My mind was calm, more so than usual if possible, so I composed myself for sleep, but could not. I felt a strange feeling come over me and apparently became partially unconscious. Still I was not asleep, nor exactly awake, with dreary feeling. The first thing that I recognized was that I was in the tabernacle of Ogden, Utah. I was sitting in the back part of the building for fear they would call on me to preach, which however they did, for after singing the second time they called me to the stand.

"I arose to speak and said that I didn't know that I had anything especially to say, except to bear my testimony of the Latter-day work, when all at once it seemed as if I was lifted out of myself and I said, "Yes, I have something to say and that is this: Some of my brethren have been asking, "What is becoming of us? What is the wind blowing?" I will answer you right here what is coming very shortly."

"I was then in a dream, immediately in the city of Salt Lake, and wandering around in the streets and in all parts of the city, and on the doors of the houses I found badges of mourning and I could not find a house but was in mourning. I passed my own house and found the same sign there, and I asked the question, "Is that me that is dead?" Someone gave me the answer, "No, you will get through it all."

"It seemed strange to me that I saw no person in the streets in all my wandering around the country. I seemed to be in their houses with the sick, but saw no funeral procession, nor anything of the kind, but the city looking still and as though the people were praying. And it seemed that they had controlled the disease, but what the disease was I did not learn; it was not made known to me. I then looked over the country, north, east, south, and west, and the same mourning was in every land and in every place.

"The next thing I knew I was just this side of Omaha [Nebraska]. It seemed though I was above the earth, and looking down upon it. As I

UPON MY HOUSE SHALL IT BEGIN

passed along upon my way east I saw the road full of people, mostly women, with just what they could carry in bundles on their backs, traveling to the mountains on foot. I wondered how they would get through with such a small pack on their backs. It was remarkable to us that there were so few men among them. It didn't seem to me as though the cars were running, the rails looked rusty and the roads abandoned; and I have no conception of how I traveled as I looked down upon the people.

"I continued east by the way of Omaha and Council Bluffs [Iowa], which were full of disease. There were women everywhere. The state of Illinois and Missouri were in a tumult, men killing one another, women joining the fighting, family against family in the most horrid manner.

"I imagined next that I was in Washington [D.C.] and I found desolation there. The White House was empty and the Halls of Congress the same, and everything in ruins. The people seemed to have left the city and left it to take care of itself.

"I was in Baltimore [Maryland]. In the square where the Monument of 1812 stands in front of the Charles Hotel. I saw dead piled up so as to fill the street square. I saw mothers cutting the throats of their own children for their blood. I saw them suck it from their throats to quench their own thirst and then lie down and die. The water of Chesapeake Bay was stagnant, and the stench arising from it on account of their throwing their bodies into it so terrible, that the very smell carried death with it. I saw no man except they were dead or dying in the streets and very few women. Those I saw were crazy and in an ugly condition. Everywhere I went I beheld the same sights all over the city; it was terrible beyond description to look upon.

"I thought this must be the end; but no, I was seemingly in an instant in the city of Philadelphia. There everything was still. No living soul was there to greet me. It seemed the whole city was without any inhabitants. In the south of Chestnut Street and in fact everywhere I went, the putrefaction of the dead caused such a stench that it was impossible for any living thing to breathe, nor did I see any living thing in the city.

"Next I found myself in Broadway, in the city of New York, and there it seemed the people had done the best they could to overcome the disease, but in wandering down Broadway I saw the bodies of beautiful women lying, some dead and others in a dying condition, on the sidewalks. I saw men come out of cellars and ravish the persons of some that were yet alive and then kill them and rob their bodies of all the valuables they had upon them. Then before they could get back to the cellar they would roll over a time or two and die in agony. In some of the back streets I saw them kill some of their own offspring and eat their raw flesh, and in a few minutes die themselves. Everywhere I went I saw the same scene of horror and destruction and death and rapine.

"No carriages, buggies, or cars were running; but death and destruction were everywhere. Then I saw fire start and just at that moment a mighty East wind sprang up and carried the flames over the city and it burned until there was not a single building left standing there, even down to the waters edge. Wharves and shipping all seemed to burn and follow in common destruction where the "great city" was a short time ago. The stench from the bodies that were burning was so great that it was carried a long distance cross the Hudson Bay and carried death and destruction wherever it penetrated. I cannot paint in words the horror that seemed to compass me about; it was beyond description of man.

"I supposed this was the end; but it was not. I was given to understand the same horror was being enacted all over the country, east, west, north, and south. Few were left alive, still there were some.

"Immediately after I seemed to be standing on the left bank of the Missouri River, opposite the City of Independence [Missouri], but there was no city. I saw the whole state of Missouri and Illinois and all of Iowa, a complete desert with no living being there. A short distance from the river however, I saw twelve men dressed in temple robes, standing in a square or nearly so (and I understood it represented the Twelve Gates of the New Jerusalem.) Their hands were uplifted in consecration of the ground and laying the corner stone of the temple. I saw myraids of angels hovering over them, and saw also an immense pillar of clouds over them and heard the angels singing the most heavenly music. The words were "Now is established the Kingdom of God and his Christ, which shall never more be thrown down."

"I saw people coming from the river and from the desert places a long way off to help build the temple and it seemed that hosts of angels all helped to get material to build with and I saw some of them who wore temple clothes come and build the temple and the city, and all the time I saw the great pillar of clouds hovering over the place.

"Instantly, however, I found myself again in the tabernacle at Ogden. And yet, I could still see the building go on and I got quite animated in calling on the people in the tabernacle to listen to the beautiful music, for the angels were singing the same music I had heard before. "Now is established the Kingdom of God and his Christ, which shall never more be thrown down."

"At this I seemed to stagger back from the pulpit and Brother Francis D. Richards and some others caught my arm and prevented me from falling. Then I finished so abruptly. Still even then I had not fainted, but was simply exhausted.

"Then I rolled over in bed and awoke just as the city clock was striking twelve."

Of Weeping, of Mourning, of Lamentation: Likened the Scriptures Unto Us

A modernization⁶ of 3 Nephi, chapters 8 to 10 (emphasis added):

"There began to be great doubtings and disputations among the people, notwithstanding so many signs had been given. And it came to pass... there arose a great storm, such an one as never had been known in all the land. And there was also a great and terrible tempest; and there was terrible thunder, insomuch that it did shake the whole earth as if it was about to divide asunder. And there were exceedingly sharp lightnings, such as never had been known in all the land.

"And the city of New York was consumed in devouring fire. And the city of San Francisco did sink into the depths of the sea, and the inhabitants thereof were drowned. And the earth was carried up upon the city of Chicago, that in the place of the city there became a great mountain.

"And there was a great and terrible destruction in the land southward. But behold, there was a more great and terrible destruction in the land northward; for behold, the whole face of the land was changed, because of the tempest and the whirlwinds, and the thunderings and the lightnings, and the exceedingly great quaking of the whole earth;

"And the highways were broken up, and the level roads were spoiled, and many smooth places became rough. And many great and notable cities were sunk, and many were burned, and many were shaken till the buildings thereof had fallen to the earth, and the inhabitants thereof were slain, and the places were left desolate.

"And there were some cities which remained; but the damage thereof was exceedingly great, and there were many in them who were slain. And there were some who were carried away in the whirlwind.... And thus the face of the whole earth became deformed, because of the tempests, and the thunderings, and the lightnings, and the quaking of the earth....

"And there was great mourning and howling and weeping among all the people continually; yea, great were the groanings of the people, because of the darkness and the great destruction which had come upon them.

"And in one place they were heard to cry, saying: O that we had repented before this great and terrible day, and then would our brethren have been spared, and they would not have been reduced to ashes in that great city of New York. And in another place they were heard to cry and mourn, saying: O that we had repented before this great and terrible day, and ***had not killed and stoned the prophets, and cast them out;*** then would our mothers and our fair daughters, and our children have been spared, and not have been buried up in that great city of Chicago. And thus were the howlings of the people great and terrible.

"And it came to pass that there was a voice heard... crying: Wo, wo, wo unto this people; wo unto the inhabitants of the whole earth except they shall repent; for the devil laugheth, and his angels rejoice, because of the slain of the fair sons and daughters of my people; and it is because of their iniquity and abominations that they are fallen!

"Behold, that great city of New York have I burned with fire, and the inhabitants thereof. And behold, that great city San Francisco have I caused to be sunk in the depths of the sea, and the inhabitants thereof to be drowned. And behold, that great city Chicago have I covered with earth, and the inhabitants thereof, to hide their iniquities and their abominations from before my face, that the blood of the prophets and the saints shall not come any more unto me against them.

"And behold, the city of Las Vegas have I caused to be sunk, and the inhabitants thereof to be buried up in the depths of the earth; Yea, and the city of Boston and the inhabitants thereof, and the city of Miami and the inhabitants thereof, and the city of New Orleans and the inhabitants thereof; and waters have I caused to come up in the stead thereof, to hide their wickedness and abominations from before my face, that the blood of the prophets and the saints shall not come up any more unto me against them.

"And behold, the city of Los Angeles, and the city of Dallas, and the city of Atlanta, and the city of Nashville, all these have I caused to be sunk, and made hills and valleys in the places thereof; and the inhabitants thereof have I buried up in the depths of the earth, to hide their wickedness and abominations from before my face, that the blood of the prophets and the saints should not come up any more unto me against them.

"And behold, that great city Washington D.C., which was inhabited by the initiates of the Masonic Order, have I caused to be burned with fire because of their sins and their wickedness, which was above all the wickedness of the whole earth, because of their secret murders and combinations; for ***it was they that did destroy the peace of my people and the government of the land***; therefore I did cause them to be burned, to destroy them from before my face, that the blood of the prophets and the saints should not come up unto me any more against them.

"And behold, the city of Denver, and the city of Seattle, and the city of Sacramento, and the city of Reno, have I caused to be burned with fire, and the inhabitants thereof, because of their wickedness in casting out the prophets, and stoning those whom I did send to declare unto them concerning their wickedness and their abominations.

"And because they did cast them all out, that there were none righteous among them, I did send down fire and destroy them, that their wickedness and abominations might be hid from before my face, that the blood of the prophets and the saints whom I sent among them might not cry unto me

UPON MY HOUSE SHALL IT BEGIN

from the ground against them. And many great destructions have I caused to come upon this land, and upon this people, because of their wickedness and their abominations.

"O all ye that are spared because ye were more righteous than they, will ye not now return unto me, and repent of your sins, and be converted, that I may heal you? Yea, verily I say unto you, if ye will come unto me ye shall have eternal life. Behold, mine arm of mercy is extended towards you, and whosoever will come, him will I receive; and blessed are those who come unto me.

"Behold, I am Jesus Christ the Son of God. I created the heavens and the earth, and all things that in them are. I was with the Father from the beginning. I am in the Father, and the Father in me; and in me hath the Father glorified his name.... And as many as have received me, to them have I given to become the sons of God; and even so will I to as many as shall believe on my name, for behold, by me redemption cometh.... I am the light and the life of the world. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end.... whoso cometh unto me with a broken heart and a contrite spirit, him will I baptize with fire and with the Holy Ghost....

"Behold, I have come unto the world to bring redemption unto the world, to save the world from sin. Therefore, whoso repenteth and cometh unto me as a little child, him will I receive, for of such is the kingdom of God. Behold, for such I have laid down my life, and have taken it up again; therefore repent, and come unto me ye ends of the earth, and be saved.

"And now behold, it came to pass that all the people of the land did hear these sayings, and did witness of it.... For so great was the astonishment of the people that they did cease lamenting and howling for the loss of their kindred which had been slain; therefore there was silence in all the land for the space of many hours. And it came to pass that there came a voice again unto the people, and all the people did hear, and did witness of it, saying:

"O ye people of these great cities which have fallen, who are descendants of the Gentile nations, yea, who are adopted into the house of Israel, how oft have I gathered you as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and have nourished you. And again, how oft would I have gathered you as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings... and ye would not.

"O ye house of Israel whom I have spared, how oft will I gather you as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, if ye will repent and return unto me with full purpose of heart.... O house of Israel, the places of your dwellings have become desolate, and the time has come to fulfill the covenant to your fathers.

"And now it came to pass that after the people had heard these words, behold, they began to weep and howl again because of the loss of their kindred and friends."

And Upon My House Shall It Begin

and from my house shall it go forth, saith the Lord; First among those among you, saith the Lord, who have professed to know my name and have not known me, and have blasphemed against me in the midst of my house

When the Lord states “My house,” it can be referring to a couple possible places:

1. The rebuilt temple in Jerusalem on the temple mount, also referred to as “The Third Temple” or “Ezekiel's temple.”⁷ This temple will be rebuilt in the near future as prophesied in the Book of Ezekiel. It's construct is described in detail throughout chapters 40 to 42. Long have the orthodox Jews in Israel been desiring to construct it, but have been stymied by multinational political and historical conflicts concerning claims of ownership of temple mount, as well as disputations of the exact location where it should be built – whether where the Dome of the Rock currently stands, or somewhere else nearby.

If this is what the Lord means by “My house,” then all the prophesied catastrophic events will begin to occur rapidly after something great and terrible happens to either the future-rebuilt temple, or the area where it is to be built.

2. The Salt Lake temple. Should the Lord still accept the Salt Lake temple as “The House of the Lord,” then massive destruction will be levied upon Salt Lake City with tremendous ferocity.

I, the author, am convinced it will be the latter, primarily because this revelation was given to Joseph Smith to be received by the Gentiles – specifically us latter-day believers. Additionally, the Lord names the primary target of His near-future wrath: those among the members of the LDS Church who live false lives, who do all kinds of “good works” before men while professing faith in Christ – wearing masks of piety and saintliness before others – yet their hearts are far from the Lord; those who attend the temple regularly and pollute it with the filth of their pride, worldly-mindedness, lust, greed, iniquity, and self-aggrandizement.

After the destruction has ended will we know who the Lord considers wicked and who He considers not-as-wicked. Those who will be slain, they were the wicked in God's eyes; those who will be preserved will be either not-as-wicked or righteous in God's eyes.

UPON MY HOUSE SHALL IT BEGIN

While this blunt summary may come across as wildly insensitive and judgmental (for are not thousands of innocent children slain in catastrophes as well?), I wish to remind the reader of the precedent which the Lord Himself set in 3 Nephi: "O all ye that are spared because ye were more righteous than they, will ye not now return unto me, and repent of your sins...." Undoubtedly, many infants and innocent children are slain in events of massive destruction, however when the Lord is the initiator of that destruction He selectively preserves the righteous-enough and much of their posterity, while destroying the wicked and their posterity. The adults who will die in this near-future event will die because their day of judgment will have arrived.

The Lord will cleanse Salt Lake City and all the surrounding area of northern Utah of the most wicked persons residing therein. Those who do not die, their survival will be due to divine intervention, and thereafter must mightily repent and come back unto Christ, or possibly face death again as the catastrophes begin rolling out throughout North America and in various parts of the world. Even still, perhaps many will only be preserved in order to have the opportunity to be an eventual martyr for Christ's sake – to be brutally slain, as the ancient Christians were, for refusing to deny that Jesus Christ is the Savior and Redeemer of the world.

It is beyond the scope of this work, and beyond the capacity of the author, to provide details of when or how such destruction might occur. Nevertheless, I encourage the reader to locate, ponder, and pray about the various dreams, visions, and events witnessed in near-death experiences (NDE) concerning these matters. In my own personal search, the very first book that the Holy Spirit strongly prompted me to purchase and read was Sarah Menet's *There Is No Death*. Sarah recounts astonishing details of what she witnessed during her extended NDE. While on the other side of the veil, she did not wish to return to her body. She was given a vision of the future in order to convince her of the importance that she lives. I do not know if her vision will occur as described, but I am convinced that there is considerable merit to what she relates.

Additionally, I have noted that in numerous LDS members' dreams, visions, and events witnessed during NDEs that the destruction which befalls the Salt Lake Valley will be via both massive earthquake and copious flooding. Geologists note that the Wasatch fault is long overdue for a major shift to occur.

"A recent report released by Bob Carey of Utah's Office of Emergency Services and published by the Deseret News in April 2006 predicts what the possible results of a 7.0 earthquake directly hitting the Salt Lake Valley could be. The report predicts that when the quake strikes, it could kill up to 6,200 people, injure at least 90,000, and cause US\$40 billion in

economic losses. At least 42% of all buildings along the Wasatch Front could be at least moderately damaged. The earthquake danger was not known when many structures were built in the area, as many hospitals and schools are located atop the faults themselves. About 50% of hospital beds could be eliminated during a quake and the region has about 200,000 unreinforced masonry buildings – buildings particularly vulnerable to shaking – compared to California's 25,000. Massive landslides are another major threat."⁸

Such a quake would be bad enough – and yet it has been described in the visions/dreams/NDEs of several people that the massive quake will trigger another catastrophe. In various testimonies, they state that they were shown that deep in the earth beneath the Great Salt Lake is a tremendous, untapped resource of fresh water. The massive earthquake will cause a split in the bedrock layer above this body of water; due to the tectonic force applied to it, unfathomable quantities of underground pressurized water will shoot forth from earthquake-created rifts on the surface. Pillars of freshwater "geysers" will shoot up from many places. One individual states that there will be so much freshwater that it will "cure" the lake of its excessive salt content – water-based creatures will be able to live and thrive in it thereafter.

The volumes of water gushing out will be so great that areas as far south as Cedar City will receive water damage. More than one witness of such future events states that a tidal wave will flow into and destroy much of Salt Lake City. Others describe multiple geysers spewing forth, dozens of feet high – water bursting out of the sewer systems and gushing from man-hole-covered access tunnels throughout the city's streets. The damage everywhere will be incalculable. Because of the lack of electricity, the lack of adequate supplies, and the resultant prevalence of carcass-littered standing water everywhere, disease will run rampant and affect the survivors within a short time after all this occurs.

For months, the Salt Lake Temple will be submerged in water at least one floor high. It will be roughly six months before the water table lowers to the point that the temple can be excavated, cleansed, restored, and rededicated.

Granted, I am merely providing a synopsis of what multiple LDS members have reported to witness in what they claim to be heaven-provided dreams and visions. Even if they are completely honest in their statements, these dreams/visions were given to them personally. They were not commanded of God to share them with others. They shared them not as one stating "God has shown me this and He has commanded me to declare it," but as one stating, "I have seen this in vision. Take from it what you will."

Nevertheless, the Spirit encourages me to include these matters in this book. I am convinced that there is merit to such accounts. This kind of destruction would fulfill not only with the words of the Lord in D&C 112, but also prophecies concerning the near-future cleansing of the Church.

What more appropriate way to cleanse anything than to utilize a copious amount of agitated, pressurized fresh water?

The End of the Wicked

When will the wicked be wiped out? When will all those who side with Lucifer and actively participate in the destruction of peace on earth finally get their just due? It's bad enough that the righteous and the comparatively-righteous will suffer and die in mass numbers, but when will those who orchestrate all this suffering get their due?

It's in the scriptures. The residue of those whose hearts are pure, who have made their eye single to God's glory, they will be gathered. The conspiring, surviving wicked will not be able – will not be allowed – to prevail against them. Nephi saw these things in vision as he was guided by an angel:

"And it came to pass that I beheld that the great mother of abominations did gather together multitudes upon the face of all the earth, among all the nations of the Gentiles, to fight against the Lamb of God.

"And it came to pass that I, Nephi, beheld the power of the Lamb of God, that it descended upon the saints of the church of the Lamb, and upon the covenant people of the Lord, who were scattered upon all the face of the earth; and they were armed with righteousness and with the power of God in great glory.

"And it came to pass that I beheld that the wrath of God was poured out upon that great and abominable church, insomuch that there were wars and rumors of wars among all the nations and kindreds of the earth.

"And as there began to be wars and rumors of wars among all the nations which belonged to the mother of abominations, the angel spake unto me, saying: Behold, the wrath of God is upon the mother of harlots; and behold, thou seest all these things—

"And when the day cometh that the wrath of God is poured out upon the mother of harlots, which is the great and abominable church of all the earth, whose founder is the devil, then, at that day, the work of the Father shall commence, in preparing the way for the fulfilling of his covenants, which he hath made to his people who are of the house of Israel." (1 Nephi 14:13-17)

Become familiar with the descriptions and passages of the book of Revelation, for in time the contents of that book will become more obvious and easier to understand. The angel which guided Nephi through his vision vouches for the content of the book of Revelation, even the imperfect version of it that we have in our Bibles today:

"And it came to pass that the angel spake unto me, saying: Look! And I looked and beheld a man, and he was dressed in a white robe. And the angel said unto me: Behold one of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. Behold, he shall see and write the remainder of these things; yea, and also many things which have been. And he shall also write concerning the end of the world.

"Wherefore, the things which he shall write are just and true; and behold they are written in the book which thou beheld proceeding out of the mouth of the Jew; and at the time they proceeded out of the mouth of the Jew, or, at the time the book proceeded out of the mouth of the Jew, the things which were written were plain and pure, and most precious and easy to the understanding of all men.

"And behold, the things which this apostle of the Lamb shall write are many things which thou hast seen; and behold, the remainder shalt thou see. But the things which thou shalt see hereafter thou shalt not write; for the Lord God hath ordained the apostle of the Lamb of God that he should write them.

"And also others who have been, to them hath he shown all things, and they have written them; and they are sealed up to come forth in their purity, according to the truth which is in the Lamb, in the own due time of the Lord, unto the house of Israel.

"And I, Nephi, heard and bear record, that the name of the apostle of the Lamb was John, according to the word of the angel.

"And behold, I, Nephi, am forbidden that I should write the remainder of the things which I saw and heard; wherefore the things which I have written sufficeth me; and I have written but a small part of the things which I saw." (1 Nephi 14:18-28)

Christ, Himself, gave great details in what to look for, what to anticipate, and what to expect. Read His words and contemplate how they apply to us in our day (emphasis added):

"And Jesus left them, and went upon the Mount of Olives. And as he sat upon the Mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying: Tell us when shall these things be which thou hast said concerning the destruction of the temple, and the Jews; and what is the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world, or the destruction of the wicked,

UPON MY HOUSE SHALL IT BEGIN

which is the end of the world?

"And Jesus answered, and said unto them: Take heed that no man deceive you; For many shall come in my name, saying—I am Christ—and shall deceive many; Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you, and ye shall be hated of all nations, for my name's sake;

"And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another; And many false prophets shall arise, and shall deceive many; And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold; But he that remaineth steadfast and is not overcome, the same shall be saved.

"When you, therefore, shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, concerning the destruction of Jerusalem, then you shall stand in the holy place; whoso readeth let him understand.

"Then let them who are in Judea flee into the mountains; Let him who is on the housetop flee, and not return to take anything out of his house; Neither let him who is in the field return back to take his clothes; And wo unto them that are with child, and unto them that give suck in those days; Therefore, pray ye the Lord that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day;

"For then, in those days, shall be great tribulation on the Jews, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, such as was not before sent upon Israel, of God, since the beginning of their kingdom until this time; no, nor ever shall be sent again upon Israel.

"All things which have befallen them are only the beginning of the sorrows which shall come upon them. And except those days should be shortened, there should none of their flesh be saved; but for the elect's sake, according to the covenant, those days shall be shortened.

"Behold, these things I have spoken unto you concerning the Jews; and again, after the tribulation of those days which shall come upon Jerusalem, if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there, believe him not;

"For in those days there shall also arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders, insomuch, that, if possible, they shall deceive the very elect, who are the elect according to the covenant. Behold, I speak these things unto you for the elect's sake; and you also shall hear of wars, and rumors of wars; see that ye be not troubled, for all I have told you must come to pass; but the end is not yet.

"Behold, I have told you before; Wherefore, if they shall say unto you: Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: Behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not; ***For as the light of the morning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west, and covereth the whole earth, so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be.***

"And now I show unto you a parable. Behold, wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together; so likewise shall mine elect be gathered from the four quarters of the earth.

"And they shall hear of wars, and rumors of wars. Behold I speak for mine elect's sake; for nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. And again, because iniquity shall abound, the love of men shall wax cold; but he that shall not be overcome, the same shall be saved.

"And again, this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a witness unto all nations, and then shall the end come, or the destruction of the wicked; And again shall the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, be fulfilled.

"And immediately after the tribulation of those days, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of heaven shall be shaken. Verily, I say unto you, this generation, in which these things shall be shown forth, shall not pass away until all I have told you shall be fulfilled. Although, the days will come, that heaven and earth shall pass away; yet my words shall not pass away, but all shall be fulfilled.

"And, as I said before, after the tribulation of those days, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken, then shall appear the sign of the Son of Man in heaven, and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn; and they shall see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of heaven, with power and great glory;

"And whoso treasureth up my word, shall not be deceived, for the Son of Man shall come, and he shall send his angels before him with the great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together the remainder of his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

"Now learn a parable of the fig tree—When its branches are yet tender, and it begins to put forth leaves, you know that summer is nigh at hand; So likewise, mine elect, when they shall see all these things, they shall know that he is near, even at the doors; But of that day, and hour, no one knoweth; no, not the angels of God in heaven, but my Father only.

"But as it was in the days of Noah, so it shall be also at the coming of the Son of Man; For it shall be with them, as it was in the days which were before the flood; for until the day that Noah entered into the ark they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage; And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be.

"Then shall be fulfilled that which is written, that in the last days, two shall be in the field, the one shall be taken, and the other left; Two shall be

UPON MY HOUSE SHALL IT BEGIN

grinding at the mill, the one shall be taken, and the other left; And what I say unto one, I say unto all men; watch, therefore, for you know not at what hour your Lord doth come.

"But know this, if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to have been broken up, but would have been ready. Therefore be ye also ready, for in such an hour as ye think not, the Son of Man cometh.

"Who, then, is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? Blessed is that servant whom his lord, when he cometh, shall find so doing; and verily I say unto you, he shall make him ruler over all his goods.

"But if that evil servant shall say in his heart: My lord delayeth his coming, And shall begin to smite his fellow-servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken, The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, And shall cut him asunder, and shall appoint him his portion with the hypocrites; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

"And thus cometh the end of the wicked, according to the prophecy of Moses, saying: They shall be cut off from among the people; but the end of the earth is not yet, but by and by." (Joseph Smith Matthew, verses 4-5 emphasis added)

The Lord provided additional information and clarification to Joseph Smith concerning these final days:

"As ye have asked of me concerning the signs of my coming, in the day when I shall come in my glory in the clouds of heaven, to fulfil the promises that I have made unto your fathers....

"Ye say that ye know that the end of the world cometh; ye say also that ye know that the heavens and the earth shall pass away; And in this ye say truly, for so it is; but these things which I have told you shall not pass away until all shall be fulfilled. And this I have told you concerning Jerusalem; and when that day shall come, shall a remnant be scattered among all nations; But they shall be gathered again; but they shall remain until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

"And in that day shall be heard of wars and rumors of wars, and the whole earth shall be in commotion, and men's hearts shall fail them, and they shall say that Christ delayeth his coming until the end of the earth. And the love of men shall wax cold, and iniquity shall abound.

"And when the times of the Gentiles is come in, a light shall break forth among them that sit in darkness, and it shall be the fulness of my gospel;

But they receive it not; for they perceive not the light, and they turn their hearts from me because of the precepts of men. And in that generation shall the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

"And there shall be men standing in that generation, that shall not pass until they shall see an overflowing scourge; for a desolating sickness shall cover the land. But my disciples shall stand in holy places, and shall not be moved; but among the wicked, men shall lift up their voices and curse God and die.

"And there shall be earthquakes also in divers places, and many desolations; yet men will harden their hearts against me, and they will take up the sword, one against another, and they will kill one another.

"And now, when I the Lord had spoken these words unto my disciples, they were troubled. And I said unto them: Be not troubled, for, when all these things shall come to pass, ye may know that the promises which have been made unto you shall be fulfilled.

"And when the light shall begin to break forth, it shall be with them like unto a parable which I will show you—Ye look and behold the fig trees, and ye see them with your eyes, and ye say when they begin to shoot forth, and their leaves are yet tender, that summer is now nigh at hand; Even so it shall be in that day when they shall see all these things, then shall they know that the hour is nigh.

"And it shall come to pass that he that feareth me shall be looking forth for the great day of the Lord to come, even for the signs of the coming of the Son of Man. And they shall see signs and wonders, for they shall be shown forth in the heavens above, and in the earth beneath. And they shall behold blood, and fire, and vapors of smoke. And before the day of the Lord shall come, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon be turned into blood, and the stars fall from heaven.

"And the remnant shall be gathered unto this place; And then they shall look for me, and, behold, I will come; and they shall see me in the clouds of heaven, clothed with power and great glory; with all the holy angels; and he that watches not for me shall be cut off.

"But before the arm of the Lord shall fall, an angel shall sound his trumpet, and the saints that have slept shall come forth to meet me in the cloud. Wherefore, if ye have slept in peace blessed are you; for as you now behold me and know that I am, even so shall ye come unto me and your souls shall live, and your redemption shall be perfected; and the saints shall come forth from the four quarters of the earth.

"Then shall the arm of the Lord fall upon the nations.

"And then shall the Lord set his foot upon this mount, and it shall cleave in twain, and the earth shall tremble, and reel to and fro, and the heavens

UPON MY HOUSE SHALL IT BEGIN

also shall shake. And the Lord shall utter his voice, and all the ends of the earth shall hear it; and the nations of the earth shall mourn, and they that have laughed shall see their folly. And calamity shall cover the mocker, and the scorner shall be consumed; and they that have watched for iniquity shall be hewn down and cast into the fire.

"And then shall the Jews look upon me and say: What are these wounds in thine hands and in thy feet?

"Then shall they know that I am the Lord; for I will say unto them: These wounds are the wounds with which I was wounded in the house of my friends. I am he who was lifted up. I am Jesus that was crucified. I am the Son of God.

"And then shall they weep because of their iniquities; then shall they lament because they persecuted their king.

"And then shall the heathen nations be redeemed, and they that knew no law shall have part in the first resurrection; and it shall be tolerable for them.

"And Satan shall be bound, that he shall have no place in the hearts of the children of men.

"And at that day, when I shall come in my glory, shall the parable be fulfilled which I spake concerning the ten virgins. For they that are wise and have received the truth, and have taken the Holy Spirit for their guide, and have not been deceived—verily I say unto you, they shall not be hewn down and cast into the fire, but shall abide the day.

"And the earth shall be given unto them for an inheritance; and they shall multiply and wax strong, and their children shall grow up without sin unto salvation. For the Lord shall be in their midst, and his glory shall be upon them, and he will be their king and their lawgiver." (D&C 45:16-59)

While one ought to temporally prepare as much as possible, nothing is more critical than spiritual preparation. There is no greater preparation – no more sure understanding of what will transpire in the future – than that which has been stated in scripture.

The Lord has promised to pour out His spirit and give dreams and visions to many different people in these last days⁹, yet prayer and discernment ought to accompany research into the dreams and visions of others. The adversary will seek to give deceptive dreams/visions/information, even to honorable, righteous, meek individuals. Never focus on or weigh the dreams and visions of others as more representative than that which has been given in scripture from the Lord.

The Redemption of the Heathen Nations

As one of the key events to occur in the buildup to His return, Christ mentions the redemption of the “heathen” nations. As just quoted previously, the Lord states that after He appears unto the Jews and saves them from utter destruction, the heathen nations will be redeemed:

“And then shall the heathen nations be redeemed, and they that knew no law shall have part in the first resurrection; and it shall be tolerable for them.” (D&C 45:54)

During my commute a few years ago, I was listening to the Doctrine and Covenants on audio. My thoughts were wandering, on topics relating to the sections I was listening to. However, as D&C 90 played out, the Holy Spirit suddenly grabbed hold of my attention and focused my ears on what was being spoken:

“That through your administration they may receive the word, and through their administration the word may go forth unto the ends of the earth, unto the Gentiles first, and then, behold, and lo, they shall turn unto the Jews. And then cometh the day when the arm of the Lord shall be revealed in power in convincing the nations, the heathen nations, the house of Joseph, of the gospel of their salvation. For it shall come to pass in that day, that every man shall hear the fulness of the gospel in his own tongue, and in his own language, through those who are ordained unto this power, by the administration of the Comforter, shed forth upon them for the revelation of Jesus Christ.” (D&C 90:9-11)

We hear this scripture quoted quite often in regards to the Church's missionary program: “every man shall hear the fulness of the gospel in his own tongue, and in his own language.” We assume that the Church's missionary program is the fulfillment of this scripture. However, as I was driving that day, the Spirit enveloped me and my eyes of understanding were opened. I went back and listened to those verses again and again. I was awestruck: they are chronological.

- “That through your [Joseph Smith's] administration they [the apostles and others called] may receive the word...”
- “... through their [the apostles'/subsequent Church leaders'] administration the word may go forth unto the ends of the earth, unto the Gentiles first, and then, behold, and lo, they shall turn unto the Jews.”
- “And then cometh the day...” – this day will not come until *after* the word has been sufficiently preached unto the Gentiles and the Jews.

UPON MY HOUSE SHALL IT BEGIN

- "... when the arm of the Lord shall be revealed in power..." – the "arm" of the Lord is a visual symbol of Him showing forth His might in a highly destructive and/or protective capacity.
- "... in convincing the nations, the heathen nations, the house of Joseph, of the gospel of their salvation." – the Lord's omnipotent power will be laid bare for the non-Jewish, non-Gentile nations to overwhelmingly witness, and it will be the means of convincing them of the truth that Jesus Christ is their Savior and Redeemer.
- "For it shall come to pass in that day, that every man shall hear the fulness of the gospel in his own tongue, and in his own language..." – *in that day* (not through the current missionary program) will every man hear the fullness of the gospel. If not through the missionaries, then through whom?
- "... through those who are ordained unto this power..." – those who receive the fullness of the gift of tongues as powerfully as the original apostles had it after the day of Pentecost. How are they to be ordained to have this power?
- "... by the administration of the Comforter, shed forth upon them for the revelation of Jesus Christ." – not through the administration of Church leaders, but through the administration of the Comforter. The Lord Himself will select and ordain individuals, and empower them to do this work – to bring the fullness of the gospel to the nations who have not known God yet.

It all made sense. In ancient times, the Lord revealed Himself and the arm of his power to the Israelites. For dozens of centuries afterward their posterity grew up being taught of Almighty God and what He had done for their forefathers. After Christ's resurrection, the gospel was given unto the Gentiles. For nearly two millennia it was the Gentiles who championed the Lord and His gospel, receiving due blessings according to their faithfulness and obedience, and the testimony of Jesus being firmly planted within their souls. For centuries afterward their posterity grew up being taught of Jesus and how He suffered for our sins.

The "heathen nations" are those who are not Jewish and not Gentile. As nations, as people, they haven't had a chance to know Him as Jehovah or Christ. Their forefathers did not witness His matchless power. Perhaps in the past few centuries they've heard something about a god that white people worship, named "Jesus Christ," but what is He compared to all the gods and legends that they have been taught for centuries, for millennia? Perhaps some handful of individuals from such nations will investigate, be touched in their souls, and be converted unto Christ – yet the nation, the culture knows

Him not. Who is Christ to them, collectively?

I rejoice in this prophesy, because the Lord is promising to offer all the non-Jewish, non-Gentile nations a chance to witness His power – to have it miraculously protect and preserve them from destruction – and that it will roll forth in a manner that witnesses that it is Jesus Christ who has done this for them.

"... they that knew no law... it shall be tolerable for them" The Lord will sufficiently prepare the "heathen nations" – those nations whose people have been culturally ingrained with bowing down to hand-made idols, worshipping a plethora of various incarnations of gods – the nations of Asia, Africa, and India. They will be entreated by emissaries directly chosen and empowered by Christ to go forth and sufficiently prepare them for Christ's return and the redemption of the earth. The glory of His coming will not smite them, not consume their flesh, in spite of their multi-millennia-long cultural ignorance/naivete. The people of those nations which "know the law," who have transgressed and rejected the law, they will not be able to stand in the day the Lord returns. They will be the ones who beg the mountains and rocks to "hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: For the great day of his wrath is come...."

All this realization and understanding came crashing down on me as I listened, over and over and over again, to these verses from D&C 90. I marveled over it for days.

Since serving as an LDS missionary in Hong Kong in the early 1990's, I have developed a profound love for traditional Asian culture and the entire Asian race. Towards the end of my mission, one day I sat in an LDS meeting house, looking out the window at dozens of Chinese people walking by. My heart felt like it was about to burst with love for these people. I despaired that the message of the gospel of Jesus Christ was so resoundingly rejected here, so disregarded, counted as foolishness and ridiculous – while simultaneously the majority of the populace had no problem bowing down daily in their homes to little red wooden boxes which contained some ceramic figurine of a god, or a framed image of a deceased relative inside, and they were absolutely convinced that doing this pious, routine act would somehow please their ancestors and/or appease the god in the box.

I spent a good deal of time sitting there, watching wonderful (but internally anguished and world-worn) Chinese people walk by. I mourned their overall rejection of the gospel of Christ, reflected upon my two years of serving them, and wished more than anything that I could embrace each of them as tightly as a brother embraces his beloved sibling. As my soul ached for them, the Spirit comforted me that the Lord has them in mind, that one

UPON MY HOUSE SHALL IT BEGIN

day they will come to know Christ; to be at peace, for their time will come, they will truly get to know Him.

Nearly twenty years later, completely out of the blue, as I was driving to work one morning, listening to an audio recording of D&C 90, the Lord suddenly gave me a comprehensive understanding of how He intends to give the people of the non-Jewish, non-Gentile nations their first-hand chance to know Him before the end comes. It was the answer to an ongoing, half-a-lifetime concern. It is my prayer that I not only have a chance to witness these events come to pass, but that I may be called to be a servant in bringing this prophecy to fruition.

- 1 Doctrine and Covenants 112:23-26 (emphasis added)
- 2 Quoted from *The Last Days Unsealed* by Robert Smith, Agreka Books, June 1999, pages 134-138
- 3 Quoted from *All the Plants of the Bible* by Winifred Walker, Doubleday 1979
- 4 Ibid.
- 5 There is some dispute whether or not it was John Taylor that had this vision. While this vision was recorded in the journal of Wilford Woodruff, it is verified that it was not Woodruff that had the vision. It is generally concluded to be John Taylor's vision because he was the only individual among the leadership fluent in French, and was about a vision which was written in French prior to this vision opening up to him.
- 6 We are commanded to liken the scriptures unto us – to apply the events, examples, and warnings to our own era and generation. We are to put ourselves in the shoes of those who experienced the things recorded in scripture. Therefore, I take the liberty to re-quote 3 Nephi large portions of chapters 8 through 10, changing only the names of the Nephite/Lamanite cities to correspond with the names of current large American cities in a manner which best correspond to their geographical situations and other characteristics. This is done not in my own condemnation of these cities – for I have no standing wherewith to judge of myself – but in very possible future scenarios based upon the Lord's copious warnings of widespread annihilation of the inhabitants of North America.
- 7 For more details, visit https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Third_Temple and https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Temple_Mount
- 8 Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wasatch_Fault
- 9 Joel 2:28-32 – “And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my spirit. And I will shew wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke. The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the Lord come. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be delivered: for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the Lord hath said, and in the remnant whom the Lord shall call.”

Journal Excerpt 16 - March 2015

I had a curious dream last night. I was dressed in nice Sunday clothes, but I was traveling through a rocky corridor. It resembled a cave, but the passage was rounded in shape. For some reason it was adequately lighted everywhere, I didn't need a light source to see everything. I knew that at the end of this tunnel was the temple, the place I was excited to get to.

In my dream I was very familiar with this cavern - I had traveled through it many times - perhaps on a monthly basis for many years. However, each time I had gone through it I had noticed changes. The rocky surface had "grown" gradually - the side walls or floor or ceiling had expanded. It was now to the point where the cavern was considerably tight in some areas, to the point of inducing feelings of claustrophobia.

I reached a point that had become really bad. The rocky ceiling had grown down significantly, and I had to get on my belly and pull myself several dozen feet - my nice clothes getting scratched and torn and filthy. I was thankful that at least the two sides were not constrictive here - I could fully rotate around on my belly and go back, if needed. Nevertheless, it did not escape me that this change (and other changes I noticed this time) were stark and alarming instead of somewhat anticipated.

After that low-ceiling segment, the remainder of the corridor was far more narrow than I could have expected this time through it. I began to be burdened with worry and concern - if it gets any worse, this may be the last time I'll ever reach the temple. I'd been traveling for roughly a mile through here, and for what seemed like three or four hours. A thought began to plague me: what if I reach a point of impasse? It may be that serious this time. If so, I'll need to turn around and go through all that claustrophobia-inducing terrain once again. I kept pushing this awful thought out of my mind and focused on the goal: the wonderful temple I was heading for.

Then as I turned a corner, the sight before me made my heart sink. The walls had "grown" from all directions - up, down, left, and right - so much so that the passage was only big enough for a cat to crawl through. I looked through it - the blockage was about six feet in length. I reached my arm in there - it barely even fit. My hand didn't come anywhere close to reaching the other side.

I sat down and despaired. I began weeping. How will I

ever reach the temple now? What am I supposed to do, turn into vapor and float through that hole? I've been trudging through here for nearly five hours, only to be blocked by this! I have no choice but to make my way back - another five hours of grueling toil only to retreat away from my goal! I'll never visit that wonderful temple ever again! My sorrow intensified and I began convulsively sobbing.

I woke up sobbing, filled with the sadness and anxiety from the dream. As I calmed down, the meaning of the dream was given to me.

The cave represented the spiritual "heart" of an individual - or perhaps it would be more correct to say that it is the spiritual aspect of an actual person's heart. The tunnel represents spiritual arteries, the increasing wall "growths" represent the spiritual clogging and hardening of the heart. The temple destination represents the heart's core - the spiritual connection between the heavenly realm and the individual.

My perspective in the dream (of navigating the spiritual arteries and trying to reach the heart's core) was that of the Holy Spirit attempting to touch the heart of an individual. Essentially, the dream was a visual representation of what it feels like to God when He is unable to reach, to touch, to communicate with an individual who has allowed "junk" to build up in one's heart over time that the way becomes bottle-necked to the point where the Holy Spirit can barely be felt at all - or clogged with hardness so that there is insufficient passage to the soul whatsoever.

The sorrow and mourning was intense. I was given a glimpse of God's own despair, of His anguish when one of His children gradually cuts Him off through pride, vanity, anger, vengefulness, resentment, disbelief, unbelief, or merely through a "build-up" of worldly-mindedness and spiritual-thoughtlessness. He actually despairs and mourns when He can no longer reach someone's inner "temple."

1 Corinthians 3:17 "... the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are."

EPILOGUE

Sanity is not statistical.... Being in a minority, even a minority of one, did not make you mad. There was truth and there was untruth, and if you clung to the truth even against the whole world, you were not mad.

– George Orwell, *Nineteen Eighty-Four*

In the hope that they will assist the reader in strengthening one's connection with Christ, I have shared some personal and uncomfortable incidents and experiences from my life. These are for the benefit of true believers of Christ who discover this book, not for the fault-finders. The latter will undoubtedly seek to use these things against me, but it doesn't matter. I expose powerful individuals by name in this volume – backlash is to be expected. Therefore, I would rather preemptively give the reader personal information about myself in the hope that any future rumor, hearsay, falsehoods, or manipulated facts can be weighed against what I already share here. The reader can then judge between my own words and anything which might be circulated about me.

I Was Not Commanded to Do this Work, Nevertheless It Is of the Lord

You are welcome to embrace this volume of information (and the previous) or reject it. I was not commanded by God to compile this information and create these books. The Lord God did not command me to do this work. However, I have been strongly encouraged to do it. I have been supported and guided by the Holy Spirit in doing it. I have completed this work for the Lord's sake. I did it because I know He wanted it to be

done. Now it is done, and it has been done in accordance with His Spirit's guidance. If others come forward doing creating a similar work, testifying of these same things, then the Lord has guided them as well. Two or more witnesses in all things.

Because I was not directly commanded of God to do this work, the eternal ramifications of someone rejecting it will not be as severe as, for example, if someone were to reject the messages delivered in Denver Snuffer's 10-part lecture. Denver's extended lecture was brought about by direct commandment from God to him, and he carried out that duty faithfully. In comparison, I was not commanded to write these books – I was merely encouraged to do so, and guided in creating them. Therefore, the spiritual consequences and degree of bitter repentance that will result from someone rejecting this work will not be nearly as acute as for those who reject Denver's.

This work – these two volumes – began as a written project to convince my family and friends of the all-too-relevant divinely-commanded warnings of Moroni in Ether chapter 8. When I began, I anticipated it to be roughly an 80-page project. After I was led to the extensive work and research of William Cooper, I switched gears and decided to create a book with the average LDS member in mind. I anticipated it being roughly 300 pages when completed. By the time I reached 250 pages, I knew the final product would be roughly 750 pages at minimum. With six years of hindsight, I now understand that it was the Lord's intent from the beginning to have these two volumes created – compiled and composed and organized – in the manner that they have been presented. The Lord has been with me through every step of the development of this work.

Once again, I testify: this is truly the Lord's work, not mine. Therefore, I have only this left to say: if you believe the Bible, believe the Book of Mormon – if you believe the Book of Mormon, believe the revelations given through Joseph Smith – if you believe Joseph's revelations, believe the message that Denver Snuffer has been commanded of God to deliver – if you believe Denver's message from God, it would be an eternal benefit for you to open your eyes of understanding and pray mightily about what is presented in these two volumes. They are all the work of the Lord. It is spiritual folly to reject one while embracing another.

The Real Meanings of “Sin” and “Iniquity”

Two of the most thrown-around terms in Christianity are “sin” and “iniquity.” “Don’t do *that* – that’s a *sin!*” “That guy is so evil – he is full of iniquity!” What do these two terms actually mean according to the scriptures, according to the Lord?

The term “sin” in original Hebrew comes from archery¹ – to miss one’s target. Literally, it means to “miss,” as in miss the target you’re trying to hit with your arrow. In a spiritual context, it means to make an error, to do something erroneously. We are all sinners – we are all in a sinful state. Why? Because we constantly make errors. No matter how good we think we are, we are not perfect – therefore in every single error we make, *even unwittingly*, we “sin.” We miss our target. Even when we try our absolute best, we usually still “sin” – we make errors.

Additionally, the term also infers a mindlessness or thoughtlessness while performing an action – that one’s arrow missed the target due to a lack of concentration. Spiritually, there’s the connotation that “sin” occurs due to our own lack of being fully alert and mindful. When we do something – anything – without taking into consideration the ramifications or the possible consequences, we commit “sin.” We thoughtlessly act and cause errors that generate problems or unnecessary/unfair pain, either for ourselves or for others. This is the real definition of “sin.”

Deliberately choosing to break commandments, or to commit blatantly evil acts, this is far beyond “sinning” – this is defiance towards God and “our neighbor.” This is not just missing the target, it’s shooting the arrow in the opposite direction. It is siding with the devil.

It is important to understand that when the scriptures inform us that we are all “sinners,” it doesn’t mean we’re all a bunch of filthy, sniveling devils just waiting for the opportunity to do evil; it means that even when we try our best to live the commandments and please God, we still make errors and fall short – and we need to comprehend and repent of those errors. It means that when we go about our lives, thoughtlessly living out our routines, absorbed in ourselves or our vain desires, we are habitually in error. We may be unwittingly generating problems for ourselves or our neighbors out of thoughtlessness, even unwitting selfishness.

Even in professional positions of responsibility we may be unnecessarily causing great problems for others. When we have the power to avoid hurting others (physically, financially, emotionally, etc.) – and/or cause unjust trouble or consequences to befall others – and we thoughtlessly allow it to occur, or we professionally enforce unjust policy or protocol onto others – we are

sinning. Yes, even in our daily jobs when we enforce unjust circumstances upon others, we sin. We need to repent. If you are required to commit sins against your neighbors in your daily job, and yet your greatest desire is to be worthy to enter into the Lord's kingdom, it's time to find another job or career. If you must spiritually justify your work – justify what you do to others in order to earn a paycheck, earn commission or bonuses, or make sales/close deals – then not only are you sinning every minute that you are at work, but you are also captive in the “bonds of iniquity.”²

The root of the term “iniquity” is “inequity.”

Equity (not in the financial sense) means fairness, fair-mindedness, impartiality, free of bias, objective, even-handedness, justice, the quality of being fair and just. “The very first meanings of equity in English were a direct translation from the original Old French *equité*, a word whose Latin root means “even,” “just,” and “equal.””³

Inequity is the exact opposite: unfairness, favoritism, bias, generating or promoting unfair circumstances or proceedings.⁴

Inequity is not the same as “inequality” – equality in all things is an inherent impossibility, as we are all unequal in that we are completely different and unique individuals. Perfect equality, at least in this life, is impossible. However, perfect equity *is* possible. The lack of it – inequity – results in a biased mindset, an unwillingness to be fair, impartial, and even-handed. It is the refusal, or the dismissal, of “loving thy neighbor as thyself.”

This is the real meaning of the spiritual term “iniquity” – the refusal to truly love, to treat your neighbor as good as you do yourself.

The church of the devil is founded upon, and flourishes from, the hidden theocratization of the principles of “iniquity” – elitism, secret societies, brotherhoods, fraternities, mafias, gangs, bands of pirates, etc.: the concept that one is better, one is higher, one is more enlightened than all the other-folk, simply because he/she “belongs.”

Sodom was not destroyed because of widespread homosexuality but due to widespread iniquity – pride, elitism, favoritism, classism:

“Behold, this was the iniquity of thy sister Sodom, pride, fulness of bread [i.e. gluttony], and abundance of idleness was in her and in her daughters, neither did she strengthen the hand of the poor and needy.”⁵

To be iniquitous is to cast unfair and/or any negative judgment onto another person, to think of one's self as somehow better than another. When someone is “full of iniquity,” one's heart is deliberately unjust – biased in judgment and completely unsympathetic towards those who are not favored, or of a favorable class or circumstances. Secret society initiates are required

to embrace iniquity; often it is the case that the greater they feel they are above others, the “higher” they will progress in their respective orders.

Having a correct understanding of these two terms, and fully comprehending what they refer to in scripture, is critical for the times when we self-analyze and seek to improve ourselves according to God's will – not our own.

Multi-Generational LDS Have Nothing to Be Pleased With Themselves About

I am a 6th generation Latter-day Saint. I have ancestors who were a part of the restoration era. I also have ancestors who were converted in England and came to join the Latter-day Saints. My great-great-grandpa was one of Joseph Smith's most loyal friends and dedicated bodyguards. Once when Joseph was arrested, he immediately sold all his property and put his family in a tent to get the money for Joseph to make bail. At Carthage Jail he guarded the door outside, but was surrounded by the Carthage Greys, forced onto his horse, and stabbed in the legs with bayonets. While he raced off to Nauvoo on his horse to get help, Joseph and Hyrum's martyrdom occurred. My great-great-grandfather's walking stick was used by Joseph to hit the muskets pointing through the doorway into the room. This walking stick is now on display in the Church History Museum in Salt Lake City. He went on to be among the forefront of the Mormon pioneers, among the first to arrive in the current Salt Lake area. Long before Brigham proclaimed “This is the place!”, my great-great-grandfather had already cleared land and had begun raising corn.

I can go on and on – but, so what. Really. So – What.

Does this make me a better person? Does it make me more righteous, more spiritual, more worthy than anyone else? Do the laudable actions of my LDS ancestors in any way bestow honor upon me as an individual? Does their lifelong earned acclaim somehow automatically infuse me with greatness, too? *Do I deserve to be looked up to, in any capacity, simply because I happen to be one of many among their offspring?*

Those, like me, who were born into the LDS Church – especially if they have pioneer heritage in their family tree – have nothing to be “proud” of. Absolutely nothing. Compared to them, we are a profound disappointment. Both to God and our ancestors. We sacrifice nothing, risk nothing, enjoy modern comforts (often with an attitude of entitlement), accept the monthly

salaries of Luciferian-owned-and-directed corporations, receive comfortable (or perhaps merely adequate) pay in assisting the Lord's enemies establish the church of the devil around the world, and embrace the modern-sophist/rhetorical/political/economic/academic mindsets and justified-abominations of the world.

We count ourselves as holding on to the iron rod simply because we: don't drink, don't smoke, don't do drugs, don't swear, don't watch "R-rated" movies⁶, go to Church every week, visit the temple regularly, glance through the scriptures daily, and keep the commandments (except in the situations where we justify that we don't have to). We don't bother to petition God about our standing before Him because our local Church leaders give us a you're-clean-enough-to-go-to-the-temple card – as if we're playing some board game and we've got a Get Out of Hell Free pass in our wallets.

In lieu of going directly to God, every six months we dutifully and uncritically place our trust in "prophets, seers, and revelators" to give us an updated status report straight from Heaven, which never actually comes – instead we are given 10 hours of re-quotes from modern leaders and anecdotal warm-fuzzy heart-treats. We count ourselves as persecuted because other Christian groups slander/libel us, or worldly-minded activists call us "haters", or every so often groups or anti-Mormons will hold protests/rallies outside temple boundaries.

That's the definition of "holding on to the iron rod," right?

Our ancestors gave up everything, willing suffered over and over again, in making every effort to surrender themselves to God's will. They – *sought* – Him. They gladly sacrificed all, wasted and wore out their lives, forfeited all personal ambition and any degree of lifestyle security, so that they might see Christ's face and be worthy to enter into His kingdom. An eye single to Christ's glory was what drove them to do all that they did, to the utmost limit of their capabilities to do so.

And we willfully-ignorantly, comfortably, shirkingly assume that we are on par to inherit the same glory they obtained through a lifetime of sacrifice, struggle, turmoil, and loss.

We – are – pathetic.

Who the hell do we think we are?

"We're Mormons!"

No we're not. We are corporate shills. We are staunch apologists of The Ecclesiastical Club of Intellectual Reserve, Inc. of Modern-day Jesus-Believers. We unquestioningly fork over 10% of our income as temple-access-fees to a centralized "ecclesiastical" bureaucracy that not only won't

EPILOGUE

disclose what they do with our donations, they have the gall to get defensive and actively discredit those who question them. We willingly-ignorantly assume that giving them money is building up "The Kingdom of God." Giving our money to an average televangelist would do as much to build God's kingdom – perhaps even more. And yet – in His patience, mercy, and long-suffering with us – the Lord *still* blesses us for our monetary contributions!

We are a disgrace to our pioneer ancestors. We ought to think twice before calling ourselves "Christians": do we deserve to be called after our Savior's name? Are we not also insulting Mormon by identifying ourselves after his name?

Mormon and Moroni

Have you ever taken the time to consider what Mormon and Moroni went through to give us those plates of gold which Joseph translated? Mormon spent his entire life in sorrow watching his people become proud, corrupt, and ever more bloodthirsty and twisted. He spent decades – *decades* – carefully perusing through hundreds of scrolls and engravings – thousands of historical and sacred Nephite records – contemplating and praying about which ones to thoughtfully abridge for our benefit in these last days – and then painstakingly carved, character by character of reformed Egyptian, into plates of gold. And what was Mormon's reward for doing this tremendous, painstaking, wasting-and-wearing-out-his-life work? He was wounded in defensive battle and required to witness the genocidal slaughter of his people. He witnessed everyone he loved (save one son) die an agonizing, bloody death: siblings, wife, children, cousins, neighbors, lifelong friends – *EVERYONE* – limbs chopped off, abdomens sliced open, howling with pain – Lamanite forces conducting a barbaric onslaught in glee, chanting slogans, drenched in Nephite blood, tearing out still-living victims' organs and eating them in a bloodthirsty frenzy. Thousands of recently mangled, putrifying carcasses of men, women, children – relatives, friends – piled up throughout the land.

"My soul was rent with anguish.... O ye fair ones, how is it that ye could have fallen!... How could ye have departed from the ways of the Lord! O ye fair ones, how could ye have rejected that Jesus, who stood with open arms to receive you! Behold, if ye had not done this, ye would not have fallen.... O that ye had repented before this great destruction had come upon you. But behold, ye are gone.... ye are gone, and my sorrows cannot bring your return."

Only a short time after he secured his lifelong work into the hands of his son, Moroni, he was also slain by Lamanites – numbered among countless

others in a mass of decaying flesh, forgotten by everyone, unrecorded in man's history.

That was Mormon's life. *That* was all the "reward" he got in this physical realm.

His son, Moroni, had it even worse. Not only did he witness the same harrowing slaughter, including the agonizing deaths of his father, mother, wife and children, he had to keep on living. For at least another twenty years. All that time he lived in hiding, under constant threat of being discovered and murdered, subsisting on who-knows-what. Twenty years to take in and contemplate his father's work – to distill the massive record of the Jaredites into a miniscule 15 tiny chapters (and yet spend the majority of the 8th chapter providing extensive, commanded-of-God commentary on the subject of secret combinations, and to specifically and emphatically warn us – *us in these last days* – about them). He then used the few remaining gold plates he had to record what he considered to be the most important information he could give us – *the gentiles who will read and believe his words*. After over two decades of enforced solitude, seeped in traumatic memories, he considered it most important to leave us with this:

"Come unto Christ, and be perfected in him, and deny yourselves of all ungodliness; and if ye shall deny yourselves of all ungodliness, and love God with all your might, mind and strength, then is his grace sufficient for you, that by his grace ye may be perfect in Christ; and if by the grace of God ye are perfect in Christ, ye can in nowise deny the power of God. And again, if ye by the grace of God are perfect in Christ, and deny not his power, then are ye sanctified in Christ by the grace of God, through the shedding of the blood of Christ, which is in the covenant of the Father unto the remission of your sins, that ye become holy, without spot.

"And now I bid unto all, farewell. I soon go to rest in the paradise of God, until my spirit and body shall again reunite, and I am brought forth triumphant through the air, to meet you before the pleasing bar of the great Jehovah, the Eternal Judge of both quick and dead. Amen."

I can only imagine that Joseph Smith felt ever-inferior to these men, no matter what revelations, visions, and glories he was shown, no matter how awful and horrendous the hardships he was required to endure.

And we – the *abysmal disappointments* of these last days – the latter-day dogs who unflinching turn back and lap up their steaming, putrid vomit⁸ – we have the gall to call ourselves "Mormon."

Ever-Recognizing Our Unworthiness

At the risk of sharing too much information, I need to report something. As I inserted Moroni's words and pondered his and his father's lives, the Spirit once again testified to me that it is all true – they were real men, their record is reliable, and they truly wore out and sacrificed themselves – for *us* in these last days. The weight of my imperfections, the non-ignorance of my ego-driven shortcomings, the understanding that I am not yet fully repentant – it all came crushing down upon me. I began weeping. Violently. To the point of vomiting. I rushed to the restroom and vomited in the toilet. Repeatedly. Vomited and sobbed in the agony of the remembrance of my poor choices, imperfections, selfishness, and follies.

Do you go through worthiness crises like this sometimes? Does your soul ache with sorrow when you become spiritually deficient or negligent? Do you yearn to serve our Savior? Do you yearn to see His face? Do you really comprehend how fallen, how thankless, and how unworthy we actually are? Do King Benjamin's words not smite you at your core?

"If you should render all the thanks and praise which your whole soul has power to possess... if ye should serve him who has created you from the beginning, and is preserving you from day to day, by lending you breath, that ye may live and move and do according to your own will, and even supporting you from one moment to another—I say, if ye should serve him with all your whole souls *yet ye would be unprofitable servants...*

"And behold, all that he requires of you is to keep his commandments.... he doth require that ye should do as he hath commanded you; for which if ye do, he doth immediately bless you; and therefore he hath paid you. And ***ye are still indebted unto him***, and are, and will be, forever and ever.... Ye cannot say that ye are even as much as the dust of the earth; yet ye were created of the dust of the earth; but behold, it belongeth to him who created you....

"If the knowledge of the goodness of God at this time has awakened you to a sense of *your nothingness*, and *your worthless and fallen state*—I say unto you, if ye have come to a knowledge of the goodness of God, and his matchless power, and his wisdom, and his patience, and his long-suffering towards the children of men; and also, the atonement which has been prepared from the foundation of the world.... as ye have come to the knowledge of the glory of God, or if ye have known of his goodness and have tasted of his love, and have received a remission of your sins, which causeth such exceedingly great joy in your souls, even so I would that ye should remember, and ***always retain in remembrance, the greatness of God, and your own nothingness, and his goodness and long-suffering towards you, unworthy creatures, and humble yourselves even in the depths of humility***, calling on the name of the

Lord daily, and standing steadfastly in the faith of that which is to come, which was spoken by the mouth of the angel.

“And behold, I say unto you that ***if ye do this ye shall always rejoice, and be filled with the love of God, and always retain a remission of your sins***; and ye shall grow in the knowledge of the glory of him that created you, or in the knowledge of that which is just and true.”⁹

I am no better than you – you are no better than me. I can only pray that you, who are using your precious personal time to read my words, remember that we are nothing – that the only way we can be worth anything is though constant, ponderous, daily repentance – that there's only one source of true, eternal “self-esteem”: ever-mindful acknowledgment of our fallen and wicked state, ever-seeking forgiveness from our Savior, desiring to do His will – willing to do *anything* He commands us to do.

There Is Only One Commandment

Followers of Christ eventually learn something profoundly simple yet simultaneously daunting: there is only one commandment.

That commandment is: “Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength.” (Mark 12:30, also Deuteronomy 6:5, Matthew 22:37, and Luke 10:27) Jesus goes on to clarify “this is the first commandment” – however, in reality, it is the only commandment.

Don't believe it? Ask Abraham, who was commanded of God to sacrifice his son Isaac – the son who was expected to fulfill God's promise to Abraham that the number of his posterity would be greater than the number of sand particles in the sea. Ask Nephi, who at a mere sixteen years of age was tasked by the Holy Spirit to slay a corrupt, inebriated, defenseless man. Sure, Isaac was preserved at the very last second, but Laban wasn't. Whether the recipient of the command was required to fully carry out the slaying or not, the command was to take another person's life.

How is it possible that the Lord can command someone to break His own universal, general-purpose commandments (i.e. the Ten Commandments)? How can He be God if He does not honor and enforce His own laws?

The answer is terrifyingly simple: because there is only one commandment. All other commandments, including the Ten Commandments, spring forth from *that* commandment. It is impossible to truly obey any of the Ten Commandments while simultaneously not loving the Lord with all one's heart, soul, mind, and strength.

Ponder that a level deeper: observing and obeying any of the Ten Commandments is *meaningless* to the Lord should the individual not love Him and seek His will with full purpose of heart. One can be the most chaste, kind, benevolent, honest, harmless, giving, good-natured individual – and yet, if one comprehensively detests the true persona of Christ (i.e. one is not misinformed about Christ, does not ignorantly misattribute evil onto Him, and has not built up an erroneous concept of the Savior of the world), and with full understanding rejects Christ's atonement for mankind, then all that observance and obedience and following the letter of the law of the Ten Commandments is absolutely worthless. It is all nothing. That individual has not honored *any* of the Lord's commandments one whit.

The Lord declares to the Israelites "Thou shalt not kill." And yet He commands Nephi "slay Laban." How can that not be contradictory? How is that not a paradox? Because the answer is far more simple than most people can perceive: the Lord's will *is* The Law. It is His will that anyone who loves Him to not kill. However, according to His will, Laban's corrupt, unrepentant life was to be taken. It was His will for Nephi to take Laban's life and thereafter obtain the plates of brass. There is no contradiction here. There is no paradox. The Lord's will *is* The Law.

Personal Revelation Is a Requisite Burden, It Does Not Empower or Justify Anyone

While it is wonderfully simplistic to boil everything down to "The Lord's will is The Law," it is also terrifying. Why? For many reasons:

1. It is one thing to read the Bible, to read the Book of Mormon, and say "Yeah, they were prophets. Their fruits testify that they were commanded of God to do this work. I can trust their words as holy scripture." It is a whole other terrifying conundrum to be sure if someone *today* is actually obeying God's command, or if they are only acting on their own accord and/or self-deception – or even worse, they are unwittingly acting upon the devil's deception.
2. Even more terrifying than the first point: how can one be sure, absolutely sure, that the inspiration and revelation one receives is actually of the Lord and not from one's own over-imaginative mind? Or from the benevolent-sounding whispering of devils? How do we know we are not unwittingly deceiving ourselves? How do we know we're not being deceived by patient, cunning demons?
3. All things considered, is this not how Lucifer operates as well? Is not the most primal aspect of secret combinations essentially the creed

"the end justifies the means"? Is not every murderous, detestable, evil act committed under this nefarious axiom justified and counted towards the initiate as a righteous achievement and done "for the greater good"? Is not unquestioning fealty in carrying out the most unjustifiable of commands by superiors the number one requirement of a dutiful initiate? Then how is "the Lord's will is The Law" any different from this? If the Lord commands everyone "don't kill," but then He commands an individual to slay someone, then is not the Lord operating in exactly the same way as Lucifer? How is this not also "the end justifies the means"?

These are exactly the conundrums and questions I wrestled with, intensely, for years. For about five years to be precise. They were a large part of the foundational motivation to do this work and create these two volumes of information. The answers to these questions did not come all at once. I shall give the answers I have received and have learned over time, and I encourage one to prayerfully accept them – in the hope that it will save one years of having to wrestle with them as well:

1. The red flags to look for when someone claims they have received divine instruction can be discerned by pondering these questions:
 - Does the instruction one received provide empowerment for one's self, or will the instruction merely glorify God?
 - Does it build up one's ego or cause one to be increasingly humble? (As an aside, piety is not the same as humility. Deep within the seemingly-self-deprecating pious person lies self-satisfaction, self-righteousness, and a desire to be better than others. The humble person discards all ego, self-satisfaction, personal agenda, ever-harbors sorrow for every un-Christ-like personal shortcoming, and never counts him/herself as better, more deserving, or more worthy than any other.)
 - Does it gratify one's pride and/or further one's personal ambition? (It doesn't matter whether one's ambition is benevolent and helpful to others, if it is *personal* then it is a red flag.)
 - Does it provide justification for one's actions, behavior, and/or decisions (whether previous or current) that are not altogether Christ-like?
 - Does the person honestly *like* what is commanded from God? Is it agreeable and concurrent with one's personal desires and/or resolve – or does the command make one uncomfortable and deeply hesitant to obey? Does it cause one to silently rejoice in one's heart, or does it cause grief, even to the point of loathing?

Does the command try that person's soul? (If the command serves to stretch the individual in ways that will truly, increasingly humble him/her, then it is not a red flag.)

2. It is one thing to be open to believe – and possibly place trust on – the inspiring experiences, dreams, visions, revelations, or whatever, that other good-seeming people have. It is an entirely different thing to have such things happen to *you*. Can you really trust the things that you receive yourself? *Should* you trust such things yourself? Dare you do it?

The questions put forth in the previous answer are precisely the same questions that ought to be repeatedly and deeply pondered in conducting self-checks when one receives personal revelation. They ought to be utilized as a filter to process all possible personal revelation. I know, repeatedly, from personal experience, that the adversary is capable of astonishing, careful deception – as detailed in previous journal excerpts, I have suffered from it in the past.

Therefore, after checking and re-checking and re-checking again every single aspect listed in the previous answer, do yourself and everyone else a favor and please ponder the following:

- Quite possibly the easiest heavenly communication that devils/demons can duplicate is what is generally described as “the still, small voice.” FACT: Not every single whispering or soft voice that comes to your mind is of God. *Almost all of it is not of God.* You must scrutinize everything you receive with the above-listed filter questions. Everything.
- The Holy Spirit is not emotional warm-fuzzies. When you get an emotional rush, or something makes you “feel good”, that is not the Holy Ghost. The Holy Ghost is the record of heaven. It is the confirmation of truth that becomes embedded into one's soul after having received it. It can only be dislodged through pride-based doubt, indifference, and/or exasperated rejection. One may experience an emotional response in connection with the confirmation of the Holy Spirit, but they are mutually exclusive. Most often, the Holy Spirit confirms directly into one's soul, not as a voice telling one that something is true.
- Aside from the Holy Spirit testifying of truth, Christ can and will personally speak to someone. This has happened to me several times in my life – four of these incidents are reprinted in this volume in journal excerpts. This kind of experience is ineffable – it cannot be adequately described in words and do it justice. It is

an individualized, personalized miracle. As recorded in my journal excerpts, what Christ says to someone, in His own voice, may not be welcome news. The filter questions ought to always be pondered, even if one is absolutely convinced that Christ has personally spoken to oneself.

- Never trust in dates, whether they come from others or from revelation one personally receives. If you receive something like "[Such and such] is going to occur on [such and such date]," then the chance that it's actually from God is a trillion to one. Seriously, if any prediction is connected to an exact date, you can become rich by repeatedly betting against it coming to pass. (This doesn't mean that whatever the event is won't happen, but it does mean that *exact dates are worthless information* – they are a preferred tactic of the adversary to discredit anyone who honestly wishes to warn others.)

As detailed previously in journal excerpts, I have been tricked four times in this manner. After realizing that I was deceived, I was plunged into unbelief. Not disbelief – unbelief: a state of refusing to believe anything. I was angry at myself because I thought that I had developed good spiritual discernment over the years. I struggled against being angry at God for not answering my pleading prayers – for I pleaded over and over and over with Him to let me know if I was being deceived – and He didn't give me anything – no confirmation nor "stupor of thought."¹⁰ He just let me be gently, carefully, craftily deceived by this phony still small voice. It took me months to ponder and learn enough from these experiences to once again soften my heart, and to simply let God do His work – and to teach me – in *His* way, not the way I expect (or unwittingly demand) it to be done.

Most important to realize: my prayers *were* answered by these experiences. I prayed and begged for greater, keener discernment to not be deceived – and that's exactly what I ended up getting, but it had to come through being taken in by deception, and by having to spend months re-evaluating, re-sorting, and re-analyzing everything. Unfortunately, hindsight is perhaps the greatest teaching tool the Lord has at His disposal.

- Finally, if there is one thing that I have learned overall, it is this: it is better to be open to trusting any personal revelation one receives than to be hyper-concerned, hyper-skeptical, cynical, and/or not the least bit open to trusting anything at all. It is important to thoroughly scrutinize oneself – one's ego,

subconscious drives, personal desires, ambitions, justifications, and gratifications – when receiving any kind of spiritual communication. However, it is most important to be *willing to receive it at all* – to trust in God enough that He *does* work this way, and that He has *always* worked this way. The Lord can work with the simple, honest fool who loves Him, who strives to make amends to those he misused or otherwise has wronged, and who believes every bit of blatant-deception junk that enters into his mind – but the Lord *cannot* work with the cynical genius – neither can he work with the good-hearted-but-stiff-necked overly-skeptical saint who flawlessly obeys all the commandments. He can only work with those who are open to receiving personal revelation, who seek it and seek to do His will.

Quite possibly the most consoling information about personal revelation is this: if one's heart, mind, and soul is truly dedicated to the Lord – if one's eye is truly single to His will – then it doesn't matter if one is occasionally, unwittingly bamboozled by the adversary. Even Joseph Smith was fooled at least a handful of times.

Even if one is considered to be discredited and unreliable, it doesn't matter. What matters is one's personal relationship with the Lord. Period. And the Lord will work with whoever *He* choose to work with. If one's eye is single to God's glory – truly, humbly, self-sacrificially single to His will – and one is open to receiving personal revelation from Him and actively seeks it, then the Lord will never allow that person to be deceived unto one's destruction. Any deception that person encounters will become a learning experience.

3. The concise answer to this concern is repeated throughout Volume I: God creates, Satan imitates. Truly, there are only two “churches” in this world – there are only two forces at play – there are only two “sides”: the Lord's side, and the devil's side.

The devil has a concentrated investment in modeling himself after God. He masquerades that he is omnipotent. He convinces others that his word is eternally binding. He assures that he can deliver on his promises. It is all a lie. He is the father of all lies. He is the phony of phonies. He has done nothing, risked nothing, endured nothing for anyone but himself.

The Lord Jesus Christ, on the other hand, has overcome the world. He has done all, risked all, suffered all – everything that every single one of us has ever suffered. He has known it, He has felt it, He has

endured it, He has suffered through it. He has *earned* the status of being worthy enough to be worshiped by all mankind. He has *earned* the status of being glorified and praised. He, and only He, has the ability to be a perfectly-fair, unbiased, objective judge of each and every one of us. Only He can truly and fairly conclude who is righteous and who is wicked. And yet, He will be our advocate with Heavenly Father – instead of being our judge, he will be our attorney. Our own unfettered, unsuppressed consciences – the record of our lives written clear-as-day upon our souls – will be our judgment. Nothing will be hidden – we will judge ourselves. And yet, it will be Christ who pulls for us when we must stand and face God Almighty one day.

It is Christ who will do this – who can do this. He, like God the Father, sees the end from the beginning. He, and He alone, knows how the actions of individuals will ripple through time, even for generations, for millennia. He, and He alone, has the right to intervene in the affairs of mankind if He so deems it important enough to do so.

Therefore, it is His will – and *only* His will – that matters. His will and only His will is “in the benefit of all mankind.” Therefore, there is only one universal law, only one commandment: the Lord's will. If the Lord gives wise, general commandments for His people to obey, but then He decides to command someone (that He has personally selected) to do the opposite, then it is His right to do so. If that command is *truly* from Him, then the man who “breaks” the general commandment has not sinned. His soul is clean before God.

Perhaps one might read all this and conclude “That's all too scary for me. I don't want to be put at risk of ridicule, embarrassment, and being deceived. I think I'll just take a pass on personal revelation altogether – let someone else I trust to get revelation for me.” I must remind one who feels this way that personal revelation is not just for “prophets,” it is a requirement for every individual's salvation. Our first personal revelation is our testimony that Jesus is the Christ. We are required to continue seeking personal revelation ever after – for *that* is the definition of “holding on to the iron rod”: to seek and ever cling to the word of God – not just in scripture but from what is received in personal revelation also.

Final Thoughts: I am Nothing Without Repentance

The voice of God has spoken to me several times. I have once been blessed with witnessing a resurrected individual (appearing normally, not in glory). I have witnessed too many miracles to enumerate. I have received a vision of the future as pertaining to my life's mission. I have had my calling and election made sure. I have passed my Abrahamic test.

It is all meaningless without lowly, broken-hearted, daily repentance.

I am not "better" than anyone. I have had some powerful spiritual experiences, yet I thereby feel greater responsibility, and I impose greater expectations upon myself.

I have not yet been ministered to by an angel. I have not yet been shown the visions of eternity. I have not yet seen the face of my Lord, Jesus Christ. These are my goals, my greatest hopes. I desire to see my Lord's face above all – I care for nothing else – all else this world can offer is dross.

I glory in Denver's testimony that he has received all these blessings – I rejoice because I know that if he has received them, then I can as well – *if* my eye remains truly single to the glory of God, and I do all things, suffer all things, and endure all things in faith.

The reader ought to rejoice as well – I testify that great spiritual blessings and experiences have occurred for me, and they can happen to you. Trials must come, faith must be tested – often excruciatingly. "You receive no witness until after the trial of your faith."¹¹ All the Lord's trials are personalized; if you seek the Lord, your faith will be tried in the most personal, hand-tailored manner for you. Meekness, long-suffering, a broken heart (free of all bitterness), unhesitant forgiveness of others (especially towards those who feel no remorse), and sackcloth-and-ashes repentance are required to succeed.

There will be times (sometimes long periods of time) when one feels abandoned by God. Know that this kind of trial is absolutely necessary, and a sign that you are spiritually prepared to face it. Do not be surprised if you find yourself submerged in trials of despair and hopelessness and simultaneously never receive the slightest heavenly assistance or comfort, even for months or years. This has happened to me. I can testify that such trials do have an end, they have a light at the end of the seemingly endless tunnel of despair.

As "Mormons," we often throw around the encouragement "Endure to the end." This phrase is repeated in scripture (often by the Lord Himself)

thirteen times,¹² and always with the note that those who manage to do so “shall have eternal life,” “shall be saved,” or “lifted up at the last day.” To the ancient saints – the Jewish and Gentile converts after Christ’s resurrection – this meant to endure extensive oppression and government-led hunt downs, resulting in horrendous physical suffering. And yet, the ancient saints sung the praises of Jesus, glorying in their Lord, while being simultaneously ripped apart and devoured alive by lions and other beasts.

Are we ready to “endure” likewise? Will we shout Hosannas to the Most High while enduring relentless torture, ending in a slow, excruciating death? Or, alternatively, perhaps we be required to witness our loved ones endure such torment while we are powerless to save them, and the Lord withholds His power and does not miraculously save them as well. Alma and Amulek had to endure this, witnessing hundreds of friends and loved ones burn to death:

“And when Amulek saw the pains of the women and children who were consuming in the fire, he also was pained; and he said unto Alma: How can we witness this awful scene? Therefore let us stretch forth our hands, and exercise the power of God which is in us, and save them from the flames. But Alma said unto him: The Spirit constraineth me that I must not stretch forth mine hand; for behold the Lord receiveth them up unto himself, in glory; and he doth suffer that they may do this thing, or that the people may do this thing unto them, according to the hardness of their hearts, that the judgments which he shall exercise upon them in his wrath may be just; and the blood of the innocent shall stand as a witness against them, yea, and cry mightily against them at the last day.” (Alma 14:10,11)

Will we be required to endure long, drawn out periods of uncertainty, frustration, and pain, while simultaneously being subjected to silence from Heaven – perhaps for months or years?

Will we abandon the Lord in these moments? Will we break and cower and abandon any hope of eternal justice, or wane in our faith of a God who sees, feels, knows all that we go through?

Will we forget that Christ Himself has endured all this, and much much more?

“For behold, I, God, have suffered these things for all... Which suffering caused myself, even God, the greatest of all, to tremble because of pain, and to bleed at every pore, and to suffer both body and spirit — and would that I might not drink the bitter cup, and shrink....”¹³

Is it too much to patiently suffer a fraction of what He suffered, in testimony of Him?

Is it not glorious to suffer for our Lord as a small gesture of thanks for His omniscient suffering for us?

EPILOGUE

When we feel abandoned by Him, know that He had to suffer likewise – to feel completely abandoned by the Father in His worst hour:

“And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?”¹⁴

Take what I have provided you. Mull it over. Ponder it. Pray about it. What does it do for your testimony of Christ? All other testimonies of anything else – the Bible, the Book of Mormon, Joseph Smith, modern prophets, the “Church” – they are *all meaningless* without one's testimony anchored and fastened and firmly rooted in Christ, and *only* in Christ. Truly, nothing else really matters – for all these other testimonies are meant to testify of *Him*.

There is none other. Come unto Christ. Repent. Be baptized in Him. Forsake your worldliness. Lose yourself in Christ that you may find your eternal soul, your eternal worth. I pray that I may meet you in that final day – that I, too, will be worthy enough to join you there. God be with you, I pray in the name of Jesus Christ, Amen.

- 1 Source: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sin>
- 2 See Mosiah 23:13, Alma 41:11, and Mormon 8:31
- 3 Source: <http://dictionary.reference.com/browse/equity>
- 4 Source: <http://dictionary.reference.com/browse/inequity>
- 5 Ezekiel 16:49
- 6 While a movie may receive an "R" rating due to content inappropriate for children, many of the movies that are laced with Luciferianism are rated G or PG. Some of the contents of the Book of Mormon (or the Bible for that matter) would technically receive an "R" rating. The primary issue of all communicative media is not strictly the content, it is the motive, agenda, morality, and manner of presentation of that content. This is what determines whether or not the Spirit is offended by something.
- 7 Mormon 6:16-22
- 8 "And thus six years had not passed away since the more part of the people had turned from their righteousness, like the dog to his vomit, or like the sow to her wallowing in the mire." 3 Nephi 7:8
- 9 Mosiah 2:20-25, 4:5-12 (emphasis added)
- 10 "But if it be not right you shall have no such feelings, but you shall have a stupor of thought that shall cause you to forget the thing which is wrong; therefore, you cannot write that which is sacred save it be given you from me." D&C 9:9
- 11 Ether 12:6
- 12 Instances in scripture of "endure to the end," or "endure unto the end": Matthew 24:13, Mark 13:13, 1 Nephi 13:37, 1 Nephi 22:31, 2 Nephi 9:24, 2 Nephi 31:16, 2 Nephi 33:4, Omni 1:26, 3 Nephi 15:9, Mormon 9:29, D&C 14:7, D&C 18:22
- 13 D&C 19:16-18
- 14 Mark 15:34

APPENDICES

APPENDIX A:

POELMAN'S OCT. 1984 CONFERENCE TALK

The following is a side-by-side comparison of what Elder Ronald E. Poelman spoke at conference and what was printed in Ensign magazine. Deleted portions from the original talk are marked in strikethrough font, while the alterations made in the Ensign are underlined.¹

Conference Version	Version Published in the Ensign
Both the gospel of Jesus Christ and the Church of Jesus Christ are true and divine.	Both the gospel of Jesus Christ and the Church of Jesus Christ are true and divine.
However, there is a distinction between them which is significant and it is very important that this distinction be understood.	<u>and there is an essential relationship between them that is significant and very important.</u>
Of equal importance is understanding the essential relationship between the gospel and the Church. Failure to distinguish between the two and to comprehend their proper relationship may lead to confusion and misplaced priorities with unrealistic and therefore failed expectations.	<u>Understanding the proper relationship between the gospel and the Church will prevent confusion, misplaced priorities, and failed expectations and will lead to the realization of gospel goals through happy, fulfilling participation in the Church. Such understanding will avoid possible disaffection and will result in great personal blessings.</u>
This in turn may result in diminished benefits and blessings and, in extreme	

APPENDIX A: POELMAN'S OCT. 1984 CONFERENCE TALK

instances, even disaffections.	
As I attempt to describe and comment upon some distinguishing characteristics of the gospel and of the Church, at the same time noting their essential relationships, it is my prayer that a perspective may be developed which will enhance the influence of both the gospel and the Church in our lives.	As I attempt to describe and comment upon <u>the essential relationship between</u> the gospel and the Church it is my prayer that a perspective may be developed which will enhance the influence of both the gospel and the Church in our lives.
The gospel of Jesus Christ is a divine and perfect plan. It is composed of eternal, unchanging principles and laws which are universally applicable to every individual regardless of time, place, or circumstance.	The gospel of Jesus Christ is a divine and perfect plan. It is composed of eternal, unchanging principles, laws, and <u>ordinances</u> which are universally applicable to every individual regardless of time, place, or circumstance.
The principles and laws of the gospel never change	Gospel principles never change.
The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints is a divine institution administered by the priesthood of God.	The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints is <u>the kingdom of God on Earth</u> administered by the priesthood of God.
The Church has authority to teach correctly the principles and doctrines of the gospel and to administer its essential ordinances.	The Church has authority to teach correctly the principles and doctrines of the gospel and to administer its essential ordinances.
The gospel is the substance of the divine plan for personal, individual salvation and exaltation. The Church is the delivery system that provides the means and resources to implement this plan in each individual's life.	The gospel is the divine plan for personal, individual salvation and exaltation. The Church is <u>divinely commissioned to provide</u> the means and resources that implement this plan in each individual's life.
Procedures programs and policies are developed within the Church to help us realize gospel blessings according to our individual capacity and circumstances. Under divine direction, these policies, programs, and procedures do change from time to time as necessary to fulfill gospel purposes.	Procedures programs and policies are developed within the Church to help us realize gospel blessings according to our individual capacity and circumstances. Under divine direction, these policies, programs, and procedures <u>may be</u> changed from time to time as necessary to fulfill gospel purposes.
Underlying every aspect of Church administration and activity are the revealed eternal principles as contained in the scriptures.	Underlying every aspect of Church administration and activity are the revealed eternal principles as contained in the scriptures.
As individually and collectively we	As individually and collectively we

THERE ARE SAVE TWO CHURCHES ONLY – VOLUME II

increase our knowledge, acceptance, and application of gospel principles, we become less dependent on Church programs. Our lives become gospel centered.	increase our knowledge, acceptance, and application of gospel principles, we <u>can more effectively utilize the Church to make</u> our lives more gospel centered.
Sometimes traditions, customs, social practices and personal preferences of individual Church members may, through repeated or common usage be misconstrued as Church procedures or policies. Occasionally, such traditions, customs and practices may even be regarded by some as eternal gospel principles. Under such circumstances those who do not conform to these cultural standards may mistakenly be regarded as unorthodox or even unworthy. In fact, the eternal principles of the gospel and the divinely inspired Church do accommodate a broad spectrum of individual uniqueness and cultural diversity.	<u>The eternal principles of the gospel implemented through the divinely inspired Church apply to a wide variety of individuals in diverse cultures.</u>
The conformity we require should be according to God's standards.	<u>Therefore, as we live the gospel and participate in the Church, the conformity we require of ourselves and of others</u> should be according to God's standards.
The orthodoxy upon which we insist must be founded in fundamental principles and eternal law, including free agency and the divine uniqueness of the individual.	The orthodoxy upon which we insist must be founded in fundamental principles, eternal law, <u>and direction given by those authorized in the Church.</u>
It is important therefore to know the difference between eternal gospel principles which are unchanging, universally applicable and cultural norms which may vary with time and circumstance.	
The source of this perspective is found in the scriptures and may appear to be presented in a rather unorganized and untidy format.	<u>A necessary perspective is gained by studying and pondering the scriptures.</u>

APPENDIX A: POELMAN'S OCT. 1984 CONFERENCE TALK

<p>The Lord could have presented the gospel to us in a manual, systematically organized by subject, perhaps using examples and illustrations.</p> <p>However the eternal principles and divine laws of God are revealed to us through accounts of individual lives in a variety of circumstances and conditions.</p>	
<p>Reading the scriptures, we learn the gospel as it is taught by various messengers at different times and places.</p>	<p>Reading the scriptures, we learn the gospel as it is taught by various <u>prophets in a variety of circumstances</u>, times, and places.</p>
<p>We see the consequences as it is accepted or rejected, as its principles are applied or not to varying degrees and by many different people.</p>	<p>We see the consequences as <u>the gospel is accepted or rejected by individuals and as its principles are applied or not.</u></p>
<p>In the scriptures we discover that varying institutional forms, procedures and regulations and ceremonies are utilized, all divinely designed to implement eternal principles. The practices and procedures change; the principles do not.</p>	<p>In the scriptures we discover that varying institutional forms, procedures and regulations and ceremonies <u>were</u> utilized, all divinely designed to implement eternal principles. The practices and procedures change; the principles do not.</p>
<p>Through scripture study we may learn eternal principles and how to distinguish them from and relate them to institutional resources.</p>	
<p>As we liken the scriptures unto ourselves we can better utilize the institutional resources of the modern restored Church to learn, live and share the gospel of Jesus Christ.</p>	<p>As we liken the scriptures unto ourselves we can better utilize the institutional resources of the modern restored Church to learn, live and share the gospel of Jesus Christ.</p>
<p>A favorite scriptural source for this is the Old Testament Book of Leviticus.</p>	<p>A favorite scriptural source for this is the Old Testament Book of Leviticus.</p>
<p>It is basically a handbook for Hebrew priests and contains many rules, regulations, rituals and ceremonies which seem strange and inapplicable to us.</p>	<p>It is basically a handbook for Hebrew priests and contains many rules, regulations, rituals and ceremonies which seem strange and inapplicable to us.</p>
<p>It also contains eternal principles of the gospel which are familiar and very much applicable to everyone.</p>	<p>It also contains eternal principles of the gospel which are familiar and very much applicable to everyone.</p>
<p>It is interesting and enlightening to read</p>	<p>It is interesting and enlightening to read</p>

THERE ARE SAVE TWO CHURCHES ONLY – VOLUME II

<p>the 19th chapter of Leviticus, noting both the principles and the rules and practices.</p> <p>In the first two verses we read, "And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto all the congregation of the children of Israel....." (Leviticus 19: 1-2)</p> <p>Here is the principle of revelation. God speaks to his children through prophets. He does so today.</p> <p>Continuing, the Lord says to Moses, "....say unto them, Ye shall be holy: for I the Lord your God am holy." (Leviticus 19:2)</p> <p>Jesus, in the Sermon on the Mount, said, "Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect." (Matthew 5:48) Here is an eternal gospel principle.</p> <p>There follow other eternal principles, some form the Ten Commandments.</p> <p>Also included are rules and programs intended to implement these principles among the ancient Hebrews in their particular circumstances.</p> <p>For example, the divinely directed responsibility to care for the poor is taught. A program is presented, vis. providing food for the poor by leaving the gleanings of the crops and not reaping the corners of the fields. (Leviticus 19:9-10) Current programs to care for the poor are much different. The divine law is the same. Yet another principle underlies both programs, ancient and modern, i.e. those being assisted are given opportunity to participate in helping themselves to the extent of their capacity.</p> <p>In verse 13 the principle of honesty is</p>	<p>the 19th chapter of Leviticus, noting both the principles and the rules and practices.</p> <p>In the first two verses we read, "And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto all the congregation of the children of Israel....." (Leviticus 19: 1-2)</p> <p>Here is the principle of revelation. God speaks to his children through prophets. He does so today.</p> <p>Continuing, the Lord says to Moses, "....say unto them, Ye shall be holy: for I the Lord your God am holy." (Leviticus 19:2)</p> <p>Jesus, in the Sermon on the Mount, said, "Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect." (Matthew 5:48) Here is an eternal gospel principle.</p> <p>There follow other eternal principles, some form the Ten Commandments.</p> <p>Also included are rules and programs intended to implement these principles among the ancient Hebrews in their particular circumstances.</p> <p>For example, the divinely directed responsibility to care for the poor is taught. A program is presented, vis. providing food for the poor by leaving the gleanings of the crops and not reaping the corners of the fields. (Leviticus 19:9-10) Current programs to care for the poor are much different. The divine law is the same. Yet another principle underlies both programs, ancient and modern, i.e. those being assisted are given opportunity to participate in helping themselves to the extent of their capacity.</p> <p>In verse 13 the principle of honesty is</p>
---	---

APPENDIX A: POELMAN'S OCT. 1984 CONFERENCE TALK

taught accompanied by a rule requiring employers to pay employees for their work at the end of each day.	taught accompanied by a rule requiring employers to pay employees for their work at the end of each day.
Generally, today that rule is not necessary.	Generally, today that rule is not necessary.
The eternal principle of honesty is implemented by other rules and practices.	The eternal principle of honesty is implemented by other rules and practices.
Verse 27 contains a rule about personal grooming, it is clearly not applicable to us.	Verse 27 contains a rule about personal grooming, it is clearly not applicable to us.
However, we also have standards of dress and grooming.	However, we also have standards of dress and grooming.
Neither is an eternal principle; both are intended to help us implement and share gospel principles.	Neither is an eternal principle; both are intended to help us implement and share gospel principles.
The principle of forgiveness is set forth in the same chapter of Leviticus, verse 18, concluding with the second great commandment, "....thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself." with the added divine imprimatur, "...I am the Lord."	The principle of forgiveness is set forth in the same chapter of Leviticus, verse 18, concluding with the second great commandment, "....thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself." with the added divine imprimatur, "...I am the Lord."
Every church member has not only the opportunity, right, and privilege to receive a personal witness regarding gospel principles and Church practices, but has the need and obligation to obtain such assurance by exercising his free agency, thereby fulfilling one purpose of his mortal probation.	Every church member has the opportunity, right, and privilege to receive a personal witness regarding gospel principles and Church practices.
Without such a witness, one may feel confused and perhaps even burdened by what may appear to be simply institutional requirements of the Church.	Without such assurance, one may feel confused and perhaps even burdened by what may appear to be simply institutional requirements of the Church.
Indeed, it is not enough that we obey the commandments and counsel of Church leaders.	We <u>should</u> obey the commandments and counsel of Church leaders;
In response to study, prayer and by the influence of the Holy Spirit we may seek and obtain an individual, personal	<u>but also through</u> study, through prayer, and by the influence of the Holy Spirit, we <u>should</u> seek and obtain an individual,

THERE ARE SAVE TWO CHURCHES ONLY – VOLUME II

witness that the principle or counsel is correct and divinely inspired.	personal witness that the principle or counsel is correct and divinely inspired.
Then we can give enlightened, enthusiastic obedience, utilizing the Church through which to give allegiance, time, talent and other resources without reluctance or resentment.	Then we can give enlightened, enthusiastic obedience, utilizing the Church through which to give allegiance, time, talent and other resources without reluctance or resentment.
Happy, fulfilling participation in the Church results when we relate institutional goals, programs and policies to gospel principles and to personal eternal goals.	Happy, fulfilling participation in the Church results when we relate <u>Church</u> goals, programs and policies to gospel principles and to personal eternal goals.
When we understand the difference between the gospel and the Church and the appropriate function of each in our daily lives, we are much more likely to do the right things for the right reasons.	When we <u>see the harmony</u> between the gospel and the Church in our daily lives, we are much more likely to do the right things for the right reasons.
Institutional discipline is replaced by self discipline.	
Supervision is replaced by righteous initiative and a sense of divine accountability.	<u>We will exercise self discipline and righteous initiative guided by Church leaders</u> and a sense of divine accountability.
The Church aids us in our effort to use our free agency creatively, not to invent our own values and principles, but to discover and adopt the eternal truths of the gospel.	The Church aids us in our effort to use our free agency creatively, not to invent our own values and principles, <u>and interpretations</u> but to <u>learn and live</u> the eternal truths of the gospel.
Gospel living is a process of continuous individual renewal and improvement until the person is prepared and qualified to enter comfortably and with confidence into the presence of God.	Gospel living is a process of continuous individual renewal and improvement until the person is prepared and qualified to enter comfortably and with confidence into the presence of God.
My brothers and sisters, by inclination, training and experience, most of my life I have sought understanding by the accumulation of facts and the application of reason.	My brothers and sisters, by inclination, training and experience, most of my life I have sought understanding by the accumulation of facts and the application of reason.
I continue to do so.	I continue to do so.
However, that which I know most surely and which has most significantly and	However, that which I know most surely and which has most significantly and

APPENDIX A: POELMAN'S OCT. 1984 CONFERENCE TALK

<p>positively affected my life I do not know by facts and reason alone, but rather by the comforting, confirming witness of the Holy Spirit.</p> <p>By that same Spirit I testify that God is our Father, that Jesus of Nazareth is the Only Begotten of the Father in the flesh and that he is the Savior and Redeemer of all mankind and each of us.</p> <p>Through his atoning sacrifice, redemption and exaltation are offered as a free gift to all who will accept by faith, repentance and sacred covenants.</p> <p>May each of us continue to learn and apply the eternal principles of the gospel, utilizing fully and appropriately the resources of the divine restored Church.</p> <p>In the words of the Nephite leader Pahoran, "... may we rejoice in the great privilege of our church and in the cause of our Redeemer and our God." (Alma 61:14) In the name of Jesus Christ. Amen.</p>	<p>positively affected my life I do not know by facts and reason alone, but rather by the comforting, confirming witness of the Holy Spirit.</p> <p>By that same Spirit I testify that God is our Father, that Jesus of Nazareth is the Only Begotten of the Father in the flesh and that he is the Savior and Redeemer of all mankind and each of us.</p> <p>Through his atoning sacrifice, redemption and exaltation are offered as a free gift to all who will accept by faith, repentance and sacred covenants.</p> <p>May each of us continue to learn and apply the eternal principles of the gospel, utilizing fully and appropriately the resources of the divine restored Church.</p> <p>In the words of the Nephite leader Pahoran, "... may we rejoice in the great privilege of our church and in the cause of our Redeemer and our God." (Alma 61:14) In the name of Jesus Christ. Amen.</p>
---	---

1 For a PDF version of this comparison between the two talks, refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: General Authority Censorship_Ronald E. Poelman Oct 1984 GC talk

APPENDIX B:

NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

*But behold, Satan did stir up the hearts of the more part of the Nephites, insomuch that they did unite with those bands of robbers, and did enter into their covenants and their oaths, that they would **protect and preserve one another** in whatsoever difficult circumstances they should be placed, that **they should not suffer for their murders, and their plunderings, and their stealings.***

*And it came to pass that they did have their signs, yea, their secret signs, and their secret words; and this that they might distinguish a brother who had entered into the covenant, that **whatsoever wickedness his brother should do he should not be injured** by his brother, nor by those who did belong to his band, who had taken this covenant.*

*And **thus they might murder, and plunder, and steal, and commit whoredoms and all manner of wickedness,** contrary to the laws of their country and also the laws of their God.*

And whosoever of those who belonged to their band should reveal unto the world of their wickedness and their abominations, should be tried, not according to the laws of their country, but according to the laws of their wickedness....

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

*And it came to pass... that the Nephites did build them up and support them, **beginning at the more wicked part of them**, until they had **overspread all the land** of the Nephites, and had **seduced the more part of the righteous** until they had come down to believe in their works and partake of their spoils, and to join with them in their secret murders and combinations.*

***And thus they did obtain the sole management of the government**, insomuch that they did trample under their feet and smite and rend and turn their backs upon the poor and the meek, and the humble followers of God.*

And thus we see that they were in an awful state, and ripening for an everlasting destruction.

– Mormon, discussing the Gadianton Robbers¹

Hearken, O ye Gentiles, and hear the words of Jesus Christ, the Son of the living God, which he hath commanded me that I should speak concerning you, for, behold he commandeth me that I should write, saying:

Turn, all ye Gentiles, from your wicked ways; and repent of your evil doings, of your lyings and deceivings, and of your whoredoms, and of your secret abominations, and your idolatries, and of your murders, and your priestcrafts, and your envyings, and your strifes, and from all your wickedness and abominations, and come unto me, and be baptized in my name, that ye may receive a remission of your sins, and be filled with the Holy Ghost, that ye may be numbered with my people who are of the house of Israel.

– Jesus Christ²

The following chart consists of a list of the abominations of high-profile persons, many of whom were directly involved in the abuse and mind-controlled existences of Sue Ford and Cathy O'Brien, as well as their various family members and children.

It needs to be understood that, although the atrocities listed here can seem beyond belief, they were nevertheless witnessed or experienced firsthand by these two women, or others mentioned – their initial memories of these matters were deeply compartmentalized within their own minds for decades. Eventually, their memories of these abuses were vividly brought to light (often excruciatingly remembered and re-experienced by all five senses). Sue, in particular, testifies that she has been led by the Holy Spirit to testify to the world of what she suffered.

When the Lord speaks of “whoredoms” and “secret abominations” being committed in private chambers, when He warns that these atrocities are being perpetrated by those who are “seduc[ing] the more part of the righteous,” to the point that the “more wicked part [have] obtain[ed] the sole management of the government”, He is not exaggerating. When the Lord warns us to cease “idoltries”, “envyings”, and “placing trust in the arm of flesh”, it is not just good advice to be heeded whimsically on a case-by-case basis.

I present the reader a list of publicly recognized and admired perpetrators (and some unfortunate victims), as well as the locations where atrocities occurred (and likely continue to occur). I present this information not only because darkness needs to be brought into the light, but also that idolization of any individual or earthly organization needs to cease. Trust and admiration in the arm of flesh needs to cease. Faux righteous veneers and elaborate deceptions committed by secret society initiatives need to cease.

WARNING: The following contains highly graphic descriptions

Albright, Madeline

Worldly Recognition: Former U.S. Ambassador to the U.N., Former Secretary of State, serves on the Council on Foreign Relations' Board of Directors, deeply involved in world politics.

Details: Cathy testifies the following:

“Reagan first introduced me to U.N. Ambassador Madeleine Albright as 'my mentor' in Jesuit operations in the Caribbean. "Madeleine Albright is a Saint," Reagan told me, forming my perception of her [as] 'The Mother Teresa of the Caribbean.'" H.W. Bush to young Cathy: "She's the reverend mother of all sisters ([mind controlled] slaves). She's so close to God that an order from her is an order from Him. She rose in the U.N. through me to implement the New World peace process."

Allen, Woody (and Farrow, Mia)

Worldly Recognition: Award-winning and highly influential film director. Regarded as one of the greatest filmmakers still alive.

Details: Woody and Mia (who frequently acted in his films) had a decade-long romantic relationship, yet never married. During that time, they cared for several adopted children. “[In] January, 1992, Farrow was at Allen’s home and came across nude photos of her other adopted daughter, 21-year-old Soon-Yi Previn, which were taken by Allen. [Allen was 57 years old at this time.] As a result, Farrow realized that Allen was having an affair with Soon-Yi. This caused a bitter breakup of the long-term relationship between Allen and Farrow, with Soon-Yi then moving in with Allen.”³ Allen and Soon-Yi married in 1997, remain married today, and have two adopted daughters.

On February 1st, 2014, a New York Times Op-Ed Columnist, Nicholas Kristof, published an open letter by Dylan Farrow, upon request by Dylan herself. Kristof prefaces the letter by stating:

“Dylan, Allen’s adopted daughter who is now married and living in Florida under a different name, tells me that she has been traumatized for more than two decades by what took place; last year, she was belatedly diagnosed with post-traumatic stress disorder. She says that when she heard of the Golden Globe [Lifetime Achievement] award being given to Allen she curled up in a ball on her bed, crying hysterically.... I reached out to [Woody] Allen several days ago, and he declined to comment on the record.”⁴

The following is the full text from Dylan’s letter.⁵ A PDF of it is included in the supporting material.⁶

“What’s your favorite Woody Allen movie? Before you answer, you should know: when I was seven years old, Woody Allen took me by the hand and led me into a dim, closet-like attic on the second floor of our house. He told me to lay on my stomach and play with my brother’s electric train set. Then he sexually assaulted me. He talked to me while he did it, whispering that I was a good girl, that this was our secret, promising that we’d go to Paris and I’d be a star in his movies. I remember staring at that toy train, focusing on it as it traveled in its circle around the attic. To this day, I find it difficult to look at toy trains.

“For as long as I could remember, my father had been doing things to me that I didn’t like. I didn’t like how often he would take me away from my mom, siblings and friends to be alone with him. I didn’t like it when he would stick his thumb in my mouth. I didn’t like it when I had to get in bed with him under the sheets when he was in his underwear. I didn’t like it when he would place his head in my naked lap and breathe in and breathe out. I would hide under beds or lock myself in the bathroom to

avoid these encounters, but he always found me. These things happened so often, so routinely, so skillfully hidden from a mother that would have protected me had she known, that I thought it was normal. I thought this was how fathers doted on their daughters. But what he did to me in the attic felt different. I couldn't keep the secret anymore.

"When I asked my mother if her dad did to her what Woody Allen did to me, I honestly did not know the answer. I also didn't know the firestorm it would trigger. I didn't know that my father would use his sexual relationship with my sister [Ed. Note: referring to Soon-Yi] to cover up the abuse he inflicted on me. I didn't know that he would accuse my mother of planting the abuse in my head and call her a liar for defending me. I didn't know that I would be made to recount my story over and over again, to doctor after doctor, pushed to see if I'd admit I was lying as part of a legal battle I couldn't possibly understand. At one point, my mother sat me down and told me that I wouldn't be in trouble if I was lying – that I could take it all back. I couldn't. It was all true. But sexual abuse claims against the powerful stall more easily. There were experts willing to attack my credibility. There were doctors willing to gaslight an abused child.

"After a custody hearing denied my father visitation rights, my mother declined to pursue criminal charges, despite findings of probable cause by the State of Connecticut – due to, in the words of the prosecutor, the fragility of the "child victim." Woody Allen was never convicted of any crime. That he got away with what he did to me haunted me as I grew up. I was stricken with guilt that I had allowed him to be near other little girls. I was terrified of being touched by men. I developed an eating disorder. I began cutting myself. That torment was made worse by Hollywood. All but a precious few (my heroes) turned a blind eye. Most found it easier to accept the ambiguity, to say, "who can say what happened," to pretend that nothing was wrong. Actors praised him at awards shows. Networks put him on TV. Critics put him in magazines. Each time I saw my abuser's face – on a poster, on a t-shirt, on television – I could only hide my panic until I found a place to be alone and fall apart.

"Last week, Woody Allen was nominated for his latest Oscar. But this time, I refuse to fall apart. For so long, Woody Allen's acceptance silenced me. It felt like a personal rebuke, like the awards and accolades were a way to tell me to shut up and go away. But the survivors of sexual abuse who have reached out to me – to support me and to share their fears of coming forward, of being called a liar, of being told their memories aren't their memories – have given me a reason to not be silent, if only so others know that they don't have to be silent either.

"Today, I consider myself lucky. I am happily married. I have the support of my amazing brothers and sisters. I have a mother who found within herself a well of fortitude that saved us from the chaos a predator

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

brought into our home.

"But others are still scared, vulnerable, and struggling for the courage to tell the truth. The message that Hollywood sends matters for them.

"What if it had been your child, Cate Blanchett? Louis CK? Alec Baldwin? What if it had been you, Emma Stone? Or you, Scarlett Johansson? You knew me when I was a little girl, Diane Keaton. Have you forgotten me?

"Woody Allen is a living testament to the way our society fails the survivors of sexual assault and abuse.

"So imagine your seven-year-old daughter being led into an attic by Woody Allen. Imagine she spends a lifetime stricken with nausea at the mention of his name. Imagine a world that celebrates her tormenter.

"Are you imagining that? Now, what's your favorite Woody Allen movie?"

Barr, Rosanne (and former husband Arnold, Tom)

Worldly Recognition: American actress, comedian, and Independent political activist. Most well-known for starring in the hit TV comedy sitcom *Rosanne* for 9 years.

Details: Born and raised in Salt Lake City, she was raised LDS. "Friday, Saturday, and Sunday morning I was a Jew; Sunday afternoon, Tuesday afternoon, and Wednesday afternoon we were Mormons"⁷ In 1970, at age 18, she ran away from home. In 1991, at a Survivors United Network event, she disclosed that she had been a victim of incest throughout her childhood. Speaking with a People Magazine representative⁸, she related the details. Compare her experiences to those of Sue Ford and Svali:

"Keeping the secret of incest has taken all my energy and courage for 38 years. For most of my life, voices in my head must have been telling me, "Shut up. Shut up. Shut up and take it. There's nothing you can do, take it, forget it. At least you have a place to live and food on the table. You're crazy. You deserve it." [Ed. Note: this is precisely what Sue Ford and Svali say is the kind of programming instilled during SRA.]

"Immediately after [talking with my then-fiancé, Tom Arnold, on the phone about the sexual abuse he suffered as a child], I began to shake and sweat. Pictures started to appear before my eyes — surreal and frightening, looming large, then crystallizing into my mother's face. I remember being abused. I started to scream and cry, and I called one of my sisters. I got into my car and drove to the hospital where Tom was. I told Tom and a therapist what I had remembered. I cried and cried until I was dry....

"I began to have dreams about having been molested. At first I would shrug them off, but they happened so often, it became harder and harder to ignore. I would wake up screaming, and Tom would write down what I said so that I wouldn't forget it, because for a long time I couldn't focus. I wouldn't drive, because I had the urge to drive off cliffs, into other cars, kill myself. [Ed. Note: this is precisely the kind of suicidal programming Sue Ford had to fight, and that Svali says is common practice to instill in SRA victims for when they begin to recover their suppressed memories.] I didn't know how to feel trust, intimacy, have sex that wasn't degrading, say no to my children, be assertive.... Slowly, with the help of individual and group therapy, I began to remember. Even more slowly, I began to believe myself.

"This is the truth I unraveled: My mother abused me from the time I was an infant until I was 6 or 7 years old. She did lots of lurid things. She hurt me psychologically and physically. I remember being 2 years old and standing in my crib. I remember my mother holding a pillow over my face, pushing me down. I remember thinking, 'Lie still, play dead.' I did, and then Mother took the pillow away and said, "I must have hurt you honey. I was just playing." [Ed. Note: recall the 'training' discussed by Svali when she was 2 years old and her mother would not give her water for over 24 hours.]

"As soon I was able to start talking, my mother went from physical abuse to a more emotional and mental abuse. I remember when I was about 5 or 6 that I came home from school and my mother was lying on the kitchen floor with blood covering her neck and chest. I screamed and screamed for two or three minutes. Then she sat up and said, "It's ketchup, you idiot," and laughed. She always played horrendous mind games with me all through my life.

"My father molested me until I left home at age 17. He constantly put his hands all over me. He forced me to sit on his lap, to cuddle with him, to play with his penis in the bathtub. He did grotesque and disgusting things: He used to chase me with his excrement and try to put it on my head. He'd lie on the floor playing with himself. It was the most disgusting thing you can ever imagine.

"We were not allowed to lock the bathroom door. Dad would come in while I was showering and fling back the curtain and look at me. So I took baths. That way I could bend my knees up around my chest and fold in while he stood there taking pictures of me with his new movie camera. As a preteen and teenager, I had to place a towel over the doorknob so Daddy couldn't peek through the keyhole. I had to make sure the heating vent connecting the bathroom to Daddy's bedroom was closed so he couldn't look at me....

"I had just reread the book I wrote in 1989, *My Life as a Woman*, and I knew that I had totally sanitized it to protect my family.... My family has

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

always worried about what I might say. When I got the book deal in 1988, my mom immediately wanted to know what I was going to write about. I told her it was about my life. She said, "Don't humiliate us," and she cried and cried. I didn't understand it then. I thought she meant the craziness of the family, the fact that I was raised in two different religions, Jewish on weekends, Mormon on weekdays. I thought she was being a typical Jewish mother.

"Only in the last two years have I realized the consequences of keeping our secret. I have lived the majority of my life in a flesh prison that I was always trying to blow up, break out of, whittle away. I tortured my body, smoking five packs of cigarettes a day and indulging in drug, alcohol and food abuse that had me weighing either 100 lbs. or 200 lbs. I was scratching and tearing at my body — mutilating myself. It was as if punishing my body would turn me into an angel of some sort, an angel that could transcend my own body — a body I hated because it was the holder of the truth, the secret.

"The fact is, I didn't have a secret, the secret had me. I was trapped in a fantasy — that my family will love me, will be whole, will allow me to heal, will be safe, will stop lying, will stop blaming crazy old Roseanne. Tom helped me break out of the trap.... [and my children are] very proud of me telling my story of incest.

"Incest and child abuse thrive in darkness, in secrecy. One of the great taboos about incest is talking about it, dealing with it and healing from it. I believe the more voices we hear, the braver we become. I want to enter my voice into the mix. I want to be one more person who speaks out and up about incest, to give it a name. With a name and a visible form, we can treat it, contain it, destroy it."

In the past several years, Rosanne has been an outspoken activist against Satanic Ritual Abuse, and has been blunt about the prevalence of SRA and MK Ultra types of mind control in Hollywood:

"[Today's society] is a culture of fear, and nobody's more afraid than people in Hollywood. They are afraid they will drop out of the top [positions of their careers]... Hollywood keeps all this power structure, and all this culture of racism, and sexism, and classism, and genderism, and all of it in place. They continually feed it, and they make a lot of money doing it. And they do it at the behest of their masters, who run everything. So, they're [i.e. Hollywood celebrities] not going to get brave enough to [speak out against it].... I go to Hollywood parties, occasionally I go to Oscar parties, things like that, and big stars and [other industry] people will grab me by the arm and take me aside and say, "[whispering] I just want to thank you for the things you say." And it blows my mind, but that's the culture. It's a culture of fear.

"And its a big culture of mind control, too. MK Ultra mind control rules in

Hollywood.... It's self-censorship after a while... because there's actually a danger that you will never work again. And people know it. Everyone has friends that it has happened to.... I was very lucky that I had a successful show that made me a lot of money, so that I can [speak out on these taboo issues], and I feel that I owe that to the people [who want to speak up but can't,] because they're afraid they'll be fired, or even that they'll be put in jail, or whatever. I'm going to do it, because, why not?"⁹

The British Royal Family (Various Members)

Worldly Recognition: the monarchy of the United Kingdom.

Details: Sue's testimony regarding Prince Phillip and Prince Charles:

"I was prostituted to Prince Phillip and also Prince Charles... in Los Angeles on different occasions, and was set up with them at other times in Washington, DC, London, and New York. Prince Phillip thought he was God's gift to the world, and was arrogant and egotistical. Charles was much different. He was quieter, more somber, and more controlled. The Council [Ed. note: Not the CFR, but a higher group Sue does not know the actual name of – possibly the *Committee of 300* (aka *The Olympians*)¹⁰] told me it was important for me to form a sexual bond with him.... Prince Charles explained to me that royalty are given the right and reserve to have affairs outside of the royal family. He said it was in the interest of their country for the royals to remain balanced and happy, and that was done by whatever means needed in order to accomplish that. The requirement was that they were discreet and didn't get caught....

"Prince Charles said that it had been explained how trusted I had been to the Rockefellers over the years and how he could also trust me, that I would keep private "our meeting," he called it.... Evidently, Charles really trusted the Rockefellers. I don't know why."

Sue's testimony regarding Queen Elizabeth:

"She was convinced that I was [the programmed personality] Sharon Weatherby and that I had excellent lineage. All this bloodline stuff really meant a lot to her and for whatever reason, I was the target. Maybe the Council influenced her and told her I was someone I wasn't. I don't know....

"She had seen my capabilities; the mind files, the profound statements delivered in public (pre-programmed though they were by the Council), the wit (pre-programmed by the Council) and she felt I had some extraordinary genetic structure and she wanted some of it. She viewed this breeding thing like people think about horse and dog breeding. She was really into it and she had her mind set on having an offspring of

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

mine coupled with Reagan, whom she thought was the perfect father.

"There were many meetings where this subject was discussed and eventually she got her wish. The child I bore for her was the result of many meetings of negotiations over the years.... I overheard the doctor say the baby was of good size despite the fact that he had been taken so early.... I never saw my baby again. I was grateful when they drugged me out of my misery because the feelings and experience were overwhelming and I couldn't take anymore.... My soul ached. It still does today. The grief is totally encompassing. When I think of him I still cry uncontrollably."

Bush, George H.W.

Worldly Recognition: Former director of the CFR, Former director of the CIA, Former Ambassador to the U.N., Former Vice President of the USA, Former President of the USA.

Details: Both Cathy and Sue experienced many horrific encounters with George H. W. Bush. Both of them testify that he is one of the most terrifying persons they ever had to deal with. Cathy was subjected to multiple instances of A Most Dangerous Game¹¹ (i.e. hunting human prey) with him and Dick Cheney as hunters. Both Cathy and Sue testify repeatedly in their books that he is a brutal pedophile with a voracious appetite for very very young children. Both Cathy's and Sue's daughters were so-called "Bush Babies" – subjected to repeated instances of being raped by him at age five or younger. Both testify that of all the persons high up in U.S. government that they encountered (including presidents Nixon, Ford, Reagan, and Clinton), *all* of them answered to George H. W. Bush, no matter if their government position was higher than his.

Sue is convinced that George's wife Barbara Bush is a deeply traumatized, hypnotized 'Stepford Wife'. (Included in the supporting material is a 1992 recording of her – her eyes and facial movements are eerily unnatural, as if she's drugged or under hypnosis.¹²) From Sue's book:

"[At the Bushs' weekend retreat home,] Barbara stayed inside and baked and did needlepoint, like a typical housewife. I believe that she was unaware that her husband was molesting droves of little girls.... During the time the Vice President disappeared with my daughter, Barbara often made lots of small talk, always smiling, cheery and pleasant, speaking nothing of importance.... it was difficult to carry on small talk with Mrs. Bush while [I was aware that] my child was being raped [in another room]."

Bush, George W. (H.W. Bush's son)

Worldly Recognition: Former Governor of Texas, Former President of the USA.

Details: Cathy records only one instance with George W. Bush:

"Kelly [my daughter] and I were helicoptered to [the] Mount Shasta [CIA compound] for our scheduled meeting with Bush and Cheney [to be prey in A Most Dangerous Game¹³]..... As soon as we arrived at Bush and Cheney's inner sanctum, I noticed George [W.] Bush, Jr. was with them. It was my experience that Jr. stood by his father and covered his backside whenever Bush would become incapacitated from drugs or required criminal backup. It appeared that Jr. was there to serve both purposes while his father and Cheney enjoyed their work-vacation."

Byrd, Robert C.

Worldly Recognition: Influential U.S. Senator, served consecutively as a U.S. senator for West Virginia from 1958 to his death in 2010.

Details: Cathy was 'dedicated' to Byrd at age thirteen. She describes his genitals and many instances of brutal sexual encounters with him. Nearly every facet of Cathy's mind-controlled life revolved around Byrd until her 'escape' via Mark Philips about the time she was 30 years old. Due to Byrd's instruction, Cathy was 'married' to ventriloquist Alex Houston, who was in reality her 'handler.' Houston (without any anesthetic) mutilated part of Cathy's vaginal muscle to resemble a smiling demon face.¹⁴ From Cathy's book:

"The spankings and police handcuffs I had previously endured [by Guy VanderJagt] were child's play compared to Senator Byrd's near death tortures. The hundreds of scars on my body still show today....

"Byrd monitored all of my programming 'progress,' and often tortured me with his whip and pocketknife. He picked up where my mother left off, to destroy any self-esteem I might have inadvertently developed. He said, "There is no place for you to turn, because if you could think to talk no one would ever believe I would have anything to do with the likes of you." He often threatened me that I was considered 'disposable' because, after all, "The first Presidential Model, Marilyn Monroe, was killed right in front of the public eye and no one knew what happened.""

Carter, Jimmy

Worldly Recognition: Former President of the USA, Member of the Trilateral

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

Commission, Celebrated Worldwide Humanitarian.

Details: One of the founders of the Trilateral Commission (TC) was Zbigniew Brzezinski, whom Carter appointed as his administration's National Security Adviser. The TC was highly influential in all policymaking decision making throughout Carter's administration.

Sue's testimony:

"Evidently Jimmy Carter was too directed by his Christian belief system and too connected to his wife to ever stray. It was my experience that if [Carter] was guilty of any sexual indiscretions, he did only lust in his heart. I never had sex with Jimmy Carter. He did, however, listen and respond to messages delivered through me from the Council [Ed. note: as mentioned in the earlier British Royal Family entry, this is not the CFR, but a higher group¹⁵]. He had a very hungry ear and listened carefully and responded helpfully to all but a few requests from them. He even bit on a bunch of Henry's messages, delivered through me. By then Carter thought I was only Council, he didn't know I was connected to Henry Kissinger and Henry loved that he was "puppeting a Democrat" and "one that didn't believe in adultery but would take top secret information from a whore and run the country from it."

Cheney, Richard (Dick)

Worldly Recognition: Former Secretary of Defense, Former Chairman and CEO of Halliburton, Former Director of the Council On Foreign Relations (CFR), Former Vice President of the USA.

Details: Cathy had multiple horrific encounters with Cheney. Numerous times she was one of several mind-controlled victims required to participate in "A Most Dangerous Game"¹⁶ (i.e. hunting human prey), which Cheney and George H.W. Bush both thoroughly enjoyed, after which Cheney would brutally rape her. She was sexually assaulted by Cheney numerous times, once resulting in her jaw being knocked out of alignment. She describes his genitals. Cheney frequently attended and conducted Mind Control demonstrations (along with Ronald Reagan) at Air Force bases and other locations, in order to introduce the power of the technology to prospective slave purchasers/partners in crime.

Clinton, Bill

Worldly Recognition: Former Governor of Arkansas; Former President of the USA.

Details: Details: As Governor, Clinton was tightly involved with the CIA in covertly smuggling drugs and slaves into the USA. Cathy was sometimes used as a

drug mule, and was also present during some rendezvous. She also witnessed Clinton snorting copious amounts of cocaine on multiple occasions. Cathy testifies that Clinton is bi-sexual: "My personal sexual experience with Clinton was limited, but I had witnessed him engaged in homosexual activity during an orgy..."

Clinton, Hillary

Worldly Recognition: Wife of Bill Clinton; former U.S. Senator for New York; Secretary of State under the Obama Administration.

Details: While Cathy records only one encounter with Hillary, the experience demonstrates that she is a perverse, voracious lesbian. Cathy was required to show Hillary her mutilated vaginal carving of a demon face. This immediately sexually aroused Hillary, and she forced Cathy to perform oral sex on her. Writes Cathy: "Hillary Clinton is the only female to become sexually aroused at the sight of my mutilated vagina."

Dante, Michael (real name Ralph Vitti)

Worldly Recognition: Former Minor League Baseball player; long associated as an actor in TV and movies, but very limited notoriety; current host of a syndicated radio talk show.

Details: Close associate of Tommy Lasorda and Ronald Reagan. Cathy testifies:

"Many commercial and instructional (private) pornography films I and others participated in, referred to as 'Uncle Ronnie's Bedtime Stories,' were [produced/directed by Dante] solely for [Reagan's] pleasure – oftentimes according to his instruction, using [mind-controlled] slaves, [which frequently involved bestiality.]

"Hollywood's Dante rivaled Larry Flynt for the title of 'Chief Pornographer'.... [However,] Dante's covert filming of political perversion for blackmail purposes failed to gain him the international notoriety Flynt maintained through his New World Order colleagues...."

Diamond, Neil

Worldly Recognition: singer and songwriter from the 60's to the 80's.

Details: Sue's testimony:

"As a teenager, I was programmed to serve Neil Diamond in different capacities for many years.... Pornography was often filmed at his estate. Bob [Hope] sent people from his parties that were sexually wild to Neil's

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

for filming in pornography. It didn't matter if they were only children. Neil's porn business was so large that it kept a large number of Malibu, Pacific Palisades, Ventura, Calabasas, and Agoura Hills slaves very busy. Whole programmed families were used. 'Sex with families' videos were popular in the 80's among a certain group and Neil seemed totally fascinated, watching families together....

"Unfortunately and sorrowfully, I remembered being programmed to drive children to Neil's [to be filmed in porn].... He looked them over and if they were particularly appealing to him, he would want to have sex with one or more after the filming. Neil was what Henry Kissinger called 'versatile,' which meant he liked sex with everything. I will spare you the details but he relieved himself sexually, often, as he felt it made him powerful and continually virile. That was very important to him....

"Neil also filmed bestiality porn. He gave the kids cocaine and filmed it in the house or somewhere on the grounds.... We were all just viewed as worker bees and mindlessly did whatever we were told....

"I was used with Neil like I was with Elvis, which leads me to believe that Neil is also programmed.... [The Council¹⁷ had me] deliver lyrical words or phrases for [him to put into his] songs... and later [these] would show up over and over in his songs.... Neil Diamond was a Council 'treasure' and they kept him well taken care of."

Disney, Walt

Worldly Recognition: World-famous cartoonist, established the Disney theme parks and enterprise.

Details: Sue testifies that Walt Disney was aware of the programming of sexually abused children, and that the Disneyland theme parks were used to condition, train and program children selected for mind-control programs. She relates the following when she was five years old:

"My father then led my mother in the other direction and I was left alone with Walt Disney. My parents never said goodbye or anything, they just left me and walked away. I was terrified and confused at realizing that my parents just disappeared. Walt took me to an office, lifted me up on a big desk that had a glass piece on top and told me that he was my real father. He said the Mickey Mouse Club was my real family – where I really belonged. Everyone was always telling me I belonged to a different family than my parents and I didn't understand, it was all very confusing. Walt Disney seemed nice but I wasn't with him very long. He called another man in and that man took me by the hand and led me away. This man was a very bad man and he really scared me. He took me into another room and gave me those Viewmaster box glasses to look into. He showed me pictures in them that were so scary that other parts of me

[i.e. personalities] had to come to see them. It was too much for a little girl to see. Dead things – cut up bodies, dead cats skinned with big eyeballs and their tails cut off, people cut up, etc. We had that toy at home but mine had cartoon pictures in it.”

Sue also describes highly traumatic experiences she was put through on various Disneyland rides (not by Walt Disney but other men-in-suits types), often after the park had closed to the public. These trips to Disneyland occurred regularly, and while there she would be subjected to pre-coordinated traumas which served to mold and shape her multiple personality programming. Some examples: she was tied with a rope and dragged in the water behind the boat on the Jungle Cruise (this occurred after closing hours, done to reinforce survival instincts), forced to stand for hours within the waterfall area of the Matterhorn ride (being alone, the rushing wind and water sounds, the rushing ride cars, and screams from the riders were terrifying to her little mind), programmed for memory and sensory scrambling on the Alice In Wonderland ride, sexually abused (trauma-programming to willingly comply with and perform deviant sex) on Mr. Toad's Wild Ride, programmed on It's A Small World to confuse memories of traveling to foreign countries as merely an extended memory of the ride, accosted and programmed in the Swiss Family Tree House, abducted while walking through the Magic Castle at the center of Disneyland, then raped in a dark area somewhere in the employees section, and much more.

To what degree Walt Disney himself (or any of the actual Disneyland management and staff) was culpable and knowledgeable of the exact details and nature of the trauma that was being induced on these children is debatable. However, as stated previously in the article by Mary Lewis, many other victims testify that similar kinds of mind control and trauma-based programming has occurred at Disney World in Orlando, FL as well. Other international Disneyland parks (France, Japan, Hong Kong) may be used for similar covert practices as well.

Flynt, Larry

Worldly Recognition: Infamous publisher of pornographic material.

Details: Cathy was photographed pornographically a few times for Hustler magazine. She testifies that Flynt “was unequivocally the official White House Pornographer”, having many high political connections and producing private pornography for them. Cathy names the following individuals as tied to Flynt:

“Presidents Reagan, Bush, and Ford; CIA Director Bill Casey; U.N. Ambassador Madeleine Albright; Senators Byrd and [Arlen] Specter; Congressmen [James] Traficant and [Guy] VanderJagt; Governors [Dick] Thornburgh, [James] Blanchard and [Lamar] Alexander [Jr.]; and various World Leaders such as Prime Minister of Canada [Brian] Mulroney, President of Mexico [Miguel] de la Madrid, and Saudi Arabian King Fahd, to name a few.”

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

Cathy also testifies that many of the girls photographed in Hustler magazine are from Satanic Ritual Abuse or similar mind-controlled backgrounds. "A look into... Hustler will show prod marks on the mind-controlled slaves he photographs, particularly on the throat, near the lips, and on the back."

Fonda, Jane

Worldly Recognition: notable actress from the 60's to the 80's, 80's fitness video queen, previously married to media mogul Ted Turner, visited North Vietnam in 1972 and was nicknamed "Hanoi Jane" for allegedly betraying American prisoners of war and appearing in Viet Cong propaganda photos.

Details: Sue testifies:

"I believe Jane Fonda was under programming, also. She was part of the experiment on how to achieve 'eternal youth,' while participating to further the cause in behind-the-scenes political arenas. I occasionally passed Council [Ed. Note: see footnote 10] messages to her at her Beverly Hills Fitness Center. They had a control group within the project to see if women would stay youthful and cease to age with just mind programming, or if exercise needed to be combined with the programming. They had a control group participating like Jane with the same eternal youth program, yet not exercising extensively to see which method prolonged longevity. In case you are interested, they found exercise to be a necessary component for successful anti-aging."

Ford, Gerald

Worldly Recognition: Former U.S. Congressman from Michigan, Former Vice President and President of the U.S.A.

Details: Both Sue and Cathy testify repeatedly that Ford is a violent, sadistic pedophile. The following are excerpts from their books regarding Ford.

Sue's testimony:

"Ford began with me early, as he liked young girls.... He liked violent sex – tying me up, handcuffs, spankings, slapping, and all that kind of S&M stuff. He enjoyed the whips and chains routine, and liked to tie me up with thick black leather straps. He slapped me frequently.... [Like Ted Kennedy, He] required violent sex in order to orgasm... [yet] he still was not as brutal as Ted....

"Ford didn't treat me like I was real.... [as if he was] convinced that I was just a machine built for his pleasure. It was true that I was a non-thinking slave that obeyed every command, but it did register within me

when I was abused and treated cruelly.

"[Ford] was "one of the good old boys" and had major Mob connections.... There was lots of mob involvement when Nixon was President and Ford was Vice President, and it didn't stop when Nixon stepped down. Same mob involvement, just a few different players who were close friends of Jerry. Ford had more mob organizations behind him than Nixon did, so he had lots of people to give favors to when he was in the White House. He was very corrupt...."

Cathy's testifies that Ford was the "Mafia porn king." Evidence had been collected that Cathy's father had been sending child pornography through the mail. While he was a U.S. Congressman, Ford came to their home and offered Cathy's father immunity from current and future prosecution, as well as a lucrative military contracts to produce small parts, in exchange for his children's participation in Project Monarch. She writes:

"Project Monarch was a mind-control operation which was "recruiting" multi-generational incest abused children with Multiple Personality Disorder [MPD] for its genetic mind-control studies. I was a prime "candidate," a "chosen one". My father seized the opportunity as it would provide him immunity from prosecution.... Jerry Ford arrived at our house with the evidence in hand for a meeting with my father."

Cathy also testifies that she and her sisters were prostituted and brutally raped by Ford on numerous occasions throughout their childhood. She writes

"My sister, Kelli Jo... was MPDed [i.e. multiple personality disorder; multiple personalities were instilled in her] and horrified of Ford. She and my little sister, Kimmy, and I had all been forced to sexually gratify Ford just prior to a special ordered porn film titled *Three Little Kittens* whereby his semen was filmed "anonymously". I was aware that Ford had initiated both of my sisters the way he had me in Cedar Springs, and they, too, dreaded his brutal and degrading sexuality....

"I remember that the "sane" part of "me" – my innate personality – seemed to die after seeing Ford as President. I recall walking up the steps of Catholic Central High School one morning, reaching for the door, and crying uncontrollably. I cried myself into a heap at the top of the stairs. I did not even know why I was crying. As an MPD, I rarely cried at all. But I was still sobbing hours later when school let out. Someone found me, but I do not recall to this day ever leaving the school steps. I never really experienced "emotion" after that day until I was rescued, deprogrammed and reintegrated in 1988."

Garvey, Steve (and ex-wife Cyndy)

Worldly Recognition: Major League Baseball star and celebrity from the Los

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

Angeles Dodgers during the 70's and 80's, nicknamed "Mr. Clean"; his wife, Cyndy, was a model and TV celebrity during that time.

Details: The world remembers Steve Garvey as a one-time poster boy for clean living and a role model for youngsters to look up to – a charming man who had it all: career success, fame, a sweet, beautiful wife and adorable children. Then in 1983, Cyndy divorced him and took the children. By the late 80's it became apparent that Steve had been involved in multiple extramarital affairs throughout his marriage, and had impregnated a number of women whom he was courting after his divorce.

However, Sue testifies that Steve and Cyndy are both unwittingly mind-controlled slaves, just as Sue is. Sue relates the following concerning them:

"Steve Garvey, his (now ex) wife Cyndy, and their two children were 'sponsored' (owned) by some wealthy person and from what I saw, the family was manipulated much the same way mine was, through mind control, for the financial benefit of others."

Sue also indicates that many of the L.A. Dodgers of that era were also mind-controlled. Sue testifies:

"In line with the information about Project Monarch, some rich people actually own certain Dodger players and their children. Often it's cryptically called "sponsoring," but it's really ownership (much like owning a racehorse) because the owner makes all the decisions about the player's life without the knowledge or consent of the player. When the player does well, the owner collects large sums of money from behind the scenes."

Cyndy was particularly treated brutally by Lasorda, as Sue recounts:

"Tommy Lasorda and others humiliated Cyndy. They brought me into the locker room and put me up against the shower wall. They put Cyndy across the room but close by, and they brought Steve in. He had sex with me standing up against the wall. Cyndy was forced to watch and then someone, usually Lasorda, would tell her she wasn't good enough or enough of a woman for Steve. They told her she was stupid and backward. Then Lasorda slapped her across the face really hard.... While this was going on, Steve was laughing sadistically. Cyndy looked like she wasn't really "there." Soon after, Tommy Lasorda took her out and sat her behind the dug out where she usually sat during the games – being the dutiful and supportive Dodger wife. On nights like these, Tommy gave the press orders not to talk to or interview Cyndy. He told them if they did he would have them thrown out of the ballpark and he would have their job. If they asked why, he would say, "She's not quite herself tonight."

Cyndy, Sue and their children were often part of a lineup of mind-controlled persons for the Dodger players to sexually gratify themselves with after winning a

game. Sue also recounts the terrorizing that occurred if anyone disobeyed:

"One night when they put Krisha and Whitney [Steve and Cyndy's children] in the lineup, it was Whitney's first night. She was now 'old enough' to participate, in spite of the fact that she was only four or five years old. Cyndy started screaming, "No, not Whitty!" (That was the nickname she called Whitney.) Two men stepped forward and grabbed Cyndy by the arms and whisked her away. They took her into the next room and we could all hear her screaming. It was awful. "If you step out of line, you always pay the price, maybe with your life." Lasorda said. Then they took Whitney out of the line and into a side room, and we could all hear her screaming and crying. Lasorda said to those of us remaining, "We won't have that problem anymore, will we." He was very brutal. When they brought Cyndy back into the room, Lasorda said Cyndy's behavior had caused Whitney to get hurt. He said, "If the mother had acted respectably, there wouldn't have been a problem." When they brought Whitney back out, she could barely walk. She didn't make it into the lineup that night; she was too injured. I experienced and witnessed these types of horrors that kept me from ever interfering with what they were doing to my children, especially Kelly. I knew from experience that they would hurt her worse if I ever tried to protect her."

Sue details that many times she, Cyndy and their children were required to participate in the filming of elite pornography:

"During the time Steve Garvey was playing for the Dodgers he had an office in Calabasas that was used by him and the group that controlled him for illegal activities and pornography – adult and kiddy porn. I was filmed pornographically in Steve's so-called office with a variety of people, including himself, his wife, and his children. Even my own children were pornographically filmed there at different times. Sometimes they filmed my daughter Kelly with Whitney and Krisha in kiddie porn. Lots of other children were filmed pornographically including our oldest son Kevin. But these weren't filmed at Dodger Stadium; instead they were filmed in private offices or homes.... There was other pornography shot during this time, beginning in the 1980's. When my daughter Kelly was old enough (3 and up) they began filming Cyndy, our daughters, and myself. A title to one of these films was *Mommy and Me*. Porn of Cyndy and I was filmed on a private beach in Malibu."

In 1990, Cyndy published a book titled *The Secret Life of Cyndy Garvey* in which she recounts some of the details of early childhood abuse and the disconnect and pain when she was married to Steve. "Following a tempestuous marriage, she left Garvey for famed composer Marvin Hamlisch. (Cyndy would later claim Garvey "gave me away" to Hamlisch after a private two hour conversation.)"¹⁸ This statement strongly concurs with Sue's assertion that both Steve and Cyndy Garvey are mind-controlled to comply with whatever commands are given by their handlers.

Greenwood, Lee

Worldly Recognition: Country music artist, best known for the hit song “God Bless The USA”, married to former Miss Tennessee.

Details: Cathy testifies that Greenwood is a CIA operative, with close connections to George H.W. Bush and Bill Clinton, and is also a mind-controlled slave handler. In her book she states:

“Greenwood was active in both the Lampe, Missouri and Lake/Mount Shasta, California CIA compounds.” She states that, before a concert, “Greenwood and [my 'husband'/handler Alex] Houston were in the backstage dressing rooms snorting line after line of cocaine. Houston... attempted to prostitute me to Greenwood... “She performs all kinds of sex acts upon command. For a small price, she's yours.” Greenwood laughed, and referring to my Huntsville, Alabama NASA programming said, “I've spent more time in Huntsville than she has, and I know full well who and what she is – a 'space cadet' programmed for sex. She's a modified version of Marilyn Monroe.”

Cathy testifies that moments later Greenwood roughly sodomized her.

Haggard, Merle

Worldly Recognition: Influential Country music artist.

Details: Cathy testifies:

“Convicted (capital crime) career criminal, country music entertainer, and CIA operative Merle Haggard often used well-documented cryptic language in his songs pertaining to government mind-control slave operations. He released songs including “Freedom Train” [a code name for mind-controlled slave operations] and “Over the Rainbow” [Wizard of Oz themes are prevalent in mind-control programming and maintaining].... Just like Lampe, [Missouri], [Mount] Shasta's cover was country music. According to everyone I knew, singer and songwriter Merle Haggard supposedly ran the show at Lake Shasta, diverting any and all attention from the nearby Mount Shasta [CIA] compound. Shasta was the largest, covert mind-control slave camp of which I am aware.”

Hefner, Hugh

Worldly Recognition: Founder of the Playboy enterprise.

Details: Sue testifies that Hefner and Bob Hope attended each others' parties

frequently. She was escorted by Hope to several of Hefner's penthouse parties and describes the layout and proceedings. She writes:

"Hugh Hefner had bizarre, exotic entertainment at his parties.... One time he even had a man dressed like Tarzan whipping a playgirl dressed like Jane. They said the girl was not really being hurt, that it was just an illusion. I don't know if that was true. There were often scenes like that – magic sex shows.... [Bob] took me to Hefner's because he wanted me to be 'bunny trained.'... At the parties we attended at Hefner's, the men did not usually show up with their wives. The nights I was there, it seemed like there was an unspoken rule that wives were not allowed, as if it was their exclusive 'men's club' where repeat women were occasional, but no wives allowed. The rooms were often smoky and loud and the people, especially the women, were so made up they looked plastic."

Sue relates graphic details of whoredoms she witnessed, some of which she was required to participate in. Her description of how many of the "bunnies" (as well as some of the young male models) behaved indicate that they were likely drugged, mind-controlled and/or had probably been subjected to ritualistic sexual abuse throughout their lives.

Hope, Bob

Worldly Recognition: Hollywood actor, performer, comedian.

Details: Nearly all of Sue's life was dominated and controlled by Bob Hope, who was one of the most central figures connecting nearly every facet of 'Hollywood' (movies, TV, music recording industry, and pornography studios on America's West Coast) to the mystery school group she knew only as "The Council"¹⁹. Hope was deeply connected to Henry Kissinger and the most powerful people in America's government and military.

Sue testifies the following in her book:

"The media surrounding the exposés of Bob Hope's secret life[,] and the books written by Arthur Marx (Groucho's son)[,] *The Secret Life of Bob Hope*, and Lawrence J. Quirk's recent book, *Bob Hope: The Road Well-Traveled*, begin to portray some examples of the flaws to Bob's seemingly All-American, patriotic, and family loving public image. My controllers and abusers were not low-level criminals, but instead were some of the so-called 'adored' leaders and entertainers of our country....

"Elitists in the market for mind control slaves attend auctions that appear at first like children's fashion shows and then progress to striptease acts.... [T]hese children were what they called 'sponsored' if they were chosen. And they said it was better to be chosen early because then the sponsors (owners) could mold you the way they wanted....

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

“Sharon, the wild personality [that was programmed in me], is who Bob Hope purchased from 'Uncle' Charlie [a.k.a. Charles Lilley Horn, owner of Federal Cartridge Corporation (munitions manufacturer), which later became a major subsidiary of the Olin Foundation, Inc] and it was Sharon who was trained to be stunning, smart, sexual, comfortable with wealth and elite family members.”

Hope and Kissinger regularly coordinated the development of Sue's programmed training and instructions. She testifies that all throughout her pre-teen, teen and young adult years, she was not only used by Hope for his personal sexual gratification, but that he also sent her to 'service' many of his connections in the entertainment industry, American government and military. Additionally, she was made to perform in grandiose-production pornography with old-time Hollywood style and flair that was produced by Hope – sold exclusively to 'elite' customers. She relates how Hope loved to screen these films to Hugh Hefner during Hope's lavish, influential parties, which he regularly hosted at his estate in Palm Springs. “Bob got ideas from Hefner's parties that he used at his own parties in 'the Springs.' Bob's parties were pure class, in the most exquisite Hollywood style. He had wild parties and some night's there were orgies.” Sue also details that it was always “anything goes” at Hope's parties, and that people often went off into separate rooms for private encounters.

Hope had installed secret cameras and recording equipment in each room, and would record whatever went on. He thereby gained greater power and influence over those who attended his parties, especially those who were pedophiles. Sue relates: “With people he really wanted to own or use he would take pictures of [those engaged in child] molestation with hidden camera[s].... Then afterward he would show them a picture of the rape of the child and say, “We sure don't want these pictures, or any others like these to get into the wrong hands and ruin your entire career, do we?” Then he would simply tell the man what he wanted, in exchange for impunity. It usually had to do with getting another 'friend' of his into a 'key' position in the government, looking the other way when a case came down, or getting a bill passed or vetoed. He knew just how to control these men and they usually complied.”

This summary is merely the tip of the iceberg of what Sue testifies concerning her lifetime of mind-and-body enslavement by Bob Hope and Henry Kissinger.

Jackson, Michael (and his siblings)

Worldly Recognition: world-famous entertainer, dubbed the “King of Pop.”

Details: From Sue's book:

“Michael Jackson was just a little boy of four or five when I accompanied Bob Hope to a place where they were filming up-and-coming talent for television. Bob told me he supported and sponsored the Jacksons, getting them a professional foot in the door. Their father brought the

boys in and I remembered seeing them taken into a side room where bright lights were on. They all had to drop their pants and before their performance a big man raped each one of them in a lineup. Then they were taken to a different room and dressed in little suits and sent onto the stage to perform. Due to the mind control I was under, I'm not sure exactly where we were, but feel that it was the early days of the Ed Sullivan Show. I watched as Bob, dressed in a grey pinstripe suit and bow tie, with white shoes, shook hands with Ed; and then the Jackson boys went on. They were made into a sensation and famous, on purpose, so that they could be used in the future to influence large audiences. Bob and his connections knew that all they needed was some talent, make-up, costumes, lights, glitter and lots of publicity. He said publicity was the most important ingredient....

"[Elvis] was no different than Michael Jackson, who replaced him in many ways. In my opinion, both were controlled....

"In spite of the programming themes in some of the songs he sings, as I was recovering I often held onto the words he sang, the lyrics reminding me, "You are not alone," when I felt so very alone."

Johnson, Lyndon B.

Worldly Recognition: Former Vice President and President of the United States.

Details: Sue's testimony concerning how she was used with Johnson is extensive. She describes his genitals, some of his favorite songs, the way he smelled, and many personal details (including ones that he confided to her) that cannot simply be "made up." She recounts many instances of having to perform oral sex on him, and other sexual encounters. The following are excerpts of her experiences:

"Lyndon liked that I was very young. At this time I was around 12 or 13 years old. I was with him quite a few times.... I usually slept all night with him because he wanted me to. He slept really close and held on to me.... Usually I was not flown in on a big commercial airline to see Lyndon [as I usually was for Kennedy]. I don't know why but it was usually private planes. Then I would sleep with him all night and be flown back to California. There were times when, after I was used, the men in suits would let me out of the car near school and I would have my school clothes on from the day before, and I would just walk to school and go in like nothing had ever happened.... When I was in the 10th grade, I spent the night with him more often – even sometimes on school nights. I didn't go to school until 11:30 a.m. anyway and no one could ever seem to tell I had been gone. Sometimes I missed a full day of school and no one at Hale or Taft High ever said anything to me. Another form of trauma was added when one day after school, I was forced to watch as

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

the men in suits roughed up my junior high school principal....

"[Johnson] had a cattle prod or some sort of electrical device nearby but didn't use it much. When he pushed the lever it made a crackling sound and what emerged looked like a jolt of yellow fiery-type electricity. He said he didn't have to use it with me much because I was so good.... He especially liked sex when I was menstruating – he said it turned him on. He liked to do all sorts of perverted things to me during that time, which I don't feel comfortable sharing here. He also suggested that I do whatever I usually did for the cameras and take charge of our sexual activity. "You're in charge of the whoring, little lady," he would say as he smiled and tipped his hat. That hat was such an important thing to him....

"He tested my programmed capabilities. He burned me with a cigar one time, because he said he was told to try it to see what happened. He looked pretty amazed when I took off my clothes, sat down, got into position and told him to go ahead and stick it in, that it wouldn't burn me. So he pressed his cigar to my vagina and it didn't burn me. The pain didn't even register – "it didn't even hurt," is what I told him. That made him turned on and he said, "Little lady, you give me a big boner." He told me there was an endless stream of young ladies who liked his "big boner."...

"Lyndon told me his wife had grown to act old early on in their marriage when something of a maternal nature happened to upset her. He said from then on she wasn't much for sex, so he took care of his needs elsewhere. He told me so much personal stuff that I think he must have forgotten how young I was. A lot of what he told me I didn't really understand."

Kennedy, John F. "JFK"

Worldly Recognition: Former President of the United States, whose assassination has been the subject of hundreds of theories for decades as to who did it, how and why.

Details: On her first "presidential assignment," Sue Ford was sent to be sexually intimate with JFK at the White House when she was eleven years old. (Although Sue was so young, she was already highly sexually trained, and her body was developed enough to pass as an older teen. To be fair, JFK was under the impression that she was around sixteen years old.) The details of their encounter are recorded in her book. Despite being unfaithful to Jackie, and although Sue was underage, the encounter she describes with JFK seems to be almost benign in comparison to the horrors she relates from other sexual encounters with high-profile public figures. She states that JFK was playful and polite with her, not brutal nor demeaning (as many other political figures have been testified of being in

sexual situations). He spent a good deal of time talking with her and relating to her as a teen, not just in seeking sexual gratification.

Kennedy, Ted

Worldly Recognition: youngest brother of JFK and “Bobby” Kennedy, served as senator for Massachusetts from 1962 until his death in 2009.

Details: Where there's smoke, there's fire. For decades, rumors and allegations (and inevitable quiet dismissals) of Ted Kennedy's rampant womanizing and perverse sexual behaviors persisted. In their memoirs, both Sue and Cathy testify that Ted Kennedy was the most brutal and violent sexual pervert they ever had the displeasure to be required to gratify, surpassing even the brutality and depravity of Gerald Ford. While apparently he was not a pedophile (he didn't prefer very young, under-developed children, yet had no problem with young teens), both Sue and Cathy confirm that he required sadistic, hyper-violent sex in order to be sufficiently aroused and satisfied.

FBI memos exposing Ted Kennedy's whoremongering were finally made public through persistent FOIA (Freedom of Information Act) requests. On March 1st, 2011, the UK newspaper *Daily Mail* reported the following:²⁰

“Ted Kennedy rented a brothel for a night while on an official visit to Chile, according to declassified FBI files. The late U.S. Senator is reported to have invited one of his chauffeurs to participate in the night's ‘activities’ during the 1961 stay in the capital, Santiago.

“The incident is outlined in an FBI memo obtained by right-wing anti-corruption campaigners.... The documents have been unveiled in full by right-wing group Judicial Watch after a six-month battle. ‘The FBI's reluctance to follow the law and release this material shows that it, too, is not above politics,’ said Tom Fitton, of Judicial Watch.”

An image of this FBI memo, republished on the Daily Mail website, is included in the supporting material.²¹

Kissinger, Henry

Worldly Recognition: Too many politically and internationally involved positions to recount effectively. Most well-known as being the National Security Advisor and Secretary of State under Presidents Nixon and Ford.

Details: Kissinger is one of the highest-ranking Luciferians alive today who is also widely-known publicly. He is considered one of the greatest tacticians and diplomats in the world. It would probably be accurate to say that he could out-Machiavelli Machiavelli himself. He was a close collaborator with Bob Hope in

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

securing mind-controlled children and developing them for special missions or purposes. He frequently was “lent” Sue Ford, primarily to be used as a “human computer” for his data recording and retrieval needs. Refer to entry on Bob Hope.

Throughout her book, Sue chronicles the actions, statements, and mindset of Henry Kissinger – a man so dedicated to the Luciferian agenda that it would not be exaggerating to state that he's probably one of the most purely evil men alive, and the kind of man who would qualify as a Son of Perdition as defined by the Lord, a true “vessel of wrath.”²²

Kristopherson, Kris

Worldly Recognition: Country music singer, actor.

Details: Cathy testifies that Kristopherson is a Project Monarch slave runner with ties to infamous satanist and founder of The Temple of Set, Michael Aquino. From her book:

“All experiences with Aquino or Kristopherson resulted in high voltage electric shock torture, and apparently neither had any regard for human life.... Kristopherson nearly strangled me to death with his penis, which had further sexually excited him, late in the summer of 1987 during another incident related to Byrd.”

Lasorda, Tommy

Worldly Recognition: former manager of the Los Angeles Dodgers from 1976 to 1996.

Details: Sue Ford recounts that Lasorda was heavily involved with the Jesuit order, and orchestrated post-game sexual abominations for the players when they won a game, which strongly motivated them to win. Refer to the entry on Steve and Cyndy Garvey.

Martin, Dean

Worldly Recognition: singer, actor, and performer from the 1940's to the 1960's.

Details: Dean Martin is highly connected, along with Frank Sinatra, to the Italian mob. From Sue's book:

“[My] mob involvement began in my early teens and continued for years... The Council [Ed. Note: see footnote 10] was going for higher stakes and most of the time, they saw these mobsters as worker-bees. But they all had their places in the pecking order. Over the years I was

known in Vegas by the Mob there. Some mobsters were connected to Bob Hope in Palm Springs and others to Dean Martin and Frank Sinatra.... I was used for dangerous connections and, as far as Frank and Dean Martin were concerned, I knew far too much, so they wanted me to 'sleep with the fishes.' But Henry [Kissinger] wouldn't hear of losing his 'personal computer' and threatened serious retaliation if they harmed me. Henry had a new kind of power [i.e. mind-controlled human 'robot' slaves] that the Mob didn't understand at first, until they got burned a few times. Then they understood."

Sue also recounts a sexual encounter with an intoxicated Dean Martin during one of Bob Hope's parties.

Monroe, Marilyn

Worldly Recognition: Iconic Hollywood actress, died young and under suspicious circumstances.

Details: Both Cathy and Sue testify that Marilyn was the prototype "Presidential Model" mind-controlled sex slave. In Cathy's book, she recounts what both Robert Byrd and Lee Greenwood said about Marilyn:

"He [Byrd] often threatened me that I was considered 'disposable' because, after all, 'The first Presidential Model, Marilyn Monroe, was killed right in front of the public eye and no one knew what happened.'"
Greenwood: "In referring to my Huntsville, Alabama NASA programming, [Greenwood] said, 'I've spent more time in Huntsville than she has, and I know full well who and what she is – a 'space cadet' programmed for sex. She's a modified version of Marilyn Monroe.'"

From Sue's book:

"Most people are now familiar with Marilyn Monroe's connection to the Kennedy family and her use with the President. It has been said by insiders that Marilyn was one of the first programmed Presidential models, created under mind control for sex with the President and used in Hollywood connections. While I did not possess the physical beauty that Marilyn Monroe did, I had the mind files and all the right connections to further my controller's interests."

Nixon, Richard

Worldly Recognition: Former Representative and Senator of California, Former President of the USA.

Details: From Sue's book:

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

"All roads lead to Hope -- Bob Hope that is. President Richard Nixon was connected to Bob Hope also - it seemed like everyone was. President Nixon used me sexually from approximately 1969 until he resigned in 1974....

"Dr. Olmstead, [my high school] principal, gave me orders in his office. When he did I would go into robotic receiving mode and record all the data he gave me.... My Student Government (Student Council) teacher, Saul Rowen, would drive me, to catch a plane or, more often, to a helicopter port where I was then transported to a government approved shuttle plane to Washington, DC or New York. Usually I was taken to Nixon for sex and to straighten out his often dour attitude and then to Henry and the research team for further instruction....

"There were times in high school that I was dismissed from classes for an entire week and spent the time traveling internationally with Nixon and Kissinger. While I traveled at times with Nixon, I was programmed to carry Henry's strategic plan for Nixon to tap into, whenever he needed to refresh himself with Henry's plan. I often stayed in hotel rooms, or waited in nearby rooms or the lobby, appearing to be a regular person. Nixon would access me, before, during, or after a meeting, always leaving the sex for much later on. But I was at Nixon's fingertips, armed and loaded with all the possible input and data any one man could ever want....

"[One] particular evening, I was programmed to target President Nixon.... Pat Nixon accompanied President Nixon, so he had to break away from her to have a "quickie" with me in a back room. Nixon did things like that before he got depressed with the Watergate scandal. After that he started acting old and beaten down. It was like the life just went out of him.... The Council made sure I had the road paved to President Nixon, free and clear, and over time he listened to me despite the fact that I was only 18, 19, 20, 21, or 22 years old. I helped him with what they called "his difficult times," until the end when he had to resign the Presidency."

Also, refer to the entry on Ronald Reagan.

Presley, Elvis

Worldly Recognition: legendary entertainer, considered the "King of Rock and Roll."

Details: From Sue's book:

"[Elvis] was also a [human] robot [like me].... From my experience I believe Elvis was a puppet, a pawn, and in the end, totally directed and, finally, used up by these men in control of him. It was my experience

that the images he portrayed on stage were nothing like how he was in private.... He was no different than Michael Jackson, who replaced him in many ways. In my opinion, both were controlled.

"'Uncle' Frank [Sinatra] sent me in on Elvis to perform 'favors.' I was instructed to have sex with him and tell him things that they wanted him to know or say in a show or a song, or to do. If he didn't do as they said, they threatened or tortured him or 'his ole lady,' as he called [Priscilla].... I don't know what they did to him but they used him up and then felt afraid he would 'crack' and spill what he knew, so they kept him drugged until they couldn't safely use him anymore and then he 'died.' Of course it wasn't an accident or a natural death, he had a lot of help from his controllers....

"Henry [Kissinger] and his buddies laughed and said that Elvis was like the tin man, all rusted up and ready for the junkyard. They waited for him to become seriously dysfunctional from the increasing amount of drugs prescribed by his doctors. Then they "stopped his ticker for him so he didn't have to suffer no more." I think Frank [Sinatra] and his friends were in on the "do in.""

Reagan, Ronald

Worldly Recognition: Hollywood actor, Former Governor of California, Former President of the USA.

Details: Starting at age 17, Sue was utilized regularly in connection with Reagan for many years. From Sue's book:

"I was slowly introduced to Ronald Reagan when I was a teenager. Private meetings were set up by Bob Hope, for me to meet with Reagan at the small theater that is part of the Motion Picture Country Hospital (MPCH) located in Calabasas, California, just 10 minutes from my childhood home in Woodland Hills. The hospital is owned and operated by the Screen Actor's Guild (SAG).... I was programmed to walk or ride my bike [there].... It was there, in private, at the MPCH, that Ronald Reagan began to get acquainted with me, and with many of my created personalities. I was instructed beforehand that I would have "an important guest" and that I was to "make a good impression on him, to give him the full treatment."

"The Council had big plans for Ronald Reagan and he fit the requirements for what they were looking for - someone who was pliable and could be directed. He proved that by following their directions from the beginning, even before he was elected Governor. He was a person who was patriotic, personable and was seen as wholesome, good and genuine in the public eye. He was a "good actor" and was willing to jump through their hoops without question. They always told him he was

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

working for the "good of his country" and he never seemed to question anything....

"That first meeting, Reagan and I were alone in the small theater. When the lights were lowered in the audience section, that was my cue to begin my routine. The "full treatment" consisted of singing and dancing on the small stage for him, ending with a striptease dance. After my seductive act, I walked out to where he was sitting all alone and climbed, naked, into his lap to recite my program. Following my programmed instructions, I told him that I could satisfy every desire or whim he could imagine, that I came complete with instructions and top security, and was referred by his friend Bob Hope.

"He seemed embarrassed, a reaction that would follow him over the years in relation to me, and a bit overwhelmed, but his response was, "I'm sold – tell Bob I'm sold!"... I had several personalities that were specially created to please Ronald Reagan sexually. One was created for total devotion to him over the years.

"I was used extensively on and around 1968, at age 17, by then Governor Reagan and soon after with United States President Richard Nixon.... The Council [Ed. Note: see footnote 10] had me delivering messages between President Nixon and Governor Reagan. The Council worked them together and was able to effect powerful change and legislation to suit their own needs, by manipulating the two of them.... That was escalated when Reagan got into office as President and later they utilized Pete Wilson in the same way. Lots of legislation was pushed through and by the time Wilson hit the office of Governor and Reagan hit President, they had the channels cleared to get through laws, bills and whatever else the Council needed for their own advancement."

Throughout Sue's life Reagan was regularly involved for sexual services and her mind file capabilities. Sexually, Reagan behaved like a gentleman; their meetings were "romantically" formal, and he was a polite and considerate during sex. However, Sue testifies of his perversity as well. Refer to the entry on Michael Dante.

It is important to understand is that Reagan was fully aware of, and cooperative with, the agenda of the church of the devil. He was a member and regular attendee of Bohemian Grove. While serving as Governor of California, Reagan oversaw mind control experimentation on the inmates of Vacaville Prison in Sacramento, CA. From Sue's book:

"They helicoptered Reagan and I in and out [of Vacaville Prison]. It was a top-secret project.... Mind control programs were tried out on the inmates - programs they wanted to implement with criminals, soldiers, etc., if they worked. Governor Reagan, who was busy touring the facility, wasn't around when they tortured and programmed the prisoners. He went off with a prison official while I was taken to deliver the verbal

portion of the program to the men.

"On one side of the walkway the inmates were left alone and on the other side they were hooked up to electrodes, with a band around their head and wrists, and were shocked. Then a guard took me to say programming phrases to them like, "I will not commit a crime. I will behave in society like a good citizen. I will no longer offend. I will not rape. I will be calm. I will be peaceful. I will not fight. I will not swear. I will be an asset to society. I will follow orders. I will obey commands. I will serve my country to the best of my ability." They even hooked up their penises to electroshock as a trauma-programming tactic. When they were tortured, the men broke out in a sweat and some even cried, and after the trauma, they had me deliver the program phrases. Whenever I was alone with them, a renegade personality within me that could relate and sympathize with their plight, slipped in the suggestion, "I will fight for my own freedom."...

"These men were writhing in pain and were emotionally broken by the time they brought them to me to deliver the program suggestions. I was told to deliver the messages slowly, distinctly and quietly so their subconscious mind would have to reach for it. Their conscious mind was way out of the way by then. Some men urinated in their cots while they were being electroshocked. Their bodies jerked, they sweated profusely and cried. A man who could still talk afterwards begged me, "Why are they doing this to me? Help me. Please help me get out of here." It was awful.... By the time they finished with these poor men, they didn't even need to lock the jail cells. They looked and acted comatose."

Romney, George W.

Worldly Recognition: former CEO of American Motors Corp. (AMC), former Governor of Michigan, former U.S. Presidential candidate, father of 2012 U.S. Presidential candidate, Mitt Romney.

Details: From Cathy's public testimony:

"It was in Mackinaw Island that I first met then-Prime Minister of Canada, Pierre Trudeau, a professed Jesuit. Through conversations that I overheard between him and Governor Romney, I learned how the CIA and the Catholics were merging their information for NWO controls. Michigan's Governor, George Romney, was very much interested in implementing mind control of the masses. He wanted to bring the Satanic rituals of child abuse that were proliferating in the Catholic Church into the Mormon church. He wanted a robotic society growing up within the Mormon church so that they would give more money to the NWO effort.

"Governor Romney was also interested in an early version of the Global

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

Education 2000 Program (Outcome-Based Education) that's infiltrated our school system. It was designed to increase our children's learning capacity while decreasing their ability to critically analyze. As a result, the Michigan education system ranked first in the nation for many years, but the devastation to the children was horrible."

Rooney, Mickey

Worldly Recognition: Hollywood actor/performer, acted in TV and films from 1937 to his death in 2014.

Details: From Sue's book:

"Mickey Rooney is, among other things, a pedophile and was afraid of publicly being caught with a child, but he felt safe having a slave child.... [M]y [10-year-old] daughter, Kelly, would be waiting inside the limo to give [Rooney] oral sex. Mickey wanted me there to watch. Mickey always liked to have tons of women, as many as he could amass, flanked by his side. I overheard him say to Bob that it was good for his image. Bob replied, "Anytime it can be arranged for you to use any of my girls, I'd be delighted." And that was arranged, over and over again.... He had a house near the [Agoura Hills] area. I am not sure where exactly, but his house had a solarium with an indoor pool and he liked to have a lot of naked women around the pool."

Sinatra, Frank

Worldly Recognition: world-famous singer and performer.

Details: Sue Ford testifies that Sinatra was heavily involved with the Italian mafia, along with fellow performer, Dean Martin. (Refer to the entry on Dean Martin.) Sue also testifies to his sexual depravity, that he was heavily into sadomasochism. Sue testifies of being raped by him. (In 2010, iconic glamor actress, Zsa Zsa Gabor, disclosed that she was once raped by Sinatra as well.²³) Sue once overheard Sinatra giving mobsters under his command the order to kill someone. She was taken aback at the ease and callousness with which he gave the order.

Streisand, Barbara

Worldly Recognition: world-famous singer and actress.

Details: From Sue's book:

"Barbra Streisand was used in the same way as other Hollywood

celebrities before and after her. Through my personal experience with Barbra Streisand, I believe she is under the control of many of the same persons I was. She was pre-programmed to deliver messages she couldn't even have known she was passing on to millions of people. She sang her songs and was given carefully selected, pre-chosen words that would serve to lock in or open up certain programming in other mind control victims....

"When Barbra performed, which was rare, she was delivering a perfectly planned and orchestrated set of cryptic instructions to many of the people in attendance. She reached a wider audience, as mind-controlled victims bought the cassette tape or video of the performance and listened to it over and over and over again. Certain groups of mind-controlled people, like my mother and myself, were targeted for listening to her. Per program, we listened to her songs addictively and compulsively while following the command to reprogram ourselves by locking down the security of our own programming. Of course, Barbra herself is a victim and, from my observation, I am sure has no awareness that she is doing anything other than performing.

"Barbra Streisand has extremely large breasts for her small body size. I've seen her naked at Bob Hope's parties and at other places. I was even involved in group sexual orgies where she was participating. And at other times, I was targeted to have sex with her one-on-one in order to deliver messages to her to keep her programming going or to instruct her on what to say at certain times. She is a mind-controlled robot. She did lots of cocaine at parties. She liked sex with women, and usually requested it. I was sent to her often....

"In September of 1986, Barbra sent out invitations to a special fundraising concert to be given at her home 'under the stars,' in Malibu [which cost \$5000 per ticket].... When they could sell a certain number of very expensive tickets to her concert in the area of her home, they proved the results of a mind control project experiment to see if that targeted area was sufficiently under mind control.... When it sold out they felt they had won because they sent the invitations to people that would be the hardest to control (the most challenging) and when it sold out they knew they had "cracked the code."... No one could tell there had even been a mind control experiment that concluded with Barbara's Malibu performance. This was one way the controllers made large sums of money, all carefully concealed in such 'charity fundraisers,' which were then meticulously funneled into covert accounts....

"She is a total robot and is breaking down, but they will spend a fortune to keep her together (like poor Elvis) until she just can't function anymore.... [She] had been used to make the connections to some very important people, and especially to the masses.... They carefully prepared Barbra to harmonically control crowds. She did, not only with the natural talent she has and the trained harmonics in her voice, but

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

also with the hand signals and word combinations she sang. Because she had been so heavily invested in, as a mind control asset... no expense was spared for her.... Whatever it took or cost was worth it to her controllers because they built her up to a certain targeted audience so completely that her controllers paid exorbitant amounts of money to keep her together, and her fans would pay any amount to see her. Many may themselves be under mind control....

"Sometimes the Council [Ed. Note: see footnote 10] gave me different drugs for Barbra. She always got to choose one, but I think they all must have done the same thing, just packaged in different wrappers or capsules. As soon as she would pass out, and that is what she always did, a group of men would come into the house with equipment to work on her. Sometimes it looked like her body came off the couch from the electroshock. It was awful to watch. Then when they took the equipment off of her body, it would be cold and clammy, yet she would have a band of sweat on her face.... It became increasingly difficult to manage getting her put back together. It was a team effort.

"I felt frightened to see her acting like a child when she switched to very young parts of herself, and didn't know what to expect when she said, "Let's play with the clay again." She had a table where we sat to play with clay. It looked like a child's table for adult size people. She switched personalities often then, so we would have tea parties and play games to entertain her child personalities....

"Barbra switched personalities a lot. I think that might be why she was afraid to perform on stage. Those with 'the eyes to see and the ears to hear' might have greater insight in regard to an article written about her in the July 1994 issue of Ladies Home Journal. In it, when asked about her string of unhappy relationships and her inability to have long-lasting relationships, in her own words Barbra states, "I live with a lot of angst," and "I'm a mass of contradictions. I change and I grow. I change my mind all the time. So tell (whatever) man I'm looking for that if he likes to have affairs with lots of women, then I'm perfect for him!" Could she be referring to first-hand experience with Multiple Personality Disorder?...

"[T]he love and compassion I have for Barbra Streisand and all victims of mind control demands that I now share this information."

Taylor, James

Worldly Recognition: singer and songwriter, achieved prominence in the 1970's.

Details: Sue recounts an incident at one of Taylor's concerts in Southern California where she was programmed to go backstage to service Taylor during a break in his performance. She states:

"My instructions were that... I was to go to the restroom and then go to the backstage door, and knock two times. When the door opened, I said, "Bob Hope sent me. Anybody interested? Anybody want any body?""

Taylor's assistant let her in, and during the break Taylor sexually satisfied himself with her. He went back onstage saying "That oughtta' propel me into the second half with gusto!" Thereafter, Taylor's assistant (realizing that Sue was a sex slave) accessed her programming for himself and raped her on the couch.

"Over the years I was programmed to listen repeatedly to James Taylor's songs while some of the word phrases "re-minded" me to, "...leave your mind behind, Mexico..." and "... you can run but you cannot hide, this is widely known...."

Thatcher, Margaret

Worldly Recognition: Former Prime Minister of England.

Details: Sue testifies that Thatcher was a lesbian. In Sue's book she states that she was required by Henry Kissinger to develop a relationship of trust with Thatcher.

Trudeau, Pierre

Worldly Recognition: Former Prime Minister of Canada.

Details: Cathy testifies that Trudeau is a pedophile, a mind control expert, and is connected to the Jesuits. Cathy was prostituted to him on a number of occasions between ages 6 to 8.

Various other politicians and celebrities, methods of control, and exploitation

From Sue's book:

"During the late 60's and 70's, lots of big names were in Vegas and I was prostituted to them at night. Elvis, Sammy Davis, Jr., Ed McMahon, Johnny Carson, Jimmy Dean, and others....

"Bob [Hope] maximized my usage by sending me to many, many stars and politicians over the years. He sent me to Quincy Jones, Burt Reynolds, Eddie Murphy... Gene Kelly... and others. Many of them didn't want to risk too much exposure with strangers for various and sundry reasons; they didn't want to become too attached emotionally, didn't want to risk the security of knowing someone too long where a person

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

could find out too much and hurt them in different ways, or there were other reasons unique to individual celebrities....

"Stars had trouble getting "secured" sex with people. They couldn't trust that people weren't coming on to them to manipulate or hurt them, and since they were famous they couldn't risk losing their public reputation. So, slaves were provided to them. And Bob provided me to everyone he could, knowing the value of connections to powerful people....

"Word seemed to spread like wildfire to stars about the sex slave service. They loved it just like the politicians did, since they thought they could let their hair down and not have to worry, because many were told I was a robot that couldn't ever divulge their secrets. With individuals not privy to the top-secret mind control information, Bob explained, "She's beautiful and highly sexual, but she's mentally slow and can't think. She doesn't have the ability to remember. She's been like this since birth, but what she lacks upstairs she greatly makes up for downstairs," and he'd smile slyly, "if you know what I mean."

"Many people never knew that I was a robot, under total mind control. They just thought I was slow or deaf and dumb. That was another tactic Bob used....

"[While leaving from one of Hugh Hefner's parties,] a man I didn't know approached us and said, "Bob, you must tell me your secret. You must have something you're not telling about if you can attract the attentions of a pretty young girl like this. So tell me... what's your secret?" Bob [who was in his late 60's at the time] looked snidely at him and said, "Geritol." And then he laughed and said, "You don't think I'd tell you my secret do you? Then it wouldn't be a secret any longer and you'd be getting the pretty young stuff instead of me." And then they both laughed but the man still seemed very curious, like he wondered how Bob did it. "Is he paying you large sums of money?" the man asked me. "No, sir, it's a pleasure just to be with Bob," I smiled, looking adoringly up to Bob like I was programmed to do. The man shook his head [in amazement]...."

Mind-Controlled Celebrities Maintenance Themselves

From Sue's book:

"The massage idea helped keep a slave enslaved and contained because the acupressure points often matched up correctly with programmed touch spots. It worked well. Bodywork eased the stress of the body while locking the mind in program – a great leisurely and heavenly containment idea to further imprison mind control slaves. With rich and famous slaves they said it was easy because they could send them off on endless journeys, trips, workshops, special spas, expos, etc., because these

slaves had the money to pursue different avenues that often led them directly back into containment.”

The White House

From Sue's book:

“Hollywood celebrities are constantly tied back into the White House to add flair and drama, and to bring in covert funds, but most importantly to add diversion to keep the American public focused in whatever direction the controllers want, instead of having the public focused on what is really going on behind the scenes.”

Keeping the Public Ignorant

From Sue's book: “I once overheard Henry [Kissinger] say that he would give the public what they wanted and demanded celebrities and fanfare – since that was all they were capable of understanding anyway. He said most of the private sector were totally ignorant of governmental matters and that, since they didn't avail themselves to knowledge of the way their country was run, it was evident that they really wanted and needed for “those in the know” to take charge and run things. He said that since he and other leaders were interested and capable, they would do the job, making the decisions and seeing to it that things ran smoothly.”

Secondary Witness to Sue's and Cathy's Testimonies

As a supporting witness to the testimonies of Sue Ford (a.k.a. Brice Taylor) and Cathy O'Brien, I present the words of Katherine Sullivan, another victim of mind control who knows both Sue and Cathy personally. Katherine is one of the Board of Directors of PARC-VRAMC (Positive Activism, Remembrance, and Commemoration – Victims of Ritual Abuse and Mind Control).²⁴ The following is text from her personal website²⁵ as well as from an email (dated July 22nd, 2000) in which she which summarizes her personal experiences.²⁶ Her comments are straightforward, and I am convinced of their honesty and merit to the degree that I feel it is important to include them here, verbatim and unabridged – even grammar, punctuation and spelling errors are left unaltered (all emphasis and ellipses in original):

“My full name is Kathleen Ann Sullivan. My maiden name was Shirk. I do not publish research results from dream studies, I was never a reporter or an astronaut, I am not a psychotic artist, and I am not a university

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

professor. I'm a recovering trauma survivor, president of a proactive non-profit, and a social work student at a local university....

"I am the woman Brice Taylor mentioned as also having been lied to and more by Mark Phillips.

"She asked me about four years ago to support her in physically confronting Mark at a conference where he and David Icke and Cathy were all presenting together, in Atlanta. I called Icke's people a week before that conference to let him know what Mark had done to me and Brice, letting Icke know that Mark was a fraud and was very dangerous. I followed the phone call up with a priority mail package, that included sufficient information to show that Mark was dangerous to survivors. Icke never acknowledged my information.

"The night before the conference started, Brice dropped out of the picture after informing me that "Jesus" told her that it was not her time to confront Mark, which left me alone to do so. (Being a Christian, I was a bit confused about that. If "Jesus" told her to go and to ask me to support her in confronting Mark, then why in the world would "Jesus" change his mind and tell her NOT to go? Claiming getting orders from Jesus and the Holy Spirit can sure help a person avoid taking responsibility for his/her own behavior and decisions...) [Ed. Note: Touché. Nevertheless, personal responsibility must always be taken whenever acting upon the direction of the Holy Spirit. That is the inherent risk of true faith – that is what the Lord expects of us. When a command is truly the Lord's will and His work, those who act in faith will be upheld by the Lord. The adage "time vindicates the prophets" is apropos.]

"The second day of the conference, I tried to talk to David [Icke] alone in a hallway. He looked quite sheepish, clearly recognizing who I was (it bugged me... he looked SO darned familiar from somewhere in my covert past), ducked his head and walked quickly the other way. He was clearly quite chummy with Mark and Cathy during the entire conference, and I blanched and became physically ill at one point when Cathy played gently with David's hair, and he looked up at her face, beaming like a lover. Not a good sign.

"So now I am quite amused that Icke, who blatantly reinforces "lizard men" screen memories in high-level MC survivors' minds to discredit them to the public and in court, is suddenly helping to expose Mark. I've seen this behavior before. In this instance, former business partners ([former FBI agent Ted] Gunderson, Icke, Phillips and Bowart/Kirby) suddenly turn on one of their own, AFTER it is obvious that their partner's are not going to behave and be quiet about his activities. The others had years of warning from the victims, to step out and denounce him.

"The way I see it, Mark became too much of a liability to them. This behavior on the part of Mark's friends/partners is not dissimilar to when children go to the police and media about a group of criminal cultists who

have been ritually traumatizing and raping them for years. The cultists throw out one of their people for the police and legal system to make an open fuss over and slap in prison, and the others continue doing their dirty work just like before, never being legally named. [Ed. Note: excellent case in point, the McMartin Preschool pedophile controversy, mentioned in the chapter notes of Part 6.]

"In the MC survivor community, I've seen this tactic taken one step further. "Good guy bad guy" routine. By helping to publicly out their partner, after having been tight with him for many years, it makes other perps look like they are heros. Then the outed perp's victims (eg: Brice) go running to THEM for protection and information. And the survivor's external control and victimization continues...

"The other thing I've noticed is how many perps are popping up in the survivor community, mostly but not all males, as investigators and heros. As spokespersons. They do the talk circuits and books, controlling and endorsing usually one survivor like a trained seal (eg: Phillips/O'Brien), who in turn endorses them.

"I've been approached by at least three of these guys, who tried to do that "you and me babe, we can make a fortune" routine, but it did not appeal to me after what happened to Cathy (and, I believe, is also still being done to Brice.) I don't know if it's because so many of us were abused by fathers and are still looking for an older male to care and protect us, or if it's because we're just damned lazy (as I tended to be with Mark) and choose to depend on another of a succession of controllers in our lives. But the pattern I've seen repeatedly is that these people are usually RECYCLED PROGRAMMERS. They come back into our lives, daring to hope that we will not remember them. And of course, if they are back in our lives, we will not feel safe enough to be able to consciously remember them!

"Then they get back into our heads very quickly and easily, drain us dry of all our memories and proofs and money, and then use us, as Mark did Cathy, as lures to draw in OTHER MC survivors that they can drain and control, likewise.

"I used to get so enraged when I saw yet another survivor fall prey to one of these scum, but I've gotten to the point where I've realized this is part of healing and recovery – going into relapse and learning from it once one gets free again. After being controlled all of one's life, it is extremely difficult to stand on one's own two feet and do one's own cognitive thinking. They know that and are quick to take advantage of it.

"This is why survivors in the know keep telling other survivors how absolutely crucial it is for them to be their OWN heroes, their OWN investigators. To depend on anyone else to tell us what to do or think or believe is to open ourselves to another controller and more misery and danger.

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

"I have already posted on the Internet about my experiences with Mark and Cathy. I have written several investigators and numerous survivors about them. Mark knows where I stand about him; Cathy probably remembers very little, other than what Mark wants her to think. If anyone wants further info about my experience with Mark, give me a snail mail address and I'll send a package to you. This man is dangerous and must be avoided by MC survivors at all cost.

"I agree that Mark definitely seemed to at least partially working for the benefit of Henry Kissinger aka "Kissybutt." When I tried to talk to Mark about my memories of Henry and what he did to children, including myself, Mark told me I must be mistaken. This is while he was still acting like most of what else I remembered (via his use of so-called "key, codes and triggers") was valid.

"About two years after I broke away from Mark's influence, I wrote about Henry in my creative non-fiction book, *MK*. Henry is the character I named "Senator Edward." I wrote the book before I got any outside verifications from any other survivors, etc. that Henry was indeed a vicious pedophile. (He once made my rectum bleed horribly and put me in great pain, he raped me so brutally.) Henry was, and probably still is, one of the most brutal buggers I had the displeasure to endure as a child.

"At the same time, he was one of the most fascinating owners I had the "privilege" (or so I thought) to spend time with, including in my adult years. He has an absolutely brilliant mind and is so wicked he's funny. And he seemed to know everything about everybody of value to him, down to what kind of underwear they bought!

"He was one of my primary owners, along with the White House and the CIA and Robert Maxwell of Gr. Britain. I understood pretty early on that Henry was one of the major powers behind the White House. I also knew from personal experience that he answered to Nelson Rockefeller, and then David Rockefeller. (David ran Henry, Henry ran George Bush Sr., and so on.) Jimmy Carter let Henry know he was unwelcome and later, so did Clinton. Both men paid for that, dearly, especially by being publicly humiliated. Henry loves to rub his enemies' noses in the dirt. Pretty typical for a Luciferian...

"But Henry had his spies in place anyway. He blackmailed a certain high-profile senator from the Southeast, another pedophile who was obsessed with his victims' cleanliness (enemas, saran wrap between him and the victim, shaved body, etc.), to spy on Carter and pass the info back to Kissinger. I was used as a go-between that way as well, when I lived in Atlanta...

"Mark showed me a 8x10 black and white of Monica Lewinsky, a couple of years before the scandal broke. He said she was a "presidential model" and asked if I remember her. I said no, and he told me he knew she was a Presidential Beta sex slave because of her "clockface" mole markings.

What I would give to have that picture now...

"I read very little of Brice's second book. If I saw a section that seemed to include information about any perp I had remembered, I skipped it. That pretty much left the intro and the sections on Barbra Streisand and JFK.

"I had totally opposite experiences than she claims to have had with JFK, and do have great difficulty in believing what she wrote about him. In my situation, I was told I was one of his many children out of wedlock. At that time, I believed it. Now, it doesn't matter – I am who I am.

"I was taken by my parents (one or both) to meet him at least 3-4 times, and he used to send David Powers out near Reading, PA to visit with me and two female relatives in a church on Saturdays, to ask how I was doing. (I identified his picture about a year ago. Definitely him. Really neat man.) Although Rose Kennedy was a total cold bitch after his murder, when I was presented to her along with other children, JFK was one of the most positive people in my life, always caring and affirming and encouraging. If it had not been for how he treated me, which gave me great strength when life was hardest, I don't think I could have survived. He was never physically inappropriate with me and when I did beg him on one occasion to have sex with me, he walked away physically shaken and outraged – not at me but at the fact that someone conditioned me to want this from a man. He was an antivenin when just about every other man in my young life was toxic and dangerous to me. And then, damnit, he had to die. That about killed me.

"Even years later, I was introduced to people by Henry and others as a "Kennedy Brat." It was a heavy burden to bear because it made me feel an extra strong responsibility to our country. Maybe that was their game the entire time, maybe I am a Kennedy Brat. If so, it would be an honor. If not, it was fun thinking they were telling the truth.

"I don't know if Brice really remembered JFK doing such things to her or not, but it would have been totally out of character for the man. I do know, however, from things Mark Phillips and Walter Bowart told me about her, that she was heavily conditioned to put her whole worth into being wanted by men. Walter used the trigger words "beautiful Brice" with her too often to be coincidence. I've had to face that if I were conditioned – starting in early childhood – to believe that if I ever lost my value as being beautiful and attractive to men, I would be killed, then the most terrifying thing that could happen to me is that a man would not want me sexually. If that were true, then I would HAVE to say that every man I approached wanted me, and we had sex. Pretty scary thought.

"I also knew Streisand... not as a perp, but as a victim who was very much like Brice in personality, behaviors, etc. Very similar. I have remembered seeing Streisand once in South Africa and I also saw her piss people off pretty regularly at DC cocktail parties Henry took me to as his "niece." (He usually made me wear plain brown clothes.) I also knew (can't remember

APPENDIX B: NAMING NAMES – ABUSERS, VICTIMS, ATROCITIES

if Brice wrote this) that Streisand was also run by Henry. This is also an uncomfortable thought, because Streisand is very very close to Bill Clinton... so I wonder, is Henry using her to get info on the man that way? To pay him back for not allowing Henry to be a part of the administration?

"I was extremely angry that Brice made it look like Barbra victimized Brice when the reality was, they were both equally victims and both had sexually perverse alter-states. Barbra is a victim. Brice is a victim. Neither one had any choice in what they did. Both were under orders and both were conditioned via rape, torture, degradation, and so much more. I did awful things under orders, too. If Barbara were to openly and consciously, in her host alter-state, choose to sexually assault another female, that would be another matter. To target a fellow victim in a book and expose what the controllers conditioned that victim to do to other females (I was given to females, too) is not right nor fair. They instructed Brice to do things sexually to me too, but I understand now she had no choice. She was not in her conscious mind. We were both victims, the same way she and Barbra were also both victims.

"I have kept my memories clean and uncontaminated and am glad I chose to do so. But yes, I definitely knew Kissinger for many years.

"In 1992 when Clinton made it clear he didn't want Kissinger or anything he had to offer – including my black op services (unlike Reagan and Bush Sr.) – Henry told me that "they" (Aryans/Nazis) would eventually take over the government and when they did, he'd have me back as his "pet." I really believed him then, since he had personally tortured and terrorized me. But now I don't believe him. He's an old con. A brilliant, very wounded old con. I still wonder what the Nazi officers did to him when he was their alleged Jew-Boy driver... go figure...

"I realized about two years ago that former owners like Henry WANTED their victims to go public and tell the world that they were going to take over and rule us all. NWO and all that. Why should their victims not believe it, when they did rule us completely? But now that I am free and have had enough time away from their thinking, and have spend a considerable amount of time living in regular society, I realize they are not powerful in the real world the way they tried to trick me into believing. It's been smoke and mirrors all along. Intel occultists are the worst possible combo. They especially know that the easiest way to weaken an opponent is to psych him out. In fact, sometimes there is no need to attack at all, because the terror can cripple so completely. They've been using too many of us to do this dirty work for them, especially through the Patriot community and people like Icke and Mark and Cathy and Brice and Gunderson. I refuse to be a part of the scam anymore.

"Reality check: the so-called controllers aren't controllers at all. They are miserable humans. They defecate and get ulcers and feel pain and loneliness and have miserable marriages and are in absolute terror of each other. They aren't ruling anyone. They never will. Freedom is a condition of

the soul. They will never have what we have. We are free; they never will be. They are permanent prisoners of each other. They know that if they ever change heart, if they ever decide to tell the truth, they are dead men. They are too high-profile and they have too many proofs. God, have mercy on them because I doubt if anyone else will.

"Katherine aka Kathleen Sullivan President of PARC-VRAMC <http://parc-vramc.tierranet.com>²⁷

"– I will not do interviews about this stuff. I do not want to do another book. I will not address any of this at conferences. I just plain wrote this because I'm tired of holding secrets.

"– None of what I wrote in this or the previous posting have anything to do with my position as PARC president. I write these as private opinions and information only."

-
- 1 Book of Mormon, Helaman 6:21-24, 38-40
 - 2 Book of Mormon, 3Nephi chapter 30
 - 3 Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Woody_Allen
 - 4 The New York Times, February 2nd, 2012; Source: <http://www.nytimes.com/2014/02/02/opinion/sunday/kristof-dylan-farrows-story.html>
 - 5 Source: http://kristof.blogs.nytimes.com/2014/02/01/an-open-letter-from-dylan-farrow/?_r=0
 - 6 Refer to the PDF file in the supporting material: An Open Letter From Dylan Farrow - The New York Times.pdf
 - 7 Barr, Roseanne (1989). *Roseanne: My Life as a Woman*. Harper & Row. pp. 51–53
 - 8 People Magazine, October 7th, 1991, Vol. 36, No. 13, Article title: *A Star Cries Incest*
 - 9 Transcribed from an interview with Russia Today (RT), March 28, 2013. Video included in the supporting material. Refer to the file: Rosanne Barr RT Interview 03-28-2013.mp4
 - 10 Sue is not referring to the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), but another group that gave her instructions, known only to her as "The Council." It is highly likely that Sue is referring to a high-level group called 'The Committee of 300.' "*The Committee of 300* (aka *The Olympians*) is an alleged group founded by the British aristocracy in 1727. Proponents believe the Committee to be an international council which organizes politics, commerce, banking, media, and the military for centralized global efforts.... Former British MI6 Intelligence Officer John Coleman's book "The Conspirators Hierarchy, the Committee of 300" details

CHAPTER NOTES

what Coleman claims is first-hand information and encounters with this group by the author.... Coleman claims the alleged group to be superior to other more well-known round table groups such as the Bilderberg Group, the Royal Institute of International Affairs, the Club of Rome, the Trilateral Commission and the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR).

"Another author [Major-General Count Arthur Cherep-Spiridovich] writes that the group may also be known as the 'Hidden Hand', and be headed by the Rothschild family of international financiers and based loosely around many of the top National Banking institutions and Royal Families of the world."

(Source – http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Committee_of_300)

- 11 From Cathy's book: "[At the Mount Shasta CIA compound], hyper from drugs, Cheney and [H.W.] Bush were eager to hunt their human prey in "A Most Dangerous Game". They greeted me with the rules of the game, ordered me to strip naked despite the cold December winds, and told me in Oz cryptic to "beware of the lions and tigers and bears". [My daughter] Kelly's life became the stakes, as usual, which resurrected my natural and exaggerated programmed maternal instincts. Tears silently ran down my cheeks as Bush told me, "If we catch you, Kelly's mine. So run, run as fast as you can. I'll get you and your little girl, too, because I can, I can, I can. And I will."
"Wearing only my tennis shoes, I ran through the trees as fast and as far as I could, which wasn't very far at all. Bush was using his bird dog to track me, the same one that had recently been used with me in bestiality filming as a "Byrd-dog" joke on my owner, Robert C. Byrd. When caught, Cheney held his gun to my head again as he stood over me, looking warm in his sheepskin coat....
"It is my understanding now that A Most Dangerous Game was devised to condition military personnel in survival and combat maneuvers. Yet it was used on me and other slaves known to me as a means of further conditioning the mind to the realization there was "no place to hide," as well as traumatize the victim for ensuing programming. It was my experience over the years that A Most Dangerous Game had numerous variations on the primary theme of being stripped naked and turned loose in the wilderness while being hunted by men and dogs. In reality, all "wilderness" areas were enclosed in secure military fencing whereby it was only a matter of time until I was caught, repeatedly raped and tortured."
- 12 Refer to the video file in the supporting material: Barbara Bush - Stepford Wife.
- 13 *Ibid.* 11
- 14 Documentation of Cathy's vaginal mutilation is included in the supporting material. While the procedure conducted to record this evidence was tastefully, respectfully and professionally done, it nonetheless shows her vagina. I feel compelled to include this because, undoubtedly, some readers will be prone to doubting Cathy's testimony of abuse. Therefore, I include this as evidence to back up Cathy's story. Refer to the video file in the supporting material: CAUTION HIGHLY GRAPHIC_Evidence of Cathy OBrien's Ritual Mutilation.
- 15 *Ibid.* 10
- 16 *Ibid.* 11
- 17 *Ibid.* 10
- 18 Source – http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Steve_Garvey
- 19 *Ibid.* 10

- 20 Source: <http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1361318/US-Senator-Edward-Ted-Kennedy-rented-Chilean-brothel-entire-night.html>
- 21 Refer to the JPG file: FBI Memo - Ted Kennedy Rents Chilean Brothel
- 22 D&C 76:33 "For they are vessels of wrath, doomed to suffer the wrath of God, with the devil and his angels in eternity"
- 23 Source: <http://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-1296141/My-darlink-Zsa-Zsa-husbands-slept-Nixon-But-real-love-Her-shih-tzus.html>
- 24 Originally, this organization's site was hosted at <http://www.parc-vramc.tierranet.com/Publications.htm>. It is now archived at <http://web.archive.org/web/20040603162742/http://www.parc-vramc.tierranet.com/Publications.htm>
- 25 Originally her site was hosted at: <http://kathleen-sullivan.com/>; it is now archived at <http://web.archive.org/web/20040613042502/http://kathleen-sullivan.com/>
- 26 Retrieved from <http://www.rense.com/general2/phil.htm>; The reproduced email starts with "From Katherine Sullivan <katydid@mail.cdc.net> 7-22-00"
- 27 Website archived at: <http://web.archive.org/web/20040604061053/http://parc-vramc.tierranet.com/>

APPENDIX C:

FAIR USE AND CREATIVE COMMONS CLARIFICATION

Fair Use Provision of U.S. Copyright Law

Fair use is a limitation and exception to the exclusive right granted by copyright law to the author of a creative work. In United States copyright law, fair use is a doctrine that permits limited use of copyrighted material without acquiring permission from the rights holders.

(Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fair_use)

Section 107 [of U.S. Copyright law, title 17] contains a list of the various purposes for which the reproduction of a particular work may be considered fair, such as criticism, comment, news reporting, teaching, scholarship, and research. Section 107 also sets out four factors to be considered in determining whether or not a particular use is fair:

1. The purpose and character of the use, including whether such use is of commercial nature or is for nonprofit educational purposes
2. The nature of the copyrighted work
3. The amount and substantiality of the portion used in relation to the copyrighted work as a whole
4. The effect of the use upon the potential market for, or value of, the copyrighted work....

The 1961 Report of the Register of Copyrights on the General

Revision of the U.S. Copyright Law cites examples of activities that courts have regarded as fair use: "quotation of excerpts in a review or criticism for purposes of illustration or comment; quotation of short passages in a scholarly or technical work, for illustration or clarification of the author's observations; use in a parody of some of the content of the work parodied; summary of an address or article, with brief quotations, in a news report; reproduction by a library of a portion of a work to replace part of a damaged copy; reproduction by a teacher or student of a small part of a work to illustrate a lesson; reproduction of a work in legislative or judicial proceedings or reports; incidental and fortuitous reproduction, in a newsreel or broadcast, of a work located in the scene of an event being reported." (Source – <http://www.copyright.gov/fls/fl102.html>)

Creative Commons Attribution-NoDerivs 3.0 Unported License

This variation of Creative Commons license in regards to this work means that any entity (individual or commercial) is welcome to do the following without obtaining permission from the author:

1. Distribute this book and *all* of the inclusive supporting material, packaged as a whole, available for download and dissemination electronically on the Internet (via http, ftp, bittorrent, etc.). Fees can be charged for this service without providing the author a cut of the profit or royalties.
2. Print these books as a whole (both volumes I and II, nothing taken out or altered) either privately or commercially, then sell copies of it. The supporting material, in its entirety, can be packaged and sold as well – whether on optical media disc(s) (i.e. CD-Roms, DVD-Roms), or some other manner of physical distribution of electronic data (such as a memory card, USB drive, etc). Again, the author does not require a cut of the profit or royalties of the sales of such. Any individual or commercial entity is at liberty to make and keep all profits from the printing and distributing this work, as long as all text and digital supporting content is intact, and the author, D. Christian Markham, is not deprived of sole authoring credit.
3. Quote from the book or use portions of the supporting material in any manner in accordance with Fair Use provisions of U.S. Copyright Law.
4. Include a foreword, additional appendixes, commentaries, additional supporting material, etc., as long as all such are provided separately in a manner that clearly denotes that such is not from the original

APPENDIX C: FAIR USE AND CREATIVE COMMONS CLARIFICATION

author. If in print, depending upon the nature of the addition, it must be placed prior to the original title page, or after the final appendix. If electronic text, as a separate PDF (or equivalent kind of e-book file). If additions to the supporting material, it must be placed separately in a manner that is not blended in with the original material. All such additional material automatically falls under the identical Creative Commons license as this work.

One is *not* welcome to do the following:

1. Alter the contents of the book and/or supporting material in any way – including inserting material within or removing anything from the book and/or supporting material.
2. Attribute authoring credit of this work to anyone other than its sole author, D. Christian Markham. (Should one quote portions within that are credited to other authors, the originating author needs to be credited.)
3. Print and distribute the book *without* the supporting material, or vice versa. Optical media (or other method of physically distributing electronic data, such as a memory card or USB drive) that contains the full content of supporting material must accompany the printed book. If distributed as an e-book, the supporting material must be made available from a reliable resource via the Internet or other system of delivery.

The manner of distribution of this work (inclusive of the book and supporting material) is inspired by the GPL and Creative Commons licenses, and the hard work that others have released free of charge to the general public through such. A pinnacle example of a tremendous public tool that uses the Creative Commons license is the website *Wikipedia* "*The Free Encyclopedia*." I quote Wikipedia content frequently throughout this book. (Due to all manner of individuals being able to contribute to Wikipedia's content, it is not always completely reliable. Therefore, in every single instance wherein I quote Wikipedia as a resource in this book, I vetted such information through included and/or additional sources.)

The manner of creation and distribution of this work was also inspired by the GPL (General Public License) and the creative electronic works that others spend their valuable time generating and distributing under this license. Software that is produced and distributed under this license is referred to as Open Source Software, which I am a avid proponent and supporter of.

This book and all supporting material was created *solely* through completely free-of-charge Open Source tools. For example, the book was created and edited using *LibreOffice*, a free and open source office suite created by The Document Foundation. The flowchart in the Prologue section as well as the church hierarchic diagrams were created with *Dia Diagram Editor*. Image files in the supporting material were cropped and/or resized and converted to jpeg format using the *GNU Image Manipulation Program* (GIMP). The front and back covers and the spine of this book were also created using GIMP. Streaming video was captured with an open source version of *CamStudio*.

I do not expect to make much (if any) money from producing this work, let alone be compensated financially for the extensive amount of time and effort it took for me to compose it and put it all together. I did not embark on this project with a financial motive in mind.

Having said that, I am open to receiving monetary donations should anyone feel inclined to give such. Such donations will be used towards updated editions of this work, increased distribution and promotion of it, or towards other expenses such as website maintenance, data hosting, etc. Portions of donations will also be passed on and donated to worthy non-profit entities related to this work, such as Wikipedia and other Open Source projects.

If any individuals or organizations print and distribute this work, donation of a portion of such profits would be welcome.